

# Immortal God Emperor

(御天神帝)

Arc 02

Youyan Pass

Warring Blade

(乱世狂刀)

## Story Description:

Ye Qingyu, since the death of his parents four years ago, has been laughed at by the entire Deer city. Little do people know, he has just been biding his time for the entire four years. With the White Deer academy selection just around the corner, can he shut the mouths of all those who have laughed at him? Join Ye Qingyu in his journey to solve the mystery behind his family's death and to reclaim the Ye family property!

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

# Chapter 115: The sudden change in the watchpost

Deer mountain range.

The hundred broken mountains.

Snow and wind fell incessantly. The hundred years of accumulated snow layer had turned the ground into a glacier. This was like a place where dragon and snakes crouched, one not able to see the end of this landscape through a glance.

The snowflakes in the air covered everything and completely filled the sky. Even for a Spirit spring expert, their line of sight would not exceed thirty or forty metres. The snowflakes and ice crystals was swept apart by the strong wind, sharp like a blade. If it struck upon armour, it would emit a series of sparks.

Such an environment was so terrible and dire, that a normal person would have no chance of surviving.

Ye Qingyu's group had six people in it, currently sitting at a sentry post several hundred metres high and located behind the icy cliff. They were reorganising and resting.

Ye Qingyu had left Deer city the day before.

Because this was the army's itinerary and route, it involved matters that had to be kept secret. Therefore the path they took was different from the normal road that armed escort companies usually travelled by.

On that day Ye Qingyu and his group left Deer city, the headed tens of kilometres north. In a concealed military sentry post, they activated the teleportation formation contained within and being transferred to another sentry post. They used another teleportation formation, and headed to another sentry post.....this continued on like so.

Ye Qingyu possessed a military position and therefore the route of his travel was even more secretive. All of the formation were located at

places outsiders would definitely not be aware of.

Approximately a day later, Ye Qingyu had already travelled four or five thousand kilometres away from Deer city.

The further North they travelled, the colder and chiller the air became. The environment became harsher and harsher.

What the Snow country was confronting in the Northern borders was the Snow Ground Demon race. They were a race that was naturally born in the snow, and had already thoroughly adapted to the severe winter, holding an enormous threat. The location of Ye Qingyu and the others was in, was already not an entirely safe area. Occasionally they would be able to see the come and go of Snow ground demon beasts passing by. Snow ground demon beasts were the close relatives of Snow ground demon race. They did not have high intelligence but possessed great destructive power. Even the sentry posts of the country would occasionally receive the attacks of these snow ground demon beasts.

Therefore this place could not be said to be an area devoid of danger.

“We are currently attempting to communicate with sixty seventh watch post. We need a little bit of time, please wait a while sir.”

The head guard of the watch post were an elite that had encountered a hundred battles. He was a veteran that the Youyan pass had left behind. Seeming to be around thirty years of age, he possessed a well built physique and sideburns on his face. Very enthusiastically, he came over and greeted Ye Qingyu.

“This doesn’t matter. thank you very much.” Ye Qingyu quickly rushed to express his thanks.

The sentries including the head, did not number more than twenty people stationed here to defend. After observing in detail, Ye Qingyu discovered that the head of the guards was around the third Spirit spring of strength, but had suffered an hidden injury making his leg was somewhat handicapped. His strength was greatly reduced. The other people were all between the fifth stages of the Ordinary martial level to having half a step in the Spirit spring stage. They were a well trained and

disciplined group albeit with their age was slightly leaning towards the higher side.

It was a group of veterans.

A group of people that was worthy of respect.

The sentry post was extremely small scale, and was hidden behind one of the ice cliffs. There were only five or six icy caves behind this cliff. It was hard to imagine just how boring and lonely it was to be stationed all year in a place where it was completely covered with ice and snow, with only the accompaniment of Snow ground demon beasts. And for the old veterans stationed within this sentry post, this duty would keep them occupied for tens of years. There were times when the sentry post was completely broken through by the Snow ground demon beasts, and before any reinforcement could arrive, all contact would be lost. Their corpses were never ever able to be found again.

Accompanying Ye Qingyu heading towards Youyan pass were four elite military officers of the [Break through barracks] .

After bringing Ye Qingyu to his destination, they had to return and await further orders.

On the way here, Ye Qingyu had already familiarised himself with these four people, with talk and laughter between them.

The bonfire of the sentry post burned with a raging flame.

Outside there were the whistle of strong winds, and also the roars of the Snow ground demon beasts sounding at all times.

After a short while, the head of the guards rushed over with sweat covering his face. "I don't know what's happening, but the sixty seventh sentry posts has no way of being contacted. My superiors, perhaps you have to wait for another few hours....."

Ye Qingyu brows furrowed. "Has there been such a thing that has occurred before?"

"It has happened a few times before. It's not very common. Sometimes

when the weather is particularly terrible, it will affect the normal fluctuation of the yuan qi in Heaven and Earth and there is no way to communicate using formations. But after a few attempts, it has always been fixed. We are in the midst of attempting to keep doing so. I am really sorry, please just wait patiently.....” The head of the guards explained with a red face.

“Since it is like this, then it does not matter if we wait a little. There is no need to hurry.” Ye Qingyu comforted him with a smile.

The head of the sentries answered with a sound, quickly rushing off again.

Ye Qingyu looked towards the darkening colour of sky. Without knowing why, he suddenly had a feeling, that this formation would not be fixed before tomorrow.

As expected, until the time of midnight, the formation was still in the state where contact could not be made.

Ye Qingyu and the other four could only rest, patiently waiting.

The conditions of the watch post was limited , so Ye Qingyu and the other four officers of the breakthrough barracks had been arranged to sleep in the same room.

Time passed on.

The four military officers slept on four separate ice beds, closing their eyes and recuperating. Blades were still in their embrace, evidently not asleep. The four appeared very vigilant, their position just so that they were defending against the doors and windows. The four protected and watched over Ye Qingyu, displaying a very high level of military training.

Ye Qingyu was in the middle of the ice bed, sleeping in his clothes.

In his mind, he thought back to the night before he left, to the wooden box that Li Shizen instructed Qingqing to hand to him.

Inside the wooden box, was a tangerine yellow piece of fur. Ye Qingyu did not know just what kind of creature it came from. It had strands of

silky hair, exceedingly tough and durable and brought with it a faint yuan qi fluctuation. The fur emitted with a pale yellow light, and on it was some strange characters written on it. Ye Qingyu was stunned in his first glance, because these characters were from the God and Devil age.

After he carefully translated these letters, he discovered it was an ancient pill formula.

Ye Qingyu's foundation and knowledge in pills and medicine was not very great. But even he was able to discern that this should be a formula for creating a pill that condensed inner yuan and drew energy from Heaven and Earth. It was named the [Mysterious heaven pellet]. According to this formula, if you managed to successfully create this pill, then one [Mysterious Heaven pellet] was able to cause an increase in your inner yuan. It was comparable to one or two month of the normal training of a Spirit spring expert.

After Ye Qingyu read this, he was exceedingly shaken.

The value of this [Mysterious heaven pellet] was hard to imagine.

If this fur pill formula was circulated, it was enough for all the major factions of Deer mountain range to bleed over this. Between martial artists, it was enough to set off foul wind and bloody rain.

He did not just know how this pill formula had arrived in Li Shizen's hands.

It was a heavy present.

Ye Qingyu read it tens of times, etching the contents of the pill formula deep into his heart. Afterwards, he kept the pill formula beside his body at all times. As for the wooden box that held the pill formula, Ye Qingyu left it behind in the Ye residence.

Outside the ice doors, cold air whistled pass.

Ye Qingyu planned, after he had arrived within Youyan pass, to think of a plan to train in the concoction of pills. The best result would be that he would be able to produce the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] by himself. With such a method, his rate of training would be even faster.

The night darkened.

Ye Qingyu lay down on the ice bed, practicing according to the nameless breathing technique. Gradually he entered into a blank state of mind, as if he was in the depths of his sleep.

Very quickly, the sounds of the snores of the four military officers around him was able to be heard too.

It became chillier and chillier all around.

Without knowing just how long had passed.

Suddenly, a change occurred ---

The Ye Qingyu who had entered into a state of blankness, without any reason a spell of palpitation came over him, goosebumps rising. This type of sensation, was like a wild beast feeling the arrival of danger. In this instant, Ye Qingyu's instinctive reaction was quicker than his thoughts. Nearly subconsciously, he rolled over to the left.....

Ding!

A streak of cold sword descended on the ice bed that he was just lying on.

The bed of ice exploded into four or five pieces.

Ye Qingyu's inner yuan activated, his palm striking out with force. Using the force of the rebound, he sent himself flying six or seven metres back, using the corner of the room to stabilise himself.

Opposite him.

The military officer who had launched a sneak attack had astonishment on his face.

The one who had ambushed him, was one of the four military officers that had guarded and led Ye Qingyu to Youyan pass.

He had not considered, that this blade he had calculated many times over, would miss. In the instant it was about to chop apart Ye Qingyu, it was evaded. A person that was in the depths of their sleep, could really

have such a quick reaction.

“Why would you do this?” Ye Qingyu’s face began to become icy.

The military officer calmed down, and displayed a sinister smile upon hearing this. “Someone wants your life.”

After this, the long blade shook, yuan qi surging. The sword light was like a shooting star that struck to kill.

Ye Qingyu’s heart shivered.

This military officer was not weak. He was at least an expert of three Spirit springs.

Previously he had pretended he was only at the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level. Ye Qingyu’s experience was lacking, so he could not discern this fact.

Ye Qingyu moved, not counter attacking at first. Inner yuan activating, he flashed to the other side of this icy cave and evading that malicious strike.

The military officer gave a low shout, his blades incessant and unending. Like autumn waters flowing back into the sky, it was packed with cold. Another blade hacked towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was about to strike back when something outside of his expectations happened yet again --

Xiu!Xiu!

It was two rays of sword light that was enough to seep into one marrows. Without any omen from, it exploded from the other two beds of ice. Quick as lightning, one left and one right, it attacked from behind Ye Qingyu. In an instant, the tips of the blade had already descended on Ye Qingyu, the clothes being sliced apart by the blades.....

It was yet another sneak attack.

The two military officers lying on the ice bed in the depths of sleep, were also assassins.



In an instant, an absolute killing situation was created.

Ye Qingyu faced three opponents.

It could be said this was a situation of absolute death.

“Die!” The first military officer who attacked first laughed maliciously, his blades surging.

Ye Qingyu’s lips suddenly fiercely curled in an arc.

Silver light began to abruptly converge in the ice room.

A sword like autumn waters appeared in Ye Qingyu’s hands.

Little Shang sword!

This spirit weapon that had already been submerged and nourished within Ye Qingyu’s dantian desert world for months appeared for the first time. The moment that Ye Qingyu grasped the sword, it was as if the Little Shang sword had gained intelligence. It emitted clear humming sounds, vibrating slightly, the crystal clear light radiating all around the entire ice room.

The autumn water sword was radiant like jade or bone !

The sword that was born to shed blood for a just cause!

The glow of the light exploded.

Chi!Chi!Chi!

The light sounds of three pairs of clothes being ripped and sliced apart was heard.

The three long blades advanced and stabbed towards Ye Qingyu. When the tip of the blades reached Ye Qingyu’s body, they suddenly froze at that very moment. As if it was three poisonous snakes that had lost their lives, they could not advance an inch further.

Ye Qingyu was like a gust of wind, already two metres away.

The three military officers widened their eyes, their faces covered with shock and disbelief.

And in this instant, the Little Shang sword flickered. Like a sword hurricane, it passed by their bodies, reaping away their life. The speed of the sword was far too quick. Even though at this moment they could not see any wounds on their body, but the three military officers could clearly sense that their bodies had already been sliced deeply at the waist.

“Why.....is it.....like this.....” the leading military officer asked with great difficulty. “How did you know.....”

He did not understand why Ye Qingyu had such good fortune. He evaded his first strike then managed to dodge the confrontation of certain death.

After thinking it over, there was only one explanation—

That Ye Qingyu already knew long ago that he and the others wanted to assassinate him. He had long made precautions.

This was the only logical explanation

Today’s assassination had been in the making for a very long time.

According to the most optimistic evaluation of Ye Qingyu’s strength, he was only at the peak of the second Spirit spring stage. Any one of these three had the ability to kill Ye Qingyu one on one. Why was it that the three of them teaming up was instead slaughtered by Ye Qingyu?

Could it be that the previous reports and information gleaned, was wrong?

“Speak, who instructed you to kill me?” Ye Qingyu’s long sword pointed at the ground, his aura ferocious. He advanced forward step by step.

# Chapter 116: A type of belief

“Ahah, hahaha we will wait for you beneath the grounds.” The military officer emitted a hideous laugh, his figure swaying and falling.

The other two also fell at the same time.

The smell of blood permeated the air.

“The dead duck has been cooked, but its beak is still stiff.....But this was still a pity. Their strength could be counted as high. The elite of the army, really became assassins.” Ye Qingyu shook his head in disappointment. He had shown no mercy, because there was not a need to show mercy.

The three people would definitely not spit out the identity of the people standing behind them directing their actions. The opposing party had planned and schemed for so long, that they had even stretched out their hands into the Breakthrough barracks. Their identities were definitely significant. The three people were warriors who did not fear death, chosen very carefully for this mission. Even if they suffered torture and interrogation, they would not utter a word.

But what he could determine, was that the status and power of the person behind the scenes was definitely not simple.

After a slight consideration, he could largely figure out the identity behind this. The number of people in Deer city able to interfere in the business of the country's breakthrough barracks could be counted in two hands.

The person who wanted to kill himself became even clearer.

There was already an indistinct answer in Ye Qingyu's heart.

A clear and loud breathing coming from beside his ears.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look.

The last military officer lay on the ice bed, his snore like thunder. This person's ability to sleep was really too great; such an event like heaven

itself being overthrown had occurred in the ice room, and he as a martial artist did not sense anything. He was still in the midst of his sleep. Perhaps he would not even know how he died if Ye Qingyu had not stopped the assassins.

Ye Qingyu smiled, stowing away his sword and went to shake him awake.

The military officer squinted as he opened his eyes, staring at Ye Qingyu. Seeing Ye Qingyu's face, he was shocked. He quickly jumped up from the ice bed, rubbing his eyes and the back of his head: "Eh? What is it? Superior Ye.....is it dawn? Are we about to set off.....could it be that I have overslept?"

Ye Qingyu shook his head, pointing to the three corpses.

The military officer let out a shocked gasp, his sleepiness instantly gone. With a face of shock, he went over and observed for a while, saying: "Sword injuries.....an extremely fast sword.....what happened? There's enemies attacking? But, superior you.....just what is going on?"

Ye Qingyu retold what just just happened briefly to him.

"What? The military officer jumped up: "This is impossible?"

Ye Qingyu had a smile that was not a smile. "Why is it impossible? Do you mean, that I am lying?"

The military officer rushed to say his apologies. "Your subordinate does not dare. But its just that this matter is too bizarre. These three people entered along with me to the Breakthrough barracks, it has been four years already. At the start we enlisted into the military together. I understand them extremely well. To dare to ambush superior you, this is a crime punishable by death, this.....could they have gone crazy?"

The dismayed complexion of the military officer was astonished, evidently finding it hard to receive such news. He did not look like he was lying.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, not saying anything else.

This matter, was really bizarre.

“The truth behind this matter, we will slowly investigate.” Ye Qingyu gradually came in front of the window of the ice room, looking out at the heavy snow outside in the boundless white. Saying in a considering tone: “Don’t worry, I won’t blame you. There will be such a day that the water recedes and the rocks are exposed [1]. I have a feeling, that our journey will not be too peaceful.”

[tl: [1] = Truth comes to light. ]

Hearing this, the military officer was moved. Bowing his thanks: “Thank you sir, for your trust.”

Before he had finished.

Xiu!

Silver weapons, like a toxic snake coming from its den, shot out. In the instant that the military officer lowered his head, these weapons exploded from his nape without sounds or signs, striking towards Ye Qingyu.

The Ye Qingyu who had his back facing him absolutely did not notice such a minuscule movement.

The hidden weapon did not emit any sounds.

This was a sure kill.

But—

Ding!ding!Ding!

Rapid sounds of metal clashing resounded.

Accompanied by the clustered sparks, three silver needles enough to penetrate was sent flying. They landed against the walls of the ice room.

The Little Shang sword was held in Ye Qingyu’s left hand. He had long turned around, grinning mockingly at the military officer.

Seeing that his sneak attack had not been successful, the military officer’s reaction was very quick. Like a snake, he moved from his original position, flashing and widening their distance. After reaching ten metres

away, he had an expression of surprise at Ye Qingyu: “You.....so you had long make preparations. But, just how did you discover I was also a killer?”

“Haha, a Spirit spring expert, can he enter into such a deep sleep? So deep that he could not even sense such strong yuan qi fluctuations right next to him?” Ye Qingyu held the Little Shang sword with one hand, the autumn water body of the blade glowing and illuminating the ice room. Like moving quicksilver, he pressed forward step by step. “And in such a situation, he would still pretend to be asleep? Are you too stupid or too retarded?”

A streak of embarrassed anger immediately coloured the face of the military officer. “Die!”

The joints of his body moved like a machine.

Xiu!Xiu!

Countless dim glimmers pierced through space and struck at him.

Everyone of them were hidden weapons.

The hidden weapons swept through the air like a rain shower in a stormy gale, completely covering him.

In such a cramped ice room, to avoid this storm of concealed weapons was really something too hard.

But Ye Qingyu had never thought of evading.

He let out a long peal of laughter, taking a step forward. The Little Shang sword in his hand transformed into a gale of swords, not retreating but advancing forward instead.

DingDingDingDing! !

There were constant sparks shining in the air.

The torrential rainstorm of concealed weaponry was swept into the storm of swords and was then crushed and destroyed into pieces. Not one single hidden weapon could penetrate within three metres around Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu pressed forward, step by step.

The gaze of the military officer became fiercer and fiercer, struggling like a confined beast.

The unceasing piercing sounds continued. There were constantly all varieties of concealed weapons exploding from his hands, shoulders, waist, chest, knee and feet, all sorts of strange locations, making one unable to guard against it.

But no matter what the weapon, it could not pose as any sort of threat for Ye Qingyu.

Holding the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu was like a warrior holding an umbrella in the turbulent rain. No matter how fierce the rain was, the water could not get near his body.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu was already three metres close from him, the military officer realised that he had already lost the most ideal distance to launch his hidden weapons. His body shimmered, wanting to move away and continue to battle.....

Ye qingyu did not give him the chance.

““Storm of swords ! ”

The [Storm of swords], one of the four moves of the unmatched general was used. The power completely exploded.

Ye Qingyu's body transformed into a flow of light, one man and one sword moving at great speed. In a moments time, he had completely covered the distance between the figure of the military officer and himself.

The wind of blades passed by.

Then it stopped.

Ye Qingyu halted his intertwined footsteps.

The Little Shang sword in his hand, was not dyed with a hint of blood, still as clear as water.

Behind him.

The military officer had a sinister expression, his mouth opened wide. His figure was frozen, not able to throw his hidden weapons anymore. There was a strange whimpering emitting from his throat, and in these gurgles, five or six jets of blood spat out. His body fell over like toy building blocks, transforming into six or seven irregular pieces.

Ye Qingyu turned around.

He turned and saw the hacked up corpse by his foot, shocking even he himself.

After being speechless, Demon king Ye had an apologetic expression: “Aiya, I’m sorry, I’m really sorry. My apologies, today is the first time that I used the [Storm of swords] in real combat and I am not completely familiar with it. I did not think its power would be so great, that it would hack you apart into pieces. I will definitely take notice for next time, and leave you with a whole corpse. ”

The door of the ice room.

The head of the guards and the other sentinels had finally arrived. hearing of the commotion, they finally rushed over. Shock was in their expressions as they looked at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu gave them a smile, and attempted to explain himself. “It has nothing to do with me, they wanted to kill me first.”

“This.....” The leader and the soldiers still had hearts filled with caution and suspicion.

Ye Qingyu could only say: “When I was in deer city, I managed to offend some people, therefore they decided to act against me in secret. These four officers, are the assassins that these people have arranged.....How about it, if I say it like this, can you guys understand?”

The head and the sentries still had gazes holding caution as they looked towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu stowed away the Little Shang sword back into the dantian



world in the Spirit spring to nourish, and helplessly rubbed his jaw. To add to his persuasive power, he took out the brass heroic medal, placing it into his palm and displaying it.

This was Ye Qingyu's attempt at adding to his trustworthiness.

He did not think, that in the instant they saw the military medal, all the suspicious contained in the eyes of the sentries completely vanished. It was replaced by an hard to describe admiration and worship. Their bodies even started quivering. The head of the sentries was especially moved, emotions in his eyes.

““Youyan pass [Return Point camp] sixteen year old veteran, head of the fifty fifth sentry post Yan Fan, pays respect to his superior!”

“We pay respect to our superior ! ”

“We pay respect to our superior ! ”

The head and the sentinels bent their bodies, doing the most standard imperial military salute.

Ye Qingyu was taken back.

He did not know whether it was a mistaken sensation, but in this instant he suddenly saw in the normal bodies of the old veterans, a radiance that even experts like Wang Jianru and the others did not possess. A feeling that was hard to describe using language completely enveloped Ye Qingyu in this moment. Ye Qingyu's impression of the old veterans greatly raised.

Ye Qingyu returned the military salute.

It was the his first military salute in his life.

His movements were somewhat stiff, but it was very correct.

Evidently, the medal that Ye Qingyu thought the greatest use was to threaten the nobles had caused the suspicions of the sentinels to completely extinguish. The military medal had a nearly holy power, a power that was akin to religion. The moment they saw this military badge, they chose to trust Ye Qingyu without any reservations.

To exaggerate even more, with this military medal in his hand, even if the real killer was Ye Qingyu, the others would still determinedly stand on Ye Qingyu's side.

Ye Qingyu felt that he had previously underestimated the power of this military medal.

"Sir, let us take care of the corpses....." Yan Fan already began to consider matters from Ye Qingyu's perspective. "

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Yan Fan and the others began to clean the ice room.

This head of the soldiers personally inspected the four corpses of the military officers in detail, doing a detailed record for future investigation. On the record, he signed his name personally demonstrating that he was willing to be a witness in the future, and asked for Ye Qingyu's further opinion.

"Can the formation start conveying now?" Ye Qingyu was still concerned about this matter.

The head shook his head, shame on his face.

"Try it again more, I'm not in that a hurry....." Ye Qingyu said: "You don't need to have that much pressure...."

Before he had finished.

Boom!

A terrifying energy, struck against the formation on the outer of this watch post. Nearly in a split second, it destroyed and annihilated the formation that was enough to receive the full power strike of someone at the twenty Spirit springs stage.

The icy rocks around the sentry post was completely broken apart.

Within the ice room, the earth began trembling and quaking.

"Just what is happening?" Ye Qingyu said blankly.

"Ambush!An enemy is attacking! Quickly send out the signal of attack!"

The expression of the head and the sentries, instantly became serious.

# Chapter 117: Snow ground dragon ape

Boom!

It was another horrifying strike, descending from the heavens.

The earth shook and the mountain quivered.

Accompanied by the huge noise of something rupturing, the icy peak behind the watch post began to feel the pressure. Finally under such an onslaught, an enormous crack appeared. The icy layers constantly broke apart, and piece after piece of icy rocks weighing over thousands of pounds fell. Beside the peak, the several ice rooms were also smashed apart. Before the sentries in the rooms had the chance to escape, they were swallowed by the ice and snow.

“Quickly go, leave this place.”

Ye Qingyu's complexion greatly changed, loudly screaming orders.

Fissure after huge fissure appeared on the wall of the ice room they were in. The top layer of ice curved incessantly above them, about to collapse.

“No.....” Yan Fan gave off an despairing and painful howl.

Because he saw with his own eyes, ice room after ice room collapsing. Along with the destruction, he saw his comrades of these four or five years, being mercilessly swallowed by the ice. One person within having just ran to the entrance was crushed underneath a huge piece of ice descending from the skies. He instantly dyed the snow with blood, one hand extended outside from underneath the boulder.

The difference between life and death, was only one instant.

The previous instant, was life.

The next instant, was death.

“Hou ! ”

In the terrifying bellow of rage, a enormous snow ground demon beast, extended his large malevolent head from behind the collapsed icy peak.

This was the originator of this disaster. A monster that looked like a ape but was not an ape.

Amidst the collapsed ice rocks and white snow, this beast had a white face and large mouth, scarlet eyes, the pupil of its eyes just like a blood reservoir. One metre long fierce teeth was extended outside his mouth. Fifty metres tall, the body was exceedingly. Covered with long white fur, it had four arms. In its huge hands it was holding the snapped off ice peak, using it as a weapon, constantly striking it on the collapsed icy layer.

Snow ground demon beast.

And it was even a snow ground demon beast that had a relatively pure bloodline.

“It’s a [Snow ground heaven ape].....Heavens, why would such a demon beast appear here? This is impossible?”

A sentry screamed tragically, having already lost all hope.

The Snow ground dragon ape was a high class demonic beast. Legend has it that they were the descendants of the ancient silver dragon, possessing an endless power in its body. It was once used as the most optimal tool for carrying heavy weights by both the God and Devil race and had participated in many large scale battles during the God and Devil age. Although that era was far, far away, and the bloodline was completely different nowadays but it still possessed a certain intelligence. The power of gods was not something an normal Spirit spring expert could withstand.

The Snow ground dragon ape should be a demon beast that only appeared within the Youyan area. Why would it appear here all of a sudden?

Although the sentries of the military were resolute but they could not withstand the strike of such a demon beast.

A calamity had descended.

Boom!Boom!Boom! !

The [Snow ground dragon ape] swung the icy peak in its hands, treating it as if it was a massive staff. Holding it within its four arms, it constantly smashed it against the icy layer.

Under the terrifying force of this beast, an earthquake was undergoing everywhere. The icy rocks broke apart, and crack after crack fissured on the ground!

A piece of ice boulder tens of metres wide, fell from above their heads.

“Leave! First leave here then speak!”

Ye Qingyu roared loudly. From his inter dimensional pouch took out the Inexorable spear, striking out.

Boom!

The spear met with the enormous boulder. The inexorable spear bent with a curve that was enough to shock one's eyes.

“Scram off!”

Ye Qingyu loudly screamed, his arm exploding with force. With a boom, he rebounded away the descending ice boulder. The rock carrying with it over a hundred thousand pound of force in the impact, was directly sent flying by his spear.

The huge beast was not only creature possessing great physical strength. This was also Ye Qingyu's special battle method.

Yan Fan and the others recovered, wiping their tears. Biting their teeth, they rushed out from behind Ye Qingyu.

Hong!Long !

The room that was cut into the icy peak crumbled behind their heels.

If they were later by a second or two, they would have been completely covered under.

Ye Qingyu swung his spear, the spear dancing like a dragon in his hands.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

The momentum of the force emitted was like thunder, ice and rock shattering.

Yan Fan and the others, only felt a roiling thunder booming from beside their ears. Icy fragments scattered, The falling icy rocks from above them, was met with and sent soaring away.

After several breaths, the six people finally came to a outside area where there were not any icy rocks collapsing from above them anymore.

But at this time, the entire sentry post was collapsed. The watch post was constructing relying on the mountain, the back of it facing a naturally formed enormous icy peak. At this time, the [Snow ground dragon ape] had crushed apart the icy peak. Apart from Ye Qingyu and the other five people escaping fortunately from this disaster, the other tens of people had all perished.

Fan Yan and the others looked with amazement towards Ye Qingyu.

They had never thought that the inheritor of the military medal would be this powerful. He looked young, but his strength was so great and his aura so valiant. No wonder that he was able to become a military officer at such a young age.

“First I’ll slaughter that beast, to avenge our brothers!”

Ye Qingyu looked at the rubble of the sentry post and the dead soldiers buried under. His rage could not help but soar into the heavens. Amidst the shocked exhalations of Yan Fan and the others, he flew through the sky, his spear piercing out like lighting.

The fierce dragon pierce of the golden armoured king.

The [Snow ground dragon ape] roared with rage and the icy peak in his hand struck out like a long cudgel.

Boom!

The ice peak shattered.

The enormous figure of the [Snow ground demon beast] was forced to retreat a step backwards by this impact.

Ye Qingyu let off a low grunt, his body being sent flying backwards and striking on a icy boulder far off. The ice cracked apart, and his figure was buried by the collapsing ice and snow.

“Superior.....” Fan Yan and the others screamed in panic.

Xiu!

The long spear exploded from the ice

The Ye Qingyu who was holding the spear with one arm, followed behind the spear and soared into the skies yet again.

“I am fine. You guys first go find a place to hide.” Ye Qingyu’s voice reverberated throughout the dark and icy night. “Beast, today I will definitely slaughter you!”

Xiu!

**【Banner of Heaven and Earth】!**

A part of the Inexorable spear descended from the heavens, quick as lightning. Bringing with it a force that was like thunder and faster than the speed of sound, the spear was nailed onto the shoulder of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

“AoAoAo...”

The [Snow ground dragon ape] let out a painful roar, pale silver blood spurting out from his injury. It’s vicious nature was completely provoked. The other three arms grabbed towards Ye Qingyu.

“Beast, I’ll ram you to death....Fierce dragon pierce!”

Ye Qingyu’s crazy nature was similarly invoked. He did not evade or dodge, the other half of the Inexorable spear stabbing out. Once again, he performed the [Fierce dragon pierce] of the four moves of the golden armoured king. Under the explosion of this technique, it headed madly like a mountain landside towards the [Snow ground dragon ape].

Boom!

One man and one ape violently struck against each other.



Fan Yan and the others hid behind a comparatively safe ice boulder, completely dumbfounded.

They had experienced countless fierce battles in the life before, but they had never seen that the human race would use such a crude and brutal battle method to fight directly against the [Snow ground dragon ape] possessing divine strength. It was a hard object striking against a hard object. The Ye Qingyu that was burning with a will to do battle was even more like a vicious beast than the [Snow ground dragon ape].

Boom!

A large and small humanoid shape exploded apart.

Ye Qingyu was once again struck against the icy ground resulting in the creation of a human shaped crevice.

[The Snow ground dragon ape] body that was huge like a hill was also forced back, stumbling tens of steps. Its blood was like a fountain that shot out from the three or four injuries in it's chest. His entire chest was sunken in, with a human shaped indent. Who knew how many parts the bones inside had broken into.....

“AoAoAo.....Hou!Hou!”

The beast completely went mad.

He possessed some rough intelligence, and was able to sense the terror of the person in front of him. But to be provoked by such a tiny life form made him unable to contain his rage and anger. He struggled to scramble up, bellowing and charging towards the place that Ye Qingyu had just fallen. ....

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

The ground started quaking.

“Protect our superior!”

Fan Yan and the other held their weapons, preparing to rush out.

“Step backwards, let me handle this beast.””

A noise sounded. Once again, Ye Qingyu's spear was like a dragon, breaking apart the ice and soaring out.

【Protection of Heaven and Earth】 !

Inner yuan activated and yuan qi spurted out from Ye Qingyu's body. It was as if golden dragons were entwined around his body. From far away, it seemed that his entire figure was enshrouded by a golden light, inner yuan forming a protective field five metres from around him that greatly increased Ye Qingyu's defensive abilities.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

A man and a ape once again rammed against each other.

This was once again an absolutely berserk and mad battle.

In front of the enormous [Snow ground dragon ape], Ye Qingyu was like an ant facing an elephant. But the force he emitted, was absolutely not tiny. It was completely enough to fight against the huge beast in front of him. The man and the beast were sharply opposed to each other, with neither party willing to give an inch. It was a meeting between the copper pan and the iron brush. The surrounding ice layer broke into who knows how many parts, crack after crack appearing on the ground.....

Fan Yan and the others witnessed this scene with their mouths open and eyes wide.

"This superior.....is somewhat brutal." A sentry mumbled.

"Not only brutal, he is ferocious." Another sentry said with his mouth open. "Too violent, this is really too violent."

Fan Yan could not hold back a smile, stowing away the shock in his heart. Giving them a glare, "If you still have the mind to chat, then quickly make the preparations to depart. Given that the [Snow ground dragon ape] has appeared in such an area, I fear that this matter will not be simple....."

Before he had finished.

"AoAo....." The [Snow ground dragon ape] gave off a tragic howl.

Peng!

A bloody and huge arm, was directly torn from it's giant like body.

The wrist of the torn apart arm was held in Ye Qingyu's embrace.

"Aaaaaaa, Die, die die"

Ye Qingyu was completely in some sort of berserk state. The arm he had torn apart, he treated it as if it was a weapon. Striking using his makeshift cudgel, he fiercely struck the body of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

The dragon ape also went berserk.

Peng!

Ye Qingyu was slapped away, landing on a icy rock far off.

The clothes on his body was shattered into scraps, piece after piece flying away like butterflies. His muscular body was exposed. The berserk Ye Qingyu's muscles were heavily contracted. As if carved with blade and axe, his figure possessed a violent beauty.

And the silly dog Big Head that was originally sleeping in Ye Qingyu's chest, jumped out shivering.

The him that had just awoken, still was not entirely clear on just what the situation was. With confusion in his heart, he surveyed the surroundings, not knowing what had happened.

But in the next instant, his nose suddenly smelled something. Nose sniffing, his gaze converged very quickly on the enormous arm of the dragon ape in Ye Qingyu's embrace. The fresh and faintly moving meat along with the fragrance of the meat and silver blood, made the silly dog's gaze begin to glint with a light.

In that instant, he was not confused anymore.

The little fellow let out an excited yelp, not able to restrain his saliva. He panted and charged over.....

# Chapter 118: Just what is this

The other side.

Ye Qingyu did not take notice of this scene.

“Come, beast, come again.....”

Ye Qingyu was in a berserk state. Throwing away the enormous arm in his hand, he rushed forward yet again.

Big Head let out an excited bark. Like a streak of lightning, he charged forward. Leaping on the arm of the massive ape that had been torn apart, he gorged himself happily.

Peng!

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu managed to tear another arm of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

“Huchi Huchi, Wuwuwuwu!”

Big Head once again panted excitedly and bounded over.

The massive arm of the ape that he was devouring was already finished. What was left was only fresh white bones, with not even a shred of flesh remaining. Furthermore, in each of the bones, there were two little holes used to crack the bone open. The bone marrow had been entirely sucked out.

“What is that thing?” The sentries were dumbfounded.

“Are my eyes mistaking me.....” The sentries rubbed their eyes, and then saw a white ball of light circling the second arm of the huge ape at high speed. Nearly in an instant, the arm was similarly sucked dried and transformed into pearly white bones.

“It seems like some sort of thing from the superior’s body?” The sentries did their utmost to recall where this creature had originated from.

“Could it be a pet that the superior is raising?” The sentinels asked with a considering tone.

“What nonsense are you saying.” The head of the sentries Yan Fan gave them a glare. “Be careful and cautious, protect the superior.....”

Saying this, Yan Fan abruptly realised that there was no way they could interfere in a battle of this scale. They could not be said to be protecting Ye Qingyu at all. Yan Fan unconsciously blushed with shame. But his gaze was suddenly drawn to an object next to the white bones. There was some sort of thing shining with a golden light: “Just what is that, go and see.....”

The group avoided the ripples emanating from the battle, skirting around the snow waves and icy rocks from far away. They went over and had a look.

It was a golden wrist protection for the beast.

The gaze of Yan Fan and the others became serious, lifting the golden wrist protection up for inspection. It was around a hundred pounds of weight. The diameter of the wristband could entirely encircle the three or four of them together. Stupidly heavy, there was some sort of special pattern engraved on the surface that had an unknown meaning. This pattern was intricate, and was absolutely not something that the demon beast could create naturally by itself. Very evidently, this gold wrist protection band was originally worn on the body of the [Snow ground dragon ape], but the fur of the Snow Ground dragon ape was too long and had covered it. Only when the arm was completely devoured, was it exposed.

“This dragon ape seems to be raised by someone.....” Yan Fan’s mind suddenly realised this problem at this time.

“Huchi, Huchi Huchi Huchi!”

A strange noise was heard.

The several people turned around and looked, seeing a little white dog the size of their palm behind them. He had fallen back from the arm and was currently crouched in front of them. He was sticking out his little pink tongue, the little white milk teeth in his mouth glinting with little sparkles. With a curious expression, he was evaluating Yan Fan and the others.

“A very cute little fellow.” The compassion of the sentinels was instantly invoked.

“Don’t move.” Yan Fan shouted clearly. “It should have been him.” He pointed towards the devoured arm of the huge ape where only white bones remained.

“it shouldn’t be, how could such a little fellow ....” The sentries still had suspicions.

Before they finished.

They saw the jaw of the silly dog Big Head shake, as if something was being forced out, then a terrifying thing happened ——

The originally adorable jaw suddenly became larger, larger and larger. In the blink of an eye it was four or five metres tall, and the little pink tongue had become a barbed and bloody tongue. The cute little milk teeth became like rows of steel swords, and then from inside this terrifying jaw, something came. A completely clean and enormous white bone was vomited out from the throat.

It was a main bone from the arm of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

After the silly dog Big Head had vomited this humongous bone, the jaw returned to its original appearance. Dainty and cute, the little pink tongue licked the lips and jaws.

Seeing this scene, cold sweat poured from the sentinels.

No one felt the little fellow was adorable anymore.

“Huchi Huchi....” Big Head lifted his head to look up at the people, a strange sound emitting from within. He evaluated the five people with curiosity, a trace of saliva dripping from the corner of its mouth”

“Would it eat even us.....” One of the sentinels whispered.

“Is this the pet that superior Ye raised or not.” The sentries was somewhat nervous, seeing the saliva of the little fellow. They felt that in the eyes of this little dog, they held no difference from a delicious arm of the dragon ape.

“Huchi Huchi!”

Big Head hopped left and right.

The speed was extremely rapid. When it jumped, it was like a bolt of lightning whistling through the air. As if by teleportation, he constantly changed his position. The eyes of Yan fan and the others could not keep up with that sort of speed. Only by following it for several breaths of time, the sentinels felt as if their eyes did not belong to themselves any longer, their eyes spinning.

“Wuwuwu!”

From the mouth of Big Head, saliva flowed out. He stared at the five people, constantly nearing.

Xiu!

He suddenly jumped up, charging towards Yan Fan.

The originally small jaw, already showed signs of turning large.

Shit !

He wants to eat me?

The head of the sentries, Yan Fan was shocked.

At this time——

Pak!

Ye Qingyu suddenly appeared in front of Yan Fan and the others and slapped the silly dog that had nearly turned into a streak of lightning flying away.

“Wuwuwu, Huchi Huchi!” The silly dog very quickly rushed back over, squatting in front of Ye Qingyu. He had an appearance that he had been extremely wronged. Black and large watery eyes gazed towards Ye Qingyu, indicating that he did not understand why he was struck.

Ye Qingyu wiped away the frost on his face, and could not laugh or cry seeing this. Pretending to be greatly angered, “You idiot that only knows how to eat. I have always endured the fact that you can eat so much. Who

would have thought that you dared to eat people now. Is it that after a while of time, you will even eat me?” ”

“Huchi.....Huchi!”

Big Head quickly rushed to put on an expression. He indicated that he thought Yan Fan and the others were the enemies and this was all just a misunderstanding. Then he came over in a flattering fashion, jumping and rubbing his head against Ye Qingyu’s leg, sticking out its tongue in flattery. He indicated that he would absolutely not eat Ye Qingyu, that he was a very obedient dog.

The little fellow was only a dog, but the expression on his face was extremely rich and agile.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu was able to understand what he meant with just one look.

“You can eat so much, can you help and eat that large monkey?” Ye Qingyu panted roughly, pointing at the [Snow ground dragon ape] that was also breathing in a similar state.

During the course of battle, the situation of the [Snow Ground dragon ape] had already become incomparably grievous.

Of the four arms, three of them had already been torn and ripped apart by Ye Qingyu. The white bones of the chest was exposed, and its eyes had nearly been struck blind, nearly not even able to stand stably. It supported itself against a humongous icy rock. Silver blood constantly dripped from the wounds, flowing down to the ground and instantly freezing into ice.....

The beast was very vicious. After receiving such injuries it was still incomparably ferocious.

“Hou Hou Hou ! ”

Supporting itself against the icy boulder, it let out a roar. It’s ferocious killing aura shot into the heavens. Transforming into a bloody gale, it charged towards Ye Qingyu and the others.

Fan Yan and the others could not help but cover their ears, their heart



palpitating. They were so shaken that they were near dumb.

Ye Qingyu's brow also knitted.

And the stupid dog who only knew how to eat, because he had committed a wrong, was currently flattering and attempting to curry favour. He was fawning over Ye Qingyu. The bellow of the ape shook him till his fur stood up. In a flash, like a mad lion that had its mate snatched away during mating, he suddenly became furious. Lifting his heads, in a split second his jaw expanded, transforming into a ferocious bloody mouth that roared back at the [Snow ground dragon ape]!

"Huchi Huchi .....Wu Wu!"

A weak and sissy like voice sounded.

Compared to the sound waves of the [Snow ground dragon ape] that could create wave after wave of aftershock, the voice of the silly dog was completely like a fly buzzing.

Ye Qingyu could not help but cover his face.

This was just too shameful.

From now on, he decided he would not let this adorable and stupid dog to make a disgrace of himself anymore. At this moment, Ye Qingyu really wanted to throw away this thing that only knew how to eat. This was really too useless, apart from eating, he possessed no other ability whatsoever.

Yan Fan and the others, could not restrain a smile.

This little dog was too dimwitted , too cute.

"Woof Woof.....Huchi, Wuwu!" Big Head did his best, continuing to roar.

At this time, Ye Qingyu could not force himself to watch any longer. He grabbed Big Head's neck and lifted him up. He was about to say something, but suddenly felt that something was not right. Turning his head to look, he discovered that the heavily injured [Snow ground dragon ape] twenty metres away had long stopped roaring. It was hiding behind

an icy rock. As if it was a little child that was badly scared, it was quivering, whimpering noises coming from its mouth.

Just what was this?

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look back at Fan Yan and the others.

The five people was still in a fossilised and frozen state.

Ye Qingyu again looked around at his surroundings. There was nearly nothing else that had appeared.

Could it be?

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the thing he was carrying in his hand. The silly dog Big head had a face of flattery, panting with his tongue and trying to curry favour with Ye Qingyu. A ridiculous notion could not help but be born in his heart. Could it be that the roar of this little thing, had really scared the [Snow ground dragon ape]?

This can't be true.

Could it be that this glutton was the natural enemy of the [Snow ground dragon ape]?

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then decided to do a brave experiment.

He lowered his head and gave a grin to the silly dog Big Head. Then he directly threw the glutton, sending him sailing in the direction of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

“En, even if the glutton is not the natural enemy of the [Snow ground dragon ape], from the speed he just displayed, he can escape. At the most, he will be wounded, how could he die so easily.....” Demon King Ye persuaded himself in such a fashion.

But the scene after, also made Ye Qingyu enter into a fossilised state.

The stupid dog Big Head, after being thrown on the body of the [Snow Ground dragon ape], did not display any expression of fear whatsoever. On the contrary, the [Snow ground dragon ape] did not dare to move at all. It was quaking, a low pleading noise coming from its mouth.....

But it had not use whatsoever.

Big head transformed into a streak of light, rapidly rotating around the [Snow ground dragon ape].

After approximately ten breaths of time. The [Snow ground dragon ape] had disappeared and was replaced by a complete skeleton. The white bones did not even have a shred of flesh remaining on it. From far away, it seemed like a large scale corpse that had undergone thousand years of wind and this was the fossilised skeleton.

The stupid dog Big Head stood on the skeleton, licking its jaw in satisfaction.

“Fuck.....”

Ye Qingyu felt slightly powerless in his language.

Just what was this.

The little thing really caused a living dragon ape to turn into a skeleton just like nibbling at it like corn?

First, lets not discuss why it would have such an ability. If your father I, knew about this long ago, then I would have long barred the doors and just released the dog. There was no need to fight for half the day, tiring himself out till he was red in the face.

Ye Qingyu beckoned to the silly dog Big Head.

Xiu!

The little fellow appeared in a flash in front of Ye Qingyu, panting under his feet. He stuck out his tongue and pretended to be adorable.

# Chapter 119: The Chessboard in the air

Your uncle, don't try to act cute !

Demon King Ye silently cursed at the little dog his heart, placing the glutton into another entirely different level. To devour a live [Snow ground dragon ape] tens of metres tall, could this be believed? If not for seeing it with his own eyes today, even if Ye Qingyu would not believe it even if he was beaten to death.

But after experiencing the power of this glutton, Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that he should be a bit gentler towards him.

What if this glutton's craziness was abruptly invoked and he felt famished? If Big Head wanted to eat him, what could he do?

At this time, Ye Qingyu realised, that even eating was a technique.

After encountering a great enemy, he could just close the doors and release the dog. Then the opposition could just be eaten, hahaha!

"Haha, not bad, Big head. This matter was done beautifully....." Ye Qingyu's tongue flapped, originally wanting to give more compliments. But after realising that Fan Yan and the others were still present and he, as the master, should not flatter his dog too much. So he stopped, rubbing the head of Big Head instead.

"Huchi Huchi.....Wu Wu!"

Having received praise, Big Head was very excited. Using his head to rub against Ye Qingyu's palm, he acted coquettishly.

Thankfully!

Apart from being able to eat, Big Head's was evidently not that smart. He did not mind in the slightest about the brutal treatment he had just received. If Ye Qingyu just treated him a little better in the future, perhaps the trash technique of eating would become useful.

Fan Yan and the others, after this huge shock, finally managed to get their brain juices flowing again. Their thoughts and consciousness slowly

recovered.

So this terrifying and bizarre dog was really a pet superior Ye kept.

This really was what kind of person kept what kind of bird.

Only such a strange and violent youth like superior Ye, could raise such an outwardly adorable but inwardly terrifying beast as a pet.

“You are not allowed to eat people in the future, do you remember?” Demon King Ye was busy instructing Big Head.

He had also been frightened by the scene of the the silly dog Big Head rushing towards Fan Yan and the others. This was not a good omen. Ye Qingyu was really afraid that this glutton would run out and eat people in the future. With the amount he could consume, he could definitely devour hundreds if not thousands of people. This was a matter not impossible for Big Head. At that time, the trouble that would result from this would definitely be great.

“Huchi Huchi!”

The stupid dog Big Head consecutively nodded his head. He jumped on Ye Qingyu’s shoulder, indicating that he understood.

“Superior, this [Snow ground dragon ape] is most likely raised by someone.....” Yan Fan interjected. “I feel that this matter is not simple. It is very possible that this dragon ape was brought here by someone.” The head of the guards possessed wealthy experience. He told Ye Qingyu about what he had discovered and handed over the golden wrist protection.

After examining it for a while, Ye Qingyu agreed with Yan Fan’s conjecture.

Until the present, the beasts that the human race were able to tame only consisted of Spirit beasts and Demon beasts.

Spirit beasts were lifeforms that inherited the spiritual influence of Heaven and Earth. Born with intelligence, they could communicate and interact with humans. There were some Spirit beasts that grew up along

with humans from a young age, causing feelings being born between them. After they had grown up, the Spirit beast would be able to become their battle companion. And as for demon beasts, they were a branch from the demon race. Brutal and vicious with an innate savageness, they possessed a rough intelligence. They had a hard time differentiating between enemy and friend, and there were specialists who tamed these beasts specifically. If they were trained from young, after they grew up, it was very possible they could become a great aid during battle.

The [Snow ground dragon ape] was a fairly high class demon beast amongst the vicious beasts. If there was someone that had trained it from its young, then it was very possible that it was controlled by that person.

From this golden wrist protection, this [Snow ground dragon ape] did not come from the wild. It should be a battle companion that had been raised by humans.

And this would also explain, why there would be such a strong ferocious beast appearing in the hundred broken mountain range.

But once this theory was established, this represented a far more serious problem.

Since the [Snow ground dragon ape] was a battle pet raised by someone, then this meant the attack on the watch post was definitely not a coincidence. Very possibly, this was a scheme planned by some faction or expert. The death of the dragon ape did not signify the end of this matter. More horrifying incidents, was about to occur.

Ye Qingyu realised, that along with the previous assassination incident, the force behind the [Snow ground dragon ape] could have been targeting him.

“I’m sorry, I’ve dragged you into this.” Ye Qingyu apologised to Yan Fan and the others.

The watch post was destroyed, tens of sentries died tragically.

I did not kill Bai Run, but Bai Run died because of me. [1]

[tl: [1] = A famous saying in Chinese history regarding the story that

someone indirectly caused Bai Run to die through their actions. ]

Ye Qingyu's heart was immediately enveloped in ire and guilt.

He would definitely find the person behind this, to settle this blood debt.

"Superior, there is no need to say such things. "Fan Yan said emotionally. "No matter who it is or what the force that wants to target you, we will definitely not retreat. We are just a group of old veterans that possesses nothing and have nothing to rely on. Although we may not have been able to sacrifice our lives on the battlefield, but when we retreated from the front lines, we were able to fight alongside you. This is our honour. Although tens of brothers have died, they have realised the oath that we made the moment we joined. The died with no complaints. For us, to fight with a holder of the military medal is our greatest honour. We will die with no complaints."

"Die with no complaints."

"That's right, superior."

On the faces of the other sentries, there was a faint red from being emotionally moved. A glimmer of light was in their eyes.

Ye Qingyu did not know what he should say.

Even though his identity right now was a military officer, but he had not truly provided any assistance as of yet to army. At this moment , he was incapable of comprehending the conviction of life and death the soldiers had and the interdependence between soldiers. He was incapable of understanding the heroism of advancing wave upon wave, stepping into the breach to replace fallen comrades all for their honour. He was incapable of viewing death as a return home. But the words of these veterans had greatly shaken Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense a great power on the bodies of Fan Yan and the others. This was not the martial power of yuan qi. This power may not be able to explode with killing force in a split second. But, this force, was what had truly allowed the human race to exist in this cold and merciless world. It was the pillar of their spirit.

“Good, we will bury the brothers that have fallen, then quickly leave from here.” “Ye Qingyu did not tarry any longer.

“There is no need.” On the face of Fan Yan and others, there was a tragic determination written on their faces. “As an soldier, to be buried between Heaven and Earth is long something we have prepared for. Our brothers, to be shrouded in ice and snow, to be able to sleep in the embrace of the pure white snow is already fortunate. Compared to our comrades who died in the mouths of the demon race, they are luckier many times over.....we should just leave here as quickly as possible.”

To prepare against the next hidden attack, they must quickly depart from this destroyed watch post.

But just where could they go right now?

“I know that there is an underground cave twenty miles from here. The location is hidden, it should be comparatively safe.....” One of the sentries said, his eyes brightening.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head in agreement. “Fine, lets first go there to hide for a while.”

Before he had finished.

Pok !

A spurt of blood came from Ye Qingyu’s mouth. His facial colour became candle yellow like thin gold. 。

“Superior.....”

“Superior, are you okay?”

The sentries were deeply shocked.

Ye Qingyu rubbed off the traces of blood at the corner of his lips, shaking his head. “I’m fine, its only just that I suffered some injuries during the battle with that beast.....No matter, lets leave here first.”

“Superior, let me carry you.” Fan Yan said.

“There is no need to make such a fuss. Quickly go, I can walk by



myself.” Ye Qingyu laughed.

The other sentries, had already uncovered some of the bowls, ladles and so on from the ice and snow cover along with several torches. After tidying the essential goods, under the lead that armoured sentry, they left at high speed.

The vast wind and snow, completely covered a person's track.

The night was long and slow.

As if it had no end.

.....

At the same time.

In a icy peak hundreds of miles from here

Two figures were sat on a flat icy boulder on the peak, sipping tea and playing chess.

The smooth icy rock about an acre of land in size had evidently been created using a supernatural sword technique to chop the ice peak in half. It was creating by force. On the edges of the icy rock, there were numerous strange symbols and formations that were etched using a sword. They fluctuated with a pale silver light, the formation absorbing the yuan qi of heaven and earth. The use of this was to create a pale layer of light, covering the entire platform.

Within the light layer, there was no wind nor snow.

A clay teapot larger than the palm, floated in mid air. Beneath it, was a violent flame. Steam rose from it and the fragrance of tea wafted in the air.

It was unknown what kind of tea was cooking in the tea pot but just a smell was enough to make one carefree and relaxed.

Two people were sitting and drinking tea. One had greyish white hair, and one was completely covered in a black robe.

As the fingers of the two people pointed at the air, yuan qi pieces would

appear. With a flick of their wrists, a chessboard manifested in the air.

“An hour has already passed, why has [Killing star] not yet returned?” The grizzly haired man placed a white piece.

“Your heart is disturbed.” Under the cowl of the black robe, a low chuckle emitted. A black piece created from black yuan qi was placed on the board. “I’ve won. Since Ye Qingyu has a treasure on him, he naturally has cards hidden under his sleeve. You made a beast to do your matters for you, this is far too great a responsibility for him. Most likely, your beast has already been killed.”

“Shut your mouth.” The grizzly man was angered, and waved his hand. The chessboard in the air dispersed, the white and black pieces turning into mist and disappearing. He rose quickly, saying: “The strength of the flesh body of [Killing Star] can be compared to a normal ten Spirit springs expert. To act against Ye Qingyu and tens of veterans, just what problem could it encounter.....”

Before he had finished.

Kacha.

A light voice was heard.

On the wrist of the grizzly hair man, a jade bracelet shattered, falling to the ground.

The colour of his face abruptly changed.

Since the jade bracelet was shattered, this represented that [Killing Star] was dead for sure.

This jade bracelet belonged to the Snow ground dragon ape called [Killing Star]. It was it’s soul bracelet.

The black robed figure began laughing loudly. “Liu Yuancheng, you feared Ye Qingyu’s military identity and became overcautious, not daring to act with your own hands. To send a beast to your job, could this be counted as trying to steal a chicken but losing the rice used to lure it? I’ve long said, to do great matters, one must also have great courage. You, are

still not enough.....”

“Shut your mouth.”

The grizzly haired man roared in rage.

He was namely the registrar of the registrar office in Deer city, Liu Yuancheng.

“[Killing star] is the battle companion I raised since I was small, it was like my son. Ye Qingyu, it must be you. You killed my Liu Lei, you killed my adopted son Sun Yufu, and now you’ve killed yet another one of my sons.....I swear, I will definitely turn your bones into ashes.” Liu Yuancheng, with ash coloured hair that stood up like a mad lion rose, angered to the extreme.

“Hoho, just speaking a few words, who doesn’t know how to do that.” The black robed man sat where he was, with cold mocking laughter and phrases.

Liu Yuancheng let out a bellow of rage, turning into a streak of light, charging into the vast night.

Peng!

The light barrier of the ice peak was destroyed by the impact.

The wind and snow whistled entirely through the sky. The winds like electricity, the pieces of snow like blades.

But it could not invade at all into the metres of space around from the black robed man.

The black robed man slowly stood up. With a beckon, the clay teapot was in his hands, the violet flame disappearing.

He drank a sip of tea in the pot, and emitted a bizarre laugh: “You avenge the murder of your son, I’ll take my treasure.....You best not have any other intentions, otherwise, hehe.....if not for relying on you to confirm the location of that little brat, why would I team up with a retard like you.”

# Chapter 120: Treating the injuries

The ice cave that the armoured sentry had mentioned, was something that he unintentionally discovered during hunting.

The life of a sentry was dry and tedious. Some sentries, during the times where the weather was not particularly bad, would choose to go out and hunt to relieve their boredom. This could also aid in the accumulation of food stores. The sentry, during one of his hunts, fell into an icy crevice by accident. He thought that that he was dead for sure. But what he discovered instead tens of metres below the icy layer, was a naturally created ice cave. It was like a labyrinth one could use to shelter from the ferocious wind and snow.

He brought Ye Qingyu and the others near this area, spending over an hour of time before finally locating the ice cave.

After descending tens of metres below the ice crevice, the noise of the outside explosive wind became much less. It made the entire world seem to be much quieter.

The icy cave was like an underground palace made of ice and snow. The space below was exceedingly large. Corridors after corridors of ice passageways led to different areas, with different honeycomb like ice rooms of all sorts and sizes scattered around. The air was exceedingly fresh and clear, suitable for living in.

Fan Yan and the others found some ice rooms that were comparatively hidden, lighting a fire.

The dim yellow light shined in all directions, passing through the reflection of the ice walls. The glow caused the entire ice cave to become beautiful.

After the reflection of the lighting, brilliant rays of multicoloured lights were from. It was as if this was a palace from legends.

On the way here, Ye Qingyu had spat out a high quantity of blood. After entering and settling down, he sat in a meditative position, circulating his

qi to treat his injury.

The injury was far more serious than what he had initially imagined.

The battle power of the [Snow ground dragon ape], purely came from the toughness of his physical body. After exchanging several blows with it, Ye Qingyu discovered this aspect. So he chose to fight fire with fire. He wanted to determine, just what kind of level the power of his physical body had reached and whether it was possible to fight against this gigantic beast.

Because, after the exploration of the dragon's den in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], he discovered that the physical power of his body had explosively grown. It had risen to such a level, than even he himself was not clear just how strong his physical body was.

After the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu had not encountered any sort of strong opponents. Therefore, there was not a need to explode with his full strength to do battle.

Meeting the [Snow ground dragon ape] today, could be counted as finding a enemy to practice on.

But the power of the [Snow ground dragon ape] far exceeded Ye Qingyu's current level. But after Ye Qingyu went berserk, he felt there was a strange energy fluctuating in his bones and limbs. As if this energy was endless and would never dry up, it surprisingly suppressed the [Snow ground dragon ape]. He even managed to tear apart three arms from the dragon ape.

This was absolutely a performance that exceeded Ye Qingyu's normal level.

Of course, Ye Qingyu also paid a heavy price.

Only he himself knew, just how many heavy strikes of the [Snow ground dragon ape] had he suffered.

From his outer appearance, there were no signs of any injuries. This was due to the fact that after undergoing that experience in the dragon's den, the skin and flesh of Ye Qingyu's toughness had risen exponentially.

Blades and swords would find it difficult to hurt him. Even though the fingernails of the [Snow ground dragon ape] were sharp, but they could not break apart Ye Qingyu's skin and flesh.

The injuries he sustained, were all internal.

Ye Qingyu felt like body had been hammered heavily countless time by a steel mallet, as if his body had been crushed apart. Between his skeleton and muscles, there were many fragments of hidden injuries. But from the outside, everything seemed fine and intact. This type of pain was hard to describe.

Using qi to activate his inner vision.

"My inner organs really has been displaced due to the force of the strikes....." Ye Qingyu could not help but feel frightened after the events. "Thankfully, with both the nameless heart sutra and inner yuan to treat my injuries, I should be fully healed within five days.....Mother, it seems like I can't go that hard in the future."

His inner yuan activated.

Within the dantian world, in the three Spirit springs, yuan qi springs spouted water pillars hundreds of metres high.

The water rushed out from his dantian world, transforming into inner yuan that entered Ye Qingyu's bones and limbs. It nourished and healed the injuries he had sustained.

Ye Qingyu sat cross legged, ripples after ripple of yuan qi fluctuating surrounding his entire body.

Yan Fan and the others protected Ye Qingyu in the stone room. They also hurriedly utilised this time to recover.

The watch post was destroyed, and the formations for teleportation and communication had also been broken apart. For this period of time, they were in a state where they lost contact completely. A certain of time was needed before the military would notice the disappearance of the watch post and send experts to investigate. At least in half a month, they had no method of receiving any help whatsoever.

Yan Fan and his subordinates were currently discussing something.

They had experienced hundreds of battles, and had undergone countless dangerous situations. In such a circumstance, they still remained very calm. They were discussing what further protective measures they should take during this period of time. On the body of Yan Fan, was a map belonging to the military that showed the distribution of the various watch post as well as the comparatively safe routes. According to the instructions of the routes, for an expert of the Spirit spring state to reach the next sentry post needed approximately half a month of time. This was under the prerequisite of being able to oppose the Snow ground demon beasts nearby.

Right now, the greatest threat was the invisible hand behind the scenes.

The person that was able to control an adult [Snow ground dragon ape] was definitely not simple.

If their route was discovered by this person behind the scenes, then they had only one path left: death.

Time passed second by second.

The sentries began using the cooking utensils they had uncovered, beginning to prepare food.

A while later, the fragrance of meat wafted within the ice cave.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Big Head was salivating, circling around the large bowl, and sticking out his tongue at Fan Yan and the others in a pleasing fashion. He completely did not have the attitude of a super battle companion that had just devoured an entire [Snow ground dragon ape].

Fan Yan and the others carefully played with Big Head to keep him happy.

The glutton very quickly familiar lay down and reclined in the embrace of the sentries, allowing them to scratch him.

The sentries was curious, but also at the same time they did not know whether to laugh or cry. Superior Ye’s battle companion, really was too

close to humans and his outer appearance was too cute. If not for the fact that they had personally witnessed him devouring a [Snow ground dragon ape], the sentries really did not dare to believe that this was a battle companion.

Time quickly passed on.

The sentries did not know how many bowls of meat they had cooked.

The tens of bowls that they had prepared all ended up in the stomach of Big Head.

In truth, the sentries had never seen a dog that was so able to eat. Not to mention the fact that he had eaten a dragon ape, simply devouring ten cooked ten bowls of meat was too shocking. After it was cooked and still very hot, Big Head would just open his mouth and suck it into his stomach. He was not afraid of the heat in the slightest.

The sentries were about to cry.

If this continued on, all the meat they brought would be completely finished. And in the coming half a month of time, they could only suffer hunger.

But this was the dog of Superior Ye, and they could not find a rope to tie around his mouth —what was even more tragic was that if they fought, the sentries would not win against that dog. If not for Ye Qingyu's intervention, they would most likely have been eaten by this big headed dog and became human skeletons with not even a hint of flesh.

“Huchi Huchi.....!”

Big Head's mouth was dripping with saliva, staring at the twelfth bowl of meat.

“What should we do?” The sentries looked at each other.

Yan Fan could not laugh or cry.

After the sentries had made preparations for the given the twelfth bowl to be devoured by this dog, Ye Qingyu finally stopped in the treatment of his injury.



Puk !

He opened his mouth and spat out a black jet of blood.

The blood was black as ink, and when it fell to the ground it would emit an odour of sharp unpleasantness.

“Superior.....” Fan Yan and the others quickly rushed over and surrounded him.

Ye Qingyu wiped away the traces of blood at the corner of his lips, a smile appearing on his expression. “I’m fine, the gathered blood located in the hidden injuries of my body has all been forced out. This is not too large a matter. After treating it several more times, the inner organs can return to their original position.....En, it’s so fragrant, did you prepare meat?”

“We just finished cooking.....” The sentry said half his sentence then suddenly thought of something. He turned his head to look.

The bowl was long empty.

Big Head was excitedly panting as his tongue licked the last drop of the meat stew into his mouth.

.....

.....

“Just what has happened?”

When Liu Yuancheng saw the gigantic skeleton of the dragon ape in front of him, apart from feeling rage, he also felt slightly perplexed.

What had happened?

After the soul bracelet had shattered, Liu Yuancheng realised that [Killing star] had already met its doom.

Just what kind of method, that after killing the dragon ape, would only leave the bones of the corpse behind?

Liu Yuancheng’s heart, faintly felt that he had overlooked something.

He uncovered the entire collapsed sentry post, finding twenty one

corpses. Included within, was the four military officers that he had arranged beside Ye Qingyu. Then he carefully examined the identity of these people, meticulously investigating the injuries sustained by these people.

“Ye Qingyu is not within the dead.....”

“The four military officers died from a sword, and this should be from the same sword. Their bodies is nearly sliced apart.....a extremely fast sword!”

“Within the fragments of icy rock, there are also destroyed hidden weapons.....”

Liu Yuancheng closed his eyes. In his mind, he imagined everything that could have happened.

The death of the dragon ape, made him angry. But apart from anger, there was also a shred of apprehension. Originally everything was in his control, but after losing the secret dragon ape that he had always treated as a card under his sleeve he began to have doubts. Just what kind of secret was hidden on Ye Qingyu?

“No matter what, the watch post is already destroyed. Haha, even if the military investigates, they would think that it is destroyed by the demon race. They won’t investigate anything leading to me. As for that Ye Qingyu.....” The ash coloured hair of Liu Yuancheng danced in the strong winds, his face sinister and malicious. “The watch post is already destroyed. Just where can you escape. Even if you hide yourself underground, I can dig you out like digging a rat from his hole.”

Liu Yuancheng activated his yuan qi, energy waves extending in all directions, searching for their tracks in all direction.

At the same time.

A thousand metres away.

A black robed figure stood silently in the snow and wind, a low chuckle emitting from his throat.

.....

Ye Qingyu was treating his injuries yet again.

The movement of his inner organs had injured his foundation. He needed time and rest before he could fully recover.

The Ye Qingyu right now, absolutely could not fight anyone. Otherwise, his inner organs would jolt about and the injuries he had sustained would worsen.

The destruction of the sentry post was already six hours ago.

One could imagine, that outside the ice cave was brightness and light.

Two hours later, Ye Qingyu awoke from his state.

The injuries had gotten a little better, but still not completely healed

“No matter what, I must treat my injuries then travel to the next sentry post.” Ye Qingyu made his decision. First, he must recover his strength. Once he recovered, everything was possible. The ice cave was a comparatively safe location. If he went out, and was discovered by his enemies, he was dead for sure.

Fan Yan and the others also agreed on this point.

But they did not think that not even a hour later, danger would descend.

Liu Yuancheng had found the place they were hidden.

# Chapter 121: Chase

“So you people really were here ! ”

The lanky figure of Liu Yuancheng appeared with his long robe flapping and grey hair rustling. He walked step by step into the ice cave that was located underground.

He blocked the entrance, a strong yuan qi fluctuation burning around his body with snow and wind following him. His gaze like electricity. With just one glance, he was able to find Ye Qingyu. Cold sneering, “You really are a brat that is hard to deal with, to have hidden here. But it ends here.”

“So it really was you?” At this moment, Ye Qingyu was able to fully understand.

If it really was Liu Yuancheng behind the attacks, then everything that had happened before could be explained. At the very least, he had the ability to place spies in the [Breakthrough barracks], and was able to instruct the four military officers to assassinate him. And this [Snow ground dragon ape], was most likely the ferocious beast that this old bastard had raised.

“You should have long realised it was me.” Liu Yuancheng pressed forward step by step, a powerful aura that cause the flame on the torches to flicker and sway rapidly. The entire underground cave became many times dimmer. His murderous intent was like a real physical object: “Did you really think I was afraid of you? Did you really think I would let you go? My Liu-er, was he killed by you?” “

Ye Qingyu remained silently for a breath of time. He knew that today could not end well.

Liu Yuancheng was the registrar of the city leader office. Not only was his position prestigious, but his personal strength could not be underestimated. He was absolutely not someone he could fight against currently.

“That’s right, Liu Lei was killed by me.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Not raising him well, is the wrong of the father. To raise your son into such a calamity, he should have long been killed by someone else. He brought his thugs to kill me, and was instead killed by me instead. He deserved it.”

“Hahaha, you say he deserved it.” Liu Yuancheng began chuckling madly.

The laughter filled with sorrow and rage echoed throughout the icy cave.

“Today, I will kill you ten thousands time, and make you beg for life and death. I will make you regret have ever arrived to this world.” Liu Yuancheng was a like an enraged old lion.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile. “If you want revenge, then just come. But this matter has nothing to do with the sentries. Let them go.”

“Childish.” Liu Yuancheng was a like a cat playing with a mouse, coldly sneering: “Why are you pretending to be a hero in front of me? Rotten retard! Would I let them live and allow them to become witnesses who will attest against me? Everyone that is with you today, needs to die too. You tell me to let them go, but I’ll instead slaughter them all instead. I’ll make you watch their death with your own eyes.”

Saying this, he casually swiped his arm.

An azure yuan qi surged out. Like a explosion of thunder, it exploded towards Yan Fan

A terrible yuan qi fluctuation.

Ye Qingyu had a scare, his figure flashing. Blocking in front of Yan Fan, both his fists struck out.

At this moment, the full power of Ye Qingyu exploded. The meridian around his back swelled, the bones and flesh shuddering. As if nine enormous dragons were migrating, there were the faint roar of dragons inside his body. His fist struck out, an uninterrupted snarl that met the azure lightning.

This was the most powerful strike that Ye Qingyu could produce.

Boom!

The green lighting was forcefully dispersed by this attack.

“Puk.....Chi!”

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and spat out a jet of blood. He was shaking as he flew back, landing on an ice wall ten metres of away. Accompanied by the sound of the impact, the ice walls collapsed. Half of Ye Qingyu’s body was covered.

“Superior?”

“Protect the superior!”

The sentries frantically ran towards Ye Qingyu, uncovering Ye Qingyu from the ice.

Ye Qingyu’s face was deathly pale, a scarlet red trace of blood on the corner of his lips. He could feel an acute and persisting pain in his body. His muscles and bones had gone soft and he had nearly lost all sensation in his body. He did not even have the energy to stand up anymore. This was especially so for his internal organs. As if it had been burnt by a scorching flame, it was so painful that Ye Qingyu could see golden stars.

“The inner organs has gotten displaced again before it could recover.....this will not end well.”

Ye Qingyu dripped cold sweat.

“So your body was suffering an injury already, hahahaha.....” After a slight surprise, Liu Yuancheng began laughing madly. “It really is according to Heaven’s will. It seems like that today is the day that you are fated to die in my hands.”

Ye Qingyu coldly snorted, struggling to stand up.

But his legs crumbled, the pain in his body making him nearly faint. He was not even able to stand stably.

“Ahaha, look at your crippled appearance. You still want to do battle

with me?" Liu Yuancheng was venting the pent up wrath, feeling pleasure in this moment.

He had a face of contempt as he said: "I have seen far too many geniuses. After becoming dominant for a while, they don't realise how high the Heavens are or how deep the Earth is and want to fight. But in the eyes of the older generation, they won't even know how they died in their final moments. In Deer city, I have already endured for so many days. No matter how high your tail is raised, you will ultimately die in my hands."

Ye Qingyu spat out a goblet of blood, biting his teeth and forcefully activating his inner yuan.

But in an instant, he could feel that the inner yuan in his body was in complete disarray, hard to control. Like steel needles, not the slightest degree of strength could be mustered by him.

"I'll cover. Protect the superior, quickly go."

Yan Fan placed Ye Qingyu on the back of one of the sentries. He himself madly screamed, unsheathing his long blade and charging towards Liu Yuancheng.

The sentries was blank for a moment, then let out a grievous roar. Without the slightest delay, they carried Ye Qingyu and left in the closest passageway.

"Old Yan, take care of yourself."

"Boss Fan, we will still be brothers in the next life."

The other sentries, did not turn their heads as they loudly screamed. They followed the armoured sentry into the corridors of the ice cave.

On their face, were steaming hot tears.

Each of them was clear, that the moment they turned around, they would say an eternal farewell.

But turning and fleeing at the first instance, was not because they feared for their lives.

As an soldier, sometimes there were times where you needed to do things more terrifying than death.

Yan Fan final strike was like a moth rushing to the flame. The reason he did this was to struggle for ten breaths of time, to allow them to bring Ye Qingyu safely away.

This tacit understanding that did not need prior planning, was cultivated during these ten years of military life together.

The movements of the sentries were rapid and decisive. Even for an expert like Liu Yuancheng, he absolutely could not react. By the time he recovered, the four sentries had already carried Ye Qingyu into a ice passageway. In the blink of an eye, his figure could not be seen anymore.....

Yan Fan wielding the long blade, charged at him madly.

“Damn cripple, scram!”

Liu Yuancheng struck with his palm, yuan qi shooting out.

Green lightning tore apart space with a whistling sound.

Fan Yan completely could not evade before he was struck. The long blade in his hands was shattered, the broken blade exploding and embedding into his body. His figure was sent soaring away, and a palm print was shockingly evident was on his chest. His body was nearly completely pierced through by this palm strike.

Liu Yuancheng silhouette was quick as electricity, rushing towards that icy corridor.

But the moment he lifted his feet, he abruptly felt something constraining his leg.

Lowering his head to look, he saw the Yan Fan who had not yet died completely. Once again, he had inconceivably threw himself over. Both his arms were fiercely gripping the right leg of Liu Yuancheng, his facial features ferocious as he stalled for time.

“Idiot.”



Liu Yuancheng's face darkened, his hand moving.

Boom!

The body of Yan Fan blew apart.

The light in the cave was particularly glaring to the eyes as the scarlet red blood and the white bones shattered and scattered in the ice cave.

But even if so, the last complete arm of this head of the watch post was still tightly gripping onto the leg of Liu Yuancheng. As if it was made of steel, the fingers even tore apart the clothing.

"Unlucky."

Liu Yuancheng cursed. His leg faintly quivered, and then this arm was also scattered into flesh and bones.

After this slight stalling of time, the sentries had already ran to somewhere he could not see anymore.

"Hmph, lets just see where you can escape to."

Liu Yuancheng coldly sneered, activating his inner yuan, his figure like lightning. He chased after into the icy passageway that Ye Qingyu and the others had disappeared into.

.....

"Let.....Let me down"

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth as he said these words.

He was enduring so that he did not shed tears.

In the moment that he saw Yan Fan dash out bravely with no thought to his own personal safety, Ye Qingyu was once again stunned by this leader of the sentries.

Even though they had only met for two days of time, but this was already not the first time that Ye Qingyu was astounded by these sentries. Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu could sense something special on the bodies of these soldiers that a normal person did not possess. Every time, it was able to give him a humongous impact.

“Superior, as long as the green mountain is still present, there is no need to worry about there not being enough firewood.” The armoured sentry gripped Ye Qingyu tightly.

The group did not tarry in the slightest

The terrain of the ice cave was tangled and complicated. Furthermore, the surface of the ground was also very slippery. Certain parts of the corridor was completely like a slide. The sentries carrying Ye Qingyu, directly slid through the icy terrain.

The rough and frantic breathing of the others, sounded in this silent and icy cave.

They did not know where the end of the ice cave was. They also did not know whether there was a path in front of them.

But evidently at this time, this was not the moment to ponder such questions.

The first thing they needed to do, was to escape the chase of Liu Yuancheng.

Otherwise, everything would be wasted.

Ye Qingyu struggled several times to get down from the back of the armoured sentry.

But the acute pain in his inner organs, made him unable to move. Originally his wounds was about to recover. But after receiving the strike of Liu Yuancheng, injury had stacked upon injury. It made his situation even more serious. He had basically lost all his ability to do battle.

Approximately ten minutes later.

The air in the corridor had already gradually began to turn thin.

This naturally formed underground labyrinth was as if it would never reach an end.

Another ten minutes later.

In front of them, a small scale space like that of an large stone house

appeared.

In the walls of this space, there were tens of holes that were approximately two or three metre wide. It was so deep that one could not see the bottom. It was unknown where these holes led to.

It was another honeycomb like area.

The sentries slightly caught their breath in this icy area. A sentry soundlessly gave out several hand signals, and a faint smile was seen on the face of this sentry. Waving to the other people, he entered one of the icy holes, stopping two or three metres within the icy hole.

And the armoured sentry and his other companions, carried Ye Qingyu. They chose another icy corridor, rapidly entering deeply.

Ye Qingyu at this time, had already entered in a psuedo state of unconsciousness.

.....

A short while later, the figure of Liu Yuancheng came. Like the reaping Death god, he finally arrived in this honeycomb like ice area.

After sweeping his gaze around this environment, he hesitated slightly. He did not think that so many passageways would appear.

As he was about to closely observe and enter into one of the divergent corridors, he saw something. Abruptly, in the corner of his eyes he could see something flashing in one of the passageways to the left.. Liu Yuancheng shouted loudly. Without taking more time to think deeper, his figure transformed into a streak of light that chased towards the flash in that passageway.

“Just where are you running out, quickly scam out.”

His eyes was able to discern, that the figure running was namely one of the sentries. Liu Yuancheng was delighted.

But in this corridor, the ice floor was far too slippery He did not dare to put any force at all into his footsteps. Otherwise, if he managed to vibrate the icy walls enough, the entire passageway of the icy cave could

collapse. In this icy cave that extended who knows how deep underground, if it was destroyed then even he himself would be hard pressed to escape a sure death.

Because of this apprehension, during the rapid chase of Liu Yuancheng, there was no method that he could use to capture the sentry that was escaping and sliding away like a mouse.

“Looking to die!”

Liu Yuancheng became impatient.

After chasing for ten breaths of time, the sentry that was frantically escaping in front of him suddenly halted.

The distance between the two shortened constantly.

There was no longer any path left in the corridor. It had reached the end.

“Haha, why do you not run?” Liu Yuancheng pressed closer and closer, taking step after step forward. “Where’s the others? Where did Ye Qingyu go?”

The sentry turned back, looking at Liu Yuancheng

He was breathing roughly, sweat dampening his entire body. He had activated his inner yuan fully to escape, but in the end he was not Liu Yuancheng’s opponent.

But seeing the person whose strength was greater than him by who knows how many times, seeing this major player whose status was more prestigious than him many times over, the countenance of the soldier very quickly calmed down.

He stood silently where he was. Facing the enraged Liu Yuancheng, there was not the slightest trace of fear. In his eyes, there was only contempt and mockery. With both hands on his waist, he began chuckling loudly.

“What are you laughing at? You are asking to die! Quickly speak! Where are they?” Liu Yuancheng felt that something was not quite right.

“Why don’t you guess.” The sentry winked.

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

And at this time, a bizarre energy, abruptly broke out from within the body of the sentry. As if it was the eruption of an volcano that could not be halted, it exploded.

Boom!

Self destruct.

Blood and flesh flew, white bone shattering.

A terrifying energy exploded towards all directions, bursting towards Liu Yuancheng.

Liu Yuancheng waved his hand, green yuan qi activating. Like a forcefield, it rebounded the fragments of white bones that shot towards to him.

“You deserve to die.” Liu Yuancheng was both shocked and angry.

He was not an idiot. He very quickly understood that he had fallen into their scheme.

The sentry had led him here, and the others must have brought Ye Qingyu to escape into another corridor.

However, as he was angry, Liu Yuancheng also felt a deep unrest and shock.

He had occupied a high position for a very long time. In normal days, he would often interact with the elegant high class nobilities, and he had seen many geniuses in his time. Because his eyes were higher than the crown of his head, low class martial artists and soldiers were an existence that did not enter into his consideration at all.

In the eyes of Liu Yuancheng, these soldiers were like ants. Stupid and vulgar, extremely dirty, they only had possessed a cheap life. They were only something of value if they could be of use to him.

But today, he witnessed these low class martial artists that he looked

down on, surprising him. Time and time again, they made him return without any achievement whatsoever.

Liu Yuancheng could not help but admit that even he was moved.

The lowly soldiers that in his eyes that were not even worth a single ounce, would show such bravery. They did not fear death in the slightest.

He stood where he was, silent for ten breaths of times. Then he returned to the original route.

Very quickly, he once again returned to that honeycomb like room.

Amongst the tens of icy corridors, after a detailed examination, he finally discovered some traces of Ye Qingyu and the others . He continued to chase on.

.....

An hour later.

A similar incident occurred yet again.

“Speak, just where had Ye Qingyu gone?” Liu Yuancheng had chased the sentry to where he had nowhere else he could go.

“Peh.” The sentry spat out a mouthful of saliva, unsheathing the long blade at his waist. His face was ferocious as he charged forwards and he swung his blade through the air.

Liu Yuancheng faintly swiped his arm across.

A ray of green yuan qi struck out like thunder.

The long blade in the hands of the soldier shattered. His figure was sent flying back, landing on the ice wall. Every bone in his body shattered into who knows how many pieces.

“Speak, and I’ll give you a quick death. If you don’t say, I’ll make you have a fate worse than death.”

Liu Yuancheng was enraged to the extreme. The sinister light in his eyes was flickering. His entire person was like a volcano that was about to erupt, gloomy and dreadful.

“Haha, hahaha.....” The soldier laid in the pool of his own blood. He could not move in the slightest, but he emitted a forced laugh. “Come, come, come, come and try. What ever method you have, just try it. Lets see if your grandfather I will let out even a single sound to beg for mercy.”

Liu Yuancheng was enraged.

Lifting his hand, a powerful yuan qi surged out. In a split second, it turned everything below the sentry’s waist into meat paste.

Who would have guessed, that the sentry did not even look. He lay silently on the ground, a faint smile on his face as he looked at the arch of the icy ceiling. He said in a low voice, “Brother Yan, wait for me under there. Don’t make me lonely on the yellow river road.....”

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

His fingers flicked out.

A gust of wind rushed out, piercing through the head of the sentry’s head.

Ultimately, he had given the sentry a painless death.

Because through such a demonstration, Liu Yuancheng already understood that the sentry had long embraced death. Even if he used the cruellest of torture on his body, it was no use. It was just a waste of time.

Apart from being angered, in the depths of Liu Yuancheng’s heart, he was ultimately somewhat impressed by these lowly soldiers.

“Just what kind of method did Ye Qingyu use, that these soldiers would be so hell bent on saving him?”

Liu Yuancheng could not understand.

He turned and left in another corridor.

.....

.....

“Who are you?”

Ye Qingyu looked at the black robed man in front of him.

He had finally recovered slightly, and could barely walk.

And beside him, there was only the armoured sentry left.

Previously to delay the chase of Liu Yuancheng, they had volunteered to stay behind. Time and time again, they had diverted Liu Yuancheng. This held no difference to staying and dying.

Ye Qingyu once again hated the pain of being so weak.

He had long regarded these sentries like his family.

But he was forced to watch as they were slaughtered, with nothing he could do.

Strong!

I need to become powerful.

Ye Qingyu had never wished for power like he did now.

But first, he had to live on.

He endured his sorrow, not turning around to attack Liu Yuancheng. With the support of the last armoured sentry, he had finally escaped from this place.

Who would have thought, that a black robed person would appear and block his path.

“Who are you?” Ye Qingyu asked.

“A person that has always been very interested in you.” The voice of the black robed person was so low, that it was as if it came from his chest. But unquestionably, his strength was terrifying. It was tens of times greater than Liu Yuancheng, because Ye Qingyu was able to feel, a suffocating pressure he had never experienced before.

This was a terrifying expert.

And he was an enemy and not a friend.

“So you’ve managed to escape to here. to protect you, the little ants has really all died. A pity, ‘the ordinary man is innocent, but treasuring a jade ring can become a crime.’” The black robed man cackled, stretching out



his hand. “Fine, hand it over.”

Ye Qingyu was blank: “Hand what over?”

“If you hand over the treasure on you, I could possibly not kill you. I’ll give you a chance to live on.” The black robed man laughed strangely. “If you can escape from the chase of Liu Yuancheng, then you can live on.”

# Chapter 122: Human pill

“First let him go.”

Ye Qingyu pointed towards the armoured sentry next to him.

The black robed figure gave an indifferent gesture.:”Sure.” Again to the armoured sentry. “Fine, you can scram now.

The armoured sentry hesitated, looking towards Ye Qingyu.

“Go.” Ye Qingyu let out a bitter chuckle. “Brother, you must live on to let the others know, just what has happened in the fifty sixth watch post. Proclaim the fearless deeds of brother Yan Fan and the others to everyone. Make them know, just what is the dignity and honour of the sentries. ”

The gaze of the armoured sentinel, hesitated for a brief moment.

But in the next split second, his gaze once again became determined yet again.

“No, I cannot go.” The armoured sentry straightened his body, unsheathing the standard long blade at his waist. Blocking in front of Ye Qingyu, he said in a determined voice: “Big brother Yan told me to protect superior. Even if I die, I cannot even retreat one step. And as for the dignity and honour of the sentries, this is fought for using blades and spears and not by announcing. As long as we are able to achieve it, even if no one else knows, we can have a clear conscience.”

Ye Qingyu immediately had no words to say.

The black robed figure remained quiet as he watched this scene.

He was not impatient, nor did he hurry them.

Evidently from his perspective, everything was already in his control and within his grasp. After waiting for so many days, he was not impatient about this little delay.

“Just what kind of treasure do you want?” Ye Qingyu looked at the black robed figure. After thinking, he summoned the Little Shang sword, the

autumn water of the blade brightening up the dim environment of the cave. There was a strange chill. Ye Qingyu took a step forward. "This sword? Fine, I'll give it to you."

The black robed man let out a short laugh. "A poor Spirit weapon. How could it enter my eyes?"

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then brought out the glutton Big Head from within his chest. "Could it be him?"

The silly dog silently lay on Ye Qingyu's palm. It seemed as if Big Head had eaten too much. He seemed to have entered a state of deep hibernation.

The black robed man remained silent for a short time.

Then in his voice, became somewhat angered. "Ye Qingyu, my patience is extremely limited. Don't use such a stupid method, to provoke my bottom line time and time again."

Ye Qingyu stuffed Big Head back into his chest.

After thinking for a while, he finally understood just what the black robed man had came for.

After hesitating for a brief second, he summoned the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart] from his sea of consciousness. Placing it in his hand, "Fine, this should be what you have been wanting. Take it away, but, I need you to save him." Ye Qingyu pointed at the armoured sentry beside him.

He very much did not want to part with it.

But there was no other way.

Ye Qingyu knew the full value of this bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart] – it held practically no difference from a legendary martial storehouse. Ye Qingyu had already benefited greatly by only unlocking a tiny part of the contents. By handing over this bronze book, perhaps it was tantamount to giving up the opportunity to become a peerless expert.

Because of his situation, even if Ye Qingyu would die, he needed to fight

for it.

Even if he died, he would absolutely not hand over the Bronze book.

But right now, next to him, there was still the armoured sentry.

The sentries had already sacrificed too much for him. Ye Qingyu did not wish for anyone else to die for him.

But——

“Hahaha, are you pretending to be crazy.” The black robed figure began to shake with a low laugh. Within the laughter, there was type of omen contained with that seemed to signal the eruption of the volcano. “It seems like my manner was too friendly, that you would dare to act so recklessly. This is the last time I will ask. Will you hand it over or not?”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Could it be this black robed figure did not come for the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart]?

However apart from these items, on his body, could there be any other objects that could be counted as ‘treasures’?

The armoured sentry also stared with shock at Ye Qingyu.

He did not understand why he would tell the other party to take away his treasure when he was obviously empty handed.

Could he be intentionally playing with and teasing the black robed figure?

But no matter in what situation, superior Ye was the one in the right. Since he was the owner of the heroic military medal, then even if he sacrificed his life to protect him, it was worth it. Because every soldier understood what the military medal represented. To be able to obtain a military medal, at the very least they had done a great deed like saving an army of tens of thousands in number and turning the tide of battlefield. Just for this point alone, was enough for any soldier to feel that it was worth dying for.

And at this time, the armoured sentry did not feel nervous anymore.

He deeply breathed in, gathering energy, making preparations for his last battle.

“Just what kind of treasure do you want?” Ye Qingyu waved the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart ] in his hand, angrily saying.

The black robed man did not reply.

A shred of black yuan qi fluctuation, began to surge out from within his body.

A terrifying aura, made Ye Qingyu and the armoured sentry sense suffocation. They could not gather the intention to resist at all。

“It seems like you won’t cry until you see the coffin. ” The black robed man advanced step by step.

Ye Qingyu was enraged, about to say something, when a ray of light flashed in his mind. He turned to look over at the armoured sentry, then looked at the expression of the black robed figure, suddenly realising an inconceivable fact———

They could not see the bronze book.

No wonder.

The moment Ye Qingyu had summoned the bronze book, he had already made the preparations to let it go. He did not imagine that such a result would occur.

The secrets on the [Titled Fiendgod chart] were really far too many. It seems right now, only he was able to see it. Apart from himself, even experts like the black robed man apart from not seeing it, he could not even sense its existence.

This should have been a great and positive discovery.

He did not have to worry about the bronze book being stolen away in the future.

But right now, this was absolutely a great misfortune.

The black robed figure could not see the bronze book, and thought Ye

Qingyu was playing with him. Under his rage, he was about to rise and attack.

What should he do?

Ye Qingyu began to panic.

The next instant , the armoured sentry had already made Ye Qingyu's choice for him.

“Die ! ”

This sentry let out a low bellow, both hands gripping his long blade. Like a cheetah that slunk out, he charged towards the black robed man.

“Superior, quickly run.” The sentry madly screamed.

Ye Qingyu did not run.

Because the strength of the black robed was far too powerful. He could not escape at all.

“Jie Jie Jie Jie.....” A gloomy owl like hoot of laughter sounded. The black robed figure only lightly flicked his sleeve, then the armoured sentry was as if he was struck by an battering ram. He spurted with blood as he soared backwards. Every inch of the long blade had shattered, and there were constant sounds of bones fracturing and breaking within his body. In his entire skeleton, there was already likely not to be one intact bone within.

Ye Qingyu loudly exhaled, stretching his hand out and catching the armoured sentry.

“Superior.....” The sentry was having his last moment of lucidity prior to his death. A faint and calm smile was on his face. “I did not lose the face of brother Yan and the others. I protected .....the dignity of the sentries and.....and glory.”

Ye Qingyu hissed through his teeth with sorrow, hatred and madness.

He hated that the fact that this sentry was on the cusp of his death, but he did not possess the power to change anything.

“Superior.....I.....I have a little brother, in Youyan pass.....called..... called.....Ye Congyun, He.....he.....” As the sentry said this, two jets of blood suddenly spat from his mouth. The inner organs in disarray was shattering, and his body began twitching.

Ye Qingyu understood the meaning in his words.

“Rest assured, when I reach Youyan pass, I will definitely find him. I will definitely protect him. You can rest assured.....I swear.” Ye Qingyu made an oath, fighting against the mourning in his heart.

The armoured sentry passed away.

He was the youngest sentry in the group.

To do his duty, to protect his honour, he had died.

Ye Qingyu embraced the young corpse, speechless for a while. Then he abruptly howled to the heavens. Black hair badly standing up, the inner yuan flowing in his body madly activated. Withstanding the pain like being stabbed by ten thousand needles, he madly charged towards the black robed figure.....

The black robed figure flicked his hands.

Boom!

An explosion sounded to his ears.

Ye Qingyu could feel a burst at the pit of his stomach and a sweetness at the back of his throat. His entire body flew out.

This was his last conscious thought.

Then he fainted.

.....

.....

Who knows how long after.

Ye Qingyu gradually awakened.

His body was as if it was bathed in hot spring, a warm sensation

constantly able to be felt. There was a hard to describe comfortable feeling, as if he had once again returned to the amniotic fluids of his mother. This was a natural sensation, profound and mysterious. At this moment, Ye Qingyu could hardly describe it.

He struggled to shake his head, to allow his thoughts to become clearer.

What had happened?

Just where was this place?

Was I not killed by the black robed man?

Ye Qingyu was filled with questions.

The surroundings was completely dark, and he himself was as if was immersed in some sort of liquid. This feeling was extremely bizarre.

I did not die?

Could I be saved by someone?

What made him even more shocked, was that his injuries seemed to be almost fully recovered. His inner organs was not painful anymore, and his inner yuan flowed much more smoothly.

At this time—

“Haha, you’ve awakened?”

A familiar voice, was transmitted into his ears.

It was the voice of the black robed man.

Ye Qingyu shivered, suddenly realising that he had oversimplified matters.

“Just where I am?” Ye Qingyu loudly screamed.

He discovered, that his hands and feet could not move in the slightest.

The liquid in this space, had a bizarre and horrifying pressure, that fixed him stably in this place. There was a sensation like sitting and meditating.

“Don’t be afraid, you are in a very safe place right now.” In the voice of



the black robed man, there was a ridicule that made one quiver. “A little mouse like you, is not honest in the slightest. Since you won’t hand over the treasure on you, then I can only switch to a different method to deal with you.”

Ye Qingyu felt his blood run cold.

“I did not think, I did not think, I really did not think that a little brat like you has the rare [Holy body of the dragon’s blood]. In your body, there is the blood of the holy dragon flowing within. Hahaha, the [Holy body of the dragon’s blood], has already been extinguished for thousands of years, to be found by me. This is really an unexpected and pleasant surprise.” The voice of the black robed man had excitement and delight contained within.

“Holy body of the dragon’s blood? Just what is this? In my body, just why would there be the blood of the holy dragon?”

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt somewhat nonplussed and confused.

He continued to hear the mad laughter of the black robed man as he continued speaking: “As the saying goes, ‘to lose at sunrise, but gain at sunset’ [1]. Haha, heavens is not treating me too badly. Haha, not being able to obtain the treasure is fine. After I have refined you into a [Human pill] and ingest this pill, this can add five hundred years to my longevity. It will be enough for me to recover my youthful vigour. Haha, this is an opportunity that is even rarer than any treasure!

[tl: [1] = compensated for his earlier loss. ]

The delighted chuckle of the black robed man resounded from all directions.

Then Ye Qingyu suddenly felt a brightness above his head.

Light shined in.

The excited and sinister smile of the black robed man, appeared from above him.

Borrowing the light, Ye Qingyu carefully observed. He discovered that

he was confined within a two person tall copper ancient cauldron.

# Chapter 123: The fourth Spirit spring

On the lid of the brass cauldron that was one metre in diameter, there were indistinct engravings of birds and animals. They should be organisms of the distant past. The decorative design fluctuated with a strange beauty, whirling and rotating floating above the cauldron and letting out strange “chi, chi” sounds.

The pill cauldron that Ye Qingyu was located in was copper in colour, flickering and glimmering with the light.

His entire body was stuffed in the pill cauldron.

The space inside the pill cauldron was exceedingly spacious, but there was a pale yellow liquid within the inside of the cauldron. Everything below Ye Qingyu’s head was immersed in this body of liquid. There was a sensation similar to that of being prepared inside a medicinal wine.

It was unknown as to just what exactly the pale yellow liquid was. The liquid seemed to emit a faint fragrance. If one examined carefully, the yellow water seemed to be composed of all kinds of different ingredients with the discernible smell of Spirit herbs and precious medicines contained within.

“Haha, I understand now. It seems like the outside world has been misled. The reason that you were in the spotlight during the [Boundary canyon battlefield], was not because that you had a treasure on your body, but the [Holy body of the dragon’s blood].” The voice of the black robed man that came from outside the cauldron held a hard to disguise excitement. “But this is even better. For me, to refine a holy body of the human race into a human pill, is absolutely much better than whatever treasure, hahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu struggled for a moment.

His body quivered, but it was hard to break through the strange energy constraining him.

But it caused the pale yellow liquid to splash about, with some entering

his mouth that caused him to choke.....

“Haha, don’t hurry. It needs a total of nine days for the pill to be created. If you will is determined enough, than you can last for another six or seven days at least. Haha.” The voice of the black robed man seemed incomparably sinister. “Don’t fear, the hundred grass divine liquid within the cauldron is made from forty nine different types of Spirit herbs. It absolutely could be counted as a rare treasure. Did you know, that for a normal person to obtain even a drop of this divine liquid they have to pay a huge price? Right now, I am submerging your entire body inside. This can be counted as your good fortune, hahaha!”

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu was able to sense the inner temperature of the cauldron beginning to rise.

The yellow [Hundred grass divine liquid] began to emit a pale golden radiance, escaping from the gap at the top of the cauldron.

The medicinal fragrance inside the cauldron became more and more concentrated.

Ye Qingyu could not move in the slightest.

But when he swallowed in the fragrance emitting from the [Hundred grass divine liquid], he would have a feeling where he felt peaceful and at ease. The injuries inside his body were recovering at a noticeable speed. The hidden injuries in his flesh and bones began to disappear and the inner yuan that was in disarray gradually began to stabilise.

Ye Qingyu’s heart moved.

He did not resist anymore, silently practicing the nameless heart sutra, breathing in and out. He began absorbing the medicinal power of the [Hundred grass divine liquid] of his own initiative.

He would first treat his injury, then think of a way to escape.

The yellow lid of the cauldron rotated, whirling and spinning like a golden disk. The patterns of the birds and beasts already had no way to be seen. The golden dense mist did not have a way of surging out of the cauldron through the lid anymore. Instead, the steam rotated along with

the lid, vaguely turning into a chaotic state. As more and more gathered below the lid of the cauldron, it once again condensed and returned to within the cauldron.

Perhaps it was because his mood was good, but the black robed man said many things.

“I originally came to Deer city for another matter. Who would have guessed that matter would not succeed, but instead I would discover an unexpected harvest like you.....” The black robed man could not disguise his excited countenance.

With his age and experience, to lose his composure and become so excited, one was able to determine just how valuable the [Human Pill of Dragon blood] was

“Haha, do you feel your entire body is in a great state right now, and that your injuries are very quickly recovering?”

“This is because the [Hundred grass divine liquid] is healing your injuries and changing the composition of your body. Haha, did you know, to distil and create this hundred grass divine liquid, I have spent an entire hundred years of time. I’ve went over mountains and rivers, to gather the needed ingredients for this medicinal formula. Originally, it was intended to extend my life, but this time it will benefit a little brat. Haha!”

“I guess what you’re doing right now, is that you’re doing your best to absorb the [Hundred grass divine liquid] to recover from your injuries and raise your strength? You want to escape from the cauldron, is that correct?”

“Don’t dream. The [Cloud top cauldron] is something that I obtained fifty years ago from the excavating lands within an ancient relic. The wonders are endless. There has never been anything that is able to escape from the copper cauldron. Just give up. It is only through relying on the [Cloud top cauldron] did I receive the outstanding title of the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix]. “

The black robed man seemed as if he had suddenly transformed into a chattering machine, incessantly speaking.

Ye Qingyu was immediately taken aback.

“[Pill king of Azure Phoenix]? You are the Elder Chen that brought the expedition party from Azure Phoenix academy to White Deer academy?” Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and asked his question.

The black robed figure voice suddenly halted in his monologue.

After a short while, he abruptly began laughing crazily. “What does it matter if you know, as you are very quickly going to become a dead person. That’s right, I am the Chen Moyun of Azure Phoenix academy. Since you now know my name, then you can give up honestly, and die as a ghost that understands everything. This can be counted as your fortune.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

The [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], Chen Moyun, really was a famous and glorious title.

It was said that this person’s not only possessed great strength but he was also a high class pill master. It was said that his skills in refining pills had reached perfection and he had a vast circle of friends. He held great prestige amongst the ten academies. Many experts of the Bitter Sea stage had once begged him to refine pills for them. Within the Azure Phoenix academy, his status was even higher than those that possessed greater strength than him.

The reputation of this person was extremely high.

Who would have thought, that he would perform such a deed here.

Hon Kong had once reminded Ye Qingyu, that if he decided to go to Azure Phoenix academy, he must be wary of Elder Chen. It seems like Hon Kong should have discovered something about Elder Chen. Ye Qingyu had rejected the offer to go to Azure Phoenix academy, and originally thought he would have no interaction with this person. Who would have thought that this Chen Moyun would be so malicious and crafty, to have sneakily followed his tracks.

At this time, countless thoughts flashed by in Ye Qingyu’s mind.

But very quickly, he understood that now was not the time to ponder such matters. Immediately he concentrated, not paying attention to outside matters anymore. Activating the nameless heart sutra, he did his best to recover from his wounds.

Time passed by quickly.

In the blink of an eye, one day and one night had already passed.

The temperature of the copper cauldron became extremely high.

The hundred grass divine liquid had completely boiled, gurgling and surging. The golden stream it emitted became more and concentrated. Within the space of the cauldron, nothing could be seen anymore.

The clothes on Ye Qingyu, had already been completely dissolved. He was naked as he was bathed in this boiling divine liquid.

Thankfully, with the toughness of his current physical body it was not too big a problem to resist against this kind of temperature.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu's wounds had already fully recovered.

He attempted to break past the seal of the cauldron and escape out of the pill cauldron, but he was not successful.

The seal of the pill cauldron was far more terrifying than what Ye Qingyu had imagined.

"What can I do? Could it really be that I will die here?"

Ye Qingyu's brain quickly flickered.

"No matter what, I must live on." At this moment, Ye Qingyu thought of very many people. Familiar face after familiar face flashed by in his mind.

He thought of his parents long asleep in the ground. He thought of the last words of his father, telling him to go to the royal court of Snow country to take back something that belonged to him. He thought back to the death of his parents, that the truth had not yet been discovered behind their deaths. He thought back to the deathly pale face of the little loli Song Xiaojun and the smile of the sword immortal Wang Jianru. He

thought of Yan Fan and the sentries that had charged forward without any complaints.....

His originally hesitant heart, in this process, slowly became more and more determined.

Even if not for himself, but for people who died for him, for people who would miss him, he must live on.

Ye Qingyu's heart gradually became clear.

He did not think muddled thoughts anymore, concentrating fully. Using the nameless heart sutra, he continued to absorb the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid, transforming it into yuan qi that nourished him. His inner yuan under the medicinal power of the liquid and the cauldron, incessantly continued to rise.....

In the blink of an eye, another day had passed.

In total, Ye Qingyu had been cooking within the cauldron for a total of two days and two nights.

A little more than a quarter of the hundred grass divine liquid in the pill cauldron had already been absorbed by him.

Within the dantian world in his body, clouds and mist was surging. The fourth yuan qi kindling had already reached a state of completion. Ye Qingyu borrowed the power of the hundred grass divine liquid within the cauldron to open the fourth Spirit spring.....

Time passed second by second.

Ye Qingyu's consciousness, completely became immersed within the world in his dantian.

He did not know just how much time had passed.

Boom!

A yuan qi spring, in a split second soared through the skies from the yellow sands in his dantian world. Like a jade dragon water pillar, it snaked through the air. Ultimately it transformed into a large swathe of yuan qi rain that crashed down, nourishing the desert thousands of



metres around it.

The fourth spirit spring.

Success!

This was far sooner than the time Ye Qingyu had originally estimated.

After careful consideration, this should be due to the [Cloud top cauldron] as well as the [Hundred grass divine liquid] -- especially the latter. The liquid contained a large quantity of the essence of herbs and medicines. It was absorbed by Ye Qingyu into his body and transformed into yuan qi energy. Therefore, in such a short amount of time, he was able to reach the requirements to excavate the fourth Spirit spring.

Entering the stage of the four Spirit spring, had raised Ye Qingyu's power to an entirely different level.

An extremely powerful feeling, coalesced around Ye Qingyu.

He once again tried to break free from the restraints of the pill cauldron.

But he once again dejectedly found that the constraint was still effective. He still could not break apart the seal of the [Cloud top cauldron]. But his body was at least able to move a little. He was no longer in a state where he could not move and was in a meditative stance.

Ye Qingyu did not panic.

At this time, he activated the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart]

Every time he excavated a Spirit spring, the [Titled Fiendgod chart] would appear and completely absorb the inner yuan. After purifying it, the bronze book would return it. And after this process, new contents and pages would be unlocked in the ancient bronze book. New techniques or objects would be provided.

The four moves of the golden armoured king as well as the four moves of the unmatched general, was obtained by Ye Qingyu from the bronze book.

This time, the reaction of the bronze book was no different.

# Chapter 124: Sole will of the Heaven Earth

## Copper cauldron

In a split second, the ancient bronze book activated and flickered with a light. Like previous times, it began madly absorbing Ye Qingyu's inner yuan with extreme speed. Ye Qingyu was nearly completely sucked dried by the bronze book. In only a few seconds time, Ye Qingyu's inner body was in a bizarre state of near dehydration.

To establish again after destruction.

Ye Qingyu struggled to maintain his consciousness. He waited for the repayment of the bronze book that would appear.

But this time, a slight change happened.

After ten minutes had passed, the expected repayment had still not manifested.

The bronze book was still sucking away the yuan power within Ye Qingyu's body.

However, this type of absorption was evidently much slower and gentle than previously. It maintained a special rhythm, not exploding in an instant and turning Ye Qingyu into a dehydrated person.

Ye Qingyu did not become panicked.

Because he had already realised the reason why such a situation would appear. It was because the hundred grass divine liquid was constantly restoring the energy within his body by its medicinal properties. And the bronze book seemed to be particularly interested in this energy, slowly absorbing it.

Ye Qingyu's body, was as if it had become a point of conduit.

After passing through his body, the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid entered into the Bronze book.

This type of process, continued on for one day and night.

Then the bronze book seem to grow tired of using this method to absorb the hundred grass divine liquid. It stopped sucking the energy in. Tens of breath later, there was an incomparably pure yuan qi that surged out from the bronze book. In an instant, it had flowed throughout Ye Qingyu's meridians and his bones and limbs. As if rivers returning to the sea, the streams converged in the desert of the dantian world and flowed into the four Spirit spring.

The long awaited repayment had finally occurred.

Ye Qingyu immediately became as lively as a tiger or a dragon.

This new power made him feel like as if he was reborn.

Inner yuan fluctuated around his meridians and with body. Ye Qingyu was immediately able to feel the pressure constraining him lessen by a large margin. He attempted to move his arms and legs and was finally able to stretch out his body within the [Cloud top cauldron]. His figure became much more relaxed.

But he was still trapped and could not escape.

The copper lid of the [Cloud top cauldron] had already fallen, sealing the entire pill cauldron.

A vast and deep energy, enveloped the interior of the cauldron. This was especially so for the copper lid that was engraved with the images of birds and beasts. On the lid, there was a strange light pattern fluctuating, as if it was alive. It emitted a strange energy, as if it was the world itself. It gave a feeling that even if your strength was greater still, you would not be able to break apart this world.

Ye Qingyu attempted several times, but was not able to open the copper cauldron.

Dong!Dong !

There was suddenly the sound of someone knocking on the cauldron.

It was someone banging on the outside.

“How is it? Three days and three nights has already passed, could it be

that you have already been refined to death?” The voice of the black robed man came from outside.

At this time, Ye Qingyu was not particularly anxious, assuming the stance of a hoodlum and laughed in contempt. “I peh, you hypocrite that angle for fame. Slowly refine outside, even if you get tired to death, I won’t be smelted to death. If you have the abilities, than come inside and lets fight.”

There was a brief silence outside.

And then the voice of the black robed man that seemed to be consumed by both fury and laughter sounded yet again. “Good, very good. It seems like you still have energy. These three days of time is just the appetiser. The next six days will be enough for you to suffer. At that time, I will wait for you to beg for my mercy.”

As he finished, he continued to maintain the cauldron and beginning the refinement process once again.

Ye Qingyu immediately sensed the temperature of the cauldron rapidly rising.

Even with Ye Qingyu’s current strength, he was able to feel a torrid heat that was hard to endure.

It was if he was bathed within lava.

The hundred grass divine liquid, was once again absorbed by Ye Qingyu. There was only two thirds left behind.

Ye Qingyu could not think of a solution to his crisis at this very moment so crisply decided to sit in a meditative position. Putting aside all distractions, he continued to train.

In the blink of an eye, another day had passed.

The hundred grass divine liquid became more and more violent. Under the high temperature, a large quantity had already turned into gas. The liquid transformed into golden steam that coalesced within the pill cauldron.

Ye Qingyu did not have to spend any effort whatsoever to absorb the hundred grass divine liquid. Just by inhaling and exhaling, there would be the purest herbal Spirit qi that entered into his body. At this moment, even every single pore on his body were absorbing the energy of the herbs.

Ye Qingyu had a feeling that he was about to become a medicinal human.

He had an illusion, that if a martial expert just took a bite out of him and ate a piece of his flesh, their strength would greatly increase.

“Haha, little thing, do you feel that your entire body is entirely free from injuries? How is the absorption of the energy from the medicine?” The voice of the black robed man came from outside the cauldron, containing ridicule but also a sinisterness. He said: “Obediently, quickly absorb all the remaining medicinal energy. Only then can I proceed on with the next step of the refinement, ahahahahah.....”

“Old bastard, to want to refine me into a human pill. I fear you don’t have the appetite for it.” Ye Qingyu loudly yelled. “If you have the guts, then quickly do it.”

“Haha, when a dead duck is cooked, the beak is still hard.....there will be a time when you will cry.” The black robed man let out an angry grunt, not say anything anymore.◦

What he should be doing right now was doing his utmost to activate the cauldron for refinement with his inner yuan.

As expected, Ye Qingyu once again felt the inner temperature of the cauldron rapidly rising. This time, there was not much difference from being directly roasted on the fire.

“This bastard is really too malicious. His plan is to make me completely absorb the medicinal power of the hundred grass liquid and becoming a medicine man. Then he will refine me into a human pill.” Ye Qingyu racked his brains for a solution. But right now, apart from using the medicinal liquid to raise his strength, he seemed to not have any other choice. He could only continue, and take things step by step.

Ye Qingyu on resisted against the heat of the cauldron while he diverted another part of his consciousness to observe the interior of the cauldron.

He wanted to find something within the cauldron, some information that he could utilise.

Chen Moyun had obtain this cauldron named the [Cloud top cauldron] from ancient ruins. This meant that this cauldron was not created by his own hands. He may not have completely grasped and controlled the secrets of this cauldron. Perhaps there were some aspects that Chen Moyun had neglected that could be of use for Ye Qingyu.

He comforted himself just like this.

Ye Qingyu examined the walls of the cauldrons.

As expected, he very quickly discovered many engravings and images in the style of the far ancient ages. They were different from the bird and beasts engraved on the copper lid. These engravings were mainly about the different characters in the pictures as well as the narrative of a tale. There were also some strange characters inscripted on the walls that Ye Qingyu counted carefully. In total, there were a hundred and eight characters, tight and clustered. It made one feel slightly dizzy whenever one looked upon it.

There were eight picture of diagrams where it mainly retold the tale of a person.

The rough story of the eight diagrams said, there were once some very powerful people. From the clap of thunder in the skies, they managed to harvest the heavenly fire which they used to refine pills. The pictures showed the process of them refining pills in the Ninth Heavens.....this was somewhat ridiculous, mysterious and unimaginable.

Ye Qingyu pondered for a while. This [Cloud top cauldron] should be an autobiography of the first owner of the cauldron. He should have just been blowing his own trumpet.

Contrary to expectations, the lines of the diagram was simple but it was exceedingly lifelike. It should be engraved from the hands of a

grandmaster.

As time flowed on, this diagram seemed to come alive, swirling within the interior of the cauldron. The characters depicted on the walls seemed as if it would walk out from the pictures.

“The background of the cauldron, is absolutely not simple”

Ye Qingyu gloomily speculated, at the while his heart faintly palpitated. Previously Chen Moyun had not used his full power to expedite the progress of the cauldron. Like making congee, he used a small flame to slowly stew contents. Once the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid was completely absorbed by Ye Qingyu, it was extremely like that this person would turn up the power of the flames.

Right now, he could only hope that this fellow as per his estimation, had not completely grasped the secrets of the cauldron.

Ye Qingyu surveyed the interior of the pill cauldron, especially the hundred and eight characters. He memorised the orders and sequence of these characters, beginning to translate and guess at the meaning held within. Ye Qingyu held a little knowledge in regards to the characters from the God and Devil age and the Far Ancient age. Previously, to clear up the mysteries of the Bronze book, he had completely searched through the martial library of White Deer academy. Those neglected language scrolls that no one had noticed, he had read from start to finish.

This characters was complicated and profound. But if given enough time, Ye Qingyu believed that he could definitely understand the meaning held within.

“It seems like, mastering another language, is quite important.” Demon King Ye laughed at himself in self deprecating humour.

Because he did not need to cultivate to absorb the spirit energy within the medicinal liquid anymore, Ye Qingyu crisply decided to focus all his attentions on solving the contents of these characters.

Ye Qingyu had a sensation that made him feel, that these character would have somehow be of use.

Time flew by.

In the blink of an eye, another two days had passed.

Ye Qingyu had finally managed to completely absorb the hundred grass divine liquid in the [Cloud top cauldron] .

Right now, just by opening his mouth, there would be a surge of spirit qi from the hundred grass divine liquid that gushed out.

Every cell on his body, was as if it was completely stuffed with energy that was about to overflow. Ye Qingyu felt that his body was so full that it was not realistic anymore, like a balloon that had reached its limits. As long as someone blew another breath of air into him, as long as there was another shred of Spirit qi inserted into his body, his body would absolutely explode.

And as for the meaning of those hundred and eight characters, he had nearly completely deciphered it.

“This seems like a technique for refining tools and pills, its called.....called.....[Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper cauldron]?”

Ye Qingyu carefully did his best to comprehend the characters.

There was only a short passage on the [Sole Will of the heaven Earth copper cauldron]. But after a detailed consideration, this technique seemed to be all encompassing. Ye Qingyu realised the meaning behind the characters, but the profoundness that it contained was too hard to comprehend in such a short time. After much thought, he felt a spell of faintness that made him unable to reason on.

And at that time –

Dong!Dong!Dong!

The walls of the pill cauldron was struck on again.

“Two days and two nights have passed without any noises whatsoever. Have you died yet? The hundred grass divine liquid should have been completely absorbed. If my guess is not wrong, then you should not even have the strength to speak right now, isn’t that right?”



The vicious voice of the black robed man could be heard.

Ye Qingyu did not reply straight away.

“Could it be that you have really died? This is just too disappointing, that you did not even manage to endure seven days. According to the pill mantra, if you are alive when you are being refined, then the human pill that is produced will have the greatest effect. But this is still fine, as long as it’s a human pill that is produce.....” The voice of black robed man continue to transmit from the outside.

Ye Qingyu was enraged. “Nonsense, your father I is still fine. You only have such method? This is just too disappointing.....”

There was silence outside once again.

Then a flustered and exasperated voice could be heard. “Little trash. Good, good, good! You wait, I’ll very quickly make you cry.....”

# Chapter 125: Being kicked

Outside the cauldron.

The black robed figure, Chen Moyun sat with in a meditative position in front of the cauldron. Yuan qi revolved around his body, his inner yuan activated to the extreme. Both of hands formed a bizarre seal, and from this seal in his hands, yuan energy surged out and transformed into a red flame. It burned at the bottom of the [Cloud top cauldron].

From the outside, the [Cloud top cauldron] was like a golden coloured gourd. With a small top and a large bottom and both sections possessing a perfectly round shape.

On the top of the pill cauldron, there were the design of the four great ancient mythological beasts carved onto it. The entire golden cauldron seemed if it was covered by a golden halo. On the top of the cauldron were three mountain like crowns that pressed the cauldron down and the entire mass seemed if it was surrounded by golden water. There were not any chinks or gaps whatsoever, giving off the sense that it was entirely one well blended entity.

The pill cauldron slowly revolved.

On the forehead of Chen Moyun, there were also beads of sweat.

Even if he was the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], but to use his utmost efforts to control the [Cloud top cauldron] was a matter that took great energy.

“This little brat can really bear it. Six days and six night has already passed, but from his sounds he seems to be still as lively as a tiger or a dragon.”

Chen Moyun began to grow frantic inside.

Of his abilities in the art of pill creation, eighty percent of it came from the [Cloud top cauldron].

Tens of years ago, in a exploration formed by the Azure Phoenix academy, he had unknowingly obtained the brass cauldron. At the start, it

was just a normal and discarded cauldron. It was only due to the broken and old appearance of the cauldron that allowed Chen Moyun to obtain it when he had such a lowly status back then. Afterwards, Chen Moyun was able to discover the true secret behind the cauldron and his strength began to grow explosively. From just a low class student, he leapt to become the pill master that everyone respected.

But after so many years had passed, Chen Moyun discovered with some regret, that he had only uncovered a little portion of the secrets of the cauldron. Ultimately, he was not able to utilise the full power of the [Cloud top cauldron]. He was not able to do as the [Pill mantra] described and achieve the realm where man and cauldron could combine into one.

He was not even able to truly activate the [Cloud top cauldron].

But even if so, the scraps that he was able to obtain from the [Cloud top cauldron] was enough for him to become the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix] that was famed throughout the lands.

If he was able to completely decipher the mysteries behind the [Cloud top cauldron], would this not represent that he could soar into the heavens in one go?

Therefore, to refine the human pill of dragon blood, he chose a method that needed to expend a great deal of effort and would spare no expense. He used a special method that he would not normally utilise to refine the pill and also expended the divine herbs that he had spent his life accumulating that was akin to his dowry. He gave up everything to refine the [Human pill of dragon blood].

In reality, even the [Human pill of dragon blood] was something that Chen Moyun had unintentionally peeked at in a forbidden tome within the Azure Phoenix academy.

He had never ever created such a thing before.

Using a live person to create a pill was a forbidden technique within Snow country.

Once it was exposed, he would suffer the punishment of the laws of the

country as well as the exclusion of the human race in the entire martial world. It could be said that the risk to undertake such a task was extremely great.

But Chen Moyun still chose to take such a risk.

If he was able to create a [Human pill of dragon's blood] and ingest it into his body, it could add another five hundreds years to his life. At that time, he could definitely completely understand the secrets and profoundness of the [Cloud top cauldron]. Relying on the [Cloud top cauldron], he could absolutely soar in the skies. After entering into the Bitter Sea stage, even the immortal stage would not pose a problem for him.

And at that time, his title could change. It would change into the [Pill king of Snow country].

“As long as I work harder, and completely refine this brat, every one of my grand schemes can become reality!”

Chen Moyun did his utmost, not even sparing a shred of energy.

His inner yuan, was currently being expended at a crazy rate.

The fifty Spirit springs that he possessed was fiercely fluctuating all around his body. The yuan qi springs soared out and travelled through his body and meridians. It eventually transformed into the power of flames that surged from the seals in his hands, activating the cauldron.

In the blink of an eye, another day and night had passed.

Chen Moyun's sweat was like starch paste. The back of his head and shoulders was completely drenched.

In total, an entire seven days and seven nights of time had already passed in refining this pill.

“That little brat should have completely died already.”

Chen Moyun tapped on the copper walls of the cauldron.

The angry voice of Ye Qingyu came from within the cauldron. “Why are you so noisy? Your father I was comfortably sleeping, do you have any

civility? Can you let me sleep a good sleep, I still have to train in a little while.....”

Chen Moyun was taken aback, nearly spitting out a mouthful of blood.

What had happened?

The little brat had not died yet.

Something was not right.

Previously, he had attempted to refine living creatures within the [Cloud top cauldron] before. There was a time that he had managed to refine a four star demon soldier, creating a demon pill. This four star demon soldier, no matter whether considering his life force or demonic powers, was above Ye Qingyu in strength. It ultimately was only able to withstand six days and nights before perishing. Ye Qingyu was only a little martial artist of three Spirit springs, how could he endure for such a long time?

Chen Moyun was somewhat confused.

But after some rapid thinking, he quickly thought of the explanation.

“That’s right, this little brat possesses the [Holy body of the dragon’s blood]. It is a body type that can be placed in the top three of the human race since antiquity. Naturally, it will be a little abnormal. To want to completely refine him, most likely more effort must be used. Haha, if it is like this, the stronger the holy body, when it is finally refined into a human pill, the effects will be even greater.....haha, this time I really have encountered a great fortune.”

Thinking of this, the worries in Chen Moyun’s heart quickly disappeared.

Utilising the time efficiently, he once again refined for another half day.

“This should be about right.....” He knocked on the walls of the cauldron yet again.

The result was once again the curses of Ye Qingyu that was as lively as a tiger or dragon.

Chen Moyun began to panic and become angry at the same time.

“Could it be that the hundred grass divine liquid is not enough to completely turn Ye Qingyu into a medicinal man? Therefore there was no way to completely refine him to his death?”

Chen Moyun as he did his utmost to maintain and activate the cauldron, began to consider what possible explanations there was for Ye Qingyu’s continued survival.

After a hesitation, he grinded his teeth. From within a ring on his finger, he took out a rouge container made from jade. Inside, there was a transparent crystal the width of a finger. Like a gelatinous dessert, it trembled and swayed. Under the light, it emitted a five coloured radiance, shining with a dream like colour.

Chen Moyun’s gaze, when he saw this crystal, was as if seeing the roots of his life.

“I’ve spent a thousand efforts and suffered ten thousand hardships to acquire this. Half my life was spent before I could obtain an ounce of Origin crystal. I really can’t bear to part with it.....but it is only a dead object, and humans are alive. As long as I am able to refine the human pill of dragon’s blood, even a greater price, is worth it!

He grinded his teeth, thousands of expressions flitting through his face.

Finally he solidified his determination. With a wave of his hand, this ounce of Origin crystal was thrown into the [Cloud top cauldron].

Then he bit apart the tip of his tongue. A mouthful of the essence of his blood was spat on the flames of the cauldron.

Boom!

The light of the fire exploded.

The originally scarlet red flame, turned into a violet colour, swirling around the cauldron.

As expected, Ye Qingyu’s exhalation of shock was able to be heard within the cauldron. Then, it was the sound of chaotic impacts within the

cauldron. From an initial estimation, he should be madly struggling inside. It seemed like there was an immediate effect.

Chen Moyun was overjoyed.

He did not delay any longer, spitting out another three spurts of the essence of his blood. He continued to enhance the flame.

After losing four spurts of blood essence, Chen Moyun's face became more much pale and pallid. As if he had suddenly aged many times. His originally grey hair, had completely turned silver white. There were countless more wrinkles on his face, as if he had aged tens of years in an instant.

He bit his teeth, continuing to activate his inner yuan.

All of his strength was squeezed out.

And under the mad activation of Chen Moyun, one was able to hear the indistinct roar of beasts above the cauldron. The four figures of the ancient mythological beast began to have an aura revolving around it. As if they were alive, an inexplicable apparition could be seen.

Chen Moyun became overjoyed.

"The cauldron has come alive!"

This time, even the heavens are aiding me.

The roar of the divine beasts and the aura enveloping the cauldron, was an scene that had never occurred before when he utilised the cauldron.

In the time of a day and night, the human pill could definitely be successfully refined.

Chen Moyun did his utmost.

.....

.....

"The situation is not good!"

Ye Qingyu's body was completely red, as if he was a tomato that was about to break apart in boiling water.

The origin crystal the width of a finger, sunk from above. It floated in front of Ye Qingyu.

From within the origin crystal, a terrifying Spirit energy was emitted that surged and roiled within the [Cloud top cauldron]. Compared to the Spirit energy of the hundred grass divine liquid, it was many, many times more concentrated. Under the effect of the pill cauldron, the terrifying Spirit energy, madly rushed towards Ye Qingyu's body.

Ye Qingyu originally felt like he was a fatty that was already very full and was about to vomit. But at that moment, someone madly stuffed yet more items into his mouth.

Such a sensation of engorgement, made him completely crazy.

He unendingly swung his fists, beating on the walls of the cauldron, wanting to release the energy in his body.

And at the same time, within the pill cauldron, another change happened.

On the eight patterns carved onto the walls of the cauldron, every line began to emit with a radiance. As if every line was an ordered chain, it shot out from the walls, wrapping around Ye Qingyu's body. It was as if it wanted to pierce and bury into his flesh. The refining power of the cauldron, through these lines, seamlessly affected Ye Qingyu's body.

"If this continues on, will I become the first person in history that is stuffed to death with Spirit energy?"

Countless thoughts flickered in Ye Qingyu's mind.

"Then let's do it!"

He made an extremely mad decision.

Fiercely suppressing the chaos in his heart, he began to utilise the nameless heart sutra. He did not reject the Spirit energy within the Origin crystal anymore, but instead began to absorb it of his own initiative.

Success and failure depended on this.

Ye Qingyu risked everything.



.....

.....

The time frame of nine days and nine nights had completely passed.

Chen Moyun had nearly expended all his energy.

The Cloud top cauldron floated to the ground, incomparably peaceful.

The lines of light emitting from the copper cauldron, were like golden fluctuating ripples. From within the pill cauldron, there was a faint fragrance seeping out. And in the interior of the cauldron, one could vaguely hear the singing of angels.

An apparition had appeared.

Chen Moyun controlled the excitement in his heart, circling around the cauldron several times. Carefully observing and listening to any commotion within, a satisfied expression appeared on his face.

According to his previous experience, it seems like refining the pill was a success.

According to the pill mantra, the appearance of an apparition, represented the birth of a divine pill.

It must be the human pill of dragon's blood that was successfully created.

"Hahahaha, even the heaven's itself is bequeathing onto me. I, Chen Moyun can finally change my fate. Ahahahaha....." He laughed loudly. "Ye Qingyu, this is your fate, you were destined to be used by me. Thank you for your generosity. Ahaha, I hope that after you die, you won't blame me. But, even if you blame me, it is no use. You should just honestly stay under the yellow river, and watch with wide eyes as I soar into the heavens."

Saying this, he used his pill mantra, quickly unlocking the pill cauldron.

The copper lid slowly floated up.

A five coloured radiance shone from within the cauldron.

Within the ice cave, a strange fragrance immediately surged out.

Chen Moyun could not wait to jump next to the cauldron, lowering his head to peer into the cauldron.

It was completely dark inside. Chaotic mist was swirling about, and nothing was able to be seen clearly.

Chen Moyun chuckled loudly, his lips curling in such a fashion that it had gone completely bent. He stretched his hand within the cauldron, half his shoulder going in. Fumbling inside, he laughed loudly: “Everything about this cauldron is good except for that it is too large. Ai, every time after I refine a pill, I have to stretch my hand out and feel for the inside. The human pill of dragon blood, quickly come out! Wahahahaha.....”

At this time, he had an excited expression that was hard to describe.

But at this time, suddenly---

Peng!

On his bottom, a fierce kick was struck.

Chen Moyun was far too excited, with no defence at all. He did not react. With a crash, he fell headlong into the cauldron, a harsh tumble.

Boom!

The copper lid fell back down at the same time, covering the cauldron.

# Chapter 126: I'll take revenge for them

The alarm of Chen Moyun was no small matter.

The amount of inner yuan within his body was as deep and as vast as the ocean. But during this nine days and nine nights, he had nearly completely spent it through maintaining the cauldron. After seeing the apparition of the cauldron, he was so excited that he lost his composure. Furthermore he had placed many defences and safeguards around his surroundings, and was hence lulled into a sense of security. He did not defend against an attack in the least. He had never thought someone would appear from behind him.

Therefore this kick struck him solidly on the backside.

When he had recovered, his figure was already wedged within the cauldron.

“Who is it?”

Chen Moyun screamed in shock. His reaction was very rapid. At the very first moment, he activated his inner yuan and struck his palm against the copper lid. He wanted to break free from the cauldron.

But—

Boom!

The copper lid only shook a few times, without being knocked aside. A vast and endless sealing energy, pressured Chen Moyun from all directions of the [Cloud top cauldron]. He was trapped within.

The [Cloud top cauldron] was activated?

How was this possible?

Chen Moyun had cold sweat all over his body.

His brain was completely blank.

The [Cloud top cauldron] was a secret that belonged solely to him. The way to activate it was special, only he was able to do it. Now, someone had really activated it. Chen Moyun was so greatly shaken that he nearly

vomited out his internal organs.....

“Who? Who is it that ambushed me?”

Chen Moyun bellowed.

And at this time, an unbridled laughter came from outside the cauldron.

“Hahaha, hahahaha.....who else could it be? Of course it is your grandfather I. Old bastard, weren't you going to refine me to death? Now the tables have turned. I am outside, you are kicked within the cauldron, we'll see who will refine whom to death!”

“Ye Qingyu.....you.....how are you outside?”

Chen Moyun was dumbfounded.

He was really seeing a ghost.

But the voice he heard, was evidently Ye Qingyu's laughter.

“Impossible.....absolutely impossible.....just what mother fucking trick is this? You've already been refined into a pill, you.....why are you still alive?” Chen Moyun nearly completely self destructed. He assumed that he had been ambushed by someone, but he had never thought it would be a person that had no possibility of appearing.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

He madly struck the cauldron, wanting to escape.

But the vast and endless sealing power of the cauldron, became more and more evident.

The previous punch, had shaken and trembled the cauldron. But after that, the copper cauldron was as stable as a boulder, not moving in the slightest.

“Hahaha, even the heavens itself is bequeathing onto me. I, Ye Qingyu, can finally change my fate. Ahahahahaha.....” From outside came the mad and loud laughter of Ye Qingyu, not disguised in the slightest: “Chen Moyun, this is your fate. After calculating so much, ultimately you are to be used by me. Thank you for your generosity, Haha, the hundred grass

divine liquid and the Origin crystal. Ahaha, to maintain the cauldron for days and nights, but not manage to refine me. But you conversely allowed me to excavate another six Spirit springs in my dantian in one breath. Right now, I am already at the ten Spirit spring stage.....”

Hearing this, Chen Moyun spat out a jet of blood.

He was about to be driven crazy with anger.

Such words, he had just said to Ye Qingyu. Now Ye Qingyu had returned his words to him.

“Impossible.....absolutely impossible.....” He was about to go mad.

To have broken through in the cauldron and in these nine days and nine nights of time, from a three Spirit spring expert to grow to a ten Spirit spring expert?

“You are lying to me, you must be lying to me!” Chen Moyun had no way of accepting such a result. He could not believe Ye Qingyu’s words.

.....

Ye Qingyu stood outside the pill cauldron.

He was completely naked, his skin blistered red. His entire figure was swollen, as if he had grown fatter by several inches.

Both his hair and eyebrows had completely gone ——it had been completely singed off by the scorching heat of the cauldron.

At his current level, his power could not yet be focused to within his hairs. Therefore there way no way for any of the the hairs on his body to be spared.

Ye Qingyu’s current state was incomparably sorry.

But the Demon king Ye who had just escaped from death, possessed a very good mood. He did not care at all about the fact that his current appearance that did not resemble a human at all.

Ye Qingyu did his utmost to activate his inner yuan, both hands forming seals. He could not suppress his crazy laughter.

“Hahaha, why would I deceive you? Look at me right now, I am using your cauldron in such a familiar fashion, as if I am playing with my own son. Thank you for gifting it to me. The title of the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] is really not in vain. Hahaha, you have helped me so much. Both the hundred grass divine liquid and the Origin crystal, you have given me so many treasures, I really don’t know how to thank you.”

Boom! Boom!Boom!

There was the continued sounds of fierce struggles coming from inside the cauldron.

“I don’t believe, I don’t believe. I don’t accept this, I don’t accept.....”

Chen Moyun could feel his descending doom. He madly struggled like a confined beast.

Ye Qingyu had a pleased expression. “This is fate. Old bastard, I hope that after you die you won’t blame me. But even if you blame me, it is no use. Thanks to your help, my strength has risen rapidly. You should just honestly stay under the yellow river, and watch with wide eyes as I soar to the heavens!”

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

The strikes within the cauldron continued.

It was a pity that no matter how much Chen Moyun struggled, he could not escape.

“I don’t accept this, how did you get out? It is impossible for you to come out from the cauldron.....Tell me, just how did you escape?” He was like a trapped beast, screaming and bellowing his heart out.

For the situation to change in the blink of an eye. It made the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] unable to accept it.

Ye Qingyu did not waste his words anymore.

He madly activated his inner yuan, using it to to refine the cauldron.

The mantra that he had previously discovered was called the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth cauldron]. Ultimately, Ye Qingyu had managed to

solve the secret behind six of the ancient characters out of the hundred and eight. This was the heart mantra needed to activate the [Cloud top cauldron].

The hundred and eight ancient characters were carved inside the [Cloud top cauldron]. It was very hard for people to discover these characters normally.

In the beginning when Chen Moyun had obtained the [Cloud top cauldron], he had examined and researched it to the utmost. But all his attention was placed towards the four depiction of the divine beasts outside the cauldron. Until even now, he had not even fully understood the four diagrams of the mythical beasts fully.

Furthermore, the most crucial point was that according to a pill master, the outside of the cauldron was the auspicious location, but inside the cauldron was a ominous place. It was an area used to refine dead objects or living creature to their death. The interior of a cauldron represented misfortune. Chen Moyun was a very traditional pill master; he had always followed the teachings of the pill mantra to the dot. He would not investigate into the ominous place. He had never jumped inside of the [Cloud top cauldron] to check before.

Therefore until now, he had never discovered the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth cauldron].

Ye Qingyu only managed to discover the hundred and eight characters through chance alone.

According to the method outlined in these six ancient characters, ye Qingyu madly activated the [Cloud top cauldron].

“If not for the fact that I am already an expert of the ten Spirit springs stage, I would really have no way of activating the cauldron. You helped me breakthrough, and will ultimately die within the cauldron. Haha, this is Heaven’s will.” Ye Qingyu laughed loudly, repeating everything that Chen Moyun had said to him.

“No, no, it shouldn’t be like this. I should be the final victor.....aaaaaahhhhh...” Chen Moyun screamed. “Just how did you get

out? How did you escape from the cauldron? Tell me, tell me.....”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything more.

He only chuckled loudly.

But as he laughed, a hot tear streaked down from his face.

Within the hovering tear, the smiles of the armoured sentry flashed by his eyes.

Yes, he had lived on.

But his brothers, were already eternally resting within the glacier.

He once said, that he would avenge them.

Right now, he would fulfil that promise.

“No, listen to me. Ye Qingyu, quickly stop, we can discuss and negotiate . If you release me, I can give you very rich rewards.....you should know, that I am the famous pill king in Azure Phoenix. There are countless treasures on me, as well as tens of Spirit weapons and also all sorts of precious herbs and medicines.....”

Chen Moyun could barely withstand being in the cauldron any longer, fiercely struggling.

“I can accept you as my disciple. I swear, if you become my disciple, your status will immediately rise. I can help you achieve all your dreams, really, aaaaaaahhhhh, quickly stop.....”

This Pill king made promises after promises.

Ye Qingyu only laughed lightly.

“Ahah, compared to those dog fart precious herbs and medicines, right now what I want most, is to avenge my brothers, the sentries.....Therefore, old bastard, just go die obediently!”

Ye Qingyu bellowed.

The [Cloud top cauldron] immediately began to be activated crazily.

Within there was like the crash of thunder. Chen Moyun was madly



struggling, emitting roars and growls like that of a wild beast But ultimately, everything went silent and disappeared.

A short while later, the pill cauldron was completely silent.

This ambitious Azure Phoenix elder possessing prestigious status and devious methods perished. Finally under the scorching refining flame of the cauldron, he could not withstand any longer. He transformed into green ash, completely disappearing from this world.

Ye Qingyu stopped the refinement.

At this time, he gradually calmed down.

Ye Qingyu began to evaluate his surroundings.

“So I am still at that underground cave.....”

The surroundings was still the ice walls that was translucent and cold. The area he was in was a comparatively large space.

It should be that after Chen Moyun had captured Ye Qingyu, he was too excited and could not wait to obtain the treasure. He had not left the underground labyrinth like ice cave at all and chose to hide in a somewhat hidden ice room. After arranging a formation to hide his presence, he began the process of refining the pill.

Ye Qingyu sat dumbly where he was, wanting to find clothes to cover his naked body.

But the dimensional pouch had already been completely smelted smelted down. The alcohol and meat rations had completely transformed into ashes. Even the Inexorable spear made from black cold steel was completely smelted into scraps.

In this situation, he did not even possess a single thing anymore.

As for the blood that he had obtained from the Boundary canyon battlefield from the two devils, they were luckily preserved. They had been placed in a jade bottle and nourished within his Spirit spring in his dantian. Hence these objects managed to evade this disaster.

Ye Qingyu carefully evaluated this ice room, and very quickly discovered

the sealing formation placed by Chen Moyun around his surroundings.

There were three or four layers of this formation. The general use of it should be for concealment and alerting Chen Moyun of any dangers. It could not be classed as any profound formation. It seems like that Chen Moyun was an expert in the aspect of pill making, but was very average in terms of formations. Although Ye Qingyu did not understand the formation arts very much, but after probing it several times, he discovered that with his current strength, he should be able to break out. That made him much more confident and reassured.

Then he saw, in the corner of the ice room, there was the stupid dog Big Head that was snoring in his sleep.

“This animal that has no conscience. I was nearly thrown in the cauldron and smelted to my death, and this glutton was really still snoring away!” Ye Qingyu could not cry or laugh.

Big Head should have been knocked unconscious by Chen Moyun on that day. Afterwards Ye Qingyu was not too clear on the events that happened afterwards. Within the cauldron, he had not discovered Big Head and had assumed that this fellow was thrown away. He had not thought that this fellow had followed them all the way here.

But he was blocked outside of the formation.

Ye Qingyu whistled.

The ears of the big headed dog suddenly perked up in the midst of slumber. He shook his head, then opened his eyes.

The next instant, he saw the Ye Qingyu that was in the ice room.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Big Head transformed into a ray of lightning that rushed over.

# Chapter 127: Accordance Treasure

Peng!

An invisible barrier, appeared in the air.

The silly dog Big Head directly struck onto this barrier. His face was nearly completely flattened by the impact, appearing incomparably comical.

The next instant he was sent rebounding backwards. He fiercely struck and landed on an ice wall far off in the distance. He became completely confused as a result of the impact, gold stars appearing before his eyes. On the ice wall, he left a clear and distinct dog shape, as if this imprint was sculpted onto the wall.

He was forced to stay outside by the defensive formation.

But he only lightly shook his head, then looked towards Ye Qingyu yet again. He stuck out his tongue and began happily panting, an expression of matchless excitement on his face.

This type of gaze, was like suddenly seeing hope in the midst of despair.

Within his eyes, there was an ineffable radiance of being emotionally moved that was flickering.

As he wagged his tail towards Ye Qingyu, an excited smile spread on Big Head's face. It retreated several steps backwards, then his hind legs stomped on the ground. With a whoosh, he transformed into a ray of light, dashing on bravely regardless of any perils towards Ye Qingyu.

Peng!

He struck the barrier again.

This time the tumble was even more vicious than last time.

But very quickly, he stood backup again. He charged forward once again.

Peng!

He was still struck backwards.

Peng!Peng!Peng !

In the icy silent and lonely underground cave, there were the unrelenting sounds of impact.

Ye Qingyu quickly waved his hands, indicating for him not to rush forwards anymore.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu discovered that on the ice wall, there were tight clusters of the shape of Big Head's figure. From a rough guess, there were at least a few thousand bunched together. There were so many imprints that the number could not be counted.....

At this moment, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised something.

It was very possible that after he had fainted from his heavy injuries, the black robed Chen Moyun had brought himself to this comparatively hidden ice room to refine him. Big Head should have been thought as a normal battle companion by Chen Moyun, and thrown away. But this glutton could be counted as loyal. He had followed their path, wanting to save Ye Qingyu but had no way of breaking past the defensive formation. It was unknown just how many times he had tried and was rebounded backwards by the formation, landing on the ice wall.....

Thinking of this, Ye Qingyu was slightly moved in his heart.

"Fine, fine, glutton. First don't charge. Wait for me outside, I still have something to do. Wait until I'm finished, then we can go out!" Ye Qingyu gestured to the glutton, indicating that he should not be impatient.

Big Head immediately understood Ye Qingyu's meaning.

Through the formation, he stuck out his tongue at Ye Qingyu. Shaking his head, he had a complete look of flattery on his face. Half his body on the ground, he constantly wagged his tail.

Ye Qingyu let out a short burst of amusement, turning to face the cauldron.

He began planning about what he should do next.

The [Cloud top cauldron] in front of him was absolutely a treasure. Only by slightly grasping the power of it was enough for the Chen Moyun of average talent to become the acclaimed Pill King. One was able to discern the extraordinary nature of the cauldron just by this fact alone. Ye Qingyu would absolutely not forgo this opportunity. But the cauldron was four or five metres tall, made using copper and an unknown divine material. It was unknown just how heavy it was. Ye Qingyu attempted several times, but he could not even budge it.

“This can’t be. With the current strength of my arms , there is at least hundred of thousands pounds of force in it. How can I not lift this cauldron.....”

Ye Qingyu was shocked.

What he did not know, was that previously Chen Moyun had not moved the cauldron. From the beginning, he had placed the cauldron in his interspacial ring, and used the space technique to retrieve it. He did not need to expend effort carrying and moving it about. It was only that the interspacial tool on Ye Qingyu had already been smelted down by the cauldron --in reality , even if it still existed, Ye Qingyu’s interspacial item was far too low class. It absolutely could not be compared to the interspacial ring of Chen Moyun. It would not have been able to contain this treasure.

Thinking for a bit, Ye Qingyu decided to attempt to use the [Sole Will of Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron] to control it.

As expected, there was a immediate change.

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt, there was a mysterious relationship between himself and the [Cloud top cauldron]. It was hard to describe this relationship using language alone.

The next instant, the heavy cauldron shuddered, rapidly swirling and rotating. At a rate visible to the naked eye, it quickly shrank. In the blink of an eye, it became the size of his finger, floating and arriving in Ye Qingyu’s palm.

Ye Qingyu felt that his palm was light as if there was nothing there

whatsoever.

“It’s become lighter....this sensation is too fantastic. To suddenly to become as light as a feather from so heavy a weight, could it be that it has recognised me as it’s master.....? Haha.....Eh, this.....Heavens, I can even see the space inside it.....”

Ye Qingyu suddenly discovered, that he could observe the interior of the [Cloud top cauldron] according to his will.

This was far too incredible.

Chen Moyun had obtained this cauldron for decades. But even he, absolutely could not observe the space inside so easily. Otherwise, when he was refining Ye Qingyu, he did not need to knock on the walls of the cauldron to discern the state inside. If he had this ability, he only needed to have a glance to know all that is happening inside.

It seems that in these tens of years, the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] still had not obtained the recognition of the [Cloud top cauldron]

Ye Qingyu chuckled delightedly.

If this was known by Chen Moyun, would he be so angry that his corpse would become alive again, then spurt out three pounds of blood?

Ye Qingyu carefully inspected the inner space of the cauldron.

As expected, Chen Moyun had completely turned into ashes. He had transformed into black ash that coated the bottom of the cauldron.

Apart from these ashes, the inner chamber of the [Cloud top cauldron] did not have anything else. Chen Moyun after acquiring this cauldron, had always regarded the inner chamber of the cauldron to be an ominous place. Apart from refining pills, he would not store anything within the cauldron, so the space being left empty was within expectations.

“Leaving behind the horrifying ashes of human remains, just throw it away.....”

After this thought had just been birthed, one could see the copper lid of the [Cloud top cauldron] opening, and the black ashes released.

It was the the ashes of Chen Moyun.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then could not help but laugh loudly.

This [Cloud top cauldron] was an accordance treasure.

The so called accordance treasure, meant that it could understand it's master wishes and transform into powerful tools according to its master's will. Since the God and Devil age, the appearance rate of Accordance treasures was very low. Only those legendary great characters, could possess one. Different classifications of Accordance treasures had different powers but without exception, every one of them was a great treasure.

Ye Qingyu had not imagined, that the [Cloud top cauldron] was an accordance treasure.

From this point alone, it should not be simply a cauldron.

This Chen Moyun had held such a great treasure without realising it. He was really blind, to have used such a treasure to act as a pill cauldron alone.

Ye Qingyu was unable to contain his joy.

This was absolutely a harvest that was out of his expectations.

He had never imagined that the background of the [Cloud top cauldron] would be so extraordinary. He had not thought that the hundred and eight ancient characters on the interior of the cauldron, the [Sole will of the Heaven Earth copper cauldron] would be able control the cauldron. Through such a fortunate incident, Ye Qingyu was able to obtain this treasure. For this point alone, it was worth it for Ye Qingyu to experience such danger.

"Eh? What is this?" When Ye Qingyu looked inside the cauldron once again, there was a little thing flickering with light.

His heart willed, and this object was taken out from the cauldron.

It was an interspacial ring.

The silver ring possessed a serpentine patten. Its fangs were biting into

a dark red precious stone.

“Could this be the interspacial ring of Chen Moyun?”

Ye Qingyu very quickly realised it's backgrounds.

Chen Moyun had been smelted into ashes. The objects on his body, had also been completely scorched down. For this ring to remain behind, it was definitely not an ordinary object and should also be a treasure. Perhaps it was a treasure that contained all the accumulated wealth of Chen Moyun through these years?

Ye Qingyu quickly became excited.

But after attempting for several times, a disappointed expression was seen on his face.

This interspacial ring had a interspacial seal. With Ye Qingyu's current strength and his mastery over the interspacial formations, he could not open it and observe the inner space of the ring.

“But this doesn't matter, I'll first keep the ring beside me. Once my strength is enough, I can definitely open it and take out the things inside.” As Ye Qingyu thought this, his mood instantly became high again.

He placed the interspacial ring to store within the [Cloud top cauldron] once again.

After several attempts, Ye Qingyu finally succeeded in placing the [Cloud top cauldron] into the fourth Spirit spring in his dantian world for it to begin to be nourished.

Afterwards, he began taking care of the problems in his body.

Because he had absorbed far too much Spirit energy, Ye Qingyu's body was in a state of engorgement. In one breath, he had excavated until he reached the ten Spirit springs stage. But the energy within his body was far too rich and abundant, making even his body seem somewhat swollen.

“First, I need think method to absorb and digest the leftover yuan qi energy!”

Ye Qingyu could only think of one method after mulling it over. It was



still to raise his level yet again. He began excavating the eleventh Spirit spring. On one hand it would expend yuan qi energy, and on the other hand it would expand the limits of how much yuan qi he could store. Only by expanding and expending at the same time, could he completely digest the leftover yuan qi energy.

“I estimate I should be the first person in history that is worrying about there being too much yuan qi in my body.”

Ye Qingyu laughed at himself.

Then within this ice room, he began training.

With his current cultivation level, not eating for one or two months was not a problem.

Time quickly flashed by.

In the blink of an eye, a month had passed.

In this month of time, Ye Qingyu had always remained in a meditative stance, as if he had fossilised. There was an evident and visible yuan qi fluctuation around him, as if there was a rippling phosphorescent light sometimes there and sometimes not. His breathing was as thin as a thread, like a candle in the wind. As if his breath would extinguish at any moment, the entire situation was very bizarre.

His hair and eyebrows quickly grew back again.

The thick black hair had grown to his waist, flowing like a black waterfall behind his head. After entering into the Xiantian stage, the growth on his hair was very rapid.

Big head was outside the formation. He had been guarding for an entire month.

At the beginning, he would stick out its tongue and pretend to be adorable, staring at Ye Qingyu. It was like a scene that he had finally reunited with his own parents and did not want to leave. But afterwards, when he saw the Ye Qingyu had not moved in the slightest, Big Head began to slumber.

Ever since devouring the [Snow ground dragon ape], the sleep of this glutton became more and more frequent. It seemed as if he would not wake up from his sleep.

Ye Qingyu trained for an entire month.

Big Head slept for an entire month.

That day.

The Ye Qingyu that was within the formation, suddenly opened his eyes.

His long thick black hair began floating.

There was a vortex of air swirling in the ice room, sucking in the dust and fragments of the icy layer.

The originally swollen figure in this instant, with a speed visible to the eye, began transforming.

In the blink of an eye, he had recovered his originally muscular and streamlined figure.

His flesh was healthy and masculine, with a sleek body. In the dim lighting of the ice cave there was a type of masculine beauty.

And at the same time, a surge of deep yuan qi fluctuated in the room. With Ye Qingyu at the centre, it began to be released. A faint steam slowly emitted from the nose and mouth of Ye Qingyu as well as every pore on his body. Then fifteen yuan qi silver dragons rotated and swirled around Ye Qingyu, with form but no substance, as if it was an illusion. Roar after roar of divine dragons, resounded in the ice cave.

# Chapter 128: Path in Heaven that you didn't go

Fifteen yuan qi silver dragons.

Fifteen Spirit springs.

In the passing of a month, Ye Qingyu had excavated another five Spirit springs.

Such a speed, could be said to have surpassed all others before and since.

Apart from the fact that Ye Qingyu's natural talent was exceptional, cultivating in the nameless heart sutra had an absolutely essential effect. Apart from the path of cultivation being extremely simplified for Ye Qingyu, the key point was that this experience was far too bizarre. To be stuffed alive and refined within the [Cloud top cauldron] by the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] for nine days and night and also receive the enhancement of the Spirit energy in the hundred grass divine liquid and the Origin crystal.....

Such a growth in power, was slightly similar to aiding a sprout to grow by piling resources excessively.

Ye Qingyu was able to grow from the fourth Spirit spring stage to the fifteen Spirit spring in a single step. If this was made known, it was enough to tremble the entire Snow country.

The fifteen silver dragons screamed and snaked, coiling around the body of Ye Qingyu. The roars of the dragons continued on for a very long uninterrupted period of time.

Ye Qingyu arm swiped through the air.

The silver dragons howled and bellowed within the ice room, a powerful yuan qi surged that roiled out in all directions. A vast and deep power, with the ice room as the centre, shot out in all directions through the icy corridors. It shook the icy layers, splashing ice everywhere and the earth

shook and the mountain trembled.

“Hahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu's long laughter, was really unbridled and unrestrained to the extreme.

The fifteen yuan qi silver dragons coiled in the air for a while, ultimately returning and charging back within Ye Qingyu's body. Transforming into fifteen streams of inner yuan that flowed within his meridians and his body, it finally entered his dantian, and returned to the fifteen springs in his desert world.

A sensation of power that he had never experienced before, shimmered around his body.

“This power compared to previously, is tens of times stronger, maybe even more. But this is like eating a big fatty in one bite. I also need to accumulate my foundation and to raise my mental state. Especially in regards as to how to use this energy, I am not comparable to true experts of fifteen Springs. I need time to practice and adjust to this power.”

Ye Qingyu knew himself, that the growth in his cultivation, was like a pavilion constructed in the air. It could not be truly utilised by himself as of yet.

“It's time to leave from here!”

Ye Qingyu looked at the sleeping Big Head outside the formation, and approximated. He should have already entered into the underground ice cave for tens of days. The military of the country should have already noticed the abnormal change in the watch post and sent someone to investigate the truth. Right now, he should think of a method to communicate with Youyan pass.

As he was about to break apart the formation, a change happened.

Abruptly, a loud laughter from far off in the distance, travelled through the icy corridors.

When Ye Qingyu heard this, his facial colour completely changed.

The next instant--

“Hahaha, little trash, I’ve finally found you.

The momentum of the coming person was ferocious.

The voice began hundreds of metres away, but by the time the last word was said, a silhouette, like a bolt of lightning, was already soaring from the left corridor. He landed ten metres away from Ye Qingyu.

His long ashy grey hair fluttered in the air.

If it was not Liu Yuancheng, who else could it be?

This Registrar of the city leader’s office in Deer city, had finally found him.

He pressed forward step by step, staring at Ye Qingyu fixedly. Coldly sneering: “Little scrap, I’ve already searched for you tens of days. However, in the end you are discovered by me.....this time, I’ll see just how you can escape!”

The killing intent was like a blade, shrouding the air.

Ye Qingyu looked at Liu Yuancheng. Praying and tightly clenching his last shred of luck, he asked: “Yan Fan and the others? What have you done with them?”

Liu Yuancheng lifted his head and roared with laughter to the skies, his expression covered with ridicule and mocking. “Yan Fan? Oh you’re talking about those lowly soldiers? Hahaha, of course I’ve slaughtered them all. Some of the soldiers were even shattered into meat paste by me. To go against me, then they deserve for their bones to be shattered into ashes.

Ye Qingyu’s figure quivered.

This was the news that he had not wanted to hear about the most.

“Hahahaha.....” Liu Yuancheng madly cackled, venting the pleasure in his heart.

He had chased and searched for tens of days, finally finding Ye Qingyu.

This time, he would absolutely not give any opportunity for this little trash to escape. He would definitely cruelly torture him and make him bitterly beg beside his leg. Only then, could he avenge his two sons that had died.

Right now, it was only the beginning.

Looking at the sorrowful and tragic expression of Ye Qingyu, he already began to feel pleasure.

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu stabilised his figure, slowly lifting his head. In the back of his eyes, an endless fury appeared. The snowy white teeth struck out like the edge of a blade, saying each word carefully and slowly. "If it is like this, then old bastard, today I will bury you along with brother Yan and the others."

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu's body roared with wave after wave of the dragon's cry, both his fists striking out. Fifteen yuan qi silver dragons bellowed.

The force of the fists, was like as if it was a real physical object, attacking.

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

"Seal of obstruction ! "

His pupils constricted, releasing his strongest defensive battle technique.

The green inner yuan like a humongous gate, blocking in front of him. The wave of light emitted was clear and crystalline, as if it was a real object.

Boom!

The fist shattered the green humongous door.

Liu Yuancheng was blown backwards, landing on an ice wall far off.

He lowered his head in disbelief as he stared down at both of his hands.

On the back of his arms, veins had surged out, the arteries clearly able to be seen. Like a sinister cobra that coiled around his arms, drip after drip of blood shed from his skin. The skin of his fingers had already broken.....

The acute pain in his arms was as if it were chopped off.

“You....” Liu Yuancheng stared at Ye Qingyu in shock. “Your strength.....”

Too careless.

He had never imagined the strength of this trash, would grow by so much. Under a state where he had taken no precautions, he was put at a disadvantage and suffered an injury.

Ye Qingyu did not even utter a word, his left hand swiping through space.

The Little Shang sword appeared in his hands.

The hum of the sword was like a dragon.。

The autumn water light shone throughout the ice cave.

A terrifying killing intent like a real physical object. The sharp edge of the blade spread out towards the surroundings in all direction.

The surrounding air, was as if it was constantly sliced apart by invisible blades. There were incessant wave after wave of transparent air being sliced and the resulting turbulence.

“Spirit weapon?” The pupils of Liu Yuancheng constricted, the shock on his face even more concentrated. Then he nodded his head and coldly sneered in a moment. “Fine, it seems like you have hidden your strength. A good scheme and method. However, with just fifteen Spirit springs, to want to kill me, you are perhaps too unaware of your own strength.....”

But before his words were finished, Liu Yuancheng felt his vision blurring.

“[Soul stealing Heaven strike!] ”

Ye Qingyu held the sword with both his hands, the golden dense mist around the hilt was as if it was liquid, sputtering and flickering. Like a

demon, it appeared in front of Liu Yuancheng in a flash. The little Shang sword did not leave a trace at all. The autumn water brightness of the sword was resplendent, directly chopping down.

One of the four moves of the unmatched general.

“Arrogance!”

Liu Yuancheng roared, a green lightning sword appearing in his hands.

The sword blocked horizontally.

Ding!

Both swords collided, emitting a clear and crisp noise.

At this moment, Liu Yuancheng and Ye Qingyu were already close with no boundaries between them. Their eyes stared into each other.

Liu Yuancheng could see the icy chill in Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

Then he was able to feel, a bizarre energy, that followed along the green lightning sword and encroached into his body. At this moment, he was shocked to discover that the yuan qi in his body was fiercely frozen, with no fluctuation whatsoever. Even his body was somewhat stiff, as if he had lost control of it.

And at the same moment, Ye Qingyu’s sword sliced again.

“[Storm of Swords]!”

He still held the sword with both hands, his figure rotating, transforming into a stream of mad gust.

Countless silhouettes swept Heaven and Earth.

Liu Yuancheng was still controlled by that strange energy, with no way to activate his inner yuan. He could only stare fixedly as blade after blade of the storm of swords was cut into his body.

When the acute pain came, Liu Yuancheng bellowed in rage. A breath later, the yuan qi inside his body had finally recovered to normality. His twenty Spirit springs power soared out, enveloping his entire body and transforming into a yuan qi armour that blocked the storm of swords.



And at the same moment, he could finally strike out with his sword in attack.

The green lightning sword flickered, like a long streak of red that pierced past the storm of swords.

ChiChiChi!

Jet after jet of blood shot out from the front of Ye Qingyu's chest.

His entire person was knocked away by the sword qi.

But within the air, Ye Qingyu let out a long roar of laughter. "Hahaha, old bastard. Your retribution has arrived. Die for me.....[Judgement of the Sword]!"

As the voice sounded, Ye Qingyu landed on the floor and slid five or six metres back. He knelt on the floor with one leg.

The Little Shang sword in his hands, had already pierced down into the ice layer below.

A strange golden mist, like a liquid, constantly emitted from the sword hilt of Ye Qingyu's sword.

A bizarre killing intent, fermented in the air.

Liu Yuancheng was covered in blood. In the areas of his waist and chest, it was unknown just how many times the sword had sliced him. Pearly white bone was exposed, and vague inner organs to be seen. The injuries he had sustained was not light. But he was an expert of twenty Spirit springs, his life force was strong. Such an injury could not be counted as life threatening.

"Haha, you....." Liu Yuancheng had only just opened his mouth when his facial expression abruptly changed.

He originally wanted to say, that even after using all your hidden cards you have no way to kill me. But once the first word was said, he could sense an apocalyptic killing intent that arrived down from the air. Lifting his head, in his line of sight, he could see a ray of sword star that descended from the Heavens, chopping down.

It was a golden divine sword, as if a divine spirit had appeared. Without sign or sounds, it could wrest fortune from Heaven and Earth itself, extinguishing and killing all as it arrived.

Liu Yuancheng could not react or dodge at all. In the time of a breath, this gold divine sword, had already pierced through his body.

Boom!

The icy cave shuddered as if it was struck by a meteor.

The layers of the ice fragments shuddered, as if it was a field made from soil and dust.

Ye Qingyu still knelt on the floor with one leg, panting roughly with large breaths.

In a flash.

The ice and dust dispersed, settling down.

Blood was everywhere on Liu Yuancheng. He was standing straight in his original place. His eyes were blank and the sword in his hands had already disappeared.

“A .....very terrifying....battle technique.....you.....I.....” He opened his mouth, and the blood was like a spring. His aura became weaker and weaker, his figure wobbling and shaking: “This.....is Heaven’s will. I would really.....hehe.....”

Ye qingyu struck out like lightning, the icy layer under his feet exploding. His figure like electricity, the sword in his hands beheaded Liu Yuancheng.

The head of Liu Yuancheng flew through the air.

“You still have so many useless words before dying.” Ye Qingyu fixed his figure, retrieving his sword and standing straight.

There was a path to Heaven but you didn’t go. Hell had no gates but you conversely trespassed\*.

Ye Qingyu had originally first planned to go to Youyan pass, then slowly

settle his debts with Liu Yuancheng and avenge Yan Fan and the others later. He did not think that Liu Yuancheng would still be chasing him, not letting him go. He did not calculate that Ye Qingyu's strength would grow so quickly, taking no precautions whatsoever. Ye Qingyu gained the initiative with the four moves of the unmatched general, and under the consecutive moves, Liu Yuancheng's figure perished and his cultivation disappeared.

\*Idiom describing people taking the harder option despite their being a easier option.

# Chapter 129: Flash

He had calculated everything throughout his life, with countless devious plots and schemes. He had caused harm to countless people. Spoiling both his son and his adopted son, creating trouble in Deer city, he had died as a result of this.

This could be counted as his karmic retribution.

Ye Qingyu stored away the Little Shang sword.

Originally he wanted to cut away Liu Yuancheng's clothes to wear himself, but it was already shredded into tatters. There was no way to wear it anymore.

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then searched the corpse of Liu Yuancheng. He found several storage dimensional pouches on him. Opening the space seal on them, he found that there were already several sets of clothes prepared within. Ye Qingyu tried wearing it and although it was not quite fitting, but at least it could cover his body. He no longer needed to be naked.

He then inspected the other storage dimensional pouches. Inside, there were some riches contained within and Spirit herbs as well as various other similar type of objects.

Apart from this, there was also an unexpected jade container. The craftsmanship on it was extremely fine and detailed, the carvings elegant and beautiful. It seemed exceedingly valuable just from the appearance.

"I wonder what is inside?"

Ye Qingyu attempted to open the jade container, but discovered the formation on the container was extremely exquisite and profound. There should be a self destruct formation on it. If he was not able to solve the miniature formation and chose to open the jade box by force, it would destroy itself.

"Liu Yuancheng regarded this jade container so importantly. There should definitely be some very important objects inside. After I return, I

must find a formation expert that I can trust in to unlock this jade container. ”

Ye Qingyu placed the jade container into the [Cloud top cauldron], storing it away.

After rummaging around several other dimensional pouches, Ye Qingyu discovered a jade piece the size of a thumb.

Compared to the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun, Liu Yuancheng was evidently more shabby. On his body, there were not any high class storage items like dimension rings or the such. Only this jade piece was somewhat rare. Ye Qingyu discovered three little characters on the jade piece. After inspecting it in detail, he discovered the words [Chen Moyun] carved on it.

This jade piece belonged to Chen Moyun.

“Eh? Why is there something that belongs to Chen Moyun on Liu Yuancheng’s body?”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He closely inspected and discovered that there were no restrictions or seals present on the jade piece. His consciousness entered within and half a moment later, a delighted expression showed on his face.

“I did not think, that what the jade piece stored, was a [Pill mantra].”

Within the jade piece, there were some important information or perhaps techniques and sutra stored away. Only a true expert, could place their consciousness into the jade piece. People like Chen Moyun was able to do this, but for Liu Yuancheng, he was still somewhat lacking. What made Ye Qingyu feel that something was strange, was the fact that the jade piece had no restrictions or seals whatsoever. It was as if it was an item that had no owner.

“Could it be that Liu Yuancheng and Chen Moyun were conspirators?”

Ye Qingyu vaguely understood.

This time coming out, he had travelled by the secret route of the army.

Normal people should have no way of tracking or chasing after him. Even if Chen Moyun was the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix] with a respected status, he was not a man of the military. Furthermore, this was the Deer mountain range and not the Azure Phoenix province – his influence could not be brought to bear. To want to find Ye Qingyu, he could only rely on the old bastard Liu Yuancheng. The two villains should have long colluded together, each of them cherishing their own sinister designs.

And this jade piece, should be something that Chen Moyun gave to Liu Yuancheng to buy him into service.

The [Pill mantra] that was stored within the jade piece was something that only a high class pill master could come into contact with. A normal martial artist absolutely could not see it at all. It could be counted as a precious treasure.

In truth, Ye Qingyu's guess was not wrong.

At the beginning Chen Moyun had relied on this [Pill mantra] to bribe Liu Yuancheng, and made Liu Yuancheng to place spies within the army. Liu Yuancheng had risked to obtain the route that Ye Qingyu would travel, planning to ambush him halfway.

Ye Qingyu's fortune was very good.

At the time that Chen Moyun had handed over the [Pill mantra] to Liu Yuancheng, he had erased the formation seal on the jade piece. Afterwards, there was not enough time for Liu Yuancheng to erect another formation, making the jade piece become an object with no owner. Ye Qingyu could browse the contents as he pleased.

“Haha, this [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] is really generous. Not only did he gift me my present strength and the [Cloud top cauldron], he has also given me a [Pill mantra]. He is completely the grandfather that hands out wealth, wahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu's eyebrows relaxed as he laugh.

This [Pill mantra] had really solved one of his great problems.

After receiving the pill formula from Li Shizen at that day, Ye Qingyu

had always wanted to attempt to refine pills. But his foundation was extremely thin, with no one to teach him. For him, refining pills was but the spoken dreams of a mad man. But right now, all was well with the acquisition of the cauldron and the [Pill mantra]. As long as he spent effort training, sooner or later he could become a pill master.

After robbing all the things clean on Liu Yuancheng's body, Ye Qingyu dug a culvert on the ice floor, placing the corpse within the hole.

"Seeing that you have given me so many treasures, I'll bury you. When you reincarnate in your next life, become a good person." Ye Qingyu said.

After the battle, the formation within the ice room had already lost its effect.

Big head was still slumbering in a far off corner.

Ye Qingyu picked him up, and exerted all his strength to knead and pinch him.

But this glutton would still not wake up.

"Eh? He is in such deep sleep? Something is not right, it is like he is hibernating." After observing for a moment, Ye Qingyu discovered that the breathing of this glutton was thin like a cotton strand. He had a slow heartbeat and his body was at a constant temperature. He was like the animals that chose to hibernate in the winter.

A dog, would really hibernate?

Ye Qingyu was completely speechless.

He again fiercely pinched Big head, and still couldn't wake him up. At the moment, he could only give up.

"Just what is this! Other people's battle companion, even if their battle power is trash, at least it can pretend to be adorable. Why is it that I met with a fellow that apart from eating, can only sleep!"

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry.

But after confirming this silly dog was safe, he was much more reassured.

“The upcoming question to solve, is how to depart from this underground ice cave that is like a maze.”

Ye Qingyu thought for awhile, but had no way of remembering the path he came from.

“This underground cave has corridors after corridors of complicated intersection. It is like a spider’s web. As long as one step is wrong, every step will be wrong after and one will never be able to escape from here. Previously, when the sentries brought me here, we chose the path randomly in our rush. Plus this is the location Chen Moyun has chosen. I don’t even know where this is. If I fumble around blindly and chaotically, there’s a possibility that I can be lost here forever.”

Ye Qingyu quickly thought of a plan in his mind.

“However, as long as I always head up, and travel upwards, I should be able to leave here. This underground ice cave, at the most extends several hundred metres beneath the ground. “

After considering, Ye Qingyu finally had a plan of action.

He was not in a rush, sitting and resting for a while. He made sure his inner yuan was at the most optimal condition before doing anything. Summoning the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], he began browsing the pages.

By raising himself to the level of fifteen Spirit springs in one breath, this represented that Ye Qingyu could already browse fifteen pages of content in the Bronze book.

Of the fifteen pages, Ye Qingyu had already read ten when he was confined within the [Cloud top cauldron].

The fact that Ye Qingyu was able to escape from the [Cloud top cauldron] in top secret, was only achieved by relying on the power of one of the pages of the Bronze book.

This page, belonged to one of the three sections, [Titled strange objects].

This was different from the pages Ye Qingyu had previously unlocked.



On this page, there was not any techniques like the [Four moves of the unmatched general] nor strange objects like the [Sentry guard] . There was only a large Fiendgod symbol, that could not even be counted as a character.

Ye Qingyu after successfully translating it, was sure that this symbol was a formation belonging to the God and Devil era.

He had attempted to insert his inner yuan into this Fiendgod symbol. Then he immediately understood the power held by this formation.

Flash!

This formation, was what was known as the flash formation in the God and Devil age.

The power it possessed, was similar to the [Delimiter] formation that could be seen in the continent. It could break apart the constraints of space, breaking open the limits, like teleportation. From one place, you could appear in another place in an instant. With a [Delimiter], one could appear and leave as they pleased from countless dangerous areas. Even top experts could not block them.

The [Flash formation] held the power of teleportation.

Ye Qingyu had relied on the power of flash, to escape from a treasure like the [Cloud top cauldron].

Chen Moyun would not have dreamt that Ye Qingyu would possess such an object like the [Delimiter]. Naturally he had not have any safeguards whatsoever and was kicked into the cauldron from behind without any knowledge because he was stupidly feeling for the pill inside the cauldron.

The existence of the [Flash formation], meant that Ye Qingyu had an hidden card that he could use to turn around countless situations.

On some perspective, this could be equal to gaining an extra life.

Right now Ye Qingyu felt more and more, that the bronze bok [Titled Fiendgod chart] was extraordinary. It absolutely far exceeded his most

optimistic imagination.

“Apart from page on the [Flash formation], there are still ten pages of the Bronze book that I have not managed to decipher. It should be some rare thing, but I don’t have the time right now to investigate. I must first quickly return above ground and head to Youyan Pass. This is the most important matter.”

Ye Qingyu stuffed Big Head into his chest, inner yuan surging into the Flash formation.

“Flash!”

Accompanied by his clear and loud shout, Ye Qingyu’s figure ascended. He disappeared from his original location.

Since the last time he had used the [Flash formation], over a month had already passed. He could already use it again.

With Ye Qingyu’s current strength, by activating the [Flash formation], he could approximately teleport to a distance of around five miles – that is around five thousand or so metres. He chose to flash upwards. This would definitely be out of the boundaries of the ice cave, and return him above ground.

The truth proved, that Ye Qingyu’s judgement was correct.

The underground ice cave should be located five hundred to a thousand metres below the ground. His flash carried him in one to four thousand metres in the air.

Fresh air surged towards him from all directions.

The cold astral winds gusted by him, making him feel extremely comfortable.

As the first of the red sun shone towards him, warm sunlight descended on his body, making everywhere bright.

Ye Qingyu could not help but scream in exhilaration.

He had been in that dim underground cave with no days at all for more than a month, breathing in the thin and ancient air for a very long time.

Now he had finally returned to a normal environment. Ye Qingyu felt a sensation similar him being born anew.

Under the strong wind, the clouds were like waves in the sea.

“I’ve finally came out alive.....”

# Chapter 130: Lu Zhaoge

Ye Qingyu greedily sucked in large mouthful after large mouthful of fresh air.

A short moment later, he descended back to the ground, standing alone on top of a snowy peak.

Looking downwards, the surrounding snowy white peaks were standing in great numbers. One could largely judge, that this location was still within the hundred broken mountains. But evidently, there was still an extremely great distance from here to the nearest watch post. Ye Qingyu did not possess the routes of the military. At this time, he did not know exactly what direction to travel.

“Youyan pass is directly North. If I just head North, I should reach it sooner or later?”

Ye Qingyu bitterly smiled. It seems like that he could only use such an idiotic method.

He was about to soar through the skies and head towards the North, when an unexpected change occurred.

“Who is that person loudly screaming?”

A loud shout, like the rumble of thunder in the summer, incessantly sounded from far away, spreading everywhere. The sound waves were so strong, that it began to shake the sea of clouds, and even the strong gusts in the skies were faintly moved.

As the sound of the shout had not yet finished, another sound came piercing through the skies.

Xiu!

A great fissure was torn apart in the cloud layers.

A figure like an electric arrow, drew a trajectory through the heavens. He arrived in an instant, descending fifty metres before Ye Qingyu.

“Was it you who was screaming crazily just now? You.....Eh? So it was

you.....” The tone of the silhouette was originally cold, but as his gaze landed on Ye Qingyu’s face, he suddenly became emotionally moved. “Motherfucker, you little brat, just where have you died to in these days. You made your father I, afraid and alarmed searching for you.”

As he said this, the silhouette flashed, arriving before Ye Qingyu in an instant.

Pak!

The person lifted his hand and punched Ye Qingyu in the chest.

Ye Qingyu looked downwards, then was overjoyed at the unexpected fortunate occurrence. Exclaiming, “Old Wen? You, you.....why are you here?”

The person that suddenly appeared, was really astonishingly Wen Wan.

Ye Qingyu did not imagine that he would bump into Wen Wan at such a place.

“Why am I here? That’s all due to your fault, you stinky little brat. Once I heard there was a problem in the watch post, your father I rushed over from Youyan pass overnight. Motherfucker, did you know, I’ve already spent over a month of time searching for you in the hundred broken mountains? I’ve nearly dug up these mountains looking for you.....” Wen Wan said with anger but with laughter hidden within. “Just what has happened? The sentry post has collapsed, what did you guys encounter?”

“It’s a long story.” Ye Qingyu bitterly smiled, retelling everything that had happened.

He hid away those comparatively secret matters concerning the bronze book and the [Cloud top cauldron].

“So it was those two old dogs.” After Wen Wan had finished hearing the story, he grinded his teeth. “Luckily for them, they have died quickly. Otherwise, I would definitely make them suffer.....haha, but to bring back the subject, you little kid really have gained fortune from calamity. Your strength has risen so fast. If it is like so, then I can drill you with reassurance in Youyan pass.”

As he said this, in the far off skies, more yuan qi fluctuations could be seen.

Several more figures, came from far away.

“Superior!”

The leading person had silver armour, a muscular figure, with a clearly defined face that was somewhat heroic. The several people around him were all wearing silver helmet and silver armour, evidently from the military. They surrounded Wen Wan, seemingly his subordinates.

Wen Wan flicked his hands with a laugh. “Fine, the person has been found. Wu Guanlong, go and tell the others of the army, to tell them to return. I will send someone to report on what has roughly happened shortly after.

This heroic faced military officer, respectfully gave off a sound of agreement. Transforming in a ray of light, he headed towards the South.

“Fine, let’s go. Lets go to Youyan pass, then we’ll speak.”

Wen Wan slapped Ye Qingyu on the shoulder as he smiled a wide grin.

The other subordinates, evaluated Ye Qingyu with a curious glance.

Their own superior was a military officer famed for his violence throughout Youyan pass. Ever since taking up the official appointment, he would not give face to anyone at all apart from military order. It was unknown just how many nobles of the younger generation he had taken care of. Wen Wan had all punished those whose work was detrimental, shirking responsibilities and scrambling for merit. They had never seen, military officer Wen Wan would display so much care towards someone of the younger generation. In this month, he had nearly flipped the entire hundred broken mountains over. This young man called Ye Qingyu, just what was his background, that he would make the violent officer care so much about him?

“Everyone, it has been hard.”

Ye Qingyu clasped his hands to express his thanks.

.....

.....

Three days later.

Ye Qingyu finally arrived in Youyan pass.

The location that was known as the pass was the front line between Snow country and the Snow ground demon court. It already possessed nearly a hundred years of history. After several generations of the country's men bitter construction, it already began to emit a vast unfathomable atmosphere. One of the three main peaks of Deer mountain range, Youyan peak, was cut apart to construct the pass. Aside from that, there was a fort outside the mountain and tunnels and dwellings within. There were countless holes dug hundreds of miles east and west from here, a large majority of the rocky ground and cliff transforming into dents. There were countless formation arrays as well as various military installations arranged in these holes. It was like a forest, numerous and densely packed.

It was covered and shrouded in ice and snow throughout the year. The entire Youyan pass was like a cold city of ice.

Because of the traces left behind by the traces of human activity, there were the even present thick clouds and mist in the skies. Like it was a land of ghosts\*. It was said that this was how Youyan pass got its name from.

The first moment he saw Youyan pass, Ye Qingyu's was completely shocked and stunned.

He stood from the air thousands of metres high, surveying down. The entire Youyan pass was like a slumbering blue dragon, towering and majestic, imposing, firmly guarding the Northern gates of Snow country, it utterly blocked the demons of the Snow ground demon court from entering.

Because this was an important location to the military, the security was incomparably strict.

As Ye Qingyu and the others got within ten miles to Youyan pass, they had already received the interrogation of four waves of little patrols. Formation airships patrolled all around. Thankfully with the famed violent officer Wen Wan beside him, the various questioning procedures became much simpler.

After passing twenty covert watch posts, Ye Qingyu's feet finally stepped on the ground of Youyan pass.

It was a city in the mountain.

A mountain city that was in ice and snow.

It was the winter season. The air here was even harsher compared to Deer city. Many of the architecture in the outside city was constructed using cold ice. The people on the streets, largely wore leather coats and cotton padded clothes. But they would not cower and huddle for warmth, evidently having adapted to the cold environment. Instead, they seemed very vigorous and energetic.

"You first go to the Pass Lord's residence, and report for duty to Pass Lord Lu.....then go to the military camps to obtain your armour and your badge."

Wen Wan brought Ye Qingyu along. Sitting on a snow dragon chariot, they headed towards the Pass Lord's residence at a rapid speed.

A snow dragon was the special Spirit beast that belonged to Youyan pass. With an extremely powerful ability to bear weight, it was said to be a descendant branch of the ancient dragon. It's head was like a dragon, the horn sharp like blades or swords. It's hind legs were developed and sturdy, able to shoot through the snowy ground. The forelegs was like claws, able to hold weapons. High class snow dragons could spit out lightning and also fly.

But this snow dragon chariot that they travelled in, was a somewhat low class.

On the way, Wen Wan took great pains to introduce Ye Qingyu to the situation regarding Youyan pass, especially the organisational structure



of the military and what forces composed the power base of Youyan pass. Attentively telling him on what he should pay attention to, what people he could not pay attention to, what people he must pay respect to and distance himself from, what matters he could do as he pleased, and what situations where he must not interfere etc.....

“How come you have only came for a year to the front lines, and become so womanish?” Ye Qingyu laughed.

In the end, he had missed the time where they had not seen each other.

After they had met, they were especially close. But his mouth could not help but insult him several times.

Perhaps this was the friendship between men.

“You little brat is really living in plenty without appreciating it.” Wen Wan sighed with sorrow. “Thinking back, when your father I came here, I was not familiar with the situation or people. I was played around with people who looked down on me, causing quite a few laughable situation to happen. I nearly had my head chopped off by breaking the rules of the army.....Right now you have me following you everywhere and pointing out a clear path for a little brat like you. Yet you’re still not satisfied.”

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously.

Wen Wan said resentfully, “I finally discovered, that I came here to pave the path for you.”

On the way, they once again encountered many heavily armed patrols.

This was different from Deer city. Every structure in Youyan pass, was constructed with the foremost consideration of sturdiness and suitability for battle. Even civilian houses, were constructed like forts. The roads were wide and straight, nearly every building square. The large majority of citizens living here were soldiers, or the family of military officers. There were merchants and normal civilians, but these people were very few in numbers.

It was said that there was an army two hundred thousand strong in Youyan pass stationed by the Snow country, but the true elite should only

number around a hundred thousand.

The closer they got to the Pass Lord's residence, the stricter the security was.

The snow dragon chariot passed over a total of twenty one formation fences, entering into the inner city. And after travelling for another twenty minutes, they could finally see their destination. Far off in the distance, the completely white building was like a divine palace in the clouds. It was the residence of the Pass Lord.

"Within a thousand metres from the Pass Lord residence, all civilian court officials dismount and all military officers must get off from their vehicles. "

The silver armoured guards loudly shouted.

"Dismount. "

Wen Wan gave a signal, bringing Ye Qingyu down the chariot. Fixing his clothes, he continued to walk forward.

The lord of Youyan pass, was known as Lu Zhaoge. He was one of the only princes of country that had a different surname. Receiving the title as the Lord of the North that drove away the demons, he was a legendary person.

Rumour had it that Lu Zhaoge was the playmate of the Emperor of Snow country, and had a exceedingly great relationship with the Emperor. He was a true martial artist standing at the peak. He had once, one man and his blade alone, entered deeply into enemy territory, invading a thousand miles into the Snow Ground demon court. He annihilated ten thousand elite demon soldiers, and beheaded the head of a status at the entrance to the demon court, bringing it back. He shook the entire Snow ground demon court with his might. He had ruled and defended Youyan pass for over thirty years, with the army of the demon court not even able to take a step past the peak of Youyan. His contribution was outstanding.

Within Youyan pass, Lu Zhaoge held two roles simultaneously. He was both the Lord of the pass and the Commander in Chief. Holding authority

over administrative and military affairs, his words held enormous weight.

In the eyes of countless soldiers in Youyan, this Northern lord that drove away the demons was an existence akin to a deity.

He held prestige and respect that could not be compared to anything. Every soldier and military officer, was willing to die for such a commander of the army.

Even Wen Wan, a brute like military officer who could not be tamed, could not but become more solemn when he appeared in front of the Pass Lord's residence. First he tidied up his armour, then walked step by step inside.

On the gates of the Pass Lord's residence, there were silver armoured guards defending the structure.

Ye Qingyu handed over his identity nameplate and the official appointment. Only then was he allowed in.

Wen Wan waited outside, in a courtyard within the residence.

A silver armoured captain brought Ye Qingyu passing through many lookout posts on the way. They headed towards main hall where official business were discussed.

Wen Wan seemed to have long gotten used to everything here. He casually selected a pavilion to enter, reclining on a chair. He held his two hands behind his head as he stared into the skies, waiting for Ye Qingyu to come out.

\*place of Youlin – Where Youyan pass gets its name from

# Chapter 131-132: Guerilla Warfare Officer

Approximately ten minutes later.

“I wondered who it was, to be so unbridled in the Fort of the Pass Lord. To not follow etiquette and reclining down in such disarray. So it was really the infamous [Impertinent officer].”

A piercing and unfriendly noise came from beside Wen Wan.

Wen Wan was originally quite content reclining backwards, but he frowned upon hearing these words. Just a short listen alone was enough for him to discern who it was. An impatient expression flashed by his face. Not even lifting his head, he shook his foot about, and said in an impatient voice: “What, coward, is your bottom itchy again? Scram to one side. You thing with no guts, don’t disturb my mood. Be careful otherwise your father I will beat you.”

“You.....”

The noble military officer that seemed to only be around twenty years of age, stood outside the pavilion with an expression of rage.

From the conversation between the two, the relationship between Wen Wan and this noble officer was not that good.

“Peh, a brash person with bravery but no brain.” The noble officer coldly snorted, a chilling light flickering in his eyes. His facial expression was as if he had could not understand Wen Wan at all.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu walked out from the inner hall.

“Old Wen, the matters are settled. Let go.” Ye Qingyu waved the formation plate on his hands. There was already the inscription of the army of Youyan Pass written on it. This represented that from now on, Ye Qingyu was a person belonging to the military of Youyan pass.

Wen Wan stood up. “So quickly? Did you see the Pass Lord?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head: “I did not see him. There was only a Mister Liu who received me.”

“Mm.” Wen Wan nodded his head, his thoughts unknown. Gesturing, he said: “Let’s go.”

The noble officer heard the words exchanged between the two. His gaze passed over Ye Qingyu. With a cold smile filled with disdain, he suddenly lifted his leg, blocking the path of Ye Qingyu. Stretching out his chin, he said : You’re new?”

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, then nodded his head.

“Since you are new, then I will teach you a lesson. From now on, don’t walk together with this brash idiot who has countless enemies. Otherwise, you will definitely encounter trouble.” The noble officer said in a overbearing tone.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat confused.

He looked at Wen Wan, asking: “Your enemy?”

“Him? He is enough to be the enemy of your father I? He is only a coward that ran from the battlefield, and was taken care of several times by me. If not for the fact that his background is somewhat tough, I would have long played with him to his death. He’s not even worth mentioning.” Wen Wan rubbed his nose, saying very arrogantly.

Your words are perhaps far too straightforward?

Ye Qingyu said with anger: “You said you came to pave the road for me. Instead, you came to recruit enemies for me?”

Wen Wan chuckled roguishly.

Ye Qingyu slapped the shoulder of the young noble with a laugh. “Don’t worry, I am definitely not on the same road as this foolish person.”

The noble officer retreated a step with disdain, rubbing the shoulder Ye Qingyu had slapped. He coldly sneered, “So you understand....”

But before he could finished, Ye Qingyu smiled harmlessly. “But, I will also give you a lesson. Don’t be so arrogant in front of anyone anymore. You best not let me see you running from the battlefield. Otherwise, no matter how hard your support is, I will definitely play with you to your

death death. I guarantee, on this point alone, I am definitely different from this brash person who wants to do it but don't dare."

The noble officer was dumbfounded.

Then he instantly realised, that the words of Ye Qingyu was mocking him.

"Stand there." The anger of the noble officer was invoked. He fiercely grabbed the Ye Qingyu who was about to leave, coldly smiling: "A thing that doesn't know death, just where did you come from? To speak to me like that? Do you know who am I?" "

He had heard just now, that Ye Qingyu was reporting for duty for the first time in Youyan pass. Furthermore, he had not received the direct reception of the Pass lord, and was just received by the Mister Liu who had a position akin to an advisor. Therefore according to his estimation, Ye Qingyu must not be someone of a great background. He was only a little character assigned here, and he was free to use his military position to oppress him.

He had performed such a move far too many times. He had already refined it down to the state of perfection.

But as Ye Qingyu heard this, the only thing he wanted to do was laugh.

This noble officer, was completely no different from the idiot nobles in White Deer academy.

Why was it that even the army would have idiots like him?

"Since you have said so much, then I really want to ask who you are." Ye Qingyu was not in a rush to leave. Turning around, he stared at him, calm and unruffled.

"Haha, then listen well. I am of the left camp, the guerilla warfare officer Lin Lang." The noble officer had his chin lifted up high, staring down at Ye Qingyu. "How about it? This military position, is it enough for you to lower your head and bow to me?"

The army of Youyan pass, was divided into the Vanguard, Left camp,

Right camp and the Back camp.

And the position of guerilla warfare officer belonged roughly in the middle level of each camp. They commanded over a hundred people. Possessing the power to launch a strike by themselves, their position in Youyan pass could be counted as comparatively high.

Ye Qingyu heard this and began laughing out loud.。

He lifted his military seal and waved it around. “So it was the guerilla warfare military officer Lin. I really have been too disrespectful. I am the patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, reporting to the pass today. I wonder, do I need to bow down to superior Lin?”

Lin Lang heard this and was taken aback.

He stared fixedly at the seal, his face instantly turning green and red. Ultimately, he lowered his head and did not dare to look at Ye Qingyu directly anymore.

Sword patrolling envoy!

This fellow, was really a patrolling sword envoy!

Lin Lang screamed crazily in his heart.

The military position of the patrolling sword envoy, was somewhat special in Youyan pass. It also belonged to the middle level , but there was not any ties to any of the four camps. It was also not managed by the Pass Lord's office. It directly reported back to the royal court of snow country, and belong to a special role similar to an ambassador sent by the military department.

Within Youyan pass, there were only ten Sword patrolling envoy.

Each and every sword patrolling envoy, held extremely great power. Their role was to survey the hundreds of officers, representing the royal court to patrol the camps. They maintained discipline and ensured the loyalty of the army to the country. Their role was to monitor illegal activities and prevent discipline from being broken. It was also to report back whether there were any activities that attempted to deceive the

Emperor. They interrogated and decided the fate of many officers in the army. All officers below the position of general in the four camps, must accept the surveillance and monitoring of the patrolling sword envoy.

And for those who broke military discipline, the patrolling sword envoy had the power to first execute then report afterwards.

In total, the military position of the patrolling sword envoy was not high, but they held very real power. They were horrifying characters that changed peoples expression when they discussed it in the army.

But due to the fact that the power of the patrolling sword envoy was so great, this position did not possess any soldiers under them to command. Apart from four or five members to aid them, they did not have the power to command soldiers. Normally, patrolling sword envoys were all experts of the martial path. They used their personal strength to enforce their judgement.

Lin Lang would not even have dreamed, that to show off, he had kicked into such a hard steel board.

With his tiny little guerilla warfare position, even if he had the support of his family, in front of such a fierce character like the patrolling sword envoy, he was completely like a soft piece of tofu. If this patrolling sword envoy decided to come after him with a steel heart, then his little life would sooner or later be handed over.

“This.....this.....your subordinate I.....I.....”

Lin Lang stumbled and mumbled, his face red, not even producing a complete sentence.

As he spoke, at that time, his knees were very quickly about to soften. If not for the last shred of dignity as a noble and as a martial artist, perhaps he would have long knelt on the ground with a crash.

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously.

“Coward.” Wen Wan gave a look of disdain.

The two of them left the gates of the Pass Lord’s residence, leaving from



the grounds.

Lin lang stood where he was, his face filled with embarrassment and resentment. Watching the back of the two, his lips moved several thousand times, but ultimately no words were said.

Today, he was placed at a complete disadvantage.

As his cold sweat quickly went away, and the icy wind blew past, it made him more clear headed.

As he did his best to suppress the rage in his heart, Lin Lang said silently: "What am I doing, to be scared by a newly appointed brat....En, the pass lord did not receive him personally, this means that this little brat does not have any background or status. To be together with that brash idiot Wen Wan, his background should be normal...."

He sat in the pavilion, carefully considering.

He began to feel more and more that his previous judgement was correct.

"Motherfucker, Ye Qingyu is it? I was nearly frightened by you little brat. This grievance is set, you best have a great background,. Otherwise, I will definitely repay the shame of today.....For a new patrolling sword envoy to arrive in Youyan pass, this news, must be quickly spread out. Let me see, whether you can stabilise and take root here!"

Lin Lang coldly laughed.

.....

.....

Wen Wan accompanied Ye qingyu until he reached the official residence of the patrolling sword envoy.

"I'll come find you later." Wen Wan slapped Ye Qingyu on the shoulder. "These days to find you, I have already not reported back to the camp for a long time. I estimate there will be many bothersome matters piled up, I'll first return to take care of it.....the days in Youyan pass is very boring, you'll soon get used to it."

As he said this, he gathered his subordinates and left.

Wen Wan's military rank was also a guerilla warfare officer, commanding two hundred snow dragon riders. He could be counted as one of the elites of the vanguard. Although the time he had spent in Youyan pass was short, but he had already fought in several hard battles and obtained a splendid battle record. He could be said to be one of the newly rising stars of the army in this period of time, with a significant fame. His reputation was much tougher than the noble officer Lin Lang who relied on his family to come here.

Ye Qingyu saw Wen Wan off. Standing in front of the official residence, he was somewhat moved.

The architecture in front of him, was said to be the residence of an officer, but in truth was built in accordance to the general style of Youyan pass. Square shaped tower, with four storeys, it could be considered as the highest structure a thousand metres around. The style of construction was still made with sturdiness at the forefront; the walls were rough and crude, seemingly very normal from the outside

On the direct northern doors of the tower, there were two words --  
White Horse.

This name of this tower, was the White Horse tower.

Creak!

The doors of the tower were opened.

"Superior."

A pale and pallid thin youth, wearing rusty armour, and wearing large beast skin shoes, walked out from the front door. Looking at Ye Qingyu with questioning expression, he weakly said: "Who are you looking for?"

Ye Qingyu smiled faintly. "I am new here. From now on I will live here."

"Ah? New here?" The youth was dumbfounded, then after half a moment, suddenly realised something. There was a shocking light emitting from him. He said inconceivably "You....you.....you mean that

you are the new patrolling sword envoy?”

Ye Qingyu could not make clear why this youth would be so moved but he nodded his head with a smile.

The young man stared at Ye Qingyu, his emotions in turmoil. Whimpering and crying noises came from his mouth. He began madly nodding his head, then knelt on the floor, bowing to Ye Qingyu. After several bows, the skin on his forehead was broken, dark red blood seeping out.

“Quickly get up.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, a surge of yuan qi supporting the young man up. Frowning, “Just what is this? Why are you crying?”

The young man wiped away his tears, his face still covered with tear droplets. He said stuttering: “Subordinate.....subordinate is.....is the sword slave of White Horse tower, subordinate.....subordinate I have finally waited for the arrival of superior you.....I have waited so bitterly for you.....”

# Chapter 133: White Horse sword slave

Sword slave?

Waited for me bitterly?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat nonplussed.

Just what is this, do I know this youth from somewhere before?

“Wuwu, my lord, you’ve really come.....” The youth was nonsensical yet again, laughing and crying like a madman. Half a moment later, he seemed to have thought of something, quickly rushing to say, “My lord, please quickly enter. Your subordinate I have ensured that the entire tower was kept clean....”

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry, entering the tower.

The interior of the tower was really extremely clean and tidied. There was not the slightest hint of dust. The white floor was as polished as a mirror.

Ye Qingyu carefully observed around him.

The interior of the tower was plain and unadorned. The first floor was used to store various items, such a weapons, spears and blade. Apart from this, there were three or four rooms, that according to the youth, was where the servants of the previous patrolling sword envoy stayed. As you went up the stairs, the decoration of the second storey was somewhat more detailed. The second floor had a fairly large space, and there were weapons hung on the walls. It should be a small scale practice room. And as for the third floor, it was the resting room of the patrolling sword envoy. The furnishings were exquisite, and it possessed some wooden furniture.

The space of the fourth storey was comparatively small, but both the design and furnishing were elegant. With an incense burner, praying mat, emerald green bonsai plants and on the four walls, there were formations used to consolidate yuan qi of heaven and earth. And on all four sides, there were large windows that could be used to survey the surrounding

architecture.....YE Qingyu guessed, that the fourth storey should be a place of quiet used to cultivate yuan qi.

“This is some items that the previous superior have left behind. Everything has been arranged by the predecessor.” The skinny youth Bai Yuanxing said respectfully behind him, explaining in a small voice.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Then this skinny youth said in a probing tone: “I wonder if superior is satisfied with this place, do you need to rearrange anything?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “This is fine, I don’t have any special requirements.”

Bai Yuanxing let out a breath of relief, much more relax. “My lord, you are the twenty first master of the White Horse tower. The previous masters all held the position of the patrolling sword envoy. It is only that after the previous master has died in battle, there has not been a new master of White Horse tower for quite a while. As a result, everything in the tower has been somewhat neglected. There were originally ten sword slaves in the tower; some has left, some has died, and there is only me left.....”

“The previous master died?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback. “What happened?”

The sword slave of White Horse Bai Yuanxing was also taken aback: “Could it be that my lord doesn’t know the story behind White Horse tower?”

Ye Qingyu heard this, and knew there must be a long tale involved. Pointing to the chair opposite him, he said: “You are called Bai Yuanxing? That’s right, I don’t know the inner workings of this place. Since it is so, then first sit and tell me all about the story of White Horse tower.”

“I don’t dare.” Bai Yuanxing was exceedingly deferential, bending his waist: “I’ll speak standing up.....”

He told the tale without interruption. Ye Qingyu did not know what to feel in his heart as he listened to this.

The White Horse tower, had been founded right at the establishment of Youyan pass. It once belonged to the ten towers of Youyan pass. The first person to enter White Horse tower, was the head of patrolling sword envoys in Youyan pass, Bai Hungyun. He had once possessed the title of the top four experts of Youyan pass. His reputation was not in any way smaller than that of the Battle God Lu Zhaoge in Youyan, but he died at a young age. During one of the battles with the snow ground demon court, he had fallen a long time ago.....

After the death of Bai Hungyun, White Horse tower had experienced twenty masters in total. Everyone of them held the position patrolling sword envoy and these twenty people could be counted as experts of martial path, all with exceptional backgrounds. Within these twenty, there was a person very well regarded by all. With a similar reputation to Bai Hungyun, he caused the name White Horse Tower these three words, to be incomparably resplendent in Youyan pass. Even a little sword slave, as long as they walked out from White Horse tower, they possessed an exceedingly high status. Normal military officers and nobles, had to treat them with etiquette. They did not dare to be disrespectful in the slightest.

But the curious thing was, that all twenty of these patrolling sword envoy, did not have a happy ending. Everyone of them perished through different methods.....

This caused the White Horse Tower with a radiant history, to slowly deteriorate.

The White Horse Tower within Youyan pass became known as the Tower of Death, the Cursed tower. It was a place of misfortune recognised by everyone, a place where it would bring ominous matters to its master. There had been extremely capable people invited to survey the reason for this, but they could not discern behind it. Ever since the last master, the patrolling sword envoy Dong Mingzhu, died suddenly, White Horse tower had always remained empty. From then on, no one dared to live within.....

Ye Qingyu after hearing this, apart from feeling apprehensive, he was also thinking something else in his heart.

Since the misfortune of White Horse tower was so well known, then why did Misterr Liu of the Pass Lord's residence arrange for himself to be here?

As the well experienced advisor of the Pass lord office, it was impossible for him not to know this story. Then for him to assign him here, it must be something done intentionally.

That Mister Liu, why would he do this?

Was it his own intention?

Or was it the Pass Lord, the Lord of the North that drove away demon ? Was it his idea?

Ye Qingyu lowered his head and pondered for a while, then suddenly laughed. He felt that mulling these questions over was something completely pointless. A military order was like a mountain; for him to change location was something that was impossible. Furthermore, if this was spread out, he would definitely become a laughing stock.

"Perhaps I am thinking too much. The Lord of the North has what kind of position, why would he place his attention on a tiny character like me?"

Ye Qingyu laughed mockingly at himself.

However, there was still something suspicious. Wen Wan had already came to Youyan pass for quite a time already. It was impossible for him not to know the legend of the White Horse tower. It was exceptionally strange for him to not even mention it previously when he saw him off.

Just what kind of medicine was this fellow selling in his gourd?

When he had time, he must question this fellow.

And as the matter lies, Wen Wan still owed him something. The pearls that obtained from the old golden clam, he had handed it to Wen Wan. He said he would bring it for someone to examine it, yet he had never returned it.

As for the legend of the White Horse tower, as a martial artist, Ye

Qingyu had far more considerations than the ordinary man.

Firstly he would naturally not be like a normal person and believe that the White Horse tower was really cursed or possessed by a ghost as legend has it. He was not as superstitious as to believe in these intangible and inconceivable matters. But the fact that twenty one martial artists including Bai Hungyun had met with a made end was an indisputable truth. There would not be waves without wind. There must be some sort of secret not known by others hidden within.

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu's heart became more and more curious.

Could it be that within White Horse tower, there really was some sort of secret hidden?

He did not say anything, allowing the sword slave Bai Yuanxing to continue with his tale.

Ever since four years ago, and the death of the last master of White Horse tower, the deterioration of White Horse tower could already not be prevented. In these four years of time, there was no one who dared entered into White Horse tower. Originally, there were ten swore slaves of the White Horse tower and their role was serve the master. But as the saying goes, when the tree topples the monkey scatters. Some people met a bad end, some people chose to leave. In these four years, talent scattered everywhere. Ultimately, there was only Bai Yuanxing left.

Because of the deterioration of the White Horse tower, the military had also stopped allocating a stipend.

Bai Yuanxing had bitterly endured alone by himself. He could nearly bear it no longer. He suffered being bullied and humiliated every day. His face was yellow and thin from suffering too much hunger. Even he himself, did not know just how much longer he could endure. Luckily for him, Ye Qingyu had arrived today. It made the last sword slave of White Horse tower, able to see the light of hope....

As Ye Qingyu heard this, a slight affection was felt for this skinny youth.



After the sword servant Bai Yuanxing had finished explaining the mysteries behind the tower, he stared at Ye Qingyu in fear and high alert. He could tell, that this new master knew nothing about the legend of the White Horse tower. Now he knew, would he immediately depart from the White Horse tower, and go reside somewhere else?

It was not easy for a master to be assigned here. If he was scared away, then it was definitely a tragic loss.

Therefore, the heart of the youth became restless and worried.

Ye Qingyu looked at this youth, thinking of the words he had previously said. His heart suddenly moved, saying :”You just said, that the first master of White Horse tower was called Bai Hungyun. Your family name is also Bai, could it be.....”

The youth was taken aback, never imagining that the master would be able to connect the dots. Rushing and bending his waist, “Not to hide from my lord, Bai Hungyun was namely my ancestor.”

“What? He’s your ancestor?” Ye Qingyu had casually asked this question. He had not expected it would really be like so. He could not help but ask in surprise: “Bai Hungyun had such a high position. As his descendant, why have you turned into the sword slave of White Horse tower?”

The role Sword servant, had the word slave in it. Evidently, it was not a high position.

Ye Qingyu looked at Bai Yuanxing. His feet was unstable, with no light in his eyes. Evidently, he had never trained in the martial path. In those years, Bai Hungyuan was incomparably glorious. Even if he died in a battle, he should be someone that received great rewards and merits. Why was it that his descendant, would deteriorate to such a state?

The sword slave Bai Yuanxing lowered his head. “When my ancestor died in battle, he left his last words. He wanted his descendants to protect White Horse tower for generations after, not allowing them to become officers. In these years, the Bai family has gradually deteriorated all the way until my generation. My talent is exceptionally poor, and my success

is limited in the martial path. To follow the wishes of my ancestor, I can only sell myself as a sword slave, and guard this place.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

If this Bai Yuanxing had not lied, then there were definitely some parts of him that could be admired. His loyalty was excellent. In the future, Ye Qingyu could use him with reassurance.

“Fine, I know. Thank you.” Ye Qingyu patted him on the shoulder with a smile.

The figure of Bai Yuanxing quivered. “I don’t dare, this is something I should do.”

After this conversation, Ye Qingyu became greatly interested in the matters regarding Youyan pass. “Since you have remained in the Youyan pass for generations, I believe that you must understand very well the matters in the pass?”

Bai Yuanxing said respectfully: “I have heard many rumours , but I cannot discern whether they are true or false. Because my body is too weak, I rarely leave White Horse tower.”

“Haha, relax, I’m only asking you about matters that are common knowledge.” Ye Qingyu looked at Bai Yuanxing’s careful and cautious manner and knew that he must have suffered hardship in these years. He always lowered his head to others and had hence created a timid disposition. Reassuring him, he then said: “There should be ten patrolling sword envoys in the city. Before my appointment, there should have been nine. According to logic, as the sword slave of White Deer tower, you should also be a person belonging to the patrolling sword envoy group. Why don’t you seek aid and protection from them?”

Bai Yuanxing let out another sigh. “This is something that you cannot know. The relationship between patrolling sword envoys are special. They cannot be counted as comrades. One of their duties is to monitor each other. From the beginning, the other patrolling sword envoys has never been amiable with each other.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

This was his first time hearing all of these.

“Superior, your military uniform and weapons, are in the tower. Do you need to go inspect it?” Bai Yuanxing asked. “After the previous master has perished, the military supply department has halted the distribution of the stipend. Since superior you has finally come, then I will immediately request for the stipend to be reinstated.

“Good.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Then I’ll first have a look at the uniform and the weapons.

The military occupied a decisive role in Snow country. It could be said that it was the pillar of the country. Hence, their supplies were utterly faultless and of superior quality. Especially for the front lines like Youyan pass, the treatment they received was especially generous.

Within White Horse tower, there were the uniform of the patrolling sword envoy and the weapons associated with the position.

The so called uniform, was really a set of armour. It was called the [White Horse armour].

The workmanship of this armour as well as the materials was exceedingly exquisite. The silver helmet and armour was luminous and dazzling, with the shape like a white horse, two wings on the back of the armour. It combined beauty with functional capability. It could be counted as a great product created by the military of Snow country. Even if it was hung on a frame, it seemed very artistic, like a flying white horse in the heavens.

When Ye Qingyu saw the [White Horse armour] his eyes brightened.

” A Good treasure!”

He could not help but praise it.

After carefully observing, Ye Qingyu discovered many particulars in different locations. The defensive ability of this armour was astonishing. On the war armour, there were countless formations inscribed. After

entering one's inner yuan inside, one could activate the power of the formations. It could withstand consecutive heavy strikes, and it was also possible for it block spears and hidden arrows. It's class was only slightly less than that of a Spirit armour, and it was unquestionably the best choice for protection on the battlefield.

And what was even more rare, were the the two wings on the back. It was not just for decoration. On it, two profound formations were inscribed that could reduce the weight of the wearer and give them the power of flight. After wearing the [White Horse armour], and inserting your inner yuan into the formations, one could control the wings, soaring into the skies.

The experts of the Spirit spring stage could also fly through the air. But this was typically far too great an expenditure for their inner yuan. But if one relied on this heaven horse wings, and borrowed the power of the formation, the expenditure on their inner yuan would be greatly lessened. By fighting against opponents in the skies through this tool, one could definitely gain a great advantage.

The more Ye Qingyu looked at it, the more he liked it.

Even though this war armour could not be counted as a Spirit weapon class armour, but after considering just how hard it is to obtain a complete set of defensive armour like this, it was definitely something special. Furthermore if the abilities it had in battle was calculated, then its value was not in anyway less than a Spirit weapon. It was even higher than a typical Spirit weapon.

Who would have thought becoming an officer in the military would have such great benefits.

Apart from this armour, there were many weapons left by the previous owners. There were all eighteen types of weapons there. Blades, spears, hatchets, battle axe, hooks, prongs, there was everything that one could name. Most of the work were elites products from the hands of a grandmaster, made from extraordinary material. One look was enough to tell that they were the sharp tools used to kill in the battlefield.

But they were all not Spirit weapons.

Ye Qingyu did not mind too much, storing every weapon away.

“That’s right, which of these weapons do you like?” Ye Qingyu smiled at the Bai Yuanxing who had always remained next to him. “Come pick one.”

“Ah?” Bai Yuanxing jumped in shock, then quickly shook his head “This.....no,no,no, my position is too low, how would I dare covet these divine weapons....”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything. With a faint smile, he handed over a set of sharp flying blades.

There were six sections to this set of sharp flying blade, with each section having six blades. In total, there were thirty six blades, with each blade bringing it a silver but slightly blue colour inside. They were slightly curved, with rivets for blood that could be clearly seen. One side sharp, the other side blunt, the tip of the blade extremely sharp. One look at it was enough for cold shivers to be born.

These thirty six flying blades, was stored in a pale blue strange sheath made from the skin of beasts.

The workmanship of the sheath was exquisite, with a girdle, that could be fixed onto the back of someone. It completely covered the thirty six blades so that a normal person had no way of noticing the blades on the wearer’s body. It was definitely a sharp weapon made for killing. The person who created these blades, was absolutely a master of assassination.

“This, this, this.....”

Bai Yuanxing held the blade sheath with both hands, both nervous and flabbergasted, but holding a very well disguised delight. He did not know what to say.

“Take it away. From now on, train with effort. Talent alone cannot decide anything.” Ye Qingyu had long noticed, that Bai Yuanxing liked this set of blade the most. His gaze had lingered on these blades the

longest. When he looked at it his pupils would glow with a light, so he had just gifted it to him.

After all, it was something his predecessors had left behind. Ye Qingyu had just blindly picked it up himself. Casually handing one or two pieces to others for a favour, was something he could do and not feel pained in the slightest.

After a slight hesitation, Bai Yuanxing gratefully accepted this set of flying blades known as [Flowing light of the stars].

Ye Qingyu returned to the storey above, slightly arranging his residence and adjusting to the new environment.

Bai Yuanxing took away Ye Qingyu's deputy seal, heading towards the military supply department to request for the reinstatement of the stipend. For the White Horse tower to reopen again, the meaning it held for the last White Horse sword slave, was absolutely not in any way less than being reborn. His entire person was resplendent, in much higher spirits.

As he stood in the clean room of the fourth story and watched Bai Yuanxing disappear in the end of the far off street, ye Qingyu faintly smiled.

This person, he could trust to carry out his orders.

But his background, was definitely was not as simple as he had said.

Although he had only came to the Youyan pass for a short time, Ye Qingyu could already sense a sensation like a storm encroaching. The atmosphere in this military frontier was even more complicated than in his imagination.

Ye Qingyu stood on the fourth floor, surveying the surroundings.

Everything miles away, could be seen in his eyes.

As he silently surveyed the surroundings, Ye Qingyu's mod gradually calmed down.

He suddenly liked this sensation overlooking everything. From this

height, the people on the roads were like ants, and he could see the structures and building silently standing in the snow. To stare down from the White Horse tower gave him a sensation akin to a monarch or deity controlling everything around them, possessing absolute authority.

From far away, in the falling white snow, a crimson red gradually sunk into the ice mountain to the west.

The time of the sunset.

For the first time, Ye Qingyu felt that the sunset was magnificent.

In that split second, he began to comprehend something in his heart. Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position, on the praying mat. Activating the nameless heart sutra, he began to train.

Ray after ray of silver yuan qi dragons soared out from within Ye Qingyu's body, encircling around his body.

Ye Qingyu did not stop activating his inner yuan. Controlling the roiling yuan qi dragons, he constantly deepened his ability to control his own energy.

His strength had grown explosively. What he lacked the most right now, was the needed minute control over his power.

Like a young child holding a sharp knife, Ye Qingyu must first increase the control he had over his new power. Only then, could he emit the true power of fifteen Spirit springs. He did not want to be like the young child cut by the sharp blade in his hands, suffering an injury because he had no way of handling this new power.

Time passed minute by minute.

The sun had already sunk below the horizon.

Darkness began enveloping Youyan pass.

The fifteen yuan qi silver dragons lingering on Ye Qingyu became increasingly more concise, their actions more agile and nimble. From the beginning where it was somewhat stiff and shaky, it was already many times more fine and controlled.

Accompanied by the vague roars of dragons, the fifteen yuan qi silver dragons once again entered back into Ye Qingyu's body.

He deeply exhaled a murky breath of air, slowly standing up.

“Two hours have already passed, why has Bai Yuanxing not yet returned?”



# Chapter 134: Soldiers on duty

Wen Wan did not come at the promised time.

That evening, he did not come find Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu had long gotten used to the fact that this fellow could not be relied upon. He did not wait for him any longer.

By the time the colour of the night turned pitch black, Bai Yuanxing had not yet returned. Therefore Ye Qingyu went downstairs, finding something casual to eat. He decided to go to the military supply department in search of him. Following the roads, and glancing curiously at the new surroundings, he headed in the direction of the military supply department.

There were strict rules imposed on the streets at night. Night patrols crossed and intersected in the streets repeatedly. Even if you were a normal military officer, without a special military order, it was forbidden for you to leave the camps. One was not allowed to walk in the streets at the night.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu held the position of patrolling sword envoy. It was a rather special role, and was not included in this restriction.

After receiving the interrogation of several of these patrols on the streets, Ye Qingyu obtained the correct directions from these patrols. Fifteen minutes later, he had finally arrived in the great camp of the military supply department.

The military supply department did not belong to the vanguard, back, the left or the right, these four main camps. But its position was very important in Youyan pass. Funding and provisioning every troop, they were the god of wealth in the army. They were a character that everyone wanted to have good relations with.

There were less than two thousand metres of distance between the military supply department and the Pass Lord's residence. The large majority of the buildings of the supply department was hidden under the

snow and ice, within the mountain. What was exposed outside were only tens of black warehouses and three stone halls.

The ice and snow fenced these structures within.

There were elite soldiers wearing black armour that was patrolling around in all directions of the military supply base. There was a mound every ten steps and a sentry every five. The security was extremely serious. And within the large gate covered by ice and snow, there were twenty people stationed there. The group on duty would be swapped periodically every hour. No matter whether one considered how well armoured they were or their individual strength, these were the elite of the elite.

“Who is it?”

There was a cold shout in front of him.

Before Ye Qingyu had neared a hundred metre from the gates, he had already been discovered.

But he did not have the intention to hide himself. Calmly, he walked slowly step by step, and at the same time indicated his official seal of his position. Activating his inner yuan, the formations on the official seal began to activate. It formed a diagram of two swords diagonally intersecting with a vast atmosphere and great momentum.

This was the official formation seal of the patrolling sword envoy.

Most of the surrounding cold killing intent, in this instant, largely evaporated.

Ye Qingyu knew, that the hidden sentries had already retreated.

He did not hurry or slow his pace. Step by step, he walked to in front of the gates.

The four metre tall snow and ice fence that surrounded their base was sculpted from cold ice formed hundred of years ago. On it, was the enhancement of formations. Yuan qi of heaven and earth fluctuated within. This ice wall, was even more sturdy than walls made from steel.

The gates were also similarly sculpted from ice, and under the lanterns of the night, there was a translucent mysteriousness .

Before the great gates, there were ten icicles on each side with a girth that you could wrap your arms around. These were erected to the left and right of the gates.

These icicles were tens of metres high.

“Superior.” The captain of the soldiers that were on duty at the gates came over, slightly bowing to Ye Qingyu. His face was covered by the black face armour. In the colour of the darkness, he seemed like a monster of the night. Seemingly grim and unfeeling, he extended his hand. “For what matter have superior you come to the military supply department? Please could you show your seal.”

Ye Qingyu handed over his official seal.

His gaze, passed by this chilling soldier on duty that was like a monster of the night. His gaze casually flicked to above the icicles.

But in the next instant, his gaze froze while looking at the pillar.

And at the same time, the soldier on duty seeing Ye Qingy’s official seal was slightly taken aback. He could not help but lift his head and have another glance at Ye Qingyu. Seeing that this patrolling sword envoy was unfamiliar and young, he instantly knew that this was the rumoured new patrolling sword envoy here to fulfil the empty position.

Connecting this with the matter that had happened this evening, the captain on duty, instantly understood that this would not end well.

He extended his hand to hand the official seal respectfully over....

But at that time, he could only feel his vision ferociously blurring. The figure of Ye Qingyu had disappeared.

The other armoured soldiers let out shocked exclamations.

They could only see Ye Qingyu’s body, like it was a humongous avian, appearing in an instant at the tip of an icicle. His hand like a knife, he cut through a ice pillar as if it was tofu. He released a prisoner that was

chained to the icicle. Holding him into his embrace, he floated back to the ground.

There was no sound as he landed, nor traces of his descent in the snow.

The twenty ice pillars outside the gates, were known as the [Punishment pillars of warning]. It was a place where the military supply departments punished criminals. Those soldiers who had committed serious crimes would be hung at the top of these formation ice pillars, serving as warning to everyone. Some outside people who had conflicts with the officers of the military supply department, would also receive such a punishment, to enforce the military authority of the supply department.

Ye Qingyu looked at the armoured soldiers on duty, saying: “Why is the sword slave of White Horse tower hung on the ice pillar? I need an explanation.”

The person in his embrace, was the sword slave of White Horse tower, Bai Yuanxing. He was already at his last breaths.

“This....” The captain of the soldiers on duty hesitated, about to say something.

Ye Qingyu quickly checked the injuries of Bai Yuanxing and his expression faintly changed. He did not tarry any longer, soaring back towards the direction of White Horse tower.

“Whoever did it, tell him to scram to White Horse tower and explain himself to me.”

A voice containing fury, resounded throughout the night air.

In the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu had already disappeared in the vast night air.

The captain of the guards on duty was dumbfounded for a moment, then thought of something. Gesturing for one of his subordinates to come over, he said something to him in a low voice beside his ear. This subordinate followed the order, turning and running inside the gates.....

After a short while, a black robed young man walked out.

The leader of the soldiers on duty handed over the military seal over, saying something in a low voice. He pointed in the direction of the empty [Punishment pillars] that was still vibrating.

The face of the black robed young man, instantly became somewhat embarrassed.

His figure flashed, soaring upwards and following along the ice pillar. Halfway up, his hands pressed down on the icicle, borrowing force to lift himself up further. Grabbing the edge of the snapped off ice pillar, he inspected the cut of the ice pillar. It was smooth and polished like a mirror. His eyebrows became even more furrowed.

This ice pillar had received the enhancement of formations. Blades and swords could hardly harm it.

But the cut was sharp and polished. According to the words of the head soldier, it seemed to have been broken by the newly arrived patrolling sword envoy....

It seems like the strength of this new officer, could not be underestimated.

The black robed young man landed back on the ground.

The leader of the soldier's facial features was covered by black face armour and his expression not able to be clearly seen. But he had clearly witnessed, that the same action of jumping to the top of the pillar, Ye Qingyu's movement was as nimble and as agile as a snowflake, but the black robed young man was somewhat more clumsy and heavy.....

The one above and the one below was already decided.

"What did he say when he left?" The black robed young man asked.

"He said, who acted against his people, scram to the White Horse tower to give him an explanation." The leading soldier on duty, explained everything that had occurred in detail ,not hiding anything in the slightest.

The black robed young man nodded his head. Lowering his head to look

at the official seal of the patrolling sword envoy, he did not say anything in the end. Turning around, he headed inside the gates of the military supply department.

The night wind whistled.

The floating snow was like blades.

“Superior, just what is this?” Another soldier on duty came over, curiously asking.

That black robed young man just now, was called Zhao Ruyun, an officer in charge of allocating supplies in the department. Wielding power, he was namely the person responsible for allocating resources to the areas around White Horse tower. Of the thirty six officers in charge of allocating supplies, he could be counted as one of the most talented. With powerful strength, exceptional family background, he had received the trust and usage of the high ups. He could be counted as a rising star of the supply department.

But similar in all cases, when a young man had great achievements, he could not help but be somewhat haughty and be arrogant.

Zhao Ruyun was not an exception.

Normally, this young man was haughty and his style of work pitiless. But unfortunately, his post held real authority. A casual little action by him could make someone suffer hardship they were unable to bear. Even those who had a higher military position and strength than Zhao Ruyun would give him some face.

Today, without knowing why, as the timid sword slave from White horse tower came to request their stipend, Zhao Ruyun was suddenly enraged. Reprimanding the sword slave for taking the stipend in vain, he ordered people to tie him up and beat him until he fainted. He hung him on the [Punishment pillars] for him to be frozen alive.

But it seemed like, this time Zhao Ruyun had provoked a fierce character.

The White Horse tower that had been left abandoned for four years. A

new patrolling sword envoy had unexpectedly arrived.

But this patrolling sword envoy, from what it seemed like, was not going to display any sort of weakness whatsoever.

The captain of the soldiers on duty gave a glance at the soldier that had walked over, shaking his head. "Don't ask so many whys. These are not characters that we are able to provoke. Carefully guard your position. Curiosity can kill. Manage your mouths. The things that occurred here, don't go and spread it around. Don't blame me for not reminding you when disaster falls on your head for speaking too much."

The soldiers quickly nodded their heads.

As he watched his subordinates departing, the leader thought about many more things.

According to the daytime rumours, there was a newly arrived patrolling sword envoy whose smell of his mother's milk had not yet dried\*. He had a fairly sizeable clash with the guerilla warfare officer Lin Lang in the Pass Lord's residence. Who would have thought, that only a couple of hours after, he was able to see with his own eyes, the patrolling sword envoy that entered the Death tower.

Although the territory of Youyan pass stretched out for hundreds of miles, but in reality it was very small circle.

Everything that happened within, would quickly spread out. As long as one paid attention, they would be able to obtain the information they wanted.

He believed, that the events here tonight, would quickly spread out.

The newly arrived young patrolling sword envoy would unquestionable become the focus of everyone's eyes. Countless gazes would gather on the body of this youth. This was especially so, since the position of the patrolling sword envoy was so special and it possessed significant power. If this youth was a fierce character and had great background, the moment he chose which faction to enter, was when the current balance of Youyan pass would be broken.

This was like scattering a bunch of salt into hot oil. Once the appearance of the new patrolling sword envoy was made known, it would cause the wok of oil, Youyan pass, that was already boiling, to completely roil and roar.

Without knowing why, the leader of the soldiers had a premonition. There would soon be some incredible changes that would occur in the Youyan pass that was as stable as a boulder in the tempest and had towered for tens of years through the battlefield.

.....

“Withstand it!”

Ye Qingyu’s figure was like lighting, returning to White Horse tower at high speed.

Bai Yuanxing had injuries on his body, but it was not life threatening. But he had been hung for several hours already on the [Punishment pillars] and had faced a chilling cold wind that seeped into his bones. For the him that did not know martial arts, this was a torture that was hard to bear. Ye Qingyu was able to sense, that the body of Bai Yuanxing was nearly completely frozen.

This was the reason Ye Qingyu did not find the people of the military supply department to settle his grievance immediately. This was the reason he brought Bai Yuanxing back immediately.

First and foremost, was to save the person in question.

On the way, Ye Qingyu’s inner yuan protected the heart of Bai Yuanxing, warming his meridians and extending his last wisp of breath. Once he returned to White Horse tower Ye Qingyu instantly, with his full effort, inserted his inner yuan into Bai Yuanxing’s body to retain his life force.

\*Relatively inexperienced



# Chapter 135: A technique that was invincible in theory

Ye Qingyu was very angry.

He did not know just what has occurred when Bai Yuanxing went to the military supply department. But with Bai Yuanxing's timid and cautious personality even if he was the one in the right, he would retreat to some degree. Even if he was negligent or in the wrong, the mistakes he made must be unintentional. But what he received was such a heavy punishment.

In truth, he did not want to know what had occurred.

Because it was completely meaningless.

As the saying goes, when you hit a dog, you have to look at who owned the dog.

Bai Yuanxing was the sword slave of White Horse tower, He was a person belong to White Horse tower. Therefore, he was Ye Qingyu's man. Such an act by the people of the military supply department was tantamount to slapping Ye Qingyu on the face.

He had only arrived to Youyan pass for half a day of time. On some perspective, he had not even stabilised his footing. But in this matter, Ye Qingyu did not want to have any sort of compromise.

Firstly, it was because Wen Wan had once told him, that to flourish in Youyan pass, you have to possess bravery and toughness. Soldiers were belligerent – prestige was the crucial if you wanted their respect. No matter what the situation, you had to be somewhat ferocious. Only then could you gain the acceptance of the soldiers and their respect.

The second reason, was the most important reason.

Ye Qingyu was furious.

Truly furious.

Seeing the youth in front of him that was about to turn into an icicle

and his pale, pallid face like he had applied countless layers of face powder, Ye Qingyu could barely control his rage. Although their time together was very short together, but without knowing when, he had already began to treat him as an important comrade.

“Since they want to step on me, then they should make preparations for being stepped on in return.....this is a good opportunity for me to establish respect.”

Ye Qingyu made his decision.

Within White Horse tower.

He incessantly inserted his inner yuan into the body of Bai Yuanxing.

“He really has average talent. His physique is naturally very poor, and he has passed the most opportune period of time for his training. If he does not encounter any sort of opportunity, it is extremely hard for him to be a true expert of the martial path.”

As his inner yuan entered into Bai Yuanxing’s body, Ye Qingyu could sense the rate of the flow of yuan qi in his body. He began to have an understanding of the martial foundations of this sword slave of White Horse tower.

He treated Bai Yuanxing’s injuries for an entire night.

The expenditure on Ye Qingyu’s inner yuan was extremely great.

Very quickly, dawn came. Ye Qingyu finally managed to have expelled all the chilling air within Bai Yuanxing’s body. It made it so that his heartbeat and meridians were gradually becoming stronger, with signs that it would get better. His body finally began to emit a slight warmth.

As he arranged the slumbering form of Bai Yuanxing, Ye Qingyu could finally relax and let out a breath of relief.

This person could be said to have been saved.

But it was likely that he had to be carefully nourished for a period of time before he could recover his vitality.

Ye Qingyu left the White Horse tower, and ate breakfast in the stands

on the streets. After thinking, he spent money in hiring a servant girl, and purchased some herbs and meat that could restore vitality, Bringing her and the items back to White Horse tower, he directed the servant girl to take care of Bai Yuanxing.

During this entire day, the supply department did not send anyone to explain about what had occurred.

It was only during the time of the evening, that a armoured soldier came to White Horse tower. He came to hand back Ye Qingyu's official seal and his deputy seal --this official seal was given by Ye Qingyu to the captain of the soldiers on duty. and the deputy seal was taken yesterday when Bai Yuanxing when to request for the stipend to be reinstated but was captured instead.

Ye Qingyu, seeing that the person bringing the seals back was only a ordinary soldier, knew that making things difficult for him was pointless. He did not say anything, stowing away the seals.

As he stared at the retreating soldier, a cold light flashed in Ye Qingyu's eyes under the light of the sun.

"It seems that they intend to completely ignore the new patrolling sword envoy."

He smiled slightly.

It seems like the words of Wen Wan was not wrong.

The contest and struggles within the military was even more direct than in the academy. Sometimes, you had no way of commanding someone by relying only on your military position. Even the Lu Zhaoge who was revered like a deity, did not begin from high up in the clouds. Only through tens of years of time, could he establish respect like that of a god in Youyan pass.

Ye Qingyu did not imagine that he would encounter such a tricky situation the instant he arrived at Youyan pass.

But perhaps this was also an opportunity?

He returned to the fourth floor, continuing to train.

.....

After the armoured soldier returned to the supply department, he retold everything that had happened to the black robed young man Zhao Ruyun in detail, concealing nothing.

Zhao Ruyun waved his hands, gesturing for the soldier to leave.

He silently sat on his chair, seriously pondering.

After a short while.

He lightly clapped his hand.

A soldier that was his confidant walked in from outside the halls.

“Help me send out invitations. Invite the guerilla officer Lin Lang, the staff officer of the Pass Lord’s office, and also...” Zhao Ruyun listed six or seven names. “Invite them to discuss important matters at the supply department three days later.”

“As your order say.”

The soldier turned around to enact the order.

A sinister colour, flashed by the face of Zhao Ruyun.

.....

One day later.

White Horse tower.

Bai Yuanxing was still in the midst of unconsciousness.

But the vitality of his heart, was stronger than before.

With the servant girl’s careful attention, Bai Yuanxing’s injuries healed at a rapid rate. Ye Qingyu would come treat him three times every day, treating his acupuncture points and temple, not sparing any inner yuan in order to help him heal with his energy. According to Ye Qingyu’s estimate, if no accidents occurred, then in two days time, this White Horse sword slave would awaken.

But that fellow Wen Wan, still had not appeared.

Ye Qingyu guessed, that perhaps something had occurred in the camps. Since Wen Wan could not leave temporarily, he did not rush to go out and find him.

Apart from helping Bai Yuanxing, Ye Qingyu did not travel about the city. Instead, he spent all his time training.

He needed to quickly truly control the power of fifteen Spirit springs, making it truly belong to himself. At the same time, Ye Qingyu finally had time to quietly comprehend the unlocked parts of the [Titled Fiendgod chart].

He sat peacefully of the quiet fourth floor of White Horse tower. He summoned the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart].

Due to the incident previously with the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun, Ye Qingyu knew that others had no way of discovering the existence of the Bronze book. Therefore, there was not a need for any concealment. After washing, he sat on the prayer mat facing the window. Lifting the bronze book, he began to read.

An hour later.

“So the ten pages of information unlocked in the ancient bronze book, are not ten different kinds of techniques. There is only one, called, [Limitless Divine way]. This is really too astonishing, the entire contents of these ten pages, is just concerning one technique.....”

After reading the entire content of the ten pages, Ye Qingyu was very shocked.

He had originally thought, that the situation would be the same as what had occurred previously. He had cultivated another eleven Spirit springs in one breath, and apart from the [Flash] formation, he should have also unlocked another ten parts of the bronze book. In theory, he should have obtained objects like the [Sentry guard] or techniques like the [Four moves of the divine armoured king].

But what made him astonished, was that the contents of all ten of the

unsealed pages, were all pertaining to one technique.

[Limitless Divine way].

“Since all ten pages of the bronze book is about one technique, this technique called the [Limitless divine way] is absolutely not simple.”

Ye Qingyu mind was shaken. He was even more expectant in his heart. He continued to comprehend the mysteries contained within the pages.

Gradually, he was finally able to understand some of the secrets within.

“The so called [Limitless divine way], should not be a battle technique. Instead, it is a type of battle state where your power is increased. By entering this state, not only your power and speed will multiply, your reaction speed and your senses, because of the flow of inner yuan speed, can also multiply.....Heavens, this technique, is slightly too terrifying.”

After Ye qingyu finished, he was so shocked that he could not emit a sound.

In this world, why would there be such an incredible and tyrannical technique?

Once he entered into the state of [Limitless divine way], it was equal to multiplying your strength. In nearly an instant of time, you could completely slaughter opponents at the same level as you.

Ye Qingyu was at the fifteen Spirit springs stage right now. Increasing his strength by a factor of one, this would be the thirty Spirit springs of strength. Two times would be the forty five Spirit springs. If he was able to activate seven times, then would he be able fight against experts of the Bitter Sea stage?

This.....

Even the legendary sutras, compared to this technique, was only average?

Ye Qingyu could not believe his eyes. Such a method, was not something that humans should be able to possess.

Fiercely suppressing his scream of excitement, he continued to read on.

Finally, he discovered some information.

“So the [Limitless divine way] is a technique for your power to rapidly rise. The highest it can reach, is an increase of ten times your original strength. This is called [Ten Limits]. And it is not that everyone can perfectly use the power of ‘Ten limits’; they must possess a perfect and powerful flesh body. Only then, can they withstand exploding with a power that exceeds their original. Otherwise, once their power was multiplied, before even injuring the enemy they had a danger of perishing from not being able to withstand the energy and fracture.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

If it was really like so, then this fitted in with common reason.

According to the record in the bronze book, normal people practicing in the [Limitless Divine way] at the most could only explode with a power one or two times greater than their original power. Only body cultivators of the God and devil age, with their powerful flesh body, could withstand even greater limits. But body cultivators had a natural born disadvantage in yuan qi cultivation. Therefore in these countless years of time, the [Limitless Divine way] should have been extremely powerful, but very little people could completely control it in real battle. A tiny number of people could unleash the true power of the the [Limitless divine way].

At the same time, even if one reached the state where their power multiplied, this was only a short term enhancement.

According to the record of the bronze book, the person who created this technique, the prodigy of the Divine race, could only multiply his strength by a factor of eight and could not withstand sustaining it for more than fifteen minutes. As such , this was nearly the limits of the geniuses in history who cultivated in the [Limitless divine way].

The [Limitless divine way], was a technique that was invincible in theory.

And what decided its upper limits, was only one thing.

The power of the flesh body of it's user.

“The power of my flesh body, is much tougher than martial artists at the same level as me. Perhaps this in theory invincible martial path, is one that is suitable for me?”

Ye Qingyu laughed.

Not considering anymore, he began to be immersed in the technique, cultivating in the [Limitless divine way].

Time passed minute by minute.

Ye Qingyu attempted to enter into that state, according to the method outlined in the [Limitless divine way]. Fluctuating his inner yuan, activating his potential, he tried to enter the state of multiplication but was not successful.

“To want to truly enter the [Limitless Divine way], it needs the soul, flesh, blood, spirit, thoughts, will and qi to be at a peak state. Then one must enter into an state of coordination with all these factors. Only then, can it be successfully be activated....”



# Chapter 136: The person walking in the setting sun

Ye Qingyu bitterly trained in the [Limitless divine way].

He flipped through the ten pages of the Bronze book, constantly deepening his understanding of the [Limitless divine way]'s heart sutra.

Gradually, he found a sensation.

In that instant, with his highly concentrated and elevated spirit, he entered a strange state where he was himself but not himself, observing himself but forgetting himself. Ye Qingyu felt, that in the time of the spark of a flint, a strange transformation had occurred.

This type of feeling, was like flowing light, flashing by.

But after numerous attempts, Ye Qingyu finally managed to latch onto the tiniest shred of this sensation

“The perfect state in theory, the [Ten limits] is hard to reach. I need to first begin from the [First Limit], to increase my strength by a factor of one....”

.....

.....

Three days later.

Military supply department, stone hall.

The rooms of the hall was closed. Seven or eight people sat silently within the stone hall.

Zhao Ruyun had already changed into a black Taotie\* beast skin armour. His appearance was thriving with heroic spirit. He retold everything that he knew, then said: “In these days, Ye Qingyu has nearly not left his residence and acted extremely low key. I don’t know what kind of medicine he is selling in his gourd. The reason I invited everyone here, was to discuss on how exactly to take care of this person.”

“Haha, he is just being deliberately mystifying. I’ve long said, this little brat is just trying to scare people with fake bravado.” The voices of laughter sounded. The person who had spoken, was namely the guerilla officer Lin Lang that had clashed with Ye Qingyu at the Pass Lord’s residence.

In the stone hall apart from Lin Lang and Zhao Ruyun, there were another three or four people sitting there. Their ages were all similar, extremely young and wearing bright armour. All of them had considerable positions within the army and every one of them were young people that came from a noble family.

As Zhao Ruyun heard this, his expression slightly relaxed. “Brother Lin’s words are reasonable. In truth, that night, I was really frightened by him. After all, the military position of the patrolling sword envoy is far too special. I cannot be too cautious. Therefore I have invited everyone here to discuss a plan, but it seems I have made everyone witness a joke. ”

Everyone began laughing.

And within these people sitting down, there was a young man wearing a green robe. He had thick black hair, white skin and brought with him a rich scholarly air. With a smile he said: “From past examples, to someone to be able to occupy the position of the patrolling sword envoy, their history must not be simple. As soon as I heard the news from brother Zhao, I’ve already ordered my people. Utilising the information channels in the Pass Lord’s residence, I’ve sent people to investigate on Ye Qingyu’s background information. I believe we will very quickly have news.....”

Before he had finished.

As if it was responding to his words, a clear screech of an eagle came from outside.

One was able to see in the skies, a black dot diving down. It was a huge black eagle, ferocious, its body shrouded in divine light. The length of its wingspan was tens of metres and in the blood red skies of the sunset, it was like a streak of black lightning. Shooting past layers and layers of sentries in the air, it unexpectedly did not meet with any blockages. In an

instant, it came to above the stone hall of the military supply department.

“Haha, it seems there is already a result.”

The scholarly young man smiled, gesturing faintly with his hand.

The huge black eagle rapidly shrunk, turning into a ray of light that ultimately entered into the stone hall and into his palm. It transformed into a piece of black jade that was smaller than the size of a hand. The lines of the figure was extremely smooth. It was a jade statue in the shape of an eagle, and seemed charming from its outer appearance.

The scholarly young man shown with a faint light, discerning the information held within the jade eagle statue.

The black jade eagle piece was the formation creation of Youyan pass of the Pass Lord's residence, specially used to deliver and convey information. It was extremely costly to construct each and every piece. With it, it was possible to send a message across ten thousand miles within two hours, incomparably incredible. In the entire Youyan pass, only people of the Pass Lord's residence was able to use it.

And the scholarly young man was the youngest advisor of the Pass Lord's residence. He was called Yi Sance.

He had deliberately demonstrated the majesty of the black eagle jade piece and had definitely did this out of the intention to flaunt a little bit. Everyone sitting here, was people of outstanding talent in the younger generation in Youyan pass . They were high class nobles and were normally a small group. Every member was somewhat arrogant. The scholarly educated young man, was the only one among them who held a position within the Pass Lord's residence, possessing a high status.

“Haha, it seems we have really overestimated the newly arrived patrolling sword officer.” The educated young man Yi Sance faintly smiled. “According to my information, this Ye Qingyu, is just a small person from a common background. He is only a little student from White Deer academy that has not even graduated yet. The only reason he was able to obtain the beneficial position of patrolling sword envoy was that he was able to inherit a heroic brass badge from his parents. He could be

said to have been extremely lucky....“

As everyone heard this, they were all taken aback.

“So it was like this. Haha, a person like that really caused me to not sleep well last night.” When Zhao Ruyun heard this, he was both embarrassed and angry. Such a little character, had really caused him to be restless throughout the night. Calling his friends so early morning, was really making a large issue out of a small problem. This time he had completely become a joke.

“I wonder what is his level of strength?” Another person was somewhat more cautious, enquiring form more information.

The educated young man lightly smiled, the black jade piece transforming into a bird shaped light, disappearing in the direction of the pass lord residence. Only then did he say: “Ye Qingyu, second year student of White Deer academy. Fifteen years old, and according to the most recent news, he is approximately between the third Spirit spring stage and the fourth spirit spring stage....”

“Third Spirit spring?”

“Second year?”

“Only fifteen?”

Everyone sitting there began laughing uproariously.

Within their laughter, was both contempt and disdain.

Such news, made them completely reassured.

If they were really slightly worried before, they did not have anything they needed to be afraid of right now. That’s right, the position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, and they possessed real authority. But in the martial world, the personal martial strength of someone and the power of their family, would always be the most accurate measure to measure someone by.

And very evidently, in the eyes of these people, the patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, did not fulfil the necessary standard.

“The White Horse tower is known as the Tower of death. Haha, it seems like the twenty second patrolling sword envoy will also be cursed to his death. This scene is going to appear very soon.” Lin Lang had completely relaxed.

Right now, he was somewhat regretful of the fact that he should not have acted so prudently at the Pass Lord's residence. If he long knew about Ye Qingyu's background, he would have definitely fiercely humiliated Ye Qingyu then. Perhaps if he did that, within Youyan pass, they would be spreading his fierce reputation everywhere right now.

Zhao Ruyun continuously sneered.

He had already began planning in his heart, whether he should send someone to recapture the White Horse sword slave Ye Qingyu had rescued.

Since Ye Qingyu did not have any status whatsoever, to play to death with a sword slave under his command was not something important at all. The most important thing was to regain his face. Otherwise, this time where he had made a fuss over nothing, would later become a joke and a point of mockery in their discussions.

“We were really far too sensitive. Our faces had been covered by ashes\*\* by that brash idiot Wen Wan not long ago and hence we were far too careful. We have not exposed our claws and fangs in far too long a time. This has made people look down on us.....” A young man with a black beard and leopard like eyes slammed on a table, loudly shouting. “I think this is an opportunity. We should single out this person called Ye Qingyu, to demonstrate our power. It will also allow the other factions of the military to realise, that the young group of Cool Breeze mountain, is not an entity easily messed with.”

The Youyan army was united on the surface but in reality, it was split into different factions. It was divided largely according to the area they were from. Although these factions did not fight to the death between each other, but a struggle for pride and glory within the army was unavoidable.

The Cool Mountain faction, could be counted as a solid faction within Youyan pass. Lin Lang, Zhao Ruyun and the scholarly young man called Yi Sance belonged to the young group of this faction.

“That’s right If we endure this time, our faces will be completely lost.”

Other people also bellowed their grievances.

However, some people hesitated. “This is not right. As people of the military defending the same pass, we could be counted as comrades. Zhao Ruyun also had some matters where he was wrong, we should not try to escalate the situation. Both parties should take a step in retreat....”

Before that person had finished.

Lin Lang immediately became enraged, slapping the table and standing up.

“Haha, as a soldier, face and reputation is the most important thing. Little children talk about right and wrong, soldiers talk about the strong and the weak. Retreat, retreat, retreat, just where can we retreat to? Facing a little little trash, we have to retreat, do you have the slightest bravery if you? Without guts, how can you fight in the war and win?”

Zhao Ruyun also coldly sneered. “That’s right, Lin Lang’s words are not wrong. This time we must definitely do something, and make those who look at us like laughing stock revise their judgement. This will also make the new recruits who doesn’t know high the heavens are or how deep the earth is realise just who does Youyan pass belong to.....”

In this moment, the group was completely excited.

The military officers all became animated, a scorching flame burning in their hearts.

And at this time, the doors of the stone hall was loudly kicked open with a crash.

The clamour came to a spontaneous stop.

“Just what is happening?” Zhao Ruyun looked towards the doors, standing up with shock. Coldly snorting: “Where are the guards on duty?”

Did I not say, without my order, no one can enter?”

Pak!Pak!Pak!

The clear sound of applause sounded.

It was especially loud and clear in the stone hall.

“Well said, beautifully said. You have really opened my eyes.” A voice sounded, with the figure nowhere to be seen.

The first people to appear, were two armoured soldiers with red faces. Falling and crashing in, panting and covered with sweat, they did not know what to say.

Then, the piercing red sunset, shone from the door.

A silhouette, under this crimson red light of the setting sun entered. His entire body enveloped in radiance, he walked step by step inside. Standing at the door, he slowly clapped his hands.

The officers looked over, squinting their eyes.

Who was it?

The sunlight was piercing to the eyes. A faint shine came from the outline of this figure and the front of the figure was shrouded in the gloom of the light. The lighting was hazy and the features could not be clearly discerned. As if this person was covered in divine light and it was not possible for someone to look upon him directly.

“Good, well said, very well said. Listening to it just makes my blood boil. Haha, your words are entirely correct.”

The silhouette in the light, spoke slowly with a strange tone.

“Superior, we.....we couldn’t block him, he’s.....” A armoured soldier quickly came beside Zhao Ruyun. “He is the patrolling sword officer Ye Qingyu.”

As these words were said, the room fell completely silent.

As Cao Cao was mentioned, Cao Cao had arrived.\*\*\*

To think that the person who had been completely mocked and insulted,

would use such a method to appear in front of them.

The expression of the officers, instantly became marvellous to behold.

\*legendary Chinese creature. See [link here](#) for pictures and diagrams

\*\*to be placed in a sorry/embarrassed state

\*\*\*famous saying about Cao Cao, main villain in Romance of the Three kingdoms. Makes reference to the fact that as soon as Cao Cao was mentioned, he would shortly appear.



# Chapter 137: Just who do you think you are?

“I’ve disturbed you guys demonstrating your bravery?” Ye Qingyu laughed. “Really my apologies. You guys continue, I’m only here to find him.....” He lifted his finger to point at Zhao Ruyun. “That’s right, you. There’s a little matter I have to discuss.”

“What do you want?” Zhao Ruyun walked over with a cold smile. “I was just about to look for you, but you came my doorstep of your own volition?”

“Eh? You were looking for me?” Ye Qingyu widened his eyes in seriousness, curiously asking: “For what matter did you come looking for me for? Ah, I know, you must have realised that you were in the wrong, and wanted to apologise to me, isn’t that right?”

“Wrong? Apology?”

Zhao Ruyun was taken aback, then immediately burst into laughter.

Not only him, the entire military officers in the hall had the same reaction. After staring at each other, they began laughing uproariously with mockery evident on their faces.

“Little thing, has your brain been burnt and you’ve become retarded?” Zhao Ruyun did not disguise his disdain in the slightest. “Why should I apologise to you? Just who do you think you are?”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything .

He remembered the event a hour before. When Bai Yuanxing had finally awakened and his description of the conflict that happened on that day.

.....

.....

A hour before.

Inside White Horse tower.

“What? It was because you were breathing too loud?”

Within White Horse tower, as heard the answer of the White Horse sword slave, Ye Qingyu was completely dumbfounded by this retarded reason.

According to the description of Bai Yuanxing, on that day he was excited and jogged towards the military supply department to request the reinstatement of the stipend for White Horse tower. Because his body was weak, and he had ran too quickly, when he arrived at the supply department he was somewhat out of breath. He waited outside the door until he his breathing had recovered, then brought Ye Qingyu’s deputy seal to request the reinstatement. The military officer he encountered was namely Bai Yuanxing.

Zhao Ruyun had only glanced at Bai Yuanxing once. Then, he ordered people to fiercely beat Bai Yuanxing without allowing him to explain himself.

The reason was very simple.

The breathing of Bai Yuanxing was so loud that it made the allocation officer believe that this was an action of great disrespect towards him. It was a type of action that held the military supply department in contempt and was unforgivable. Not listening to Bai Yuanxing’s begging or explanation, he ordered people to hang this pitiful sword slave on the [Punishment pillars] at the entrance of the supply department to be frozen alive.

“This is only an excuse.....” Bai Yuanxing lay on the bed, incomparably weak. “Because the White Horse tower has long been weak. I have previously been several times to the supply department asking for the stipend to be reinstated, but I have always been fiercely beaten.....This time, he intentionally made things difficult for me. Even if not for this, there would be other reasons.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

To be able to realise this point, this proved that Bai Yuanxing’s personality was timid but his thinking was agile.

“I know. Rest well.”

Finishing saying this, he headed outside.

“Superior, you.....I’m fine, don’t go.....” Bai Yuanxing saw this and panicked. He was able to guess what Ye Qingyu was going to do, rushing to sit up. Panting roughly, he said : “I’m really fine....I’m only a tiny sword slave, superior you.....”

“Shut your mouth.”

Ye Qingyu fiercely turned around, and a never seen severity shone in his eyes.

Bai Yuanxing hesitated.

This was his first time seeing such an emotion in the eyes of this patrolling sword envoy.

“Bai Yuanxing remember well. You did nothing wrong, what are you afraid of? You are a person belonging to White Horse tower, you are a person belonging to me Ye Qingyu. From now on, lift up your head and stick your chest out. Don’t be faint hearted and gutless, I Ye Qingyu cannot command such a person.” Ye Qingyu’s tone was severe and strict. “Always giving in will just make people look down on you, and make them want to torment you even more. If you don’t want to suffer, then fiercely strike back at them.”

Bai Yuanxing was taken aback.

These years he borne countless humiliations to save his skin. For the fulfilment of the wish of his ancestor, he was willing to accept any kind of humiliation.

He had never thought to change the way he lived, to put up any sort of struggle.

Because he felt he was far too lowly. In this icy cold world, if he made any sort of resistance, what met him was just a fierce beating and the possibility of losing his life.

If he died, then who would fulfil the wishes of his ancestor?

But at this moment, seeing the strict gaze of Ye Qingyu that he had never witnessed before, Bai Yuanxing was suddenly moved.

His first reaction was to avoid Ye Qingyu's eyes, wanting to lower his head. But he miraculously managed to bear it. Under this serious gaze like that of an interrogator, Bai Yuanxing felt something fiercely beating on his heart, nearly making him unable to breathe.

Perhaps, the protection that his ancestor wished for, was a protection done by lifting his head, a protection that was dignified and noble.

And it was not a protection done with a cowering and lowered head?

Bai Yuanxing suddenly realised something.

At that time, Ye Qingyu had already left.

"Your set of [Flowing light of the stars], the twenty four flying blades, were also confiscated by the military supply department?"

The voice, came from outside.

Bai Yuanxing was blank, immediately realising where he was going.

.....

.....

Military supply department, stone hall.

Ye Qingyu laughed. "I'm not any great character, I'm only here to discuss something.....Mm, I have two requests. The first, is that you apologise. The second, give me back the set of flying blades, [Flowing light of the stars]." He looked at the group with a smile. "How about it, isn't this very reasonable?"

The officers looked at Ye Qingyu.

They felt that it was possible that the brain of this patrolling sword envoy laughing currently was not too clever.

Could it really be that he had still not understood just what kind of situation he was in?

He believed, that him alone, could suppress everyone at the scene?

Did he take the wrong medicine?

Zhao Ruyun began laughing loudly. “Little thing, I think you have really eaten the gall bladder of a leopard. To dare intrude on my place to cause trouble. Haha, I’ll ask you one more time: who do you think you are, to make me apologise?”

Ye Qingyu seemed as if he did not mind these words at all. “If it is like this, you refuse to apologise, and you also refuse to return the [Flowing light of the stars] that belongs to White Horse tower?”

The officers laughed together.

Lin Lan had laughed so much that his stomach was hurting. Holding his stomach in an exaggerated fashion, rubbing his eyes and slapping the table: “Hahaha, this is really too . In this world there is really such a stupid pig that I don’t even know he should be called, hahahaha.....apologise, everyone quickly apologise, hahaha, he is about to get angry.....”

The scholarly young man Yi Sance, also began shaking his head and chuckling.

“What mother fucking thing do you think you are, that you want us to apologise?” Zhao Ruyn said word by word. “As for that set of flying blades, just why is it something that belongs to White Horse Tower? It is evidently something bought at a high price by us. Your lowly sword slave stole it somehow, and was captured by me on the spot with evidence on his body. I advise you to obediently return the lowly slave for him to accept his punishment....”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu’s palm moved.

An two inch seal, like that of a cold arrow appeared in his hands.

He casually tossed it.

Ding!

The seal landed on the floor of the stone hall.

On the seal, the light of the image of two swords intersecting brightened. Then, light projected from the seal. Clear and cold light, enveloped the entire stone hall. The officers was taken aback, and felt an alarming and bizarre sensation like that of being surrounded by swords and blades

“Right now, I officially suspect, the allocation officer of the military supply department, Zhao Ruyun, of embezzling funds and provisions, bribery, abuse of soldiers, plunder of another’s belonging....” The smile on Ye Qingyu’s face disappeared, his expression instantly becoming chilling cold. “Right now, as the patrolling sword envoy, I order you to surrender, and accept investigation.”

As he said this, Ye Qingyu’s hand casually swiped through the air.

The deputy seal of the military position, also fell to the ground, transforming into black shackles.

Zhao Ruyun was blank, the smile on his face disappearing.

Ye Qingyu had activated the seal of the military. This meant that the matter had escalated to the official military level.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, and they did have the right to investigate the matters of the supply department.

And as for the crimes that he had just stated.....

“This is you trying to frame me, I....” Zhao Ruyun jumped up in rage.

“Oh, you’re not listening to military orders is it?” Ye Qingyu smiled for a bit, stepping out. Others only felt their vision blur. He appeared in an instant before Zhao Ruyun, his hands grabbing through the air. The shackles formed from the deputy seal automatically soared into his hands, and directly headed towards the arm of Zhao Ruyun.

“You dare?”

Zhao Ruyun was furious, his arm moving to avoid this attack. His hand was touching the long sword at his waist.

“You want to resist a military order?” Ye Qingyu had a laugh that was

not a laugh, the light in his eyes chillingly icy.

“I.....hmpf, you have no evidence, and want to ruin my good name. Of course I need to resist. Such a matter, even if it is escalated to the Pass Lord’s residence, I am still in the right.” He grinded his teeth, pulling out the long sword at his waists, and immediately cold light surged out, yuan qi surging.

Thirteen yuan qi dragons, indistinct, began coalescing around Zhao Ruyun’s body.

He had a cold smile of disdain as he looked at Ye Qingyu.

According to the information contained in Yi Sance’s research, he knew that Ye Qingyu was just a martial expert of three Spirit springs.

And as for Zhao Ruyun exhibiting his thirteen yuan qi dragons, his reason behind this was very clear. He wanted to tell Ye Qingyu clearly, that he was thirteen Spirit springs, and his strength was many of times greater than him. So therefore; don’t pretend to be authoritative in front of me, and honestly scram off. Even if he used his official seal, he was just seeking his own humiliation.

Ye Qingyu had a calm expression, striking out once again.

The deputy seal once again headed towards Zhao Ruyun’s arm.

“You are looking to die.....”

As he saw that Ye Qingyu really did not intent retreat, Zhao Ruyun could not bear it any longer. The long sword in his hands quivered, vibrating and transforming into sword lights, the tip of the blade like the brilliance of the stars. It headed towards the wrist of Ye Qingyu that held the seal.

After one of your hands is crippled, lets see if you are still so fierce.

Within Zhao Ruyun’s eyes, killing intent flourished.

The educated young man Yi Sance, seeing this scene, hesitated for a moment, but did not act to stop him.

As for the other military officers, they only coldly sneered, waiting to

see Ye Qingyu being made fun of.

And as the tip of the blade was about to descend on the veins of Ye Qingyu's wrist, as everyone felt that the next moment blood would spurt everywhere, Ye Qingyu's wrist, lightly and faintly moved. Extending his middle finger, with a light ping, he lightly flicked the tip of the oncoming sword.

Ding!

The light hum of the sword sounded.

As everyone could not yet clearly see what had occurred, Zhao Ruyun let out an exclamation, instantly retreating.

The figures instantly separated.

"You...." Zhao Ruyun face was full of shock.

The sword in his hands was rapidly vibrating, as if it was a fiercely struggling python. The sword constantly emitted the hums of it shaking. In the air, there was a strange sound wave that spread out. No matter how Zhao Ruyun tried to suppress the sword, the blade of the sword would not settle down.

Ye Qingyu's expression was smiling yet not smiling as he looked towards Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun bit his teeth, both hands gripping his sword. The thirteen yuan qi dragons became even clearer, inserting yuan qi into his arm, wanting to use his full strength to suppress the vibration of the sword blade.

But--

"Pok!"

He suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a jet of blood, the skin of his flesh breaking apart at his hands, fresh blood dripping from it. The sword could be held no longer. Flying out from his hands, it nailed itself onto the stone beam above. And as for the rapid shaking, it still vibrated without stopping.



“Right now, do you know just what mother fucking thing I am?”

Ye Qingyu looked at Zhao Ruyun.

# Chapter 138: Hang him for six hours

Zhao Ruyun stared at Ye Qingyu in fear.

Both his hands were nearly crippled. The skin on it had broken apart and the flesh were lacerated. His veins and white bones were exposed. He had already lost all sensation in them, as if his hands did not belong to himself any longer.

The sword was still stabbed into the stone beam, not stopping in its vibration.

Ye Qingyu had only lightly flicked it with his finger. To think that the force of that movement would be this powerful. Zhao Ruyun had thirteen Spirit springs of strength, yet his sword blade was shaking to such an extent that he could not suppress it. Rather, the vibrations had shuddered his arms till it bled and ripped apart.....

“It seems right now, you know just who I mother fucking am.” Ye Qingyu looked at the fearful and shocked face of Zhao Ruyun. Throwing the deputy seal that had been turned into shackles in front of Zhao Ruyun, he said: “Don’t make me say it three times. Wear it yourself.”

The figure of Zhao Ruyun instinctively quivered.

“You are not.....you should only have three Spirit springs, you.....” Zhao Ruyun constantly retreated.

“Eh? You have spent an entire three days and you only managed to find out such information?” Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulders. “I’m sorry, I’ve made you disappointed. Your news seems to be out of date already.”

“Just how.....just how strong are you?” Zhao Ruyun knew in his heart that the situation was far from good.

“You guess.” Ye Qingyu was smiling but not smiling, shaking his head. “If you can’t guess it, then I won’t tell you.

Zhao Ruyun opened his mouth.

He had a sensation of complete collapse.

The other military officers stared each other.

And at this instant, without knowing why, a phrase appeared in their hearts---

Playing the fool and feigning madness.

From the beginning, this newly appointed patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, acted as if he was a idiot child rookie that did not know the rules. In the midst of the mocking laughter of everyone, he stated his requests with a smile. And just when everyone expected Zhao Ruyun to settle this stupid patrolling sword envoy, the situation instantly flipped around.....

Someone turned their heads, to look at scholarly young man Yi Sance.

Very evidently, even if Yi Sance had borrowed the power of the Pass Lord residence, he had not managed to discover Ye Qingyu's true power.

Zhao Ruyun with his thirteen Spirit springs, was defeated in an instant by Ye Qingyu's one finger. This was not something that a student of White Deer academy that only had three Spirit springs outlined in the report could do.

Yi Sance continued to tightly frown, not saying anything.

He was also some what stupefied.

According to reason, it was not possible for the information channels of the Pass Lord's residence to be wrong.

Within, just where had the mistake been made?

A person that even the Pass Lord residence were not able to investigate fully, then, just how terrifying was his background?

Only a slight thought was enough to make someone's heart cold,

And within the group, the guerilla officer's expression was even worse than having eaten shit. Furtively, he retreated. At this moment, he hated the fact he could not tear apart his own mouth. If he long knew the terrifying power of Ye Qingyu, he absolutely would not have said anything. As he recalled what he did, his intentional exaggerated laughter was equivalent to an elderly person ingesting poison – disliking the fact

that they had lived a long life.

Lin Lang prayed in his heart, that Ye Qingyu did not notice him.

But it seemed like the prayers had an opposite effect.

Because in the next instant, Ye Qingyu's gaze descended upon him.

Lin Lang quivered fiercely, and forced a smile that was hard to behold on his face. "I..."

Ye Qingyu also looked at him with a smile that was not a smile. "How about it? Do you feel right now that I am very funny?"

Lin Lan shook his head like a drum shaped rattle.

Ye Qingyu snorted with disdain, his expression becoming severe, and mercilessly insulted him. "A coward without any guts. Such a gutless little ghost, just how did they become a guerilla officer? How do you command soldiers to fight in the war? No wonder Wen WAn looks down on you. To have ran from the battle field, scam to one side. If you stand in my eyesight, you'll make my mood even worse."

Every word and every phrase, was like a spear or blade, cruelly stabbing onto Lin Lang's body.

Lin Lang's face was ashen white, shivering. But ultimately he did not dare to even say one word in retaliation, moving to the side.

Ye Qingyu completely did not pay attention him, his gaze once again returning to Zhao Ruyun's face. Coldly smiling: "Are you going to put on the shackles yourself, or do you need my help?"

Zhao Ruyun shuddered.

A patrolling sword envoy with low strength, had no authority whatsoever, and was not even worth mentioning.

But a patrolling sword envoy with terrifying power, was absolute a character that made people fear whenever they laid eyes on him.

Right now, he absolutely regretted everything. That day, he should not have been greedy for the set of flying blades [Flowing light in the stars]

and beat the White Horse sword slave so cruelly.

“I...I....” Zhao Ruyun’s face was a vivid white, biting his teeth. “I am willing to return the thirty six flying blades, and in this matter, I accept I was in the wrong.”

Ye Qingyu chuckled.

“I gave you a choice, but you did not choose. Right now, you don’t have a choice anymore. ” Ye Qingyu did not have the slightest intention to reach a compromise, pressing forward step by step. “This is fine too, I don’t want to take advantage of you. Hang yourself on the [Punishment pillars] for six hours, and this matter will be said to have passed. ”

“You....” Zhao Ruyun’s complexion began to be tinged with the red of rage, and in a low voice he said angrily: “Don’t push things too far.”

Ye Qingyu smiled. “As you please. If you don’t want to hang yourself, then I’ll seal away your inner yuan and hang you myself. It is just the same.”

As he said this, he prepared to act.

Zhao Ruyun widened his eyes and stepped backwards. “Everyone, could it be that you are just going to watch? Today he will stamp on my face, tomorrow he will stamp on your head. If he hangs me on the [Punishment pillar], then the face of the Cool breeze mountain faction is completely lost. In the future, in the military, can you guys still lift your heads up high?”

As these words were said, the expression of the military officers changed.

Especially the furious black bearded burly man with leopard eyes that had previously spoken. “Brother Zhao words are correct. Today either he dies or we live. Everyone charge together, even if it is escalated in front of the Pass Lord, we are in the right with so many people. Could it be that we are afraid of him?”

As he said this, he took a large stride and pressed closer, the yuan qi light around him activating.

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly. “A bunch of retards gathering together, treating themselves as the heroes of the military. They are shameless enough to claim they are brave. You really want to make someone laugh until their teeth falls out. Arrogance and braggery, little clowns that jump on a ledge.....I peh, good, good, good. You group of rookies, just charge together all together at once.”

As he said this, he took a stride forward.

His figure was extremely quick. Nearly in an instant, he appeared in front of the burly man, and lifted his hand to form a punch..

“To compete in strength with me....” The burly military officer coldly smiled, similarly striking with a punch in return.

Boom!

An explosive turbulence surged.

His cold smile froze, then he was directly struck flying backwards.

The burly man’s figure was like a sack being sent flying backwards. Crushing stone chairs and tables on his path, he could not stop, finally fiercely hitting the wall of the stone hall. Then he spat out a jet of blood, his body becoming completely soft and limp.

He could not even withstand one strike by Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, not stopping. His figure flashing, he came in front of another military officer.

His silhouette, was like a ghost, extremely rapid. Because of the high speed, his silhouette became somewhat blurred, and in the air there was vague after images.

The military officers could not react. One after another, they were struck under their chins, directly sent flying.

Pak!

The military officers struck the wall of the stone hall, the hall fiercely shaking.

And nearly at the same time, Lin Lang felt his vision blurring. The figure of Ye Qingyu ten metres away was still there, but in front of him was bizarrely another silhouette of Ye Qingyu.

Lin Lang instinctively felt a chill, then felt a numbness in his chin, being sent soaring.

Within the air, he was able to see an even more shocking scene.

Within the stone hall, there were suddenly four or five Ye Qingyu that appeared, constantly punching out. And the other military officers, apart from the scholarly officer Yi Sance, was struck flying by Ye Qingyu's punches without exception.

Because his speed was too fast, he left behind after images.

Ye Qingyu's speed had already exceeded the limits of vision of a normal person.

Only the Yi Sance with twenty three Spirit springs, managed to barely block Ye Qingyu's fist. But when hit, his entire person was also sent backwards. Consecutively crushing three tables, his back pressed against the stone pillar of the hall. All of a sudden, he used technique to divert the force of Ye Qingyu's fist, completely transferring it onto the stone pillar behind him. With a light sound of friction, a crack appeared in the stone pillar behind him.....

Even if so, Yi Sance felt the blood in his chest roiling, nearly spurting out a jet of blood.

And at the same time, the four or five after images of Ye Qingyu in the hall, quickly transformed back into one person.

"The [Flowing light of the stars], just where is it?" Ye Qingyu looked towards Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun had long been scared witless, not even daring to say a word of rebuttal. Rushing, from the dimensional pouch on his body he took the blades sheath made from beast skin. The thirty six flying blades was all held within.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, stowing away the set of flying blades.

He extended his hand, the deputy seal transforming into shackles. With a click, it was locked onto the hands of Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun was about to resist, and could immediately see Ye Qingyu lowering his head and giving him a glance. His expression calm and peaceful, he said.: “Go, go go, go resist....I’ve long wanted to play with you to your death. I only need an excuse. Go, don’t make me disappointed.”

Zhao Ruyun was dumbfounded.

The patrolling sword officer had the power to first execute then report amongst the middle level officers.

If Ye Qingyu really wanted to kill him, he did not have to pay any sort of price whatsoever for it.

As he thought of this, Zhao Ruyun heart turned icy cold.

The shackle formed from the deputy seal the formation patters began activating, like a pattern of light, surging with dim golden lines of lights. Entering into Zhao Ruyun skin, it completely sealed away his meridians. His inner yuan was not allowed to activate and hence his strength was not able to be released....

Ye Qingyu did not say anything more. Turning and bringing Zhao Ruyun away, he left the hall under the gaze of the other officers.

Xiu!

And as for the official seal on the floor, it transformed into light that flew back into Ye Qingyu’s hands.

Outside the hall , there were hundreds of armoured soldiers holding spears surrounding the hall. They were completely cautious and prepared. As they saw Ye Qingyu coming out, every spear pointed at him. The tip of the blades were icy cold, the white coloured blades flickering, killing intent permeating the air.

Ye Qingyu only smiled, and brought the Zhao Ruyun who did not struggle in the slightest away. He walked straight at them.



The armoured soldiers did not dare not to retreat.

When he reached the gates of the supply department, Ye Qingyu lifted Zhao Ruyun and flew through the air. He secured him on top of an ice pillar.

“Only after fulfilling six hours, is he allowed be let off. If you dare release him before his time is up, then I’ll personally come and hang him once again. If you come down early, for every breath that you come down early by, I’ll hang you for another two hours.” Ye Qingyu returned to the ground. Within the scene of being surrounded by hundreds of armoured soldiers, he lightly clapped his hands, turning and leaving.

The hundreds soldiers of the supply department did not dare block him.

The officers who had rushed out of the stone hall did not dare to take any actions whatsoever. They only stared at Ye Qingyu as he disappeared far away.

One person, was enough to suppress an entire department.

One person, was enough to win against hundred.。

They knew, that today they had completely made an error.

The Cool Breeze mountain faction that was a middling power, had completely lost.

And even if they wanted to take revenge later, this was not a simple matter.

And as for the patrolling sword officer called Ye Qingyu, from today onwards, he would likely attract the attention of all parties. Such a forceful patrolling sword envoy, was an existence they had to be wary of, no matter who the person was.

# Chapter 139: Suspicion

On the returning path back, Ye Qingyu's mood was much better.

"I really can't understand, Zhao Ruyun and those other people, why can't they just properly perform the role of a military officer? Why must they cause such a ruckus, and make people hit their faces?" Ye Qingyu shook his head. "Do they really have pig brains? Every soldier should be clear on what the role of a patrolling sword envoy is, yet they must come and incite me...."

Because of such people, Ye Qingyu felt sorrowful.

Previously when he was at White Deer academy, he had felt that the schemes and machinations between the noble families had nearly caused Deer city to completely rot. It did not have the drive or unity of days gone past. The so called uniting and resisting against the demon race together, to protect the survival of their race, seemed to be more like a joke.

Ye Qingyu had originally thought, that such things, would not happen in the army.

It would especially not happen in such an important military frontier.

But from the current situation, it really made him disappointed.

Within Youyan pass, it was yet still the fights and struggles between factions. The so called noble families, the backbone of the young guard, their conduct was no different from the noble families within Deer city. They still emitted the smell of rotting decay. It was completely different from Ye Qingyu's initial imagination where everyone was united, and the atmosphere was sincere and harmonious.

And such was the things Ye Qingyu encountered by coincidence despite being here for less than ten days.

If he stayed here even longer, would he meet up with things even more shocking than this?

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu could not but sigh.

If the army of Youyan pass, had people like Zhao Ruyun and Lin Lang, just how could they protect the frontier that was of utmost importance to the country? Just how long could it remain protected for?

Sooner or later, there would most likely be a day where the Pass would be broken past by the Snow Ground demon court?

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look at the colour of the sky.

Snow flakes again floated through the air.

“The ten days of temporary rest is about to end. Three days later, I will officially take over this position, patrolling inside and outside Youyan pass.”

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt, that to be appointed as the patrolling sword envoy, was a fortunate matter. At least, if he wanted to do something to change the situation in the Pass, then the position of patrolling sword envoy made this much more convenient. He could do as he wished for many things.

“Then lets try. As a member of the human race, I can’t just go along with the tides. My parents died in the battle to protect Deer city. I will not allow their military badge to become shamed.”

“Even if I cannot reverse the tides in this crisis, but I must at least become a cornerstone in the Pass. The gutless and degeneration of others, cannot become the excuse for my retreat. Even if it is extremely difficult, I still have to forge ahead. I must believe, that scum like Zhao Ruyun, is only in the minority. Hard and stubborn men like Wen Wan are the true soldiers. This is where the true hope of the continuation of the human race lies.”

Ye Qingyu walked amidst the snowy wind, his will becoming more and more determined.

After thinking through this point, all the negative emotions in his heart was completely swept away. His mood became pure and clean.

The yuan qi in his body, as if he could sense Ye Qingyu’s mood, immediately flowed much smoother than before.

A faint smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

"The control of inner yuan in my body, has yet again increased to another level. If previously, I had only barely managed to control my fifteen Spirit springs of inner yuan, then right now I could be said to be well practiced in controlling it." As he walked, he attempted to activate his inner yuan. As expected, the flow of inner yuan in his body had become much more smooth, with it being much more easy to control.

"The martial heart.....that's right, a martial artist not only has to train his body, his qi, he also has to train his heart. Only when his heart has completely integrated, can his martial path be completely integrated."

Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that he had begun to come into contact with a new door in the martial path.

An expert, was first and foremost a human.

A human, had a heart.

If his heart was not complete, no matter what martial path they cultivated in, it would not be complete.

"The battle just now with Zhao Ruyun and the others, can be counted as an important experience in fighting. Amongst those officers, that scholarly young man's strength is above twenty Spirits Springs. Only by activating the [First limit] of the [Limitless divine way] could I defeat him.....This is the first time after I've come into contact with the profoundness of the [Limitless divine way] that I truly utilised the [Limitless divine way] in real practical battle. It is definitely amazing. If not for grasping this divine ability, the person who would be hung on the [Punishment pillar] would have been myself."

Thinking back to the previous battle, Ye Qingyu had really been lucky.

But this battle, was the first true martial battle he had after his strength had multiplied.

From Ye Qingyu's perspective, it seemed like he had completely suppressed his opponents. But the understanding and comprehension he was able to harvest from this battle, was really significant.

It was enough for him to slowly recall and ponder over in the next three or four days.

.....

A hour later.

Ye Qingyu returned to White Horse tower.

The White Horse sword slave Bai Yuanxing was in a wheelchair pushed by the servant girl, silently and patiently waiting at the doors.

Only until he saw Ye Qingyu coming back with no injuries at all, could Bai Yuanxing let out a breath of relief.

He was not aware of what had occurred in the military supply department. But from superior Ye Qingyu's facial expression, it seemed like something good had occurred?

"Superior." Bai Yuanxing wanted to stand up.

Ye Qingyu pressed down on his shoulder. "Return and rest. In the future, there will be many matters that I will rely on you for. Right now, the most important matter is for your injuries to quickly recover. I can't stay everyday within White Deer tower to take care of you."

Bai Yuanxing was horrified at the thought of this.

He quickly asked the servant girl to push himself back to his own room.

Ye Qingyu ascended the stairs to the four floor, sitting at the prayer mat before the window. As he looked at the inky black night outside and the snowstorm that was becoming more and more violent, he activated the nameless heart sutra. Absorbing the yuan qi in heaven and earth, he began cultivating his heart and qi.

The Ye Qingyu who was completely concentrated in cultivating, did not know, that in this inky black icy night, there were countless people that were currently agitated.

The matter that occurred in the stone hall, before Ye Qingyu had even returned to the White Horse tower, began spreading out at a crazy speed.

.....

.....

Pass Lord Residence.

In the saffron yellow light of the formation lantern, in a room on the third floor of the Military council pavilion, nothing was left unlit.

A lean faced middle aged man, was currently bent over his desk, reading through scrolls.

On the mahogany desk, there was a small mountain of scrolls.

As the middle aged man evaluated the scrolls, his cinnabar red brush would constantly annotate these scrolls. Sometime he would frown, sometimes he would laugh, his movements elegant. The speed at which he read each scroll was extremely rapid. Every time he finished a scroll, he would once again place it back to its position according to the categories. Everything was ordered and organised.

A boy with his hair in a little bun, stood next to the desk. While he grinded the ink, he also covered his mouth and yawned, seeming to be extremely tired.

“Mister, it’s going to be the latter half of the night soon. You should rest early.” The boy reminded the middle aged man from beside him.

The middle aged man smiled: “No rush, no rush.”

The boy pressed his lips together. “Mister you are not in a rush, but Xinger I can nearly withstand it no longer. You are working to such an hour again, if this is known by the Pass Lord, he will definitely punish Xinger again.” As he said this, the boy went over, grabbing the arm of the middle aged man, pulling him away, not allowing him to continue reading the scrolls.

The middle aged man helplessly smiled, shaking his head: “I’ve really spoiled you. Fine, fine, fine, lets rest for tonight.....”

Before he had finished.

Tap.Tap.Tap.

The sound of knocking came.

A silver armoured warrior entered, both his hands holding a dim golden coloured scroll. He presented it in front of the middle aged man.

The boy's expression instantly changed the moment he saw the colour of the scroll.

The laughter on the middle aged man disappeared completely in this instant. Lifting his hand, an invisible energy grasped the dim gold scroll and placed it within his hands.

The silver armoured warrior went out, shutting the door from outside.

The middle aged man opened the scroll, his eyes scanning. His first expression was surprise, then he lightly shook his head. A complicated expression flashed by through his face.

The boy could not help but stand on tip toes, curiously asking. "Mister, the golden scroll has already not appeared for months of time. Just what is written on it? Is it that the snow ground demon court has taken some new actions?"

The middle aged man gave him a glance. "Do you still remember the young man that came to report from White Deer academy several days ago?"

The boy nodded his head. "Is it that little kid called Ye Qingyu? I have some impression. Hehe, he seems somewhat stupid, wooden and slow. I guess that he won't have a good time in his days at Youyan pass.....but, could it be, that on the dim golden scroll, is information about him? I've already had a look at his previous scrolls. He's only a little fellow at the three Spirit springs stage....."

The middle aged man shook his head. "This time, Mister I have overlooked something. Xinger you have also overlooked something."

As he said this, he handed the dim golden scroll to the boy.

The dim golden scroll, represented information that was extremely confidential within Youyan pass. Even if it was military officers or leaders

at the middle level, they did not possess the requirement to read the contents of the scroll. Apart from the Pass Lord Lu Zhaoge, only the confidant advisers within the [Military council pavilion] had right of access. The middle aged man's surname was Liu. He was namely the Mister Liu that had received Ye Qingyu on the day he arrived. Xinger was a little student that he kept beside him. To so casually give such a secret and confidential scroll for him to read, one was able to see how much he trusted and spoiled Xinger.

Xinger laughingly took the scroll, glancing through it several times. "The young guard of the Cool breeze mountain, although they can't amount to much, at least there are several notable characters within that group. Especially advisor Yi Sance, he can definitely be ranked in the top hundred of officers under forty years of age. Pass Lord admires him very much, and therefore allowed him to enter the residence. Who would have thought that he would be fiercely beaten in his face by Ye Qingyu. This newly arrived patrolling sword envy, really doesn't show his true colours."

Mister Liu slowly stood up, stretching his back, then said: "The report of the Pass Lord residence cannot be wrong. One month ago, this Ye Qingyu was really at the level of three Spirit springs. After disappearing for a month and coming back, he can already completely dominate the advisor Yi Sance who is at twenty three Spirit springs just by raising his hands..... if my guess is not wrong, there must be something that has happened in this month, to cause this transformation. This allowed Ye Qingyu's strength to explosively increase."

"In just one month of time, his power can increase by that much?" On the fair little face of Xinger, an incredulous expression was seen. "That can't be too possible? This is far too universally shocking...."

"There are far too many inexplicable matters in this world. If my memory serves me correctly, the demon race has a technique, that can allow a person's strength to increase tens of times in a short amount of time....." On Mister Liu's face, he had a seriousness that was never seen before.

Xinger covered his mouth: "Mister, are you suspecting, that Ye Qingyu



is connected to the demon race?”

Mister Liu nodded his head. “Precautions must be taken.”

“But.....” Xinger hesitated. “But he is an inheritor of a heroic military badge, how could he.....”

Mister Liu sighed. “Therefore such a matter, must be handled carefully. In these years, the snow ground demon court is beginning to stir. The chaotic situation at the frontier is becoming more and more impossible to unravel. The treachery of the demon race must be guarded against.....I will prepare to go see the Pass Lord. You can follow me along to see him.”

# Chapter 140: The notoriety of a tool

Youyan pass, Vanguard camp.

Within the army of Youyan Pass, the Vanguard possessed the strongest attacking and invasive power. In the main battle force, within the four great camps, the vanguard was unquestionably the one with the greatest fame.

The number of people in the Vanguard, was also the greatest.

According to normal arrangements, for the Vanguard, there were forty warfare officers. The number of soldiers under each officer's command was not the same. Those that were strong could easily command five hundred, and those with lacklustre ability could only command around two hundred. But in these years, as the relationship between Snow country and the Snow ground demon court became more and more tense, there were more and more frictions, The vanguard had already been expanded three times, with now over a hundred warfare officers. The normal soldiers were three or four times that of its normal numbers.

Wen Wan had arrived in Youyan pass for less than half a year of time.

But even within the hundreds of warfare officers in the Vanguard, he was already well known and famous.

Not only was this because Wen Wan's personal strength was exceptional, he had already fought in several marvellous battles where he annihilated the enemy. His troops, the [Silver armoured soldiers] also became famous through such battles. It caused ordinary snow ground demon race to smell the wind and lose their courage\*. Because of his forceful temperament, if he saw things that he did not like, he would definitely interfere. On the battlefield, he fought without regard to his life and outside the battlefield, he had even more fearlessly contradicted the commander of the Vanguard, Liu Siufeng. He was known as both the [Violent officer] and the [Brash officer].

Very many people saw Wen Wan as the new star of the Vanguard camp.

Even Liu Siufeng, the commander in chief of the Vanguard who Wen Wan had a small conflict with, had even once privately indicated that he admired this fierce warrior very much.

According to normal development, the rise of Wen Wan was something that would happen sooner or later.

But who could have guessed, that three days ago, the military authority of Wen Wan was taken away. He was captured by the disciplinary squad of the Vanguard camp.

For what reason?

No one could explain.

Even the camp of the silver armoured soldiers was being watched over by experts.

These silver armoured men with white helmets had followed behind Wen Wan to fight for hundreds of battles. They were utterly loyal to their leader. Ever since Wen Wan's military position was taken from him, these two hundred and twenty men had not rested, but they also did not riot or protest. They only sat silently within their camp, anxiously waiting for the return of their commander.

Within the night air, the snow became greater and greater.

The chilling wind were like blades.

This was the fourth night that Wen Wan had been captured.

At the temporary resting place of the disciplinary squad of the vanguard.

Four steel pillars three meter high were deeply embedded onto the ground in a formation. The formations carved on these pillars was activated, creating an invisible energy field in the air. It prevented all observation from the outside, enveloping the entire disciplinary squad of the vanguard inside.

If you were outside and was watching from far away, you could only see the rippling light. There was no way to discern what was exactly on the

inside. One could only see the vague shape of three black tents.

[Four dragon light prison].

This was the metal formation that the disciplinary squad used to hold and interrogate criminal suspects.

Once the four formation pillars was buried under the ground, and the formation activated, it would warp even light itself. If you were under the Bitter Sea stage and trapped within, this was absolutely something you could not escape from.

One could say the disciplinary squad was a character that everyone in the Vanguard fear. Similar in role to the patrolling sword envoy, they were the high watchers of Youyan pass. The disciplinary squad was the black faced judge of the Vanguard. No matter whether it was a soldier or an officer, once they caught the eye of the disciplinary squad, there was a ninety nine percent chance they would be found suspect. In many cases, once you were invited into the [Four dragon light prison], it signified that your career in the future was completely finished.

No military officers judged by the disciplinary team had ever been spared.

When they saw that Wen Wan was forced into the [Four dragon light prison], the entire vanguard was shaken.

Some people were delighted.

Some people were suspicious.

Some people sighed.

Of course, there were some that didn't care.

And as for the person who did not care the most, he was Wen Wan himself.

He did not have the attitude of other military officers when the disciplinary squad arrived. He did not exhibit a fearful expression like the apocalypse had arrived. Instead, Wen Wan possessed the countenance of a curious spectator. He walked step by step into the [Four dragon light

prison] and curiously extended his hands to touch the formation pillar, a smile cracking open at his mouth.

Such a performance, made the man who led this group of disciplinary soldiers, sit up and take notice

“You’re not afraid?” Zhou Yinan asked Wen Wan curiously.

“Why should I be afraid?” Wen Wan against expectations, had a countenance like that of a curious baby, widening his eyes and looking at Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan said with a smile: “Because apart from you, every military officer that entered the [Four dragon light prison] no matter whether they are a noble officer with deep family background, they would be shivering in fear. I have seen far too many people’s mentality completely collapsing in the instant they enter into the [Four dragon light prison]. Some cry and go crazy, some weep bitterly, and there are some that insult and curse. The ultimate reason for this behaviour is fear. But this is my first time witnessing someone bringing a smile when they entered.

Wen Wen slapped his chest, chuckling loudly: “Your father I has done no wrong, so there is no need to be afraid. Besides.....”

As he said this, the fellow mysteriously whispered near the ear of Zhou Yinan: “And to tell you honestly, I am person with an extremely great background. Today you guys will capture me, but very quickly you will respectfully release and see me off.”

Zhou Yinan hesitated, then immediately smiled faintly. “Then I can only wish you good luck.”

During these days, Zhou Yinan had always carefully observed Wen Wan.

When the disciplinary squad interrogated someone, they would basically use torture, making someone feel so much pain they did not want to live anymore. But under Zhou Yinan’s directions, this time their attitude towards Wen Wan was much gentler. There were basically no great tortures used and only occasionally throwing a punch or two his

way. This was the reason that this fellow was still so arrogant and mouthy

Therefore throughout these days, the disciplinary squad still had not managed to obtain any sort of information.

Outside the large tent.

Zhou Yinan with black armour all over his body and a long sword at his waist, stood within the snow storm, deep in thought.

“Superior, if we don’t use the great tortures, this goes against regulations. ” A member of the disciplinary squad spoke in a low voice beside Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan did not say anything.

Without knowing why, the instant he arrested Wen Wan, he felt that this matter was definitely not as simple as it was on the surface. Although the order was personally passed down by the captain of the disciplinary squad, but Zhou Yinan’s intuition told him to not take things too far with Wen Wan. Perhaps for himself, perhaps for the entire disciplinary squad, this would prove beneficial.

“Superior, superior?” The member of the disciplinary team continued to speak beside his ear. “The time of five days is about to pass. The captain personally issued this case. If we continue to tarry, I fear there will be consequences.”

Zhou Yinan turned his head and gave him a glance, hesitating for a bit. He then said: “Wait for a little longer.”

The disciplinary member hearing this, shook his head, not saying anything more.

The disciplinary squad of the Vanguard was split into six groups. All these groups were under the command of the captain. Zhou Yinan was the leader of the fourth group, and in these years, he had solved many cases. But because his personality was far too straightforward and unbending he had not been promoted in these years. His footsteps had stopped and remained stationary. The members who followed him to

solve cases, were the same people again and again, also without prospects for much development.

At this time, a strange change occurred.

As a strange roiling noise sounded, one could see the light screen at the exterior [Four dragoon light prison] shuddering. A door of light appeared.

Two people came from the outside.

The person at the lead was somewhat skinny and short, not even one metre six. Wearing a black robe, he had a beard and a dark complexion. He did not emit any sort of imposing manner whatsoever, but his entire person gave off a gloomy and ruthless aura. As if the air around him was warping, he gave an incomparably strange feeling. Even the heart of someone looking at him for the first time, would palpitate unwillingly with fear.

There was a young man following behind him. With a eagle shaped nose, and a treacherous face, he was a man under Zhou Yinan's command, the disciplinary soldier Kang Yu.

"Superior!"

"We pay respects to the superior."

Zhou Yinan and the others quickly rushed to pay their respects.

This thin and short middle aged man, was namely the captain of the disciplinary squad, Lai Junchen.

"No need." Lai Junchen's face had a smile. "How goes the interrogation of the suspect?"

Zhou Yinan hesitated, lowering his head. "This.....I still cannot find anything of use."

"Did you not manage to interrogate anything of use, or did you not interrogate at all?" Lai Junchen asked with a laugh that was not a laugh.

Zhou Yinan did not dare to say anything.

The moment he saw Kang Yu, he knew that matters had not progressed

according to his plan.

The young man called Kang Yu, was originally a disciplinary member that he had did his utmost to nourish and develop. But later on, he discovered that this young man chased after immediate rewards, favouring extreme methods. If it benefited him, he did not care about the truth at all. As a result of this, afterwards Zhou Yinan gradually distanced himself from Kang Yu, becoming estranged. It seemed like Kang Yu had brought the captain Lai Junchen over here, running to Lai Junchen's place to report him for what he had done.

"I am really curious, just what kind of person he is, that you Zhou Yinan don't dare interrogate." Lai Juncheng had his eyes squinted, without any obvious display of happiness or rage. "Fine, if you don't want to interrogate, then I won't makes things hard on you. Just leave this matter it for Kang Yu to handle.

Kang Yu's expression immediately showed delight.

He knew that his opportunity had arrived.

Accepting the order, he headed towards the large tent holding Wen Wan.

Zhou Yinan still wanted to say something, but Lai Junchen waved his hands quickly, indicating for him to not speak anymore.

"I know of your intentions. Wen Wan can be counted as a fierce warrior and sparing him will have definite benefits for the Pass. But such a matter, is not a decision that can be made by you or me....." Without anyone else around, the Lai Junchen that was known as a butcher within the Pass , displayed a rare patience for the first time. "Yinan, you must be clear, in such turbulent and troubled times, humans are like dogs. We are just the dogs of the army. Those who we bite and don't bite, these are often things that we can decide for ourselves. Whether Wen Wan is deserving of his punishment does not matter; you can't protect him and neither can I. Everything will be gone when he leaves. You don't want to be an evil person, then let Kang Yu bear that crime. I still have great trust in you."



“Superior.” Zhou Yinan had a face of someone emotionally moved. “Why must you make things so hard for yourself, in reality,.....I have always known, that superior you are in a difficult situation. Others only see you causing bloody scenes within the army, but they don’t know about your well meaning intentions. It is namely your methods, that has suppressed and shocked the restless nobles in the army. It is what allows the Youyan pass to be like a steel board. There is no need for you to explain, it is only that.....”

Lai Junchen slapped Zhou Yinan on the shoulder, bitterly smiling.

\*Become afraid when they heard his name.

# Chapter 141: Let's negotiate

This person had always been known as the butcher of the army. Lai Junchen felt that Zhou Yinan was very much like himself when he began, with perseverance and hesitation. Zhou Yinan's heart was brimming with contradictions, but every time he handled a case give his utmost. He was not afraid of offending someone and somewhat soft hearted. Therefore, he had especially looked upon Zhou Yinan with favour. There were many instances where Zhou Yinan had offended his superiors yet Lai Junchen had not punished him for this.

Even Lai Junchen himself, did not know, just what kind of thinking this was.

Was he hoping that Zhou Yinan would not become like himself, neglecting right and wrong and only caring about results? Or did he hope that Zhou Yinan was able to maintain his current state, bringing a light breeze within the disciplinary squad? Did he hope that Zhou Yinan would not become like the others of the disciplinary squad, where there were no difference between them and a tool?

He was about to say something, when another strange change occurred.

Outside of the [Four dragon light prison], the strange whistle of a sword sounded.

The colour of Lai Junchen's face changed. His finger pointed out, and an oval door opened on the formation light screen. A silver sword light, passed through the oval door. In an instant, it appeared in front of Lai Junchen and Zhou Yinan, transforming into a little sword the width of a finger, floating in mid air. Rotating, there were strange formations activating around the little green sword.

Green light sword order!

This was the green light sword order of the general of the Vanguard.

Lai Junchen closed his eyes, his mouth moving, saying something. It was as if was communicating with this sword order

Half a moment later, the green light sword order flashed, soaring into the skies. It disappeared back into the night air.

Lai Junchen glanced at the astonished Zhou Yinan next to him, smiling: “Your intuition is sometimes very accurate. The general has ordered, for Wen Wan to be released without any punishment.”

Zhou Yinan was dumbfounded.

“This Wen Wan, can be counted as fortunate. He is even able to make superior Liu Siufeng act to order us to release someone.” In the pupils of Lai Junchen’s eyes, a strange radiance was hidden. “It seems like superior Liu Siufeng, really cares about this Wen Wan....”

Before he had finished.

“Ao—— ! ! ”

The strange screech of an eagle, sounded from outside the [Four dragon light prison].

Zhou Yinan’s face greatly changed.

Even Lai Junchen’s heart shuddered slightly.

They could only see a giant black eagle, sweeping down. Its wings were like divine electric blades. Meeting no resistance, it shot past the light screen of the [Four dragon light prison], rushing before the two. Finally transforming into a huddle of black light, it landed on Lai Junchen’s hand, becoming a black eagle jade piece.

The black eagle jade piece of the Pass Lord Residence.

It was an item used to convey messages from the Pass Lord’s residence. It possessed an even greater authority than the green light sword order.

Lai Junchen suppressed the shock in his heart. Activating his inner yuan, he retrieved the information held within.

Ten breaths later, the black jade eagle piece once again returned to becoming a huge eagle, soaring into the skies.

Lai Junchen did not dare tarry. Along with Zhou Yinan, he respectfully

sent the black eagle jade piece off.

Within Youyan Pass, the black eagle jade piece represented ultimate authority. The information that was contained within, was not something they could disobey or query.

“Superior, just what has happened?” Zhou Yinan curiously asked. No matter what kind of military message was contained within the black eagle jade piece, this event signified something great occurring.

Lai Junchen was silent for along while. Deeply breathing in. he turned his head to look at Zhou Yinan. In a strange tone: “I really want to know now, just what kind of background that Wen Wan has. Not only does superior Liu Siufeng wants to save him, now even the Pass Lord residence has sent out a military order, for me to immediately release Wen Wan....it seems like we have kicked a bee’s nest.”

Zhou Yinan was dumbfounded.

He had never thought, that the arrival of the black eagle jade piece was for Wen Wan.

This was far too inexplicable.

Within Zhou Yinan’s memory, there had never been such a precedent. The black eagle from the Pass Lord residence, came for just a military officer?

He nearly could not restrain himself from asking, that just what was Wen Wan’s background, that he had such power?

Zhou Yinan could not help but remember the words that Wen Wan had once said a few days ago---

“And to tell you honestly, I am person with an extremely great background. Today you guys will capture me, but very quickly you will respectfully release and see me off.”

Could it be that the reason Wen Wan did not seem to fear at all, was because he had long foreseen such a day coming?

As he thought of this, Zhou Yinan’s heart became more and more

curious.

The brash Wen Wan, could it really be that he had a great background?

As they spoke, , Lai Junchen had already ordered someone to pass on the order to end Kang Yu's interrogation.

Kang Yu walked gloomily and unwillingly out from the black large tent. Seeing Lai Junchen, he bowed slightly. "Superior, why have so suddenly made me stop my interrogation. I have already used half of the great tortures, then you made me stop. Superior, please give me a little bit more of time. I can definitely find out matters of value, don't listen to the nonsense of others...." Saying this, Kang Yu glared at Zhou Yinan. Very evidently, he assumed that Zhou Yinan had said something to Lai Junchen, that made Lai Junchen change his mind.

At this time, Kang Yu had already made his determination to completely tear apart his relationship with Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan laughed in his heart, not saying anything.

Lai Junchen did not even give Kang Yu a glance. He ordered Zhou Yinan to go release Wen Wan.

A short while later.

Zhou Yinan walked out from the large tent. From behind him, there was a face filled with dissatisfaction. The face belonged to Wen Wan. His chest was criss crossed with tens of blade injuries.

"Ai, are you releasing me now?" Wen Wan stuck his finger into his wounds, touching the blood. He brought his finger to his mouth, licking it. Then his mouth cracked open in a smile: "To confine your father I for three days and three nights, to not allow me to eat or drink, to even make that perverted person carve my chest with a little dagger? He says he wants to cut me up blade by blade while alive, but all of a sudden you want to release me?"

Zhou Yinan did not say anything.

In these days, he had already gotten used to the unstable and lunatic

like disposition of Wen Wan.

Lai Junchen only bitterly smiled: "This matter, was just a misunderstanding. It has been hard on military officer Wen."

"Misunderstanding?" Wen Wan chuckled, then spat. "You think that I am a stupid pig? Isn't it those bastards against me controlling matters behind the scenes that want me to die? Your disciplinary squad stood on the side of the bastards and captured me. But then you discovered that my background is so hard that you guys don't dare incite me. Are you terrified right now?"

Lai Junchen could not even utter a word.

The ruthless captain that was enough for every military officers and soldiers to go pale at the mention of his name, at this moment had no choice but to apologise.

If it was only the general of the Vanguard Liu Siufeng's order, then Lai Junchen did not need to assume such a low stance. But the matter concerned the Pass Lord's Residence. The black jade eagle piece represented far too many problems. It made Lai Junchen immediately realise, that the power contained on Wen Wan's body, or perhaps the level of authority that Wen Wan could interact with, was absolutely not something the captain of the disciplinary squad could provoke.

To bow and submit. This was the technique that allowed Lai Junchen to stand for tens of years without falling.

And at this moment, for him to apologise could not be counted as anything.

But from Kang Yu's perspective, this was nearly equivalent to the Heaven collapsing.

The Kang Yu adept at currying favour, seeing this scene, instantly realised, that the turn of events were far from encouraging. His head exploded with a noise, completely stupefied. He knew that he was completely finished because he had made far too wrong a choice.

"Fine, fine, I'm too lazy to talk nonsense with you." Wen Wan's temper

quickly dispersed in front of the low and apologetic stance of Lai Junchen. Impatiently waving his hands, he said: "But this matter cannot be settled like so. Find the bastard who drew blades across my chest, and let me vent my rage, Then this matter can be counted as finished."

Lai Junchen was very decisive. With a swipe of his hand, he pushed the Kang Yu that had a candle yellow complexion and dripping cold sweat in front of Wen Wan.

"Superior, save me, I ...." Kang Yu nearly bowed down and began grabbing at Lai Junchen's leg.

But at this time, Lai Junchen instantly displayed his ruthless and merciless nature. For Kang Yan, a fellow that in his eyes could not even be counted as a tool, Lai Junchen would not have the slightest pity whatsoever. If Kang Yu really died, and this was able to settle Wen Wan's rage, then he should just go die.

"Wahahahaha...." Wen Wan looked at the shivering Kang Yu, and began laughing strangely. "I've long said, you will regret this. Who would have thought that our roles would be reversed so quickly, wahaha. People, tie him up! "

Lai Junchen gave a signal.

Immediately, several soldiers of the disciplinary squad began binding him,

"Fifteen minutes ago I said to you, that if our roles are reversed, I will let you know just what is cruelty." Wen Wan, like performing magic, took out a little dagger. His practiced hands drew across Kang Yan's chest. In the blink of an eye, the wounds that Kang Yan left on Wen Wan's chest, was replicated onto Kang Yan's body.

Kang Yan began squealing for mercy, like a pig being slaughtered.

Who would be able to thought, that a soldier of the disciplinary squad, would be tortured within the [Four dragon light prison] formation of the disciplinary squad by an outsider.

Such a strange occurrence had no precedent, since the creation of

disciplinary squad.

Wen Wan played around for a little while. Seeing Kang Yan's face that seemed to indicate that he was about to die, he seriously considered: "Originally, I wanted to show mercy. But to leave such a person alive with dishonest intentions in the disciplinary squad, this will only create more miscarriages of justice. You have already done quite a few evils. Since it is like this, then let's have a negotiation. You should just go die. With you dead, no one will drag the Vanguard camp down anymore. At least then, everyone can fight in the war with no worries."

Kang Yu widened his eyes, madly struggling. "No, I refuse, I...."

"Eh? Since it is like this, could the negotiations have broken down?" Wen Wan chuckled. "Since you don't want to negotiate, then that's fine too. No need for negotiation then, just go die."

Before he had finished.

Wen Wan's dagger, stabbed into Kang Yan's chest.

Kang Yu widened his eyes, staring incredulously at Wen Wan. Even until the very moment he died, he did not believe that there would be such a person that would have dared to kill himself at the disciplinary camp.

"Fine, my mood is a little better." "Wen Wan headed towards the outside.

Lai Junchen and the others let out a breath of relief.

Who knew that after Wen Wan walked a couple of steps away, he would suddenly turn back around. His eyes stared at Zhou Yinan.

Lai Junchen's heart, instantly let out a thud. Could it be that Wen Wan wanted to take vengeance on the person who arrested him, Zhou Yinan? But he was different from Kang Yan. Zhou Yinan was a confidant that Lai Junchen regarded importantly. He was his successor that he had nourished heavily for many years. If this brash Wen Wan really acted without considering the consequences, and really wanted to kill Zhou Yinan, then he himself, what should he do....



At this instant, countless thoughts flashed by in the mind of Lai Junchen.

Who would have guessed, what Wen Wan did after, was only to smile slightly. Looking at Zhou Yinan, he said: "You are not too bad. If there is a reason that the disciplinary squad still has a need to exist, it is because of the presence of people like you."

As he finished, Wen Wan turned and left.

Lai Junchen was fiercely taken aback, then let out a breath of relief.。

Even with his experience and mental fortitude, his emotions were always led by this person, Wen Wan who was famous for his recklessness.

This fellow, was he really that reckless?

Lai Junchen for the first time felt, that he had overlooked this [Violent officer].

Zhou Yinan, lowered his head, as if he wanted to say something. But in the end, no words were spoken.

"....."

"Aiya, this hurts so much....."

After leaving the formation [Four dragon light prison ], he casually found a place to lean against. Wen Wan rubbed at his wounds with a grimace. It was so painful that he was about to jump up and down. "Mother fucker, what's the use of bearing it so stoically. I should have asked Lai Junchen that old dog, to repay me with some medicine for wounds. I've really lost out, lost out....."

Ye Qingyu that little thing, really didn't come in search of me. That heartless fellow, it seems like I must go and find him instead."

Wen Wan took care of the injuries on his chest slightly. Thankfully, they were only ordinary blade wounds. For an expert like him, they could not threaten his life. After resting for four or five days, they would nearly be completely healed.

He casually grabbed several soldiers passing by, ordering them to send a

message back to his camp to tell the silver armoured soldiers that he was already fine. Then he quickly rushed to White Horse tower in the night.

There were some matters that he must explain to Ye Qingyu as quickly as possible.

# Chapter 142: Two Great Lists

“Aiyo. how did you get into such a state?”

At White Horse tower, Ye Qingyu jumped in shock at the sight of Wen Wan.

“Don’t say such useless words. You heartless person, do you have anything to eat? I’m about to starve to death, I haven’t eaten anything for several days already.” Wen Wan sat down with his legs wide apart, lifting the teapot on the table, gurgling as he drank the content entirely.

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry. He called for Mother Wu to enter and quickly prepare something for Wen Wan to eat.

Mother Wu was the female servant that Ye Qingyu had previously hired to take care of Bai Yuanxing. With the ability to cook tasty dishes, she was also diligent and hard working.

“Just where have you been these days? Didn’t you say you were going to come find me?” Ye Qingyu said grumpily. “I’ve waited you for several days, and I haven’t even seen your slightest shadow.”

Wen Wan said furiously.: “You damn heartless person. You still have the nerve to say such things. I was capture by the people of the disciplinary squad and was nearly played with until I died.....” He recounted everything that had occurred in these days, roughly telling the tale.

Ye Qingyu was rather tense when he heard the events at the beginning, but when it came to the moment where Wen Wan finally took care of Kang Yu, Ye Qingyu was completely speechless. Looking at this shameless person radiant with delight, Demon King Ye said: “You were able to kill people of the disciplinary squad and then swagger out from the [Four dragon light prison]? Didn’t you say you were nearly killed? How was it that you were the person who killed someone in the end.....”

Wen Wan was at first pleased, then immediately became angered. “What? Could it be that you really want me to die? You damn heartless

person!”

Ye Qingyu was temporarily speechless. “To speak with you, is just like coping with an annoying woman.”

Wen Wan had a gaze filled with murderous intent as he glared at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands helplessly. “Fine, lets switch the subject. You’ve come at the right time, I have some matters I need to ask about. Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and also.....” Ye Qingyu rattled off a list of names, then said: “These people, do you recognise them? Do they have great backgrounds?”

Wen Wan gave him a glance: “You’ve provoked these people?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. He retold the matters that had occurred in the supply department in detail from the beginning.

“Wahahaha, good, well done. No wonder you are someone that I have expectations for.” Wen Wan immediately began chuckling after hearing the story. Then he came over closer and said in a low tone: “To speak the truth, they’ve long been a thorn in my eyes. I’ve long wanted to take care of them. It’s a pity that my military position is equal to theirs and I don’t have more men than them, so I can’t easily make a move against them. Who would have thought that you had managed to take care of them like chopping vegetables. Wahaha, good, well done.”

After Ye Qingyu had finished hearing Wen Wan’s words, he carefully pondered over them. There were evidently some hidden meanings contained within the words of this shameless person.

“Wait, you mean, that even you can’t afford to provoke them?” Ye Qingyu looked at Wen Wan.

Wen Wan nodded his head seriously. “Of course. I’m not so stupid that I would irritate so many people all at once. The Cool Breeze mountain faction can be considered a core faction in Youyan pass with significant power. To dare provoke those people, you are really resenting the fact that your life is too long.....But to bring the conversation back on the

topic, your ability to incite trouble is even greater than mines. Haha, you've only arrived for a few days at Youyan Pass and you've already caused such a great uproar to happen. Hahaha, little brother, you really are ferocious, wahaha!"

"You...." Ye Qingyu was completely speechless. "I've encountered a such problematic situation, why are you laughing with so much delight?"

"Wahahaha....." Wen Wan began chuckling louder and louder, winking at Ye Qingyu. "Can you not tell, I am currently rejoicing in your misfortune. "

Ye Qingyu stood up with a dark face. Walking to the door, he said to the outside: "Mother Wu, no need to cook anymore. Rest early."

Wen Wan stopped laughing, rubbing his stomach. "Fine, fine, let's not joke around. Let's speak of proper matters. First look at this...." Saying this, he retrieved two little booklets from his dimensional pouch. One was white and one was black, both around the thickness of one finger. From the outer appearance, both booklets seemed to be some sort of ancient text. The texts were already somewhat wrinkled and crumpled.

Ye Qingyu received it, looking at the name of the two booklets.

The white booklet, was called [Military star list].

The black booklet, was called [Great demon list].

"On the [Military star list], there are various experts of the human race in Youyan Pass ranked within. And on the [Great demon list], there are the ranks of the experts of the Snow Ground demon race...." Wen Wan stood up and stretched his bank. "The [Military star list] will only record experts of the thirty Spirit springs and above. There are a hundred ranks in total. As for the [Great demon list], it will only have the great demon leaders listed. The information written inside is very detailed. Read it well and remember. If you manage to encounter anyone listed, at least you will have some preparation and won't walk in blind.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, browsing through the lists.

The [Military star list] had a hundred people in total. The one ranked

number one was namely the Pass Lord Lu Zhaoge of Youyan Pass. He was an expert of the Bitter Sea stage. He had not fought in a battle for over twenty years, his strength deep and unfathomable. He was the indisputable number one expert of Youyan Pass. It was suspected that he had already reached the Heaven Ascension stage.

“Heaven Ascension stage? So the martial realm after the Bitter Sea stage, is called the Heaven Ascension stage?”

Ye Qingyu's eyes brightened.

He continued to read on—

[Military star list]. Ranked number two, Gu Jinjun. Deputy leader of Youyan Pass, Bitter Sea expert. Well versed in using huge axes in battle. Thirteen years ago, he had fought, his axe splitting apart a mountain.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number three, Liu Siufeng. General of the Vanguard, Bitter Sea stage, well versed in using longsword. The last time he had fought was three years ago. One sword strike by him was enough to kill tens of demon leaders.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number four. Zuo Chanyi, general of the Left camp. Bitter Sea stage, well versed in delicate invisible blades. The last time he had fought was six years ago. Entering deep within the territory of the snow ground demon race, he had killed twenty one normal demon leaders before retreating unharmed.

[Military Star list] Ranked number five. Feng Muyou, general of the Right camp. Bitter Sea stage, well versed in the pike. His title was the [Stab Muyou]. With a powerful aura, once he struck, he would not retreat. The last time he had fought was two years ago.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number six.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number seven.....

Ye Qingyu flipped page after page. One after another, unfamiliar names appeared in front of him.

He knew, that the people list here were true the experts with

outstanding military contributions in Youyan Pass. Every name that was able to enter this list, had experienced countless battles tottering between life and death. They were experts that had walked out from white bone mountains and fresh blood pools. This was especially so for the people at the top of this list. They were the leaders of the military. Existences like the Pass Lord and the four generals ranked at the very top.

But, it was namely that because of these characters could not been seen in normal times, that the list were not too detailed. The creator of the [Military star list] was perhaps not too clear on the true strength of these people and and their attributes. This was especially so for the experts ranked in the top ten. Some of the information written on the booklets were just guesses.....

After the top ten, the information became more completely and more detailed.

“En? Zhang San? This name, is really special.....”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze, landed on a name. He was slightly taken aback.

[Military star list]. Ranked thirteenth. The head of the military supply department of Youyan Pass. His nature is one where that he would definitely avenge all those that crossed him. Extremely protective. Well versed in slender swords, expert in assassination, and chasing, Profound techniques in remaining hidden. The last time he had acted was three months ago, where he killed sixty two people.....

Because of the incident at the supply department, Ye Qingyu could not help pay attention to this person called Zhang San who was the head of the supply department.

Seeing the evaluation of the words ‘definitely avenge all those that crossed him, extremely protective’, Ye Qingyu’s heart thudded.

If it was like this, then this Zhang San, most likely would regard himself as an enemy.

Ye Qingyu continued to read on.

He firmly imprinted every single name into his heart.

As he read to the end, Ye Qingyu suddenly shouted loudly: “What? This doesn’t make sense. After such a long time, you gave me something fake to try and fool me. Haha, I’ve was really nearly taken in by you.....”

“Fake? How is this possible?” Wen Wen was taken aback. “Just what did you see?”

“I’ve seen the two words ‘Wen Wan’. How is it possible for your name to appear on the military star list?” Ye Qingyu had a face filled with mockery. “Confess, isn’t this something that was made up by your? The last name, you must have added on by yourself?”

“Haha, who would have thought that you would be so young yet so jealous. What about it? I am ranked number a hundred on the [Military star list], what about it? Wen Wan laughed madly.

Ever since handing the booklets to Ye Qingyu, Wen Wan had waited to see this scene.

Ye Qingyu ignored him.

After departing from White deer academy, Wen Wan’s original nature could be said to have been exposed. He was becoming more and more like a little child, excessive and vain. The fact that he was able to be ranked on the [Military star list] made Ye Qingyu suspicious whether the person who had written this list be Wen Wan himself.

He opened the [Great Demon list].

The Snow Ground demon race had always been the life and death enemy of the human race of Snow country.

Of the lifeforms in Heaven Wasteland domain, the human race and the demon race were by far the greatest majority. The human race of Snow country and the Snow Ground demon race were the two strongest branches of these two great races. Approximately, they possessed together over eighty percent of Heaven Wasteland domain. It was rumoured that at the very moment Snow country was founded, the empire of the Snow ground demon court was also established. From that day on, between the two great races, for the struggle of resources and territory



there were already tens of large scale campaigns involving the entire country that had occurred. And as for small battles, there were so many that happened that it could not be counted.

Considering all the factors, the human race could be said to be occupying the upper hand.

On the [Great demon list] the one ranked at number one was Burning Snow. He was a great demon commander. An expert of the Snow bird race, he had commanded the [Southern incline legion] for tens of years and was titled the invincible warrior. He caused Lu Zhaoge to stay dead within Youyan pass with no way to take action. He was a great titled character within the Snow Ground demon court. and was known as the Burning Snow demon general. Along with Lu Zhaoge, he was part of the [Ten War Gods] in Heaven Wasteland domain. But this demon race authority, had not taken action for a very long time. As of right now, it was very hard to estimate the true strength of this demon.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number two, the Mad Wind demon general. An expert of the Wind race at Snow Ground Demon court, he was a power that had only emerged in the past twenty years. His methods were tyrannical and the way he did things was quick like a violent gust. It was said that the Mad Wind demon general had once fought one on one with the number two expert of Youyan Pass. They had fought for over ten days and ten nights without victor able to be determined.....

[Great Demon list]. Ranked number three. Swimming Dragon demon general.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number four. Burrowing Ground demon general.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number four. Bloodthirsty demon general.....

Ye Qingyu read one name after another, his heart frightened by the information contained within.

Youyan Pass was known as the strongest frontier in the entire Snow County. In the Pass, famous warriors were like clouds, with countless

experts present. It was absolutely the Pass with the strongest military power in all of Heaven Wasteland domain. But the [Southern incline legion] did not fall behind to Youyan Pass in the slightest. Similarly, their warriors were also like the clouds, also possessing countless experts. At the very least, through just a comparison between the [Military star list] and the [Great demon list], the [Southern Incline legion] did not fall behind in the slightest.

“Look at the bottom, look at the bottom. It’s useless to look at the names at the front.” Wen Wan leant against the table. He was like a cyclone sweeping through the clouds as he devoured the dishes that Mother Wu had prepared. A green vegetable hung from his mouth as he mumbled indistinctly: “You have no chance of meeting the old monsters of the demon race. If your luck is really so good as to meet them, then you should just honestly reincarnate and become a new person. You should look at information about the little demons, such as the the younger generation of the demon race, the seven people known as the [Seven stars of the skies].....”

# Chapter 143: A place with many visitors

“The seven stars of the skies?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Wen Wan’s manner of eating food could be compared to Big Head’s. While devouring the dishes ravenously, he said: “En, of the [Southern Incline legion] in the Snow Ground Demon race, there are seven prodigies from the younger generation. They are known as the seven geniuses of the demon race rarely seen even in a hundred years. They are named after the big dipper. Respectively, they are called Alpha, Beta, Gamma, Delta, Epsilon, Zeta and Eta. Everyone of them are fierce characters and they have killed significant numbers the human race experts.....”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, indicating that he understood.

He continued to look downwards at the list. As expected, he saw the introduction of the [Seven stars of the skies.

These seven great Demons, in the [Great demon list], were ranked at fifty fifth, fifty nine, sixty one, sixty eight, seventy three, seventy seven and eighty five positions.

Alpha Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked Seventy three. Six star demon warrior.....

Beta Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked sixty eight. Seven Star demon warrior.....

Gamma Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked eighty fifth. Five star demon warrior.....

Delta Star. [Great demon list]. Ranked sixty one, seven star demon warrior.....

Eta Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked fifty fifth, eight star demon warrior.....

Epsilon star [Great Demon List]. ranked seventy seven, six star demon warrior.....

Zeta star. [Great Demon list]. Ranked fifth nine, eight star demon

warrior.....

The introduction of every person in the seven stars of the skies were extremely extensive. Not only did it detail what kind of demon race each belonged to, it also introduced their power, battle records, battle methods and weaknesses. Ye Qingyu's could not help but pound as he read through the battle history of these seven experts of the demon race. These seven great powers of the demon race could still be considered as relatively young, as their ages were not yet over a hundred. If this was converted to a comparable age with the human race, then they should be around twenty to thirty years of age. At such an age, with such a strength, they were definitely deserving to be called geniuses.

Ye Qingyu continued to traverse the information about these entities.

He asked himself in his heart, if he faced any one of the [Seven stars of the skies], was it possible for him to win?

According to Wen Wan's previous words, if the rankings of the [Military star list] and the [Great demon list] were the same, then their strength would also be no different. The lowest expert of the [Military star list] was recorded to possess a strength above thirty Spirit springs. Using this as a foundation of comparison, the strength of the [Seven stars of the skies] could be determined. The Gamma Star that was the lowest positioned among them, ranked eighty fifth, should be around the forty spirit springs of the human race.....

Ye Qingyu himself was as of right now at the fifteen Spirit springs realm. After activation of the [Limitless divine way], his strength would multiply. The opponents he could face, were experts that are within the thirty Spirit springs boundary.

In other words, Ye Qingyu would not be able to beat Gamma.

And furthermore, Gamma was just the strategist amongst the [Seven stars of the skies]. One was able to discern the terrifying strength of the other seven stars through this point alone.

If he wanted to defeat these great demons, Ye Qingyu needed to be able to activate the [Second limit] of the [Limitless divine way], multiplying his

strength by a factor of three. Unless he did so, it was impossible.

“Haha, how is it? Are you scared?” Wen Wan had taken his fill of alcohol and food. He said laughingly: “The reason I gave this to you, was to make you realise, just how many experts, masters, geniuses, authorities are gathered in Youyan Pass. It will make you realise what it means – there is a person beyond a person and a sky beyond a sky. You must know you are not the only genius in this world. Your strength did increase rapidly, but you must not be conceited. Youyan Pass is a battlefield, and life and death is decided in a breath’s time on the battlefield. This is different from White Deer academy. You must use the shortest amount of time possible to adapt and adjust. After bringing you all the way to Youyan Pass, I do not want you to perish in just a few days.”

These words, was very agreeable at the start. Wen Wan’s careful teachings, made Ye Qingyu slightly moved.

But as he heard the later parts, Ye Qingyu’s face turned dark.

Whatever well intentioned words, by coming out of the crude mouth of Wen Wan, would take on a completely different meaning.

“You managed to easily take care of Yi Sance and Zhao Ruyun others. This is already a fairly good record. But your self confidence must not surge. You must know, that of these people, the greatest among them is Yi Sance. But even he could not enter the [Military star list]. To win against them, is not something to be proud of.” Wen Wan spoke again. “And furthermore, you could be said to have handled matters poorly. You must remember not to provoke others, and not to always have your thoughts written on your face. If you can really endure it no longer and must act, then you must kill them in one blow. If you really leave such disasters alive, then who knows whether there will their be hidden arrows and spears attacking you from behind you on the battlefield? These nobles has a high opinion of themselves. They are crafty and cunning. They are willing to do anything. If I was you, that person called Zhao Ruyun, would long have died.”

Ye qingyu smiled slightly, seriously nodding his head.

He agreed with Wen Wan's points.

"That's right." Ye Qingyu finally remembered something. "Help me find two people. One should be a doctor following the army, he's called Li Shizen. The other, is a young man, called Ye Congyun."

Wen Wan nodded his head, without saying anything.

The two conversed until the middle of the night.

Wen Wan still spoke in a long-winded fashion, explaining the situation within Youyan pass very clearly.

The human race was established in the mountain pass. They sat in Youyan Pass, which is like a Heaven's moat. And as for the [Southern incline legion], they were stationed at the Violent Snow glacier a hundred miles away. The hundred mile distance between Youyan Pass and the Violent Snow glacier was like a gigantic meat grinder. Even if the two parties were currently peaceful for the moment, the area between them would have large numbers of small scale battles. Every moment and second, there would be soldiers dying from both side.

According to Wen Wan's information, every ten days, Youyan Pass would hold a small scale battle.

On one hand, it was to train the soldiers and preserve their will do battle. The other reason this served was to deplete the military power of the demon race and probe at their battle power.

And every time they departed, a patrolling sword envoy would provide assistance.

According to the rotation, Ye Qingyu should within a month's time, accept the order of the Pass Lord's residence and participate in a small scale battle.

"I don't know whether I will also participate in the battle at that time. But no matter what, you must be careful. In the battlefield, swords and spears have no eyes. One mistake, and you may regret it for the rest of your life." Wen Wan constantly nagged. Within his words, he began to display regret over the fact that he brought Ye Qingyu into the front lines.

But the current developments, were already not something he was able to control.

Ye Qingyu was excited in his heart. He was very interested in the upcoming battle.

Instead of fighting with people of the same race here, why not charge into the battlefield and kill the demon race.

“Also, this time, you have caused great chaos in the supply department. Very quickly, every party and faction will know of your name. I believe in a short amount of time, your fame will quickly surge. Therefore in this period of time, you had best in a low key fashion and don’t go inciting more trouble. You are still a soldier in the end, if you constantly cause trouble, the various commanders will regard you as a thorn and begin develop poor opinions.” Wen Wan reminded Ye Qingyu yet again.”

Ye Qingyu at this time, did not banter with Wen Wan anymore. He closely remembered the points he said.

Because of the lateness of the evening, the streets were already extremely tightly guarded with high security patrolling around. Therefore, that night, Wen Wan stayed at White Horse tower.

Only until the early dawn of the second day, did he leave, returning to the Vanguard camp.

“The two people you are searching for, if I have news, I will definitely contact you.”

Wen Wan said before leaving.

.....

.....

In the next several days, Ye Qingyu’s name, began spreading throughout in Youyan pass at a crazy rate just as they had expected.

Zhao Ruyun had really been hung on the [Punishment pillars] for a full six hours. Only then was he released.

Lin Lang, Yi Sance and the others did not dare breath a word to anyone

regarding the matters that had occurred in the Stone Hall.

But this matter, began transmitting throughout Youyan pass. It was unknown as to just what channels this information was passed along.

Yi Sance and the others were both angry and embarrassed. They announced that they would isolate themselves for the time being, but this was not enough to halt the transmittance of information throughout Youyan pass.

There were all sorts and types of rumours, but basically it all said – there was a new person called Ye Qingyu that was appointed the patrolling sword envoy. Not long after he arrived, he completely defeated all the experts of the Cool breeze mountain faction. And the Zhao Ruyun that was normally so arrogant was hung on the [Punishment pillars] at the supply department....

Such news, began spreading out like wind.

“This Ye Qingyu, just who is he?”

“Haha, to think that the new master of White Horse tower would be so violent?”

“Such a pity. If I was there, seeing the humiliated face of Zhao Ruyun is enough for me to feel pleasure for a year’s time.”

“This new patrolling sword envoy, just what is his background, that he would be so forceful?”

“Ye Qingyu? I’ve never heard of this name before.....”

“It seems like within Youyan pass, there is going to be another strong character that will emerge.”

“Speaking of the subject again, the Zhang San of the supply department is so protective, could it really be that he will not interfere into this situation?”

AT this time, nearly everyone was discussing Ye Qingyu’s name.

It was exactly as described by Wen Wan. Ye Qingyu’s name, with the speed of a hurricane, swept outwards in all directions. The previous day



he was a new and nameless person, and today he was a person that was able to attract the attention of countless forces in the pass.

Many careful people, had already begun stealthily investigating into Ye Qingyu's background.

There were also people that prepared to take action. They brought presents to greet Ye Qingyu at White Horse tower.

The birth of such a forceful new character, made many people see opportunity.

Of course, there were far more people that only continued to observe. The people Ye Qingyu had offended, their backgrounds were also great. To make such a choice of whom to support at this time, the costs outweighed the benefits.

At this time, the originally completely desolate White Horse tower, unexpectedly became as bustling and busy as a market.

Ye Qingyu had no interest in the people bringing gifts standing at his doorstep. Closing the doors, he chose not to receive them. He hid within the quite fourth floor of White door tower, training in the silent room. The only White Horse sword slave was already in a weak state, so he only focused on recovering. Seeing such a bustling scene made him very excited, but he had no way of receiving the guests.

The duty to block the entry of the visitors, fell upon Mother Wu's shoulders.

# Chapter 144: News regarding Li Shizen

The middle aged housewife that Ye Qingyu had randomly hired from the marketplace had a strong sense of responsibility for a servant. She displayed a toughness that made even Ye Qingyu speechless.

At the very beginning when she was manning the doors, she was very patient in explaining matters to the visitors. But as she discovered that this crowd of people would just pester endlessly, she became somewhat impatient. Regardless of what she said, these words would not enter into their ears at all. She began swiping the broom in her hands about, wildly swinging it through the air. She shouted angrily: "Go, go, go go! My superior is busy, he doesn't have time to receive you. Quickly go, I still have to make dinner. If you delay my master's dinner, your heads....."

This housewife only had one thought in her mind

---

Since her master did not wish to receive such people, then these people were not existences that needed to be feared.

Therefore, if she wanted to aid Ye Qingyu in solving his problems and share his burdens, she must display a forceful nature.

Mother Wu was very satisfied with her current job. Not only was the work light, the benefits were extremely great.

This female servant hoped that if her performance was suitable, Ye Qingyu would change her status as a temporary servant to become a permanent servant. Then her family did not have to worry constantly and remain poor.

These were the simple thoughts of a minor person.

It seemed not too correct, but was in reality very correct.

If she knew that any one of the people covering their heads and fleeing away right now, was enough to make her and her entire family die tens of times over, she would be so frightened that her knees would soften.

“Ai, shrew, shrew.....”

The little military officers were helpless as they were chased away.

A common housewife that they could casually crush to death just by waving their hands could not do anything just because the White Horse tower was standing behind her. This was enough to deflate them entirely. Fate was sometimes so laughable, but what could they do?

After several days of hustle and bustle, the dust gradually began to settle.

The people appearing in front of White Horse tower gradually lessened.

But the the fame of the tough housewife Mother Wu, began to spread out.

As the person in question, Mother Wu knew nothing about this fact and how she was already somewhat famous in the Pass.

On the fourth day, Wen Wan sent over someone with news. He had found some clues about the location of the old military doctor Li Shizen. As for the little soldier called Ye Congyun, there were still not any news whatsoever. After all, the number of soldiers in Youyan pass was far too many. We Wan was only a military officer; the channels and resources he could utilise were limited. He could only search slowly, and could not be rushed.

Ye Conyun was the little brother of the armoured sentry.

That day when Ye Qingyu was fleeing for his life at the underground ice cave, his path was blocked by the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun. The armoured soldier died in battle as a result to protect Ye Qingyu. Before he passed away, he told Ye Qingyu he had a little brother called Ye Conyun. He asked that if Ye Qingyu managed to make it to Youyan Pass, that he hoped Ye Qingyu was able to pass on the news that he had died to his little brother.....

Ye Qingyu did not forget this task entrusted to him.

There was not a day, that he dared forget the benevolence of the

sentries.

And it was those days, when the sentries used their own flesh and blood to protect him, these actions was what allowed Ye Qingyu to comprehend the meaning behind the word 'soldier'.

The matters that had happened on those days, from Ye Qingyu's point of view had an impact and baptism akin to a tsunami or an avalanche on his system of values.

After arriving to Youyan Pass, at the first instant Ye Qingyu went in search for the little brother of the armoured soldier. It was a pity that in such a large Youyan pass, searching for someone like a fly with no head was ultimately not a method that would work. Ye Qingyu could only ask for assistance and borrow the power of others, so that he could find this Ye Congyun.

No matter what, he could not allow anything to happen to Ye Congyun.

Ye Qingyu swore in his heart.

Hearing that Wen Wan had not managed to discover any news about Ye Congyun whereabouts made Ye Qingyu extremely disappointed.

But he knew that he could not blame Wen Wan for such a result.

Thankfully the news of Li Shizen whereabouts could be counted as a great harvest.

The situation of the elderly man was comparatively better.

According to Wen Wan's information, Li Shizen was right now serving in the Vanguard camp, therefore it was very easy to find him.

The current circumstances of Li Shizen was also included in the information passed along--

Because of the fact that the elder's medical arts were profound and he had coincidentally met with a guerilla warfare officer who had heavy injuries and was just returning from the front lines, he gained famed. He managed to save this warfare officer from the hands of the Death God. In the short time of tens of day, he had already treated a significant number

of elite soldiers, healing their injuries. As such, he received heavy respect. To prevent the elderly from rushing about everywhere to treat injuries, the Vanguard camp specially opened a medical building for Li Shizen to sit and treat the various wounds. He did not need to follow the armies to battle.

After numerous items where his miracle hands brought people back from the dead, this elder received the title of [Miracle hands divine doctor]. He could be said to have some small fame in the Vanguard.

After receiving such information, Ye Qingyu could rest at ease, without the need to immediately rush to see him.

A doctor was a rare resource within the army and a doctor with such a high level of medical skill like Li Shizen, would receive even greater respect from the military.

This was because soldiers danced on the the edge of a blade where the head of the blade was lapping in blood. No one could not guarantee they would not get injured at any moment. Everyone understood, a doctor with high skill, perhaps at that key moment, would save their life.

Therefore, Li Shizen should not encounter any danger.

And right now, Ye Qingyu himself was plagued with disturbances. He did not know what kind of action Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and the others would take in vengeance. To prevent the anger of those people to be released on Li Shizen, Ye Qignyu decided for the moment not to let others know of the relationship between himself and Li Shizen. After all, they were in the military together – if Li Shizen really encountered any issues, he could still make it in time to aid him.

Another three days passed.

The imagined revenge from Zhao Ruyun did not arrive.

Ye Qingyu spent his days training, without doing much else.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, without the need to attend for duties and patrols everyday. No one came to manage him.

But Ye Qingyu felt, that he himself had not immersed himself into the life at Youyan Pass. There was a considerable difference from his imagined life as a soldier.

Bai Yuanxing's injuries had completely recovered.

The cold poison in his body was completely expelled. He could already resume his normal functions. Apart from the fact that his body was still slightly weak, there were no major issues remaining.

Mother's Wu mission was hence completely finished. According to the initial terms of her hire, her contract should have ended, but she wanted to stay behind. She finally mustered the courage to say this to Ye Qingyu. Ye Qingyu pondered over this with a smile. These days with the aid of Mother Wu where she kept herself busy in White Horse tower really made his life much more easy and relaxed. Furthermore, Bai Yuanxing could not handle the matters when it came to cooking. Therefore he agreed to retain the famous shrew of White Horse.

Right now, what made Ye Qingyu slightly worried was Big Head.

Ever since the glutton came to Youyan Pass, it was unknown whether it was because the temperature was too cold for him, or perhaps that he had gorged himself from eating too much, he had always remained in a state of slumber. No matter how much Ye Qingyu called to him, he would not wake. Previously he was amazing at eating, now he became amazing at sleeping. For seven or eight days, he had not woke up even once. It would occasionally sleepily move a little bit, just to open his mouth slightly to eat something.....

“Ai, if not for the fact I brought you out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and hoped that you can become a Spirit beast companion, you would be in trouble. Otherwise, with your foolish appearance and performance, I would have long thrown you away.....”

Ye Qingyu looked towards the slumbering Big Head, weeping dry tears.

Until right now, he had still not made clear, just what kind of breed this glutton was, and what abilities he possessed.

Time, passed day by day through such boring training.

Ye Qingyu's handling and control of his yuan qi had finally reached a state of completion. He was completely able to control the power of the fifteen Spirit springs stage.

At the same time, his understanding of the [Limitless divine way] had deepened. Out of very three times of trying to enter the [First limit], he could already succeed one time. This kind of success rate was already comparatively high. It was only that his attempts to enter the 'second limit' was still far from successful. Ye Qingyu tried for hundreds of times, and only at the last time, could he begin to touch the door of the [Second limit domain]. But ultimately, he was not able to step past this boundary.

And as for the four moves of the golden armoured king and the four moves of the unmatched general, these two set of divine techniques, Ye Qingyu had constantly practised them. His comprehension and understanding of these techniques became even deeper where he gained a more familiar understanding. These eight moves, demonstrated from his hands, was many times more times powerful than it was previously.

Ye Qingyu's only regret was that, since the Inexorable spear was destroyed within the [Cloud top cauldron], he felt that he was lacking in a heavy weapon.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also browse through the [Pill mantra].

After everything in the [pill mantra] was deeply imprinted his mind, confirming that he would not forget any of the contents and he could nearly read the book backwards, Ye Qingyu chose to destroy this booklet. After all, it was an object belonging to the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun. The fact that he had killed Chen Moyun could not be leaked out as of this moment. Therefore leaving the [Pill mantra] on him was a disaster waiting to happen.

For him to completely digest the contents of the [Pill mantra] would require the time frame of at least several years. Ye Qingyu was a genius, but even geniuses needed time to grow. Right now, he could only walk

step by step forwards slowly.

If there was time, Ye Qingyu really wanted to try and refine pills.

If he was able to refine the [Mysterious heaven pellet] according to Li Shizen's pill formula, he would definitely benefit greatly.

However, Ye Qingyu understood that some matters could not be rushed and could only progress slowly.

As for the [Cloud top cauldron], it definitely could not be exhibited to the wider world.

Ye Qingyu only treated it as a storage tool for his use.

As for the jade box that Ye Qingyu had discovered on the body of Liu Yuancheng and had always been curious about, he still did not know what was inside. After several times where he attempted to understand and unlock it, he still could not manage to break apart the seal of the jade container. He planned to find a master in small scale formations to open the box after some time had passed and the winds had blown over.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt that this jade contained something that would prove to be of importance to him.

The days of cultivation passed especially quickly.

Ye Qingyu's strength, after the previous explosive surge, began entering into a slow and settled stage.

According to the different martial manuals, after a martial artist had reached the twenty Spirit springs stage, they could attempt to enter the Bitter Sea stage.

But the large majority of martial artists, would not make this choice.

Because twenty Spirit springs were the lowest requirement for the Bitter Sea stage. If they really entered the Bitter Sea stage with such a number, it would signify that the yuan qi liquid in their dantian world was not enough, and would always lack for something. Even if they became a Bitter Sea stage, the area of this 'sea' was limited. There were times that their strength could not even be compared to experts of the sixty and



seventy Spirit springs stage.

# Chapter 145: Everything was slightly strange

The earlier one entered into the Bitter Sea stage, the lower their future potential and limits for cultivation was.

Because the Spirit spring stage was a realm where one accumulated yuan qi. The longer one stayed in this stage of accumulation, the greater the quantity of yuan qi in your body. And by leaving this stage early, this signified that you had accumulated little too. This would lead to a weak foundation, making your future path narrower.

Ye Qingyu's plan was to cultivate as many Spirit springs as possible before considering entering the Bitter Sea stage.

According to his previous cultivation speed, this needed at least ten years of time.

Therefore he was not in a rush.

Practicing the martial path was originally something that went against the heavens. It had never been a matter anyone could rush through.

It was another matter altogether that Ye Qingyu regarded very importantly ——

After reaching the twenty Spirit springs stage, a martial artist could attempt to excavate or bestow an attribute to their inner yuan.

There were martial artists that drew flame into their body, controlling fire yuan qi. They were able to completely scorch the lands around them through this power. There were also martial artists that managed to grasp wind yuan qi. With just one thought, they were able to engulf heaven and earth with gale.....

According to the formation yuan qi theory and foundation, there were normally five elements that existed in heaven and earth. Metal, wood, water, fire and earth could be developed within someone's inner yuan and display a frightening power. Apart from this, there were also other

attributes like poison, ice and shadow. These various rare attributes could also be controlled by some fortunate people and become some rarely seen inner yuan attributes.

This process where one imparted an attribute to their own inner yuan, was called [Spirit raise] in the martial cultivation process.

Ye Qingyu as of this moment was already at the fifteen Spirit springs stage. If he managed to excavate another five Spirit springs, then it was possible for him to [Spirit raise].

Only Spirit spring experts who had successfully undergone the Spirit raise process, could be counted as true experts of the Spirit spring stage.

If your inner yuan had an attribute, then your power in battle would multiply.

Those martial artists that had successfully underwent the [Spirit raise process] could completely crush martial artists who had not undergone this process and was at the same stage.

For people cultivating in the yuan qi martial path, the [Spirit raise] could be counted as a threshold.

A threshold that was extremely important.

There were some martial artists that began to Spirit raise at twenty Spirit springs, and they were not even able to succeed at the forty Spirit springs stage. There were also some geniuses that went against heavens who was able to complete this process quickly. The instant these geniuses entered into the twenty Spirit spring stage, they would succeed in Spirit raising and were able control inner yuan with a special attribute that belonged to them.

And as for what kind of attribute was chosen, this needed the individual choice of the martial artist to decide based on the state of their own body.

Normally, there were not many special requirements.

But the large majority of martial artist in this world chose attributes of the five great elements: metal, earth, water, fire and wood.

Because these five elements were the fundamental energy that this world was constructed from, it extended everywhere in this world. These elements were relatively easy to sense and to control. Furthermore, every element of the five elements had extraordinary power, and belonged to the major path. As for the other rare attributes like shadow, poison and space, these attributes were very hard to grasp. Therefore the process of Spirit raising would need far more effort compared to the major elements. It was very possible that all one's effort would go to waste if they chose rare attributes.

Ye Qingyu had already began to consider, just what attribute he should choose.

This was a very important matter.

Therefore he had to consider seriously. He could not make any hasty decision.

.....

The fifteenth day.

Ye Qingyu was summoned to the Pass Lord's residence to receive orders.

The order contained two points.

The first was that Ye Qingyu could once again choose ten elite soldiers from the army for the White Horse tower. They would become the new White Horse sword slaves.

The second was to notify Ye Qingyu that fifteen days later, the Vanguard camp would begin a small scale military operation. Ye Qingyu must follow the army to the Explosive Snow glacier, and participate in a battle against the Snow ground demon race. The Pass Lord residence notified Ye Qingyu in advance so he could make preparations to follow the army.

"Such a day, has finally arrived?"

Ye Qingyu was slightly excited.

Every since receiving the [White Horse battle armour] he had never had

the opportunity to utilise it in real battle.

Through several days of continuous training, Ye Qingyu vaguely felt that by confining himself, his development would be slow. He needed a great deal of battle experience. Only through this could he have sort of a breakthrough.

Afternoon of that day.

According to the summons, Ye Qingyu went to the [Military council pavilion] to receive his orders.

This time, he still was not able to see the legendary War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge. The person who received him was still Mister Liu.

Compared to the last time, Mister Liu spoke a little more.

This scholar with a lean face, enquired amiably about various little things regarding Ye Qingyu. Such as whether he had gotten used to Youyan Pass, or whether he had any requests. He was different from the solemn and dignified strategist of the Pass Lord's residence, and was more like a kind and amiable old man. It was only that the little student standing beside him stared at Ye Qingyu incessantly, evaluating him from top to bottom. In his bright and clear eyes, there was curiosity and an undisguised interest. He evaluated Ye Qingyu with a smiling expression, as if he wanted to completely see through Ye Qingyu.

Mister Liu's attitude, made Ye Qingyu feel that something was strange.

But he answered every question that was asked.

"In the [Gale operation] fifteen days later, I will also be there to accompany the army when we depart. Haha, I am far too old, my body is already becoming somewhat stiff. At that time, I will need to ask sword envoy Ye for his care and attention." Mister Liu said with a laugh. After all the procedures had been met, Mister Liu placed all the arrangements for this battle into a jade piece and handed it to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu received the jade piece, and said seriously. "Protecting Mister Liu, is the responsibility of every soldier."

In his heart, he felt there was something strange going on.

According to common reason, a strategist like Mister Liu of the Pass Lord's residence would normally not follow the armies along to battle. Such scholars, would normally sit safely at the centre of command, creating plans and schemes, analysing the situation, providing opinion. They would rarely be like warfare officers that charged forward into battle. The [Gale operation], just what was it about, that it would need a strategist like Mister Liu to accompany them into battle?

“En, you have so many accomplishments when you are so young. No wonder you are the inheritor of a heroic badge.” Mister Liu still had a face of friendliness. He reminded: “This time, the [Gale operation] is not a little matter. What is contained within the jade piece, is the plan of action concerning this operation. After you take it, don't look at it immediately. Only after ten days, can you open the jade piece. At that time, you will know the contents of this operation.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head to indicate that he understood.

“Fine, prepare well in these days. If you have any needs, you can come find me at any time.” Mister Liu slapped Ye Qingyu's shoulder with a smile, then said to the little boy standing beside him. “Xinger, help me see Sword envoy Ye off.”

Xinger smiled, bouncing and jumping to the door. Bowing, his eyes like moon crescents, he said: “Military officer Ye, please.”

The little student jumped and hopped at the front as he led the way.

Ye Qingyu followed behind, the [Military council pavilion]

On the way, there were many people that greeted the little student Xinger with a smile. It seemed like this fellow was well known within the Pass Lord's residence.

Some people, after saying their greetings, evaluated Ye Qingyu with a curious gaze.

Very quickly, someone recognised that this youth with a strong and muscular body and graceful facial feature, was namely the new patrolling

sword envoy of White Horse tower whose name had spread throughout in these days. This caused a significant commotion.

Once the news spread out, there were people that specially came from the Pass Lord's residence. Pretending to be just passing by, when they brushed past Ye Qingyu, they would turn and evaluate Ye Qingyu from top to bottom. They then hid far away, whispering secretly and pointing Ye Qingyu. They had never imagined, that the ferocious demon king Ye from the rumours, would be a gentlemanly, elegant faced young man. It made them exhale in shock.

Ye Qingyu also did not imagine, that the first impression he left to the people of the Pass Lord's residence would be like this.

"Just how were you able to do it?" As they were about to leave the gates of the Pass Lord's residence, the little student Xinger asked curiously.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback: "What are you referring to?"

"How were you able to, in such a short amount of time of a month, from three Spirit springs to rise to the fifteen Spirit springs?" The little boy stuck his tongue out.

"Oh, you're asking about that...." Ye Qingyu's mind flickered with countless scenes. The voices and smiling expression of the sentries appeared again. He smiled: "That is a secret."

Xinger pressed his lips together. "You're really petty."

Saying that, he pointed toward the gates. "We've already arrived. Get out by yourself."

This really was a proud and pampered little student.

Ye Qingyu laughed involuntarily, exiting from the gates.

Xinger stood on the background, looking at the back of Ye Qingyu. The smile on his face, gradually disappeared.

"I can't discern anything. Perhaps Mister Liu's guess was wrong. But right now this is a crucial time, we can't afford not to take any precautions." Xinger's appearance changed from his childlike

countenance that he previously displayed, becoming like an old expert. He recalled the transformation of Ye Qingyu's expression as he had asked this question. He had not even missed a shred of change that occurred on Ye Qingyu's expression. But Xinger still could not reach any conclusion whatsoever, shaking his head. With both his hands clasped behind his back, he returned inside.

.....

Returning to White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu stored away the military order jade piece safely.

He felt that something was really strange.

It was not only the fact that Mister' Liu's attitude was somewhat bizarre. Even the words of the little student Xinger, seemed innocent on the surface, but in reality was probing for something.

A master and student pair made Ye Qingyu feel that something was wrong.

And furthermore, the [Gale operation] was a military operation that would happen fifteen days later. The army's plan must be confidential and secret, with great importance attached to the secrecy. It was entirely possible for them to pass down the jade piece military order just before departing. This would prevent news of this operation from leaking. But why was it that Mister Liu gave this jade piece so early to himself, and reminded him that he must not open it before the appointed time?

Why did Ye Qingyu feel, that Mister Llu's was rather hinting to him, that he must look at the contents of the jade piece?

As for the military supply department where he had caused a great commotion, the Pass Lord residence did not take any stance on this whatsoever. There was not even a word of reprimand that was passed down. This was also enough to make Ye Qingyu feel that something weird was going on.

Everything was abnormal.



“I don’t know what Mister Liu is planning. But this doesn’t matter, I have a clear conscience. I can only take things step by step. Before departing, I must be careful and prevent the people of the Cool breeze mountain faction from secretly causing harm.....”

Ye Qingyu began planning in his heart.

Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and the others seemed to have given up on the surface. They had taken no action whatsoever. But who knew whether this was something that they did on purpose to show weakness deliberately?

Ye Qingyu returned to the fourth floor of the White Horse tower, beginning to train yet again.

No matter at what time, power was the most important.

As long as one had enough power, they could completely crush every sinister and nefarious scheme.

By the time night descended, the wind and snow in the air were even greater and stronger.

Ye Qingyu opened his eyes after he had finished cultivating. Through the window, he was able to see the huge snowstorm occurring outside. A thought suddenly occurred to him.

“Youyan pass is a place of the extreme cold. Cold ice rules over all. If I impart such a power into my inner yuan, would I be able to obtain ice inner yuan?” As the time of the Spirit raise was approaching, Ye Qingyu knew that he must make some attempts to [Spirit raise]. Within Youyan Pass, there were many experts that possessed the power of ice inner yuan. This meant that this path was possible. Ice belonged to one of the mutations of water in the five elements, possessing an extremely great power.

# Chapter 146: Attempt to Spirit raise

Ye Qingyu had considered whether to attempt to [Spirit raise] other types of attributes in his inner yuan. But ultimately, he chose to forgo doing this.

The price was too high, and it would take far too long. The costs outweighed the benefits.

As he thought of this, he slowly stood up. He left the prayer mat and came before the window.

Outside the White Horse tower, white snow were flying and cold winds were howling.

A dangerous area like Youyan Pass, had years of accumulated snow. At least half the year was spent in the season of great snowstorms. Even in the entire Snow country, one would be hard pressed to find a location that was colder than Youyan Pass. If he really wanted to cultivate ice inner yuan, then this was indisputably the most optimal location.

Ye Qingyu had once seen the procedure and techniques for the [Spirit raise] in the libraries of White Deer.

Such techniques could not be counted as a great secret for martial artists.

Ye Qingyu slowly extended his hand out as a thought occurred to him.

A snowflake, landed on the centre of his palm.

A minute cold feeling came at him.

With Ye Qingyu's current level of strength, even if he exposed his entire body, he would not fear the cold. Once someone's strength reached the Xiantian stage and once Spirit springs were excavated in the dantian world, then on some level you were immune to fire and water. When the snowflake landed on his hand, it very quickly began to melt.

“To want to [Spirit raise] and control ice inner yuan, one must absorb the ice qi of Heaven and Earth into your body and fuse it with your inner

yuan. Only after doing this and activating your inner yuan, can you possess the power of ice. The power of ice is extremely vast. According to the legends of the far ancient ages, experts that have cultivated to the extreme in ice yuan qi is capable of great feats. With their ice qi striking out, they were able freeze all matter. There is nothing that they cannot destroy. Even time itself, can be frozen!”

Ye Qingyu remembered the legends that he had read in books, describing the acts of legendary experts.

It was said that in the ancient age, there was a legendary class expert of the human race that had absorbing the extreme cold power of heaven and earth into his body that became fundamentally invincible. He was able to freeze time and space, ruling an era.

Ye Qingyu had once thought that to rely on the pure power of ice to freeze space, was far too ridiculous. Perhaps the only reason this was able to be done, was because this legendary class expert had already comprehended the laws of ice.

But no matter what, imbuing his inner yuan with the ice attribute, was absolutely the most optimal choice for him right now.

“Phew....”

He settled down his thoughts, slowly breathing in a mouthful of cold air.

Ye Qingyu decided he would attempt the process of Spirit raising right now.

Twenty Spirit springs was the universally recognised starting point for someone to [Spirit raise]. Right now, he was at the fifteen Spirit springs. If he attempted to do this early, then when he truly reached the twenty Spirit springs stage, he would have gained familiarity with this process. With this experience, he would be able to succeed in [Spirit raising] in one fell swoop.

Ye Qingyu suspected, that those rumoured to have succeeded in [Spirit raising] as soon as they reached twenty spirit springs, had attempted it

before. It was very possible that they had done a great deal of preparation beforehand so they could do it in one attempt.

All of the yuan qi in his body activated. Ye Qingyu entered into an extremely relaxed state.

Ye Qingyu controlled his body as he activated the nameless heart sutra. He allowed every pore on his skin to open, shutting off his mouth and nose. He only used the skin on his body to breath. Every pore on his body was in a state that the naked eye could not perceive, opening and closing. Inhaling and exhaling, he absorbed the cold qi of heaven and earth through his skin.

Spirit spring martial artists, could already breath without using their nose or mouth.

With the minute control they had over their body, every part of their skin and every muscle on their body, could be used to exchange energy with Heaven and Earth. This was akin to a fetus like state, but also differed to some extent.

Ye Qingyu's consciousness enveloped everywhere around his body.

Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that under such a state, the cold qi of heaven and earth was entering into his body drop by drop through his pores at this moment.

Even with his current strength, he could very quickly sense tingles of coldness.

"Drawing cold qi into my body is the first step. I must wait until the cold qi has accumulated to the limits of what my body can bear. Then what I need to afterwards is to use my inner yuan to carry this cold qi and make it travel around my meridians in my body, changing the nature of my body. I must be extremely careful in this process. I cannot expel the cold qi out but I also must not allow the cold qi to damage my body....."

Ye Qingyu's mind recalled the different techniques contained in the various books. He continued with this process.

The books that he had browsed through in the library of White Deer

academy contained techniques on how to Spirit raise. However they were only the introductory techniques of how to [Spirit raise]; they were basic and foundational techniques. Ye Qingyu believed that in some noble families with truly deep resources, perhaps there were even more profound techniques that specialised in [Spirit raising] for different attributes. But there was a point, that could not be disputed in the martial world : the path greatness lay in simplicity. There were many times, that the most basic and most commonly seen techniques where the strongest techniques without any flaw whatsoever.

Therefore he decided, to use the most common technique to [Spirit raise].

He stayed in this prenatal like state for a whole two hours.

Ye Qingyu slowly sensed, that he cold qi in his body was about to reach a threshold. His body was as if it was frozen stiff, becoming somewhat dumb and hard. It was as if his entire body was about to turn into an ice sculpture.

This represented that he could proceed to the next stage.

He carefully and slowly used his inner yuan, to carry this ice cold qi throughout his body. This cold qi travelled through his acupuncture points and meridians.

This process, was extremely painful.

As if there were tens of thousands of needles piercing through his muscles and bones.

Cultivation, was originally an extremely painful process.

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth, continuing to activate his inner yuan.

He knew that the early stages of [Spirit raise] was such that you had to experience such a painful process. Any process that wanted to change the foundation of your body was like so. After his body had slowly adapted to the power of ice and snow, the pain would gradually disappear. Then, there would be a comfortable feeling of the body uniting with the soul. After that, when his inner yuan became mellow and full, then he could

completely control the power of snow, ice and frost.

Another two hours passed.

The surface of Ye Qingyu's body already began to seep with cold sweat.

Cold Sweat the size of yellow beans dripped down from his forehead.

The clothes on his body was like it were completely seeped in water. His garments were completely drenched.

Ye Qingyu's first attempt had ended. The power of ice and frost, after travelling through his meridians and the blood vessels in his body had nearly been completely expended in this process. If he activated his inner yuan to revolve around his body for several more days, he would not feel as much pain anymore.

Ye Qingyu's palm spat out shreds of his inner yuan.

In the pale yuan qi light, there was a thin shred of cold qi that brought with it a minute coldness.

"My first attempt to [Spirit raise], really succeeded."

He was very excited.

That there were already coldness in his yuan qi was already a very good beginning.

If he continued to train, through the accumulation of days and month, there would soon be a day where he could completely control the power of frost and ice. At that time, along with the activation of his inner yuan, snow and ice was sure to follow. As his yuan qi struck out, everywhere it passed, everything would transform into ice. This was the true power of ice inner yuan.

Outside the window, the long night passed.

Under the dome of heaven, wind and snow had no end.

After a small rest, Ye Qingyu continued to train.

.....

.....

In the next few days, Ye Qingyu used the time to his utmost to train.

Wen Wan also came to the White Horse tower several times, but there was still no news regarding Ye Congyun.

Under Wen Wan's advice, Ye Qingyu chose not to use the permission of the Pass Lord's office and head towards the army camps to select new White Horse sword slaves. The turbulent winds and waves had not yet passed. Various factions were still paying attention of White Horse tower. At this time, if he went to select people, there would definitely be some careful people who would arrange for spies to enter White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu footing was still unstable at Youyan Pass, it was hard to differentiate these spies from normal people.

Wen Wan's proposal, was for Ye Qingyu select ten from the silver armoured soldiers under his command. But after Ye Qingyu thought it over, he did not accept.

He estimated that he would remain in Youyan Pass for a very long time.

There were only ten places on the list of White Horse sword slave. Every one of this position was precious and valuable. Ye Qingyu needed to personally select who was able to become a White Sword slave. Apart from Bai Yuanxing, the other nine must be loyal and talented. Only then, was there value in developing them. Perhaps later they could become his left and right arm, aiding him and taking charge of a section.

As of right now, he would prefer to go without than go with the shoddy option.

Time passed by day by day.

The time of departure, came closer and closer.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also choose some suitable weapons left behind by the previous masters of White Horse tower to train. It should prove to be of use on the battlefield. He would also go to the martial store of the army, selecting some books and topics regarding war, martial laws of the army, Youyan Pass army battle records, the maps of the Explosive Snow glacier, the battle methods of the demon races and

various books to read.

Know yourself and know the enemy, Then, you will be victorious in a hundred battles.

Wen Wan would come to White Horse tower at least once every day. He would very patiently answer the questions Ye Qingyu asked. He retold his experience of going out in battle, and fighting against the army of demon race. He passed down all his insights into such expeditions onto Ye Qingyu.

Martial artists with fifteen Spirit springs could absolutely be counted as an expert of experts within the school life of White Deer academy, But swords and spears had no eyes in the battlefield. Even experts of the Spirit spring stage that had successfully [Spirit raised] has an possibility of perishing. If his luck was poor, when the two armies met, Ye Qingyu's life would be in danger.

Wen Wan was evidently worried for this Demon King Ye.

"I will apply to participate in this operation, so I can look after you." Wen Wan in these days, had always requested the commander of the Vanguard to allow him to accompany Ye Qingyu. Wen Wan hoped to participate in the [Gale operation]. This way, he could take care of Ye Qingyu on the battlefield. But he had not received a reply as of yet.

Time passed in the days where the skies were covered in snow.

In the blink of an eye, there was only five days left till the day of departure.

According the the previous arrangement, Ye Qingyu could open the jade piece at this moment.

According to the method passed on by Mister Liu, he unlocked the jade piece. His consciousness entered within. Very quickly, he was able obtain the information contained inside.

A great quantity of information and reports must be gathered before middle sized and large scale military operations could begin. There were large number of simulations and double checks that needed to done.



Furthermore, it was essential for a meticulous and accurate plan of action to be drawn up. They needed to gather a vast amount of human power, financial power, intelligence, and materials, it was not a snap decision by the commander.

Within the military jade piece, every arrangement inside were very detailed.

Of course, the information Ye Qingyu received from this military jade piece, was only a part of the whole equation. It was not complete --only a small number of high level decision maker like the generals, had the right and power to know the contents of the entire plan. Military officers of the middle level and below would only receive part information of the entire operation from the jade piece.

As he finished with the military order jade piece, Ye Qingyu fell silent for a moment then begun to make his preparations.

# Chapter 147: Someone wants to see you

The afternoon of that day.

Ye Qingyu went to the military supply department for the third time. According to the contents of the military jade piece, he went there to obtain the various tools and resources he needed for this operation.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was not low. Every time they went into battle, they were able to receive the needed resources free of charge.

This time, Ye Qingyu did not see Zhao Ruyun at the military supply department.

But the soldiers and officers of the supply department had gazes burning with hostility when they saw Ye Qingyu. No matter what their relationship was with Zhao Ruyun, since Ye Qingyu had struck Zhao Ruyun, this was equal to striking the entire supply department on the face. Evidently, from top to bottom, the supply department did not hold any good feelings towards Ye Qingyu.

As for the military officer in charge of approving the resource request , he was a middle aged man.

His face had a smile that was not a smile. With a slightly cold gaze, he stared at Ye Qingyu for a short moment before signing the request.

Even if so, as he obtained the allocated military resources, Ye Qingyu could not help but shake his head.

Evidently, the people of the military supply department had ultimately something to the supplies. The medicines and herbs that Ye Qingyu received was of low quality; the large majority were either not of enough years yet or dried and withered. The armour and weapons he obtained were also rusty and old, evidently not the best of the lot.

“It’s said that in the army, one must not offend people from the supply department. It seems that this saying is not false at all.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not disputing anything.

In such a situation, the supply department had already allocated the resources according to the instructions on the military jade piece. On some level, they had already fulfilled their duty. If he made an issue out of this, not only could he not gain any advantage, but instead he would give off an impression that he was a pain that fussed over minor matters.

This was the supply department of the Empire. To think that they would be so stagnant and stuck in the old ways, disregarding the greater good, really made Ye Qingyu feel disappointed.

After returning to the White Horse tower, Ye Qingyu placed some of the resources that he had no use for in the stores of White Horse tower like rubbish. He arranged for the White Horse sword slave Bai Yuanxing to take care of it.

At that time, the Big Head who was in the midst of slumber finally woke up.

After considering for a moment, Ye Qingyu placed this glutton into his embrace. Then he gathered the clothing and resources he had long prepared. When it was evening, he left White Horse tower, heading towards the army to report for duty.

This was the arranged time on the military jade piece.

Bai Yuanxing and Mother Wu was left behind to look after White Horse tower.

.....

.....

One day later.

Twenty miles away from Youyan Pass.

A formation airship with the clouds shrouding it's presence, slowly travelled closer to the Explosive Snow glacier.

Ye Qingyu stood at the forefront of the airship.

The long wind blew, mist and fog drifted everywhere.

This airship was twenty metres long and five metres wide. It was constructed in a similar way to the rafts on the river. Sleek and streamlined, a pale white colour, it was created with a metal material that Ye Qingyu had never seen before. There were tight clustered formations carved on the exterior of the airship. The heart of the ship was operated using the Origin crystal as a power source, and hence it could easily traverse through the air. The noise made from this ship was extremely little, and it's colour was also similar to the surrounding white clouds. If one was far away, and did not examine carefully, it was very hard to discover its existence.

There was a formation field around the airship that enveloped everything inside. It blocked the cold strong wind outside.

Ye Qingyu sat cross legged at the head of the ship.

And on the metal plates behind him, there stood nearly a hundred soldiers donning silver armour.

These soldiers were elite soldiers that were chosen carefully from the Vanguard camp. The lowest of their strength was at the first Spirit spring level. They were led by a warfare officer called Liu Zongyuan, that stood silently on the metal plates of the airship. Every one of them were like stone sculptures, persistent and determined, awaiting the arrival of battle.

Ultimately, Wen Wan could not participate in this time [Gale operation].

Ye Qingyu vaguely knew, that the number of soldiers taking part in this operation this time were near ten thousand. The Vanguard had allocated twenty military officers, and the Right and Left camp had also allocated another twenty military officers to command this operation. In coordination with five patrolling sword envoys, there were countless experts of the military that embarked on this mission. With a deputy commander class leader leading the way, they set off towards the dangerous area guarded by the [Southern incline legion] of the Snow ground demon race.

Just from the numbers and military power invoked, one could judge that

this was an extremely important military operation.

Forty military officers of all camps, according to the prearranged plan, set off towards different directions.

Ye Qingyu's formation airship flew alone. During the night, it embarked and flew through the air. Travelling at a very slow speed, it borrowed the cover of the clouds throughout the sky and slowly headed towards a Northern direction.

The airship's highest commander, Liu Zongyuan, was a silent expert. The first time they met, he had only slightly nodded at Ye Qingyu and not spoken a single word more. He was like a boulder that did not speak. Every military order was issued by his deputy commander. The two people had evidently worked together for a lengthy period of time, and was hence extremely coordinated.

Ye Qingyu had also secretly observed this Liu Zongyuan.

From his appearance, this person seemed to be around thirty years of age. With a muscular figure, wide back and shoulders, he had a robust exterior. He was wearing silver armour with a white cape behind his back. There was also a huge battle blade that was hung behind his back. The inner yuan in his body was vast and deep, his strength unfathomable. At the very least, the current Ye Qingyu could not see through the cultivation stage that Liu Zongyuan was in.

"If I do not remember wrongly, this Liu Zongyuan is ranked eighty three on the [Military star list]. He can be counted as a powerful character within the Vanguard camp; his ranking is even higher than Wen Wan."

Ye Qingyu furtively recalled in his heart.

The soldiers under Liu Zongyuan's command was as silent as him.

This airship, was like a spirit ship that traversed and sliced apart the clouds without making any sounds. It swam slowly through the dome of heaven.

The military order in the jade piece was very simple. Ye Qingyu was to coordinate with Liu Zongyuan's operations. On one hand he had to survey

military discipline, recording the battle deeds of the various soldiers and the other hand, he had to fight at crucial moments. He was there to guarantee the success of the military officer's mission. As for what Liu Zongyuan's mission would be, since Liu Zongyuan did not mention it, Ye Qingyu had no way of knowing.

But from the speed and route of this airship, Ye Qingyu guessed, that the people on this mission should not be part of the main battle force. They should be playing some sort of coordinating role or preparing a surprise ambush.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu vaguely felt through his observation, that this Liu Zongyuan did not have any warm feelings towards him. He even held a faint enmity towards Ye Qingyu.

"Could it be that he is also someone of the Cool breeze mountain faction?"

Ye Qingyu guessed.

On the way, apart from the occasional rest, Ye Qingyu spent the large majority of time sat cross legged at the forefront of the ship, circulating his qi and training.

On the noon of that day, the head of the formation airship suddenly changed directions. It headed straight towards West and increased it's speed slightly.

Clouds and mist were everywhere throughout the skies. The vision was limited. One was only able to see a hundred metres into the skies. Ye Qingyu did not know just where this air ship was heading. He could not even see the terrain down below. He could only vaguely sense the direction it was travelling. Time passed extremely slowly, the airship completely silent. Ye Qingyu felt very bored.

The way the ship travelled seemed not to have any rules whatsoever.

Sometimes it would speed up, sometimes it would stop as if it was waiting for something. It completely did not seem to be following any military orders, but rather soared on aimlessly.

There were several times that Ye Qingyu wanted to ask the reason for this. But as his gaze met the figure of Liu Zongyuan that was as silent as a boulder, for some reason he dispersed such an intention.

In such a state, three days slowly passed by.

On the way, they did not encounter any squads of demon race soldiers or other airships. Not to mention battle, even a state of alert and caution did not happen.

They continued to slowly travel through the clouds. It was as if they had entered into a silent and white world. The slow passing of time was so stifling that it made one mad.

“Through our travel, we have halted many times over. Perhaps we received an order that came from the military or perhaps it was to detect the defences of the demon race and prevent discovery of our presence. We are trying to hide from the demon race. Could it be that for our mission we must enter deep into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier?” Ye Qingyu gradually understood. But it was hard to imagine what kind of method was being used to communicate with the army at Youyan pass. The technology of the formations far exceeded his previous imagination.

It made Ye Qingyu realise even more, that coming to Youyan Pass was the correct choice.

Only at such a place would his vision of the world expand. He would not spend his life confined within a little city. If he stayed, he would live a mediocre life and his sight would never stretch far. His vision would always be confined to one corner

The fifth day.

Ye Qingyu could not make clear, just how far the airship had travelled.

At that time, the airship stopped. The formation on the centre of the airship stopped functioning, and the air ship silently floated in the clouds like a hidden claw. The soldiers on the armoured plates also began to be cautious. Liu Zongyuan always sat on the armoured plates. The sensation he gave off, was as if he was a patient hunter that was hiding within the

clouds, silently waiting for the arrival of his prey. Then he would kill it in one strike.

In the expressions of Liu Zongyuan and the others, Ye Qingyu could see a shred of anxiousness.

This indirectly confirmed Ye Qingyu's guess.

He and these people, must be deep within the Explosive Snow glacier at this time. Once they were discovered by the demon race, what faced them was a gigantic disaster.

During this time, Liu Zongyuan had entered twice into the cabin inside the airship.

Every time, not long after Liu Zongyuan entered, he would come outside and issue new orders.

"Most likely within the cabin, there is a truly great leader of the army sitting there giving out commands. So the highest commander of this airship, is not the military officer Liu Zongyuan." Ye Qingyu suddenly realised this point.

On the way, Ye Qingyu had not asked any questions of his initiative. He was like an outsider, silently observing everything that occurred.

Sunset.

Night time came.

The armoured soldiers became increasingly cautious and nervous.

Ye Qingyu approximated the time.

If the previous military plan had not changed, then he believe at this time the Vanguard Camp, the Right camp, Left camp, these main battle force should already be directly doing battle with the [Southern incline legion] of the demon race. This time, it was a large scale military campaign with over ten thousand people participating. It must be incomparable tragic on the battlefield. Every moment and every second, there were lifeforms perishing, and every moment and every second there were martial experts falling.....



“The mission that we are doing, just what is it?”

Ye Qingyu became increasingly curious.

Youyan Pass had planned such a large scale military operation. It should not be as Wen Wan had said, that this was for them to train the soldiers and investigate the military power of the demon race. It was most likely that there was some special aim apart from this.

And he himself, in such a battle, just what role would he play?

The black night descended.

And when Ye Qingyu had his eyes closed in thought, the military officer Liu Zongyuan for the first time took the initiative to find him. He stood in front of Ye Qingyu.

“What is it?” Ye Qingyu opened his eyes.

Liu Zongyuan had no expression on his face. He said slowly: “Officer Ye, someone wants to see you.”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback. : “Who is it?”

“You’ll know when you see him.” Liu Zongyuan turned around, heading towards the cabin of the airship. “Please follow me.”

# Chapter 148: Drinking some tea and having a conversation

Ye Qingyu was full of questions as he followed behind Liu Zongyuan. They entered into the cabin of the airship.

As they followed the stairs down, there was another corridor.

On the two sides of the corridor there were armoured soldiers guarding this passageway.

After arriving at the cabin room, Liu Zongyuan made a motion for Ye Qingyu to go ahead.

Ye Qingyu pushed open the doors of the cabin, walking inside alone by himself.

Within the cabin, the space was extremely expansive. It was as if it was a silent room rather than a cabin in an airship. The furnishings were extremely elegant and there was a faint fragrance of tea in the air.

Mister Liu had a slight smile on his face. He was wearing green clothes and sat cross legged on a woven grass prayer mat. There was a vine table next to him and on it, was a clay tea set. Beside him was Xinger wearing white robes. He was currently at the stove, boiling water. With his hair tied up in a bun, he sat on the left of the prayer mat and was currently peacefully preparing the tea. His movements were elegant and extremely gentle. Evidently, he had been immersed in the way of the tea for a period of time already.

In the cabin, there was the the fragrance of the tea permeating the air. It gave off an extremely peaceful and leisurely atmosphere.

“Officer Ye, we meet again.” Mister Liu smiled, pointing towards the prayer mat opposite him. “These days, I’ve wanted to speak with you very much. Please sit.”

Ye Qingyu considered for a moment, then sat quietly on the mat. Evaluating his surrounding environment, he then said: “I wonder for what

matter did you want to talk to me about?"

"The night is long, I just wanted to converse with someone. Therefore I sought out officer Ye to drink some tea and have some conversation." Mister Liu had a faint smile as he said these words.

"So it was like this. Thank you, I was namely thirsty." Ye Qingyu knew that since Mister Liu had sought him out, there was a matter he wanted to discuss. But since he did not want to say it openly, then Ye Qingyu could only remain silent and observe and see what kind of medicine the strategist of the Pass Lord's residence was selling in his gourd.

Xinger had completely changed from his lively demeanour where he bounced about. He was as peaceful as a girl.

Xinger finished boiling the water, preparing the tea. He placed a cup in front of Mister Liu, then placed another cup in front of Ye Qingyu.

The faint fragrance of tea, bringing with it a wisp of steam, rose up in front of Ye Qingyu.

"Please." Mister Liu lifted his cup with a smile to indicate that Ye Qingyu should go ahead.

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth, then used inner yuan to suck the amber coloured tea in the cup completely out, finishing it completely in one gulp.

"Hahaha....." Mister Liu began chuckling, sipping a bit of his own cup of tea. "Officer Ye, tea is not drank like that."

Ye Qingyu also began laughing. "I don't want to taste tea, I only want to solve my thirst."

"Really the personality of a young man." Mister Liu considered with a sigh, saying: "To speak the truth, the words of officer Ye, made me suddenly think of a person. Ten years ago, he was also sitting in front of me tasting tea. Like officer Ye, he was young and handsome, with a thriving heroic spirit, a dragon among men. His battle records were outstanding, his future unlimited and boundless. Nearly the entire Youyan pass, thought that he would become the future War God, and was the

future successor of the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu. A pity, a pity.....”

As he spoke of his, Mister Liu began continuously sighing.

Ye Qingyu smiled faintly. “After hearing this, should I coordinate with Mister Liu’s words and ask just what is a pity?”

Mister Liu was slightly taken aback, then smiled. “What, it seems like officer Ye is not interested in my topic.”

“That is not so.” Ye Qingyu said seriously. “I am extremely curious, and want to hear the story about what happened afterwards. Please mister, could you tell me, just what happened to this person afterwards?”

“What happened to this person afterwards.....” Mister Liu hesitated, tasting the tea in his cup in detail, then slowly closed his eyes, as if he had entered deep into his memories, his face occasionally displaying traces of recollection. Half a moment later, he sighed yet again:

“Afterwards, that person fell into the path of the demon, transforming into a demon.”

“What ? Transformed into a demon?”

Ye Qingyu was really greatly shocked by this.

Originally he thought, that Mister Liu was being deliberately mystifying. The person of his words, should have died prematurely for some reason.

He had not imagined, that it would be such an ending.

Mister Liu opened his eyes, handing over the tea cup in his hands to Xinger then nodded his head. “That’s right, that incomparably heroic person, extraordinary talent, originally was a person that the Youyan army was going to heavily nourish. From a tiny little military officer to become the deputy general of the Vanguard, he did this in less than three years of time. If everything followed the original plan, he would have become the new hero of Youyan Pass. But its a pity that during one of the operation targeting the [Southern incline legion], that person was self confident, going deep alone into enemy territory without any other

reinforcements. He fell into the [Burning snow demon general's] scheme. Surrounded with no aid, in the end his entire army was annihilated. Because he feared for his life, he surrendered to the [Southern incline legion], becoming the claws and fangs of the demon race....”

As Ye Qingyu heard this, his heart was extremely shaken.

“There’s such a matter?” He said disbelievingly. “A human capitulated to the demon race? This is just.....betraying your ancestors and relinquishing your descent.”

Mister Liu nodded his head, a face filled with regret. “That’s right. Originally everyone thought that person perished in battle. But we never imagined that he chose to live his life out in an ignoble existence. When the news came, it shook the entire Youyan Pass, it shook the entire Snow country. Many people did not believe in this news, suspecting it was the crafty scheme of the demon race. They did not believe it was possible for that person to surrender....The army investigating, sending numerous people to discover the truth as they headed towards the Explosive Snow glacier. But they did not manage to discover anything, until that day....”

As he said to here, a painful expression appeared on the face of Mister Liu.

Half a moment later, he continued. “Until that day, that person led the great army of the demon race to attack us. Breaking apart twelve lines of defence of Youyan Pass at the outer edges, killing over ten thousand of our human comrades. Youyan Pass including Lord Lu and hundreds of military officers saw with their own eyes, that person leading the personal guards of the Burning Snow demon general. His hand holding the heads of his previous comrades, painting the ice city fresh with blood.....his previous comrades, only at that moment did they believe, that the previous star of the military, really fell into path of becoming a monster....”

Ye Qingyu was silent. 。

At the start he had a manner of ridicule when he listened to the words of Mister Liu. But as these secrets were said, Ye Qingyu’s heart could not

help but be shaken.

He had never imagined, that such a matter had once occurred in Youyan Pass.

One could imagine, just how much impact this had caused back then.

One could imagine, just what kind of rage the Empire sank into.

A scandal like this, the Empire would absolutely completely censor and lock down. So the fact that Ye Qingyu was unaware, was very normal. Only people like Mister Liu who saw with his own eyes just what had happened, could understand the terrifying waves like that of a storm this incident caused?

“The empire was enraged. The sent out top class assassins to head towards the Explosive Snow glacier to kill that person. But they failed to do so. It’s been said that after person capitulated to the demon race and accepted the demon race forbidden techniques, he inserted demon bones into his body. His strength multiplied.....” Mister Liu continued to recount from his memory. “That person was a person with peerless talent, his cultivation far exceeding people of his generation. Once he lasted ten moves against Lord Lu, the Lord of the North that drove away demons, without being defeated. After transplanting a demon bone inside himself, one can imagine just how terrifying he is. The empire once targeted him and organised several operations to get rid of this thorn, but ultimately it all ended in failure!”

Transplanting a demon bone?

Ye Qingyu was slightly in a daze.

By transplanting a demon bone in the human body, would this allow their strength to multiply?

He had never heard of such a technique to before.

Then he heard Mister Liu continue to speak “For the Empire and the army of Youyan Pass, the betrayal of this person, is tantamount to a nightmare. That person is extremely familiar with the function of the military of the empire, and even more familiar with the arrangements and

posts of Youyan Pass. He knows the network of defence outside and inside Youyan Pass exceedingly well. In the next few years, under the leadership of that person, the personal guards of the Burning Snow demon general became the nightmare of Youyan Pass. Coming and going without leaving a shadow, they heavily injured the various departments of Youyan army, causing tragic losses to the Empire. And even the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu, nearly fell into their scheme. The intense and ferocious harm he caused was terrible. It could completely be said to be the most serious loss we suffered since the Empire was founded.”

As Ye Qingyu heard this, he sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

That’s right, he was a person that had once been carefully groomed to become the future commander. Once he chose to betray and side with the enemy, just what kind of terrifying consequences he could cause was evident. Even an idiot was able to imagine this just by using their brain slightly.

“Only until two or three years ago, under the bitter struggle and efforts of the people at Youyan Pass, could we get rid of the influence of the betrayal of this person brought, and slowly turn the tides. Youyan Pass is not in a position of absolute disadvantage anymore, but to want to once again be at the upper hand between the struggle with the [Southern Incline legion] of the Snow Ground Demon court, needs great time. Most likely, we need another ten years to once again return to that formerly grand state in the old days. “

It was unknown whether it was sorrow or happiness in Mister Liu’s tone.

As he sighed, he once again drank the tea that Xinger brought over.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

He sat silently looking at Mister Liu., wanting to know the reason why he was invited to come and the reason he spoke such words.

Could it be simply that he was somewhat similar to that person?

Or perhaps.....the story of Mister Liu, was hinting to him about

something?

There was a deep silence in the cabin.

Mister Liu once again tasted two cups of tea, slowly stabilising his emotions. Looking at Ye Qingyu, he smiled: "Officer Ye, do you know just what the purpose of the [Gale operation] is?"

Ye Qingyu shook his head. Originally he wanted to blurt out that he did not know anything because the military jade piece did not specify the aim of this operation at all.

With his background, experience, position and status, he did not have the requirements to know such a thing.

But as he lifted his head, seeing the strange smile on Mister Liu's face, he suddenly realised something. His heart shuddering: "Could it .....could it be to act against that person?"

Mister Liu began chuckling loudly.

"You've guessed correctly." He said.

Ye Qingyu considered, then asked again: "This time.....do we have any chance?"

"Of course we have a chance." Mister Liu smiled faintly with confidence. "This time the operation seems like a routine small scale battle that is held in the winter season. But in reality for this, the army of Youyan pass has already prepared for a very, very long period of time. As long as this person is alive, he will always be the great humiliation of Youyan Pass. His very life is mocking the army of Youyan, the entire empire will not allow him to live on. This time, not only have we managed to obtain that person's route and action plan, even the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu will act personally."

Lu Zhaoge would act personally?

Ye Qingyu heard this, then his heart began beating madly.

The War God of Youyan Pass would act personally?

This was absolutely something that would shake the entire empire if it



was leaked out.

One of the ten great warriors, The War God of Youyan Passs, would finally act again after ten years?

One could imagine, just what kind of battle this would be.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised and comprehended, why Mister Liu would have such confidence.

That's right, if War God Lu decided to act personally then every thing could be said to be finished.

For this, the military of Youyan Pass had prepared for an extremely long period of time. It must be a long planned and premeditated action. Hearing the meaning in Mister Liu's words, the human race must have through some channel, obtained the military plan of that person. This was someone intentionally planning against someone who was unaware. This time, that person would absolutely die.

# Chapter 149: Will of the Martial path

But, whether that person would perish, had nothing to do with Ye Qingyu.

What Ye Qingyu was concerned with, was just why did Mister Liu speak of such a matter to him in such detail?

As the advisor and strategist of the Pass Lord Residence, Mister Liu could absolutely be described as having ten thousand matters to take care of everyday. Those able to stay within the [Military council pavilion], every one of them had the deep trust of War God Lu Zhaoge. And furthermore, this time the army of Youyan Pass had taken such painstaking efforts to plan an operation against that person. According to reason, Mister Liu should be incomparably busy right now, but was instead on a formation airship that headed somewhere unknown and chatting to Ye Qingyu.....

Of course Ye Qingyu did not think that this was because Mister Liu was bored and wanted to find him to pass the time.

For a scholar like Mister Liu, there were countless plans and schemes flashing through his mind at every moment.

Everything he did, every word he said, there was a clear motive behind them.

And right now, just what was Mister Liu's aim?

Ye Qingyu fell silent for a time, then lifted his head: "Then right now, we have flown so covertly for such a long time. We are deep into the territory of the demon race. On the way we have cautiously avoiding all the patrols and checkpoints of the demon race, hiding within the cloud layers. Just what is this all for? Could it be that we are hiding to ambush that person?"

Mister Liu smiled faintly.

"Of course not. I'm not underestimating myself, but that person has a terrifying strength. In the entire Youyan army, apart from Pass Lord Lu

and several other people who are able to defeat him, to find a person that is able to last ten moves in front of him is extremely difficult. Even if we considered everyone together on this formation airship and added them together, we will be exploded to bits by just one of his finger in an instant. Not to mention ambush, if we are discovered by him, we only have one path: death. To ambush that person? We are still far, far away from reaching that requirement.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He knew that Mister Liu spoke the truth.

The terrifying power of that person was able to be completely seen through these short words.

The army had planned for ten years, but was not able to kill him. From that alone, one was able to see just how great his strength was.

He and everyone else on this airship, in front of that person, were just ants. They completely could not pose as any sort of threat to that person. Even if that person stood still for them to hack into pieces, ultimately they would be killed by the yuan qi protection around his body.

“If it is like so, then can I dare ask mister, just what is the reason for our travel?” Ye Qingyu did not beat around the bush anymore, saying things openly.

Mister Liu smiled: “Our mission is very simple. We are only here to survey the Explosive Snow glacier, to record down the surrounding terrain.”

“You mean....to create a map?” Ye Qingyu’s heart thumped.

“You are not wrong. But we are not just simply creating a map. These years, because of the betrayal of that person, the empire has always been at a complete disadvantage in the Northern front lines. Our power has no way of entering into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier. We are lacking in understanding of the terrain, the topography, as well as the concentration of Spirit qi in different areas. This time, the military has planned a scheme to target that person. Apart from killing the greatest

traitor in history, we also hope to use this opportunity, to clearly understand the terrain of the Explosive snow glacier. We are currently observing the military power and arrangements of the [Southern incline legion] at this area. One can imagine, once the true operation begins, this area will definitely enter into a chaotic state. That will be our opportunity.”

Mister Liu patiently explained.

So it was like this.

Ye Qingyu had finally understood a little.

This time, the [Gale operation] was definitely well planned and meticulous in all aspects.

From this, one could comprehend the ambition of the military.

Not only did they want to kill that traitor, they also wanted to gather information of the terrain and topography, and the distribution of military power of Demon race.....this was evidently making preparations to invade into the Explosive Snow glacier.

Could it be that the Empire was currently preparing for the third large scale battle against the Snow Ground Demon court?

“If there are not any mistakes in this plan, then it should be tomorrow morning that the true battle begins. Once the [Southern incline legion] is disturbed, and that person enters into battle, he will enter into our prepared trap. Once that person has perished, the Explosive snow glacier must be completely chaotic. And then, our opportunity will have arrived.” Mister Liu had a faint smile, slowly sipping his tea.“

Even though he was a scholar with weak power, but he was not nervous in the slightest in such a dangerous area.

This calm and unperturbed spirit, really made someone admire him.

And as for the little student Xinger next to him, he was as calm as a rock that did not know fear.

Ye Qingyu drank four cups of tea in succession.

When Xinger handed the fifth cup, he shook his head, standing up. “If Mister does not have any more orders, then I’ll first go out and prepare for the matters tomorrow.”

Mister Liu nodded his head.

When Ye Qingyu turned and left the cabin, in the corner of his eyes, he saw that the clear and large eyes of Xinger had always been staring at him.

.....

.....

Returning to the armoured plates.

“Eh? You’ve changed your armour?”

Ye qingyu was surprised to discover, that the originally armoured soldiers on the armoured plate had changed away from their silver armour. Instead, they were wearing a strange beast skin demon armour.

These beast skin demon armour, was namely the uniform of the soldiers of the Snow ground demon race. The texture was crude and the appearance bloated. The material was made from the fur of some unknown beast as well as metal that was found mainly in the Explosive snow glacier. There was a clear difference between it and the armour of the human race. The demon armour had a primitive and violent style and there was a faint demon qi pulsing from the armour.,

Even the warfare officer, Liu Zongyuan had donned the demon armour.

“It seems like this is for another layer of protection. By disguising ourselves to look like the demon race, perhaps we can escape in the confusion at a crucial time.”

Ye Qingyu understood.

He sat cross-legged at the armoured plates at the head of the airship, activating his inner yuan. He breathed in and out according to the nameless heart sutra, constantly optimising his state, making preparations for the possible battle of tomorrow.

Six hours later.

There was a soldier bringing a set of demon armour, respectfully handing it to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu wore the [White horse armour] on his body, then wore this set of demon armour over it on the outside. The black bear skin cap covered the large majority of his face. His entire body emitted with a sour and bloody odour, demon qi emitting from his body. If one could not see the face, they would really think that he was a soldier of the demon race.

At the time he donned the demon armour, on the sky far off, a slight ray of the sun of dawn was exposed.

The new day, was about to descend.

The morning wind was like blades.

Mister Liu slowly walked out from the cabin.

Behind him was the student Xinger who had similarly changed and put on the demon armour.

As he greeted Ye Qingyu by nodding his head, Mister Liu came to the head of the airship under the protection of the warfare officer Liu Zongyuan and six other elite soldiers. He stood shoulder to shoulder next to Ye Qingyu.

“It is about to begin!”

Mister Liu moved his fingers, calculating the time, then turned his head to look at the South West direction. He spoke lightly.

Before he had finished.

Boom!

A undulation that seemed to be there but not there, began shuddering from the South west direction.

In truth, the position that Ye Qingyu and the others were in right now was very far away in distance from the centre of the yuan qi explosion. If they looked, the limits of their vision could not discern any abnormal

happenings. If they did their utmost to hear, the limits of their hearing could not hear any sound. But any martial artist, any of the demon race, at this instant, through a method that even they themselves were not aware of, was able to sense this terrifying fluctuation.

The sensation that it gave, was as if a bolt of lightning exploded in their hearts in an instant.

It was a type of power that directly impacted their Spirit and their soul.

Terrifying!

Profound!

“Will of the Martial Path!”

The Liu Zongyuan that had always remained silent, finally opened his mouth.

“A hundred miles away, there are experts with cultivation level at the Bitter Sea stage and above that has acted. This really is a very frightening power of their consciousness.”

On the face of this Warfare officer, there was a look of yearning.

Will of the Martial path?

After Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, his heart finally understood.

So this strange undulation, was the legendary Will of the martial path that experts possessed.

He had once seen at White Deer academy, within the historical narratives books about this phenomenon. It was said that in legend, that true top experts, not only were their flesh body and inner yuan trained to the extreme limits, the power of their consciousness was also like invulnerable steel. Through just a thought, their vast consciousness could extend in all directions, causing the lifeforms hundreds, thousands of miles away to feel their unshakeable will. It caused them to shudder as if they had witnessed a deity appearing.

Ye Qingyu had only heard about this so called Will of the martial path through books.

This mysterious sensation that he had personally experienced gave him a deeper understanding as to what exactly it was. His heart was incomparably shocked.

Through just a thought of someone hundreds of miles away, it could cause his spirit to be so greatly shaken. Just what was kind of terrifying existence was it?

Could it be that the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge, that had acted?

Just as Ye Qingyu was questioning —

Boom!

It was another wave of Will of the martial path that exploded.

This time, the Will of the martial path, was not as peaceful and calm as first. It contained a killing intent and viciousnesses that soared to the sky. It was as if a blood ocean that completely covered the sky was pressuring and crushing towards them.

In such an unprepared state, Ye Qingyu could feel his vision darkening. His figure shuddered, nearly shouting. In an instant, it was as if his entire body was submerged into a pool of blood. A fear that he could hardly control, spread throughout his body. It was as if the Death God suddenly appeared tens of metres away from him, or as if he was being stared at by some huge gigantic primordial beast. Cold sweat instantly seeped out from forehead of Ye Qingyu.....

On the armoured plates.

The other soldiers were already loudly screaming.

The soldier with the lowest strength let out a tragic shout. With a crash, he fell, directly struck by the killing intent contained in this Will of the martial path. He fainted.

Even Liu Zongyuan, let out a fierce and low grunt.

Evidently in front of this Will of the martial path, he was also adversely affected.



In that instant, the countless lifeforms hundreds of miles around, no matter whether it was intelligent or unknowing ants, was affected. Above the sky, under the icy grounds, millions of life forms were completely shaken by this bloody Will of the martial path. They were so scared they were shivering and shuddering in terror.

In the time of the spark of a flint, Ye Qingyu reacted. He suddenly thought of something, crying in disdain in his heart. Activating his inner yuan, he moved to block in front of Mister Liu.....

Mister Liu did not know any martial arts. If he was struck by such an impact, would there be a risk to his life?

But when Ye Qingyu turned his head to look, he was shocked to discover that Mister Liu was wearing a jade piece between the eyebrows. It was emitting a pale silver aura, tangible but with no substance, like a dim lantern. It had completely dispersed that terrifying strike of the Will of the martial path.

And as for the student Xinger that stood next to Mister Liu, without knowing why, his expression was completely peaceful. It was as if he had not sensed this terrifying undulation at all.

# Chapter 150: Turning of the Snow dragon

“There are top experts exchanging blows.”

The expression of Liu Zongyuan became more solemn and serious.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, looking towards the direction of the south west.

At this time, the airship that he and the others were on, after five days of flight, had already entered deep into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier. The frontal battlefield of the [Gale operation] was evidently occurring at the outer boundaries of the Explosive Snow glacier. The battle should have already started and was enveloping everywhere. Right now, they should be having a brief clash between the two forces, an intertwining of fangs. After tens of years of fighting and opposing each other, both parties knew each other very well. There would not be a scene where one party was completely annihilated. Today, it was evidently time for the top class experts to clash.

Ye Qingyu did not know just what the plan of the army was.

But since this battle had started, this meant that everything was progressing according to plan.

The first person who emitted the Will of the martial path, should be a commander of the great army at Youyan Pass. Then the second vicious and ominous Will of the martial path, could it be that it was emitted from that person?

That person had shown himself?

Ye Qingyu silently pondered in his heart.

At that time——

“Fine, we can begin.” Mister Liu said as he tied the front of his robe at his waist, his body as straight as a javelin. Taking several step forwards, he stood at the head of the airship, slowly controlling his breathing. As if he was a martial artist optimising his state before battle.

There was an armoured soldier that brought over a huge, green stone table. On it was a snowy white jade like beast skin scroll.

When the Scroll was unrolled, it was completely white and blank inside.

Xinger stood in front of this stone table. From a dimensional pouch, he took out a bear butterfly stone ink slab, a ink stick of dragon blood treasure ink, and a piece of azure mysterious ice.

Using the heat of his palm to melt this mysterious ice, he then dipped the dragon blood treasure ink stick in the water in the bear butterfly ink slab. Using a blunt metal little dagger, he began grinding. Under such a gentle action, the dragon blood treasure ink stick very quickly began dissolving in the bear butterfly ink slab. One was able to see scarlet red blood ink appear. The faint and strange fragrance of ink began dispersing in the air, giving off a comfortable feeling that relaxed the hearts of people.

Xinger's movement was gentle and calm, with every move and movement like a smooth dance. It was as if each and every one of her actions contained the essence of Heaven's way.

Ye Qingyu witnessed for the first time, that someone was able to perfect a little thing like grinding ink to such a perfect movement.

The airship had no sounds or other actions occurring on it. It slowly swam through the clouds and mist.

Then the height of the airship lowered.

The white clouds became thinner and thinner.

If Ye Qingyu surveyed below, he could finally clearly see everything under him.

He could not help but sigh with admiration in his heart.

A vast ice and snow continent, where the mountain ranges were like silver snakes. It was a candle wax like continent.

Although just through the name of the Explosive Snow glacier, one could be able to imagine, that this continent was a ground that was

completely covered by ice and snow; a extremely cold place. But by personally seeing the endless white snow ground, seeing ice peaks that were like deities mistakenly descended to mortal lands, seeing strand after strand of huge fissures in the ground like the movement of a dragon, Ye Qingyu was shaken. This was an entire world that was formed by ice and snow. It was too beautiful and too bizarre, like it was divine scenery.

This was a world ruled by ice and snow.

No wonder the demon race here, was known as the Snow ground demon race.

“Everyone careful!”

Liu Zongyuan let out a low shout, ordering the soldiers to be on full alert.

The soldiers who were also shaken by this scene of the beautiful snow, awakened.

Ye Qingyu also quickly recovered.

He knew that even then though this ice world was beautiful , it was only suitable for viewing from far away. If one really was to live in such an environment, then it was absolutely a frightening experience. The instance the cold exploded, it was enough to reap away countless life. Without the cover of vegetation, without food, it was unknown just how the demon race was able to survive in such a harsh environment.

No wonder in these years, that the Southern ground demon race dreamed to go South through Youyan Pass, and wanted to take over the territory that belonged to Snow country.

Everything, was for the reproduction and multiplication of their race.

It was unknown when a scarlet red brush was held in the hands of Mister Liu.

These brushes were special, each one about the thickness of a little baby's arm. Simple looking, on the body of each brush there was a coiled dragon carved on it. The tip of the brush was lustrous and plump. It was

unknown what lifeforms the fur the tip of this brush was created from. After it had been dyed with dragon blood ink, it emitted a pale radiance. As if it were two stars that was radiating fluorescent light in the night, it caused someone to be dazzled and dazed.

Both hands of Mister Liu acted at the same time, unendingly drawing across the snowy white scroll.

It was as if a deity was drawing.

Ye Qingyu carefully looked, and what Mister Liu was drawing, was namely the terrain and topography of the Explosive snow glacier below.

Everywhere the air ship passed, everything below, that was seen in Mister Liu's eyes, was drawn onto the scroll.

The speed at which he used his brushes was extremely quick. Only with a slight glance, he was able to replicate everything below exactly on the snowy white scroll, with no discernible difference. With only a few strokes, he drew miles of land below the airship onto the scroll. The lines were smooth and flowing. It caused one to have the impression that everything on the scroll was alive, as if the terrain would jump out from the scroll, as if it was a projection that would appear in front of someone.

Consummate and exquisite drawing skill!

It was nearly like a 'way'.

Ye Qingyu finally slightly understood, why Mister Liu was entrusted with a dangerous mission that needed for him to personally deeply enter into enemy territory.

If they could really completely travel around the Explosive Snow glacier, then nothing could be hidden about the demon race. If this mission was successfully executed, then everything on the Explosive snow glacier would be as familiar to Youyan Pass as their own hands. In the future, if they needed to take military actions against the demon court, than the probability of success would be even higher.

At this time, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the importance of his mission was not low at all.

Time passed minute by second.

A hour later, the snowy white scroll on the green stone table had been completely painted full by the drawings.

The dragon blood treasure ink, had also been completely expended.

Mister Liu out a long exhalation of air. Hot air steamed around his body. Evidently such a long process of painting was a matter that exhausted his energy very much.

The armoured soldier beside him, rolled this snowy white scroll up, bringing it back to the cabin in the airship.

Another snowy white scroll, was replaced on the green stone table.

Xinger continue to grind ink with his head lowered. As if his entire spirit was immersed in grinding ink.

Mister Liu fixed his breathing, As his mental state recovered, both his hands again held a brush each. He began to paint yet again.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, fell on Mister Liu body. Observing his bearing as he painted, observing the decisiveness of which his brush moved, observing the naturalness of the brush when it stroked across the scroll, observing line after line of antelope curves appearing on the scroll, this mystery within a mystery feeling.....Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt that in his heart something had been moved. This type of mysterious feeling was as if he could comprehend something, but there was still the tiniest shred missing. He could not clearly say what this sensation was, it was like the claws of a cat scratching outside the boot, causing one to go mad.

The other side.

Liu Zongyuan's gaze landed on Ye Qingyu's body. After being somewhat dumb, he was shocked by what he saw.

He found that Ye Qingyu was like a old monk entering meditation. His entire aura became distanced, giving off a feeling that he was one with nature.

This type of aura, Liu Zongyuan had once seen in the commander class

warriors, like the general of Vanguard, Liu Siufeng and a few other top class experts.....

At this time, the expression of Ye Qingyu constantly changed, like an apostle listening to enlightenment, able to hear the essence. The transformation of expressions that occurred in a breath's time on his face, was a sign that he had completely immersed in the way.

“Mister Liu has the title of [Painting saint] in Youyan Pass. Even though he has no martial power, but his drawing techniques, is already near the degree where he can enter the way through painting alone. It is rumoured that whenever Mister Liu paints, the way will arise, that there is a type of returning to a natural state contained within his paintings. Even the War God of Youyan Pass, Lord Lu has sighed with amazement over this. It's a pity that normal people has no way of sensing this aura. Just who is Ye Qingyu, can it be that he able to comprehend the natural law contained within Mister Liu's paintings?”

Liu Zongyuan was extremely shocked.

Right now he had focused his entire attention on Mister Liu painting. He had gained some small benefits, but it was definitely not to such an exaggerated extent like Ye Qingyu.

“This young man is amazing. With time, perhaps he can become the backbone of Youyan Pass and stand at the very apex.”

As he thought of this, Liu Zongyuan brain moved. He suddenly had an idea, that he would try to get closer to Ye Qingyu in the coming days. At least they would be acquainted, and in the future if Ye Qingyu really grew up, then this would absolutely be beneficial to him without any drawbacks whatsoever.

Time flowed by.

“Phew.....”

Mister Liu let out a breath of murky air.

He finally stopped his brush.

The second snowy white scroll, had been finished.

A row of tight and clustered beads of sweat, dripped down from the forehead of Mister Liu.

His spirit was somewhat expended.

The armoured soldier carefully rolled up the scroll for it to be stored away.

The third snowy white scroll very quickly replaced it.

Mister Liu moved a little to stretch. As he was about to paint yet again, he saw Ye Qingyu standing next to him. His expression that looked like fury, looked like anger, like happiness, like sorrow, like craziness, like madness, an expression of having completely forgotten himself. He was completely immersed in a indescribable state. He could not help but hesitate seeing this. Apart from being flabbergasted, he could not help but think of another matter.

Tens of years ago, there had also been a person, that displayed such an expression when he painted, as if he was mad and drunk.....

That person at that time, was similarly young, similarly heroic, similarly glowing with vigour.

It was a pity that person became the greatest traitor in the history of the Empire.

A moment of blankness. It was as if time had turned back for Mister Liu and he had returned to that scene in the past.

Such an event and such a scene, was far too like what had happened in the past.

Boom!

A rumble from the earth suddenly emitted from under the airship.

Everyone on the airship was shocked.

Ye Qingyu also fiercely awakened from the state that he had entered.

“What has happened?”



He looked in confusion at the other people.

Liu Zongyuan quickly came to the edges of the airship, lowering his head to look beneath them.

“The snow dragon is turning.....Everyone be careful, below is a Snow dragon den!” As he looked under, Liu Zongyuan’s expression greatly changed. He gave the order, for the soldiers to be on high alert and prepare for battle.

Every soldier on the armoured plates began to act.

Ye Qingyu also came to the edge of the ship. surveying below him.◦

The ice plains below him, suddenly transformed into the undulation of the ocean. A vast quantity of snow and ice layers roiled. One could vaguely see, strands and strands of this leviathan beast thousands of metres long moving below. Slithering through the ice and snow, as if it was a divine dragon swimming through the ocean. Everywhere it passed, the ice layers broke into dust, ice peaks collapsed and the ground shattered like liquid.....

The body of the gigantic beast was snowy white, with vague dragon scales able to be seen. Seemingly extremely frightening from its outer appearance, it travelled through the ice.

“There really is a den of snow dragons below here? Snow dragons are one of the main races in the battle power of the [Southern incline legion]. This area should be a concealed military post of the demon race.” Mister Liu looked on for a while, a shred of a smile showing on his face: “Good, we finally have some profit. Bring the brush, I need to record this all down.”

# Chapter 151: Fate in the moonlit night

Mister Liu lifted his brush, and began painting yet again on the snowy white scroll with the terrain drawn on it.

After only a few strokes, the strange apparition of the 'snow dragon turning over' was replicated in a vivid and lifelike fashion on the map. The silver white coloured snow dragon was as if it was alive and about to pounce out from the painting. Ye Qingyu only gave it a brief glance, but he was able to sense the viciousness and terror of the snow dragon. The body that was thousands of metres long was like a apocalyptic destroyer.

There were many different kinds of beasts in the snow ground demon race. It was said that there were over thousands of known races.

There were specialist institutions which focused on researching the different types of beasts that belonged to the Snow Ground demon race. Through their efforts, they managed to divide the different types of the Snow ground demon race into groups and created books on this subjects. These books were distributed to the army, academies, families, cities and large sects, allowing the citizens of the human race to understand the battle power of the demon race. When it came to battle, they would be fully prepared in case anything happened. Ye Qingyu had once been immersed in the public library of White Deer academy, so naturally he had read books regarding this topic.

The Snow dragons belonged to the middle to upper tier of rankings within the Snow ground demon race.

It was rumoured that the snow dragons were descended from the giant ice dragon in the ancient age. It was a pity that as the God and Devil age ended, the change in yuan qi and the laws of the world, along with the desolate passing of time caused the blood line of the giant ice dragon to become thinner and thinner in the snow dragons. Their power also decreased as a result of this. After hundreds of years, the numbers of snow dragons became less and less. They often spent the majority of their lives underground in ice. As a result their vision deteriorated and they

were only able to rely on their touch to sense external objects. Even if they were large in numbers, they could only live underground, leading to the fall of their position among the snow ground demon race.

Today the snow dragon race, showed signs of being chased out from the heart of power in the Snow ground demon court.

But if it was a direct battle, the battle power of every fully grown snow dragon was incomparably terrifying. This type of monster could travel through ice and glaciers like a dragon swimming through the ocean. It's speed was incomparably quick, and they were known as the rulers of ice. The power of its flesh body was incomparably tough. Perhaps they would not prove much use in fighting against top class experts, but they were absolutely the nightmare of ordinary armies. An army of around a thousand people, if they did not have a Bitter sea expert overseeing them would definitely be completely annihilated if they met with a snow dragon.

Ye Qingyu stood on the armoured plates, surveying below.

Snow and fog churned, ice and rock collapsed.

The ice ground below was as if it was collapsing, as if a apocalyptic earthquake was occurring.

“There are very many demonic beasts like the snow dragon among the thousands of races in the Snow Ground demon race. Everything of the demon race is naturally born with powerful inherent strength. The large majority is not trained and obtained after birth, but is something that they possess inherent. As their ages grow, so too does their strength. This is a very terrifying strength. This is the reason that they have always able to successfully resist against the Snow country with experts after experts emerging.”

Ye Qingyu sighed with emotion in his heart.

The camouflaged formation airship, in a distance not a thousand metres from the ground, slowly sailed through the air.

Miser Liu stood on the armoured plates, unendingly drawing.

After an entire day, he had painted ten snowy white scrolls that completely recorded the terrain and topography hundreds of miles around onto the scrolls.

A day passed by very quickly.

When night descended, the formation airship again ascended higher. Like an invisible spirit, it once again returned to the cloud layers.

Mister Liu had expended far too much of his spirit and mental power. With the support of the student Xinger, he tiredly returned to the cabin. As he entered in the cabin, he turned around and gave Ye Qingyu a smile, giving him a greeting.

“Officer Ye, the rota tonight will be hard on you.”

Liu Zongyuan came over of his own initiative to say something to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat overwhelmed by the sudden display of attention.

This was the first time that the Warfare officer who was as silent as a rock had spoken to him of his own accord. All the previous night guard duties had been taken care of by the soldiers under his command. Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that this warfare officer had vague feelings of hostility and exclusion. But without knowing what happened, something made Liu Zongyuan lose all the inexplicable enmity he had previously.

“Fine, rest assured officer Liu.”

Ye Qingyu said seriously.

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head, turning and arranging the other defences of the airship.

After all, he was a military officer that walked step by step to the position he was today through killing and military contributions. After today's interaction, he wanted to get closer with Ye Qingyu but could not let down his face to say some awkward and embarrassing words. To speak like this of his own imitative to Ye Qingyu, was already a great allowance.

This type of method where he did not try too hard to get close to him was namely quite suited to Ye Qingyu's personality.

If Liu Zongyuan suddenly became incomparably passionate and warm, then perhaps Ye Qingyu would want to distance himself from him instead.

The formation airship entered into a silent state the entire night. It was hidden within the clouds, and there were not any movements that night.

Ye Qingyu always remained seated on the armoured plates of the ship, observing the movements all around him.

Occasionally he would also sense wave after wave of the will of the martial path fluctuations that came indistinctly far off.

Evidently, in a location far away, the top experts of the demon race and the human race had not yet ended their battle. It was still crazily carrying on.. There were even more experts that had entered into the fray. Ye Qingyu carefully sense for a while. With his strength, he could sense at least ten different aura of wills of martial path that were dispersed throughout heaven and earth. This represented that there were at least top ten class experts of both parties participating in this battle.

"From what it currently seems like, my previous guess was wrong. The two will of the martial path at the very beginning, was not Lu Zhaoge and that person. These two core people, has still not acted yet . This time the arrangement of the military of Snow country, the [Gale operation] is very detailed and meticulous. To get rid of that person, they would place the utmost importance on a surprise attack. Otherwise, once that person has recovered his wits, even if he is not their opponent, he can definitely escape. If it is Lu Zhaoge who has acted, he would absolutely not battle for such a long duration of time with that person!"

At this time, Ye Qingyu's heart already understood the situation.

He stood at the head of the airship, looking towards the south west. There were the indistinct lights of fire flickering in the night sky.

That direction, was the true battlefield at this time.

The long night passed.

The night in the mist and cloud covered air seemed especially peaceful.

Finally midnight had passed.

There were still not any signs of action from all directions.

It seemed like there would be nothing happening this night.

Ye Qingyu sat down in a meditative position. Staring and surveying the night, his thoughts could not help but drift.

Without knowing why, his thoughts once again returned to the strange sensation within his body when he saw Mister Liu painting during the day.

This strange sensation during the day, once again enveloped Ye Qingyu's entire body.

"This feeling....."

Ye Qingyu concentrated and stilled his thoughts, gradually entering into a peculiar state.

He subconsciously once again began to [Spirit raise].

He had decided for ice to be the attribute of his own inner yuan. At this moment in time, his body was located deep into the Explosive Snow glacier. The sky was cold and the ground was icy, the air around extremely cold. This was namely a great time and place for one to absorb the power of ice. Ye Qingyu once again according to the techniques to [Spirit raise], controlled his entire body by making it relax, allowing every pore to open, He began absorbing the power of ice around the air.

When Ye Qingyu's began absorbing the cold qi, even he himself was not aware, that the air currents above the metal plates of the airship, abruptly and fiercely changed.

"Just what has happened?"

A military officer noticed the sudden convergence of the air streams.

He alertly looked over. Under his observation, in the translucent shine

of the moonlit on the armoured plates, like a layer of white frost, there was white glow in the air visible to the naked eye. Like the soft ripples of the ocean wave curving and undulating, like the eye of a whirlpool, these air currents were completely sucked into the silhouette of Ye Qingyu who was sitting there cross-legged like a whale sucking in water.

At this instant, the military officer was completely dumbfounded.

The figure that sat there cross legged under the moonlight, was as peaceful as a statue.◦

But he was also like an immortal from legends that absorbed the essence from the sun and moon, heaven and earth. The silver coloured moonlight gathered around his entire body, the cold qi ripples coalescing around him, then completely entering into his body. It caused the military officer to have a sensation of shame of his own inferiority.

Someone lightly tapped the shoulder of this military officer.

The military officer was shocked, then turned his head to see that it was namely Liu Zongyuan that was standing behind him. It was unknown at what time he had arrived.

“Leader, superior Ye, he.....” The military officer was about to say something.

Liu Zongyuan shook his head, his gaze complicated. After remaining silent for half a while, only then did he say in a low voice. “Don’t disturb patrolling envoy Ye. He has trained to the crucial stage.....Pass the order on, for the brothers to vacate from this area. Also that people should suppress the noises they make, they are not allowed to speak loudly. I will personally handle the night duty.”

“As your orders say.” The military officer said in a small voice, then quickly turned and relayed the orders to the others.

Liu Zongyuan stood where he was. Seeing the figure of Ye Qingyu sat there in a meditative position., his heart could not help but sigh.

“So it has been obtained by him.....”

Some people, some matter, some fate, some opportunity, could not even be envied.

Such was destiny.

For this opportunity, just how long have the young generation of the various factions in Youyan Pass coveted.

But who would know, that ultimately it would be easily obtained by the 'outsider' Ye Qingyu that had not even arrived at Youyan Pass for a full month yet.

It was rumoured that the painting techniques of the [Painting saint] Mister Liu was near the 'way'. His paintings were accepted by Nature, Heaven and Earth. Therefore when he painted, he could stir the natural laws of heaven and earth, the divine evident in his actions.

After many years of painting, there was a spirit of the natural law that had accumulated on the body of this Painting saint. Because of the fact that he attuned himself to nature, copying the various landscapes of the world, through the accumulation of time he had developed this 'natural way'. This spirit of the natural law did not have much meaning for normal people, but for a martial artist, it was an absolutely fateful encounter. It was said that even the War God of Youyan Pass had personally said, that if there was a martial artist of the younger generation that was able to comprehend thorough observation when the [Painting saint] drew and capture the accumulated spirit of the natural law on the body of the [Painting saint], he would absolutely have a great breakthrough.

But after all these years, he had never heard that one person would comprehend the 'way' through looking at the [Painting saint] draw.

Of course, the reason for this was that there were people that had problems with their ability to comprehend. But another reason for this was that the opportunity for the younger generation to observe the [Painting saint] in action was not many.

Liu Zongyuan himself had bitterly cultivated for many years. His experience in battle was full and great and he had experienced tens of life



and death situation. He had thought that he had gained and accumulated enough for he himself to be successful. During the day when Mister Liu painted, he had concentrated and observed with all his power to understand the way, but without too great a harvest. At the end, he could not even be compared to this young person who had understood the 'way' in one session.

This Ye Qingyu was only someone of fifteen Spirit springs. To think that he was able to capture and understand the natural way when the [Painting saint] Mister Liu painted.

Such was the times, such was destiny!

Liu Zongyuan believed, that after this state where he comprehended the 'way', Ye Qingyu's inner yuan would definitely have a transformative breakthrough.

Time passed minute by second.

Liu Zongyuan did not dare tarry. He always remained ten metres away, protecting and guarding Ye Qingyu.

Although he himself was not able to grasp the opportunity to comprehend the way, but why would he not go for the second best option: to bind himself to Ye Qingyu. This young man was able to grasp this fateful chance on the body of the painting saint, he was absolutely not common. Liu Zongyuan could confirm his previous judgement more and more. These years he had killed and risked his life, establishing countless military achievements. But he was powerless because he came from a common background and not visibility. He saw the end to the path of his career. Without a great opportunity or the aid of a person of high rank, it was exceedingly difficult for him to advance another step.

He believed, that Ye Qingyu, was his noble person that would aid him.

This was a gamble.

Even if he lost, he would not lose anything.

Therefore like so, Liu Zongyuan remained guarding Ye Qingyu until the morning

As the first ray of sunlight shot through the cloud layers, it shined on Ye Qingyu's body. At that time, he finally opened his eyes.

# Chapter 152: Return journey

Ye Qingyu welcomed the morning sun, unhurriedly getting up.

At that instant, Liu Zongyuan utterly concentrated as he stared at Ye Qingyu. On Liu Zongyuan's face, there was a questioning expression. Ye Qingyu's energy fluctuation did not show any signs of increasing explosively, and there was not any special aura around his body. There seemed to be no change whatsoever after the essence of the moon and the cold qi vortex had entered into his body.....

Could it be that his guess was wrong?

Ye Qingyu did not obtain the natural way from the [Painting saint] Mister Liu?

Liu Zongyuan felt greatly surprised.

At that time, he saw Ye Qingyu slowly extending his palm flatly outwards.

A pale silver white mist like a burning scorching flame, as if it was a spirit that was filled with vitality, slowly rose from his palm.

Liu Zongyuan eyes jumped.

This was.....

Ice attribute yuan qi?

Even this warfare officer who had a wealth of experience, was tongue tied by this scene.

At that same time, a pressuring cold will spread out with Ye Qingyu at the centre.

Ka-cha. Ka-cha.

There was the sounds of something brittle cracking.

As expected, the next instant, the white mist that was like a flame above Ye Qingyu's palm, suddenly consolidated. It transformed into solid silver ice, translucent and pure, as if it was ice sculpture, or as if it was a

flame that had been frozen. Under the shine of the sun, it flickered with a strange radiance.

Ye Qingyu looked down to see the ice in his hand. A smile appeared on his face.

As his heart willed, this cold ice quickly dispersed, becoming white mist yet again. It constantly transformed through different states, sometimes solid, sometimes gas, changing as he willed.

A seeping cold spread out towards all direction, but Ye Qingyu himself could not sense the slightest hint of cold. He could only feel that his inner yuan was flowing at an incomparably smooth rate, his entire person feeling a comfortableness he had never experienced before.

The [Spirit raise] was successful!

Apart from being excited, Ye Qingyu was also somewhat confused.

He had never thought that through his unconscious attempts, he would succeed. Originally he only wanted to adjust to the sensation of the cold entering his body, and successfully create a foundation for him to [Spirit raise] at the twenty spirit springs stage. But who would have guessed, he would accidentally complete the [Spirit raise] prior to this.

His luck was far too good.

Was it not said, that before twenty Spirit springs, one could not [Spirit raise]?

Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of himself yesterday night. Before entering that state, his body unconsciously entered into the peculiar state he had when he observed Miser Liu painting.....could it be that the reason he was able to pre-emptively finish the [Spirit raise] had something to do with this state? If such was so, could it be that this Mister Liu had accidentally aided him?

Behind his back.

The shock in Liu Zongyuan's heart, was hard to describe using words.

Fourteen years old!

Fifteen spirit springs!

At such a age, with such a cultivation state, that he would so easily succeed in the [Spirit raise]!

Even the [War God of Youyan Pass] Youyan Pass, when he was fourteen years old, most likely could not complete the [Spirit raise] prior to twenty Spirit springs?

Liu Zongyuan originally thought, that the natural way obtained from the [Painting saint] Mister Liu could refine Ye Qingyu's mental state, allowing his spirit to be full and with no imperfections. It was something that would have long term great benefits for his cultivation. But he had not imagined that the effects were far more incredible than what he had originally estimated. Very many famous experts only began to Spirit raise when they were of the twenty Spirit spring stage. If they were unlucky, they even need tens year of time to succeed in the [Spirit raise] and to step past this door of the martial path. These people when compared to Ye Qingyu, would most likely die of embarrassment.

As he was thinking, a light sound came. The door of the cabin was opened.

The Mister Liu who had rested for a whole night had recovered his vitality. He walked out from within the cabin.

"The weather is not bad. I have an idea, why don't we continue heading North. How about it?" Mister Liu greeted Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan with a smile.

Liu Zongyuan heard this, his eyebrows forming a frown. "Mister, if we keep heading North, then this is somewhat a lone army penetrating too deep into enemy territory. We will have nearly gone outside the radius of the Explosive snow glacier, and truly entered into the territory of the Snow ground demon court in the North. It will be even more dangerous Mister your status is valuable, if there is any danger....."

Miser Liu shook his head. "There is no need to fear. I received news from the army last night. The front lines, is about to succeed. The [Southern incline legion] at the Explosive Snow glacier, is already

completely in a mess. At this time, it is namely a good opportunity to fish in trouble waters\*. The opportunity is transient, we cannot miss it. For the Empire, so what if I place myself in danger.”

As he said this, he looked at Liu Zongyuan, then looked at Ye Qingyu: “What do you say?”

“The front lines is about to succeed. Does that mean, that person has already fallen into the trap?” Liu Zongyuan’s mental state was shaken, turning his head to look at the soldiers behind him. Biting his teeth, he said in determination “When I departed, the military order I received was to follow blindly behind Mister Liu. Since Mister wants to continue on deep into the territory, then me and the soldiers, will absolutely pledge our lives and follow. Even if our body is torn and our bones are crushed, we will protect the safety of Mister.”

At this moment, on the officer who had experienced hundreds of battles, there was a lofty majestic quality emerging that was similarly seen on the army of the empire that pressed forward courageously.

At this moment it was as if Ye Qingyu could again see the sentries that were sleeping under the ice and snow of the hundred broken mountains.

Different roles, different positions, but similarly heroic.

This was the army of the Empire.

At that instant, emotions surged in Ye Qingyu’s chest. His blood was hot, as if a flame was burning within his chest. Nodding his head: “Since it is so, then I am also willing to follow along Mister Liu and Officer Liu and take this risk.”

Mister Liu began laughing loudly.

Liu Zongyuan glanced at Ye Qingyu once, then nodded his head slightly.

He originally wanted to find an excuse for Ye Qingyu to return in advance. He was able to realise, that Ye Qingyu would perhaps be very important for the future of Youyan Pass. But since Ye Qingyu had fervently opened his mouth, it would be embarrassing and awkward for him to say anything.

“I hope that this time, we do not encounter any danger.”

No matter whether it was Mister Liu or Ye Qingyu, they were exceedingly important people in the heart of Liu Zongyuan. If there was any loss, he would not know how to explain himself.

.....

A day of time passed by.

The formation airship carefully soared through the air in the demon territory. Thankfully they did not encounter any danger.

Mister Liu continued on drawing another four or five scrolls. He completely recorded down the terrain and topography of the areas the formation airship passed. They discovered a very concealed stronghold of the military of the demon race, as well as the military bases of the major races that fought for the demon race. The harvest was very great. If these scrolls were handed back into Youyan Pass, then the understanding of the [Army of Youyan] towards the Explosive snow glacier as well as the Northern plains of the North demon race would enter into a new era of history.

Everyone on the formation air ship began to be excited.

With the success of this mission, this absolutely could be counted as a great contribution towards the war effort. Everyone that returned would definitely be heavily rewarded and this would become one of the qualifications for their future promotion to an higher position.

In the blink of an eye, another day passed.

The formation airship had already passed by the Explosive Snow glacier, arriving at the Origin ice region.

Mister Liu had also became far more cautious, ordering for the formation airship to sail even higher. If there was any hint of any trouble, he would immediately order for silence and for them to hide. He was not as daring as he was before. There were several times they encountered the flying demon races, but thankfully they detected them early and could avoid them pre-emptively. They did not encounter with any trouble.

At this time, the formation airship, was completely akin to walking on a steel wire. It was extremely dangerous and risky. dangerous as walking on a steel wire.

Such a lone group venturing deep alone, once they were discovered, would instantly be surrounded by vast quantities of demon race army. At that time, it would be a apocalyptic disaster.

That night.

“Tomorrow morning, we will turn around and go back.” Mister Liu made his decision.

In Liu Zongyuan’s heart, a stone was lifted.

If they did not continue to go on deeply, then they should not encounter any danger.

The speed of the formation airship was extremely quick. If they used their full power for flight, and did not delay anymore to draw maps, they only needed approximately a day of time to once again enter the area that the [Army of Youyan Pass] controlled. At that time, they would be safe.

That night it was completely silent.

There were nothing that happened that was out of expectations.

The next day, the formation airship turned around and returned.

The airship directly rose to high, high up in the air. if it was like this, they could evade the majority of the flying battle divisions of the demon race and they would also not disturb the demon race on the ground. They could use their fastest speed to fly.

Half a day passed.

It was exceedingly safe throughout the journey.

When the sun was in the noon position, the formation airship had already passed halfway through the Explosive Snow glacier heading south.

On the armoured plates, the soldiers had already relaxed from their



serious and careful manner.

On the face of Liu Zongyuan, there was the beginnings of a smile.

The vast majority of time, Ye Qingyu stood at the head of the ship, practicing controlling his cold qi yuan qi.

That night he had mysteriously broken through and managed to succeed in the [Spirit raise] in advance. Within his inner yuan, there were a great quantity of ice and snow qi. When this left his body through the activation of his inner yuan, it could instantly transform into ice that froze his opponent —although this was normal ice, with no way to freeze high class opponents, but its power was already not low.

Big Head had also completely awakened.

The majority of time, he lay on Ye Qingyu's shoulder, lazily basking in the sun.

After this time of 'hibernation', there seemed to be some sort of transformation that had occurred on the body of this glutton. It did not eat anymore; even if the tastiest food was placed in front of him, this fellow would not even give it a glance. Ye Qingyu maliciously conjectured, that it was possible that this fellow had eaten far too much, so he was having indigestion.

"Half a day more, then we will have returned."

Ye Qingyu also became much more relaxed.

He was about to rest for a while, when at that time, an unexpected change happened— The originally lazy Big Head that was lying on Ye Qingyu's shoulders suddenly reacted. His ears suddenly perked up, fiercely lifting his head and looking towards somewhere far off.

"What is it?" Ye Qingyu sensed this abnormal changed.

Ceng!

Big Head suddenly stood up, staring fixedly at somewhere far off. All the white hair on his body suddenly stood up.

This time, Ye Qingyu could sense that something was not right.

He followed Big Head's gaze and looked at the distance.

But in front of them was a white cloud sea, without any abnormalities whatsoever.

"Wuwu.....wuwu....." There was a low growl emitting from Big Head's throat. His large eyes were filled with caution and hostility. He stared fixedly in front of him, the muscles on his body hardening.

In Ye Qingyu's heart, there was a sense of misfortune rising.

Big Head had never been in such a state before. Before, even when they were attacked by the dragon ape, such an expression had not appeared. Even when they were chased by the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], he would have a lazy and uncaring expression.....

Ye Qingyu stood up, looking in front of the formation airship.

The sea of cloud billowed, the waves as if it was angry.

Under the sun, above the cloud layer, everything was peaceful.

But in such a peaceful of atmosphere, the white mass of clouds erected in front of the were like a huge mountain range that rose steeply from the ground, blocking the path of the formation airship. Such a mountain range peak like clouds, had already appeared many times before on their route. These were just mist and cloud, they could just pass through without affecting the formation airship in the slightest. The formation airship had even utilised such masses of clouds previously to evade the patrols of the demon race.

Everything seemed normal on the formation airship. They approached the huge mass of cloud at high speed.

Ye Qingyu's heart began drumming madly.

His countenance quickly changed: "Stop, quickly stop!"

\*profit from chaos

# Chapter 153: Snow ground boar bat

“What is it?”

Liu Zongyuan came over with an anxious expression.

Ye Qingyu pointed towards the gigantic mass of clouds. “I feel something is not right at that place.”

Liu Zongyuan followed along to where Ye Qingyu was pointed. His originally anxious expression, evidently relaxed somewhat. “Oh, you’re referring to that. Don’t worry, I’ve already extended my senses inside, there’s nothing there.....ahah, on the way, we have already traversed many masses of such clouds. Officer Ye, perhaps you’re mental state is too nervous right now. Relax a little. Only half a day more, and we can return to the territory of Youyan pass.....”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

Right now, it was not only simply because of Big Head’s actions that made him suspicious. He truly and utterly felt unrest born in his heart.

The closer they neared the mass of clouds, the more unrest he felt.

“That’s not right. Officer Liu, I can sense, there is something hidden within the clouds. Officer Liu, order for the airship to quickly halt and for us to reverse at any moment. We must not enter into that mass of clouds.” Ye Qingyu’s voice became more and more determined.

Liu Zongyuan looked at Ye Qingyu’s expression, then carefully thought it over. He issued the order, for the formation airship to temporarily stop.

At that time, the distance they were away from the gigantic mass of clouds, was only a hundred metres.

“People, prepare the shooting star armour arrows. Let us probe the clouds.” Liu Zongyuan ordered the soldiers to arch their bows, and shoot towards the mass of clouds.

On the formation airship, there were formation metal yuan qi cannons prepared. The power was extremely great, but after shooting, there would

evident yuan qi fluctuations spreading throughout the air. It was very easy for it to attract the attention of the demon race. Therefore unless it was at a crucial moment, they would not utilise it. At this moment, using bows were better.

These soldiers were martial artists of the Spirit spring stage and there bows were the shooting star armour arrows. The power was extremely great.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

The bowstrings trembled, and the shooting stars armour arrows were like a torrential rainstorm, shooting into the mass of clouds.

But the clouds were silent, without any reaction. There was not even the slightest turbulent air current caused.

“Shoot again!”

Liu Zongyuan issued another order.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

It was another wave of arrow rain.

The shooting star armour arrow once again entered into the clouds in a tight and clustered fashion.

The clouds still did not have any movements or fluctuations whatsoever.

Liu Zongyuan ordered for the arrows to be shot once again.

The result was the same.

After three waves of shooting, Liu Zongyuan looked towards Ye Qingyu and smiled faintly: “It seems there is not any problems. Officer Ye is far too anxious.....” In truth, the cost to create the shooting star armour arrows were high and only shooting one round was enough to test out potential dangers. The reason Liu Zongyuan ordered the soldiers to shoot three waves of arrows was because his personality was cautious and careful. However, another reason was that he wished to give some face to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

His heart willed, and under the activation of his yuan qi, a silver mist rapidly appeared in the centre of his palm.

This white ice mist was as if it had a life of its own. In Ye Qingyu's hands, it constantly grew longer, finally solidifying into the shape of a long spear. When the mist dispersed, a ice spear appeared in reality in Ye Qingyu's palm. With an ancient design, the body of the spear was about a pebbles thickness. It was a diluted pale green blue colour, and under the sunlight, it flickered with a translucent jade like radiance.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand.

The long spear sailed outwards.

[Banner of Heaven and Earth of the four moves of the golden armoured king].

The ice spear instantly disappeared, then descended from the heavens, nailing down onto the mass of clouds.

“Ao.....”

A desperate howl emitted from the mass of clouds.

Demonic qi roiled.

The colour of Liu Zongyuan's face greatly changed.

The soldiers on the armoured plates, also sensed that something was not right.

Without needing for Liu Zongyuan's orders, their blades and swords were unsheathed. Everyone activated their body, moving and positioning themselves in defensive formation.

The next moment, a rich and dense demonic qi hurricane exploded from within the cloud layer. Like a huge gale, it blew and dispersed apart the huge white clouds.

They could see behind the clouds, there was a large swathe of black flying demonic beasts that completely covered the sky. Their outer

appearance were like bats, with wild boar like heads and fangs. Their bodies were pale silver, and their wings were like old leather, bringing with it sharp bone hooks. There had a pair of forelimbs and hind legs, and their pitch black claws were sharp like blades.....

Such a crowd of demonic beats, had beat their wings without sound, hiding within the mass of clouds.

Within this colony, was a boar bat that was five or six metres tall. On it's back, there was a ice spear that was stabbed into his body. There were black demonic blood dripping from the injury. At this moment it was crazily struggling, a tragic howl emitting from its mouth.

“It's the [Snow ground Boar bats]!

There were soldiers that loudly shouted.

[Snow ground Boar bat] was one of the branches of the snow ground demon race battalions. They were similar to Snow dragon in that their vision had also deteriorated seriously, not able to see objects. But they had the strange power to use sound waves to confirm the position of their foes. At the same time, they specialised in concealment; when they were in a silent state, they could completely conceal the demon qi from their entire body, with nothing leaking out. No wonder someone like Liu Zongyuan could not sense the existence of this crowd of Boar bats.

This type of demon race would normally travel in a group.

They had a sharp like blade bone hook wings. and also talons that could slice apart steel armour. The sounds that emitted from their mouth could hurt someone without shape or form. In the air, they were a demon race that were hard to deal with.

Normally, the [Snow ground boar bat] held the role of a scout in the army of the demon race.

The instant they saw the [Snow ground boar bat], Liu Zongyuan's facial colour changed.

“Prepare to meet the enemy.” Liu Zongyuan unsheathed the long blade at his waist. He shouted: “Increase the speed of the airship, rush past it.”

This experienced officer, in the first instant, made the most correct decision.

Once the air ship was discovered, once they were exposed, then they were in absolute danger.

At this time, they could not fight a dragged out battle. They needed to rush out from the Explosive snow glacier. Once they arrived at the area controlled by the army [Youyan Pass army], then they were safe.

On the armour plates, there were the creaking sounds of the bows. All forty of the shooting star armour bows was drawn to a full crescent state in an instant.

And the twenty metal yuan qi cannons on the edges of the airship, also began storing energy. The scarlet red formation lines on the cannons were filled with energy, emitting a blood red colour. Under the cannon uniformed soldiers' control, the mouth of the twenty cannons rotated and aimed towards the [Snow ground boar bat] battalion a hundred metres away.

At the same time.

The body of the formation airship began lightly shuddering.

The heart of the airship began vibrating and humming with a peculiar noise. At the same time, the carved formation array on the body of the airship was activated, rapidly flickering with light. The heart of the formation activation noise, was like the loud roar emitted from a slumbering gigantic beast.

Xiu!

The formation airship shuddered, tearing apart through the air. Like an arrow released from a bow, it headed straight towards the [Snow ground board bats] to rush past them.

“Release!”

The loud shout of Liu Zongyuan seemed to occur at the same exact instant.

Then there were the shooting star armour arrows that covered the sky being released.

The formation metal yuan qi cannons glinted with a scarlet red light pillar, bringing with it a destructive aura. Then like a meteor shooting through the sky, it instantly exploded into the crowd of the [Snow ground boar bats].

Boom!

Blood shot everywhere, white bones were crushed.

The battle began in an instant.

The formation airship had the protection of the formation forcefield. For a short period of time, the [Snow ground boar bats] had no way of attacking them.

By travelling at such a rapid speed, there were tens of [Snow ground boar bats] unable to evade in time. They were crushed into meat paste by the formation airship.

Ping!Ping!Ping!

There were constantly [Snow ground boar bats] that charged over, striking on the external energy field. They rebounded off it, blood dripping and their bodies broken.

Such a type of demonic beast did not fear death. Under their mad charge, the protection field of the formation airship rapidly became thinner and thinner.

This division of [ Snow ground boar bat] had already lost twenty to thirty percent of its number through the charge of the formation airship. Originally they had hid within the clouds, they wanted to kill the human race airship before they could react. They had never thought they would be discovered prematurely, and then was struck so quickly that they could not react by the human race formation airship. In an instant, the air was covered with bloody wind and rain. All those that had died as of this moment, were the [Snow ground boar bats].



“Charge, charge past!”

Liu Zongyuan lifted his curved blade, roaring loudly to keep up morale.

His body was as straight as a spear, his muscular body towering like a mountain. Facing the [Snow ground boar bats], he did not even retreat a step. His manner was enough to give someone confidence and make them rely on him. This type of sensation was hard to describe using words alone. Standing alone at the head of the ship, the silver cape fluttering madly, it was as if he was a deity of war.

At this moment, the warfare officer of the Vanguard camp, the star of the army, finally displayed his true colours.

If it was the normally silent Liu Zongyuan, then it seemed liked he was an unnoticeable boulder. The Liu Zongyuan at this moment, was like a diamond that had lost the moss on its surface. In an instant, he exploded with a fascinating lustre, giving a shine that made someone not dare to regard directly.

Under his command, the soldiers methodically returned fire, charging, shooting down the boar bats.

Twenty breaths later, the formation protection field of the airship had finally broken.

The mad boar bats, like flies that could enter through every hole, landed on the metal plates

These demonic beasts had a large body. The smallest had a wingspan of two or three metres. The moment they landed on the armoured plates and as they flapped their bone hook wings, the formation airship shuddered. On the armoured plates there were hole after hole that appeared. In an instant, there were seven or eight boar bats that landed on the armoured plates, madly destroying and causing chaos.

“Throw these beasts off!”

With a long blade in Liu Zongyuan;’s hand, he commanded from the head of the ship.

As the commander, he must listen and observe everything. Unless it was at an crucial time, he could not participate in the battle.

From within the crowd of boar bats madly charging, there were two figures that exceeded eight metres. Their whole bodies was a violet black colour. They were a class of demon warrior, the boar bat king. Liu Zongyuan must preserve his strength; once the boar bat kings descended on the ship, he must personally fight against them.

At this time, Ye Qingyu knew, that his time to act had come.

His heart willed.

Another ice spear coalesced in his hands.

Ever since successfully [Spirit raising], in these days, he had constantly practiced. The control and handling of his ice inner yuan had already reached a state where he was extremely familiar with it. Forming ice into weapon, making his ice inner yuan become his weapon was not a difficult task for him anymore.

Xiu!

The ice spear once again descended.

The Banner of Heaven and Earth of the golden armoured king was once again used.

# Chapter 154: White Horse battle armour

The instant the sound waves sounded

--

Ding!

The ice spear had already nailed a live boar bat onto the metal plates.

At the same time, not giving time for the other boar bats to resist, another ice spear successfully solidified in Ye Qingyu's hands.

He shouted loudly, the long spear stabbing out continuously.

The fierce dragon pierce of the four moves of the golden armoured king.

There was the faint pulse of dragon roars and a strange pressure was released. The originally madly violent boar bats, unexpectedly screeched, their voice crammed with fear.

The formidable power of the chain techniques broke out.

Ye Qingyu transformed into a bolt of lighting, his figure like an avalanche. He headed towards the four or five [Snow ground boar bats] on the metal plate, charging at them.

Boom!

Ye Qingyu using his own flesh and blood body, directly struck a four metre tall boar bat head on.

The demon race typically had strong and tough close combat attributes, and the boar bats were not an exception. Their wings were made from skeleton and skin, comparable to steel, and their body was also like cast iron. They enjoying a toughness that was blessed by heavens.

If an expert of the same level did not have a sharp weapon, it was very difficult for them to break past the natural defences of the boar bats. But the skeleton of this huge boar bat, after being struck by Ye Qingyu's body was like porcelain meeting a metal hammer. Instantly bones cracked and shattered, and the skeleton on its wings had nearly completely broken apart!

“Aoo.....”

This boar bat let out a tragic howl.

The massive figure was struck sailing backwards, like a thrown steel ball. It madly and fiercely struck two of its comrades.

The scene was far too violent. Fresh blood flew everywhere, and accompanying the tragic howls, three boar bats were sent flying on the armour plates. Their massive and broken bodies flew through the air and rapidly descended down to the ground below.

Because their wings had been crushed and broken, they had no way of flying anymore. They were only able to fall to their deaths.

The power of that one strike, was as fierce as a lion.

The soldiers that were originally fighting with others boar bats, was dumbfounded as they witnessed this scene.

Just what was this type of power?

The body of patrolling envoy Ye, could it be cast from iron?

To unexpectedly use his body to slam directly at the demonic beasts. For other human experts, such a method of doing battle had no difference from committing suicide. It was common knowledge that the body of demons were much more tough and hardy than humans.....but despite this, patrolling envoy Ye was able to win, and that boar bat, his body was crushed and his bones were shattered like porcelain!

Berserk !

Tyrannical!

Barbaric !

Direct !

This was a violent battle method that completely shook someone's nerves.

Every soldier, felt the fire in their hearts being lit by this strike.

“Good!”

“Superior is powerful!”

“Superior Ye is too amazing!”

There were several soldiers that immediately began shouting in triumph. Their gazes were filled with acceptance and respect when they looked at Ye Qingyu.

On the battlefield, only true power, bravery, and accomplishments could obtain the true admiration of others.

Previously, Ye Qingyu had remained silent for the majority of the time on the airship. He had taken no action at all. The impressions of the soldiers regarding Ye Qingyu was that he was only ‘a youth that accomplished the position of patrolling sword envoy’ this tag. It was only because of his military position that they showed respect on the surface for him. But at this moment, everyone instantly understood, the true power of patrolling envoy Ye.

This time by acting out, Ye Qingyu had given a great morale boost.

“Brothers, let act and fight together!”

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously. Reaching through the air, he summoned the [Little Shang sword]. Like a mighty lion or a fierce tiger, his aura exploded. Taking large strides towards the fourth [Snow ground boar bat], the blade of the sword flickered with a golden light. [Soul stealing strike] of the four moves of the unmatched general, was about to erupt after accumulating energy.

“We are willing to fight shoulder to shoulder with patrolling envoy Ye!”

“Kill them!”

The soldiers also became excited, roaring in rage as they did battle, the morale having risen greatly.

“Ao!”

The fourth [Snow ground boar bat’s] body was even larger the others. It was nearly the size of a boar bat king. Screeching loudly, it struck a soldier flying, and turned his head, charging towards Ye Qingyu.

The demon race also had intelligence. For a demon race like the [Snow ground boar bat], by seeing with their own eyes three of their comrades being killed, they instantly knew that this human was not someone they should provoke. But this boar bat still maintained the stance that its demonic power was stronger than his human. It deciding to fight directly against and finish off this somewhat troublesome human.

Ye Qingyu welcomed him, without the slightest of fear.

“Soul Stealing Heaven strike!”

The killing technique instantly emitted.

Everyone only felt their visions blurring. Then Ye Qingyu’s sword move was already upon the wing of the [Snow ground boar bat].

A slicing sound.

A large half of the skeleton wing was cut apart.

On the wound there was a layer of frost that appeared. It sealed off the sword wound. Before the demonic blood could spurt out, it was instantly frozen.

“Storm of swords!”

After his initial strike proved effective, Ye Qingyu did not hesitate in the slightest. The four moves of the unmatched general once again exploded.

The storm of swords that spread out through the skies swept everywhere.

Within this storm of swords, there were also frost and snow qi contained within. Ye Qingyu’s attribute of cold inner yuan also displayed a frightening killing power at this instant. The [Snow ground boar bats] reactions and movements had evidently been affected by the cold and snow, their movements off by half a beat. In this instant, it was unknown just how many times they had been struck, one after another of white frost wounds constantly appearing.....

The figures intersected.

Ye Qingyu appeared behind the boar bat, stowing his sword and

standing.

The huge boar bat, had already stopped struggling at this moment. The tight and clustered sword wounds had been completely frozen by ice all around his body. Everywhere on his body, there was a thin ice layer, looking incomparable tragic.....It could even be said, that his massive body was frozen in ice.

Ye Qingyu turned around, kicking out.

Boom!

This huge boar bat was directly sent flying away from the armoured plates.

Another one had been taken care of.

On the metal plates, there were only the last two boar bats left.

Even if its nature was fierce and tough, but after seeing its comrades consecutively slaughtered like chopping up vegetables, these two boar bats also sensed that things was not going well. They did not dare stay on the metal plates anymore. Flapping its wings, they escaped towards the air.

“You want to escape?”

Ye Qingyu loudly roared. Activating the [White Horse battle armour], the pegasus wings behind his back spread out.

His figure moved, turning into a ray of light that chased after and killed the two [Snow ground boar bats] in the air.

“Patrolling envoy Ye, quickly return.” Liu Zongyuan shouted loudly.

Ye Qingyu observed the flying speed of the [Snow ground boar bat]. He had already thought things through in his heart. The pegasus wings were extremely nimble and comfortable, his entire body floating through the air. Replying: “Officer Liu, bring the ship and leave first. I’ll stay here to block them for a moment. As long as we extend the distance, we will be safe. At this time, we must not fight a drawn out battle.”

“No, this is far too dangerous.” Liu Zongyuan said in a panic.

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly. “Don’t worry, I have my plans.””

As he said this, he turned around and flew to meet the flock of [Snow ground boar bats].

Liu Zongyuan was in a panic. He ordered the soldiers under his command to activate the full power of the formation airship and charge forward. Like a bolt of lightning that swept across space, he himself flew through the air. Behind his back a pair of black wings extended, seeming to be the same as the [White Horse battle armour]. It was also a cast metal item formation, extremely nimble and agile. In an instant he came beside Ye Qingyu saying: “I’ll delay them along with you. But we must not fight an extended battle. Once we are entangled for long with these beasts, then we will be in danger.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

As they spoke, Liu Zongyuan had took out the blade sheath at his waist, inserting it onto the hilt of his blade.

A curved blade, instantly turned into a long executioners blade.

“Kill!”

He struck through air using his blade.

A huge blade with pale golden sword light struck out.

In the air, there was instantly a sharp killing qi.

The three or four [Snow ground boar bats] at the very front was instantly crushed into pieces, black coloured blood flying everywhere.

“So Liu Zongyuan [Spirit raise] belongs to the metal attribute. Of the five element, metal is the one with the strongest killing aura, and also the attribute with the greatest offensive power. Those who cultivated in metal inner yuan, specialises in killing strikes and baleful aura. Liu Zongyuan came from the army, and he is similar to the large majority of soldiers. He likes the attribute with the greatest offensive power.....”

Ye Qingyu evaluated in his heart.

He controlled the [White Horse armour], his entire body fluctuating



with white light. As the White Horse wings shuddered, his entire person transformed into a ray of light, shooting through the large pack of [Snow ground boar bats]. The Little Shang sword exploded with sharp slice after sharp slice, constantly killing.

With the [White Horse battle armour], the amount of inner yuan expended flying through the air was so little that it did not even have to be considered. Ye Qingyu's will to battle shot through the roof. He had an unprecedented carefree and unrestrained feeling.

This type of refinement and training through battle, not only had a great beneficial effect Ye Qingyu's true battle power, but even for the control of the [White Horse armour]. He became more and more familiar with it. The flow of inner yuan in the formation of the battle armour became faster and faster, smoother and smoother. The brightness emitted from the armour also became hotter, as if Ye Qingyu was a great battle god of the sun.

"A extremely powerful battle armour. These white horse wings, not only can it be used to fly, it can also be used as a weapon, to slice apart the enemy."

Ye Qingyu continued to fly like lightning, his wings like blades. He cut the two [Snow ground boar bats] beside him into four pieces.

"Eh? The helmet of the armour, seems like it have some sort of secret." Ye Qingyu discovered by accident, that within the white helmet, there was another hidden formation.

After inserting his inner yuan into the helmet, the originally white helmet became to shake, and a pale silver like liquid began seeping out. It covered Ye Qingyu's face, but completely did not block his vision or his senses of the external world. It could even strengthen Ye Qingyu's vision, raising his reaction speed and sensitivity. This was an extremely peculiar sensation. Ye Qingyu discovered, that after the change in the helmet occurred, he could 'see' even more clearly.

Was this the true secret of the [White horse armour]?

Ye Qingyu was both shocked and overjoyed.

No wonder this armour was the historical armour of all the masters of [White Horse tower].

After he discovered the secret of the White Horse helmet, Ye Qingyu became more and more like a fish in water.

On the other side, Liu Zongyuan's strike was extremely vicious. Every blade that he struck with, there would be [Snow ground boar bats] shattering.

Liu Zongyuan blade techniques, had extremely heavy killing aura and an unrelenting baleful momentum.

After battling for eight minutes, they had at least killed two hundred or more of [Snow ground boar bats]. Even the boar bat king within this group was heavily injured by Liu Zongyuan. The momentum of this flying demon race battalion was very seriously injured. They were not as mad as it was previously. There were signs of chaos, and they showed signs of fleeing.....

"Let's go!"

Liu Zongyuan turned around, heading and chasing towards the direction in which the formation airship disappeared.

Ye Qingyu followed behind him.

For two people to completely kill off this battalion of [Snow ground boar bats] was something that could not be done. They only needed to delay them for a bit, to give a bit of time to the formation airship for it to quickly depart.

After a short while.

The two once again returned to the formation airship.

Tallying the numbers. four soldiers of the vanguard had died in battle and twenty had been injured after the battle. The losses of an acceptable range.

# Chapter 155: Demon race battleship

After temporarily breaking away from the entanglement of the [Snow ground boar bats], the formation airship used the quickest speed to flee through the skies like an arrow leaving the bow.

The countenance of everyone on the metal plates were extremely grave.

Everyone was clear in their hearts, that once they were discovered by the demon race, this represented the descent of a huge disaster.

A battalion of [Snow ground boar bats] was not frightening. If they faced them directly, within just approximately two hours, they could completely annihilate them. But after the route of formation airship was exposed, what faced them was the mad hunt and encirclement of the demon race. There would be other battalions of demon races coming to kill them at any time. The numbers were so many that they could not kill them all, and they had no where at all to hide. Even if there was a Bitter Sea stage expert here to oversee things, they would be completely exhausted down to their death by the countless demon races.

Right now, the only way out, was before the experts and the other flying battalions of the demon race could react, leave the controlled territory of the snow ground demon court using the quickest speed.

The speed of the formation airship was extremely rapid.

But in the heart of Liu Zongyuan and Ye Qingyu, they were not calm at all.

The demon race was born and raised in such a harsh environment. They had a hunting and tracking power that humans could hardly imagine.

Right now they could only hope that the [Snow ground boar bats] would not be able to pass on the knowledge of their existence at the first instance. They could only hope this would be so since the demon race on the Explosive Snow glacier had completely fallen into chaos.

“Use full power to run the airship. Prepare to use the Origin crystal and the second flying formation.....”

Liu Zongyuan settled down, and order after order was passed down from his mouth.

At this time, the existence of an experienced commander demonstrated its importance.

The speed of the airship increased by a considerable amount.

Accompanied by the sharp whistle of air breaking apart, the formation airship broke a huge rough fissure through the roiling sea of clouds like a streak of lightning. It was as if the skies had been sliced apart.

At this time, they could not care about such an unrestrained mad increase in speed and whether this would or would not alert the demon race.

Whether they had a chance to live, all depended on the fraction of a second.

If they were able to rush out of the Explosive Snow glacier, and leave the demon race territory before the [Snow ground boat bats] battalion could convey the information of their presence to the higher ups of the demon race, then everyone on the ship could live on. If not, their chances of living on was thin.

Fast!

Faster!

Even Faster!

The faster they were, the greater their chance of living.

On the airship cabin, the formation master was already sweating. He used all his strength, to control the centre of the flying formation.

On the metal plates, the soldiers were graves. They stood still and quiet in formation, blades and spears unsheathed, prepared to meet battle at any moment.

The [Painting saint] and the student Xinger, stood at the cabin door. Their expressions were also abnormally grave.

Big Head lay on Ye Qingyu's shoulders, his nose occasionally sniffing at the White Horse helmet. He seemed to be extremely interested in the white horse helmet, and would occasionally extend his pink tongue and give it a little lick, leaving saliva on it. Ye Qingyu could only grab the neck of this glutton, and forcefully stuff him back into his chest.....

Ye Qingyu carefully observed the reaction of this silly dog.

Through his previous experience, this glutton should possess an extremely strong sensing ability. His ability exceeded the investigative power of the formation on the airship as well as the senses of an expert like Liu Zongyuan. He was able to discover in advance the traces of the battalions of the demon race.

Very quickly, fifteen minutes passed by.

Everything seemed to be calm on the surface.

"Another fifteen minutes of time, and we will have neared the snow dragon den." On the face of Liu Zongyuan, a trace of relaxation was seen. "Out of the many battle divisions of the demon race, the snow dragon is the one with the strongest territorial nature. It will absolutely not allow the other battalions of the demon race to enter into their territory – especially within their den. And the snow dragon cannot fly, so it has no way of posing any sort of threat to us. This is our great chance. As long as we pass through the snow dragon den, and increase the speed of the formation airship, using our full power to travel, we can escape. After another fifteen minutes pass this place, we can enter the territory where both parties are exchanging blow, and there we can find reinforcements!"

The words that he spoke was very loud.

The contents of his speech, clearly travelled to the ears of everyone.

The originally somewhat nervous soldiers, let out a breath. Their original expressions of despair turned to hopeful expressions, light in their eyes.

As long as they had hope, the human race could explode with a shocking power at any moment, withstanding the situation.

[Painting saint] Mister Liu let out a faint smile. He followed along and said: “Through some emergency channels, I have also sent the request of aid out. As long as we withstand another hour, we can receive the support of the great army of Youyan Pass. At that time, even if the elites of the [Southern Incline legion] arrive here, we will be safe and unharmed.”

As this news came, the morale of the soldiers were even higher.◦

The original anxiousness and unrest was completely swept away.

That’s right, this time the mission was exceeding important. Mister Liu had created tens of maps of the Explosive Snow glacier and the territory of the Snow ground demon court. This could be counted as wealth of the entire army, even the empire empire. It must be believed that if the formation airship were to encounter danger, Youyan Pass would absolutely not abandon them. Once they received this news, they would definitely send out top class experts as reinforcements for them.

Ye Qingyu looked at Liu Zongyuan and Mister Liu.

Without knowing why, even through the contents of the words of these people seemed to boost morale, but Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that these were just comforting words said to lift their spirits.

After another ten breaths had passed by—

“Wuwu.....”

Big Head stood up again, climbing to Ye Qingyu’s shoulder. His throat emitted with a low growl, deadly staring in front of him.

Ye Qingyu heart thudded.

They had came again.

“Prepare to battle!”

This time, there was not a need for Ye Qingyu’s warning. Liu Zongyuan immediately reacted.

Before his sound had finished —

The clouds completely dispersed.

In front of them there was a black 'current', like the tide of death, that completely covered the skies as they approached.

What also appeared at the same time, was a flood like clamour of the caws of crows.

As if death had arrived, there were countless crows cawing. The noise emitted was extremely frantic and sharp, countless of them mixed together. The sensation it gave off, was as if there were sound waves hitting and rebounding off each other, creating some sort of chaotic and fatal frequency. The soldiers on the metal plates, in an instant had the sensation that countless little daggers and swords were stabbing into their ears. Their entire heart became hot tempered, making them want to murder the people standing next to them.....

"It's the [Black crows of misfortune]. Everyone activate your inner yuan, and close off your hearing."

Liu Zongyuan loudly shouted.

Ye Qingyu, in the first instant, activated the [White Horse battle armour].

White light completely covered his body. At the same time, there was a hidden metal formation activating in the white helmet. There was still the silver liquid that instantly became a silver coloured face plate, protecting his face and facial features.

This liquid face plate, completely blocked away the boundless and endless, chaotic and disturbing, caws of the crows. At the same time, it also heightened Ye Qingyu's sense and extended his range of detection.

Everything around him, in his vision, became clearer. Within several hundred metres, he could even see a thread.

In Ye Qingyu's mind, he recalled the introduction about the [Black crows of misfortune] that had he read on a scroll before.

This was one of the most peculiar divisions of the great flying divisions in the snow ground demon race.

This was a black coloured flying division of the snow ground demon race. Their intelligence and strength was low, the large majority of black crows could not even count as demon warriors and were only demon soldiers. Their intelligence was much lower than the other demon races at the same stage. They travelled in flocks, and relied on their countless and boundless numbers to destroy their opponents. They were extremely sensitive to death, and had no fear of death whatsoever. In many battles, even if the black crow flying division had died to the last bird, they would not retreat and continue charging. Some people said this was bravery, some people called this stupidity.....

This was a snow ground demon race that reproduced at a terrifying rate. As if it would never ever completely die.

Very evidently, the division of [Black crows of misfortune] appearing in front of them, was not to kill the people on the formation airship.

This was done to delay the airship.

This was an extremely bad sign.

Because it represented, the previous [Snow ground boat bats] had already passed on the news of the formation airship. And after receiving such news, there was a high up decision maker of the demon race nearby who had very quickly produced a strategy. They had sent out a division that was best at delaying, using the black crow battle division to tarry the progress of the formation airship. And for the coming operation of the demon race, win the greatest amount of time.

The worst situation had appeared.

“Charge past!”

Liu Zongyuan roared as he bit his teeth and screamed.

Twenty metal formation yuan qi cannons, at the same moment spat out the cannon fire.

The shooting star breaking armour arrows were like rain, shooting at the black swathe of black crows that they could not see the end of at all.



Battle exploded in an instant.

Ye Qingyu activated the [White horse battle armour] transforming to a streak of light, directly entering into the black coloured tide.

The white horse wings were like blades of death. Instantly, it sliced apart space and air. It was unknown just how many huge black crows it slaughtered. The lights of the Little Shang sword, was like a sickle harvesting wheat, reaping the life of the black crows. This life form with a wingspan of around two metres long, and a black beak like iron, with talons like blades could hardly pose as any sort of threat to Ye Qingyu.....

Big Head with a shocking stableness, tightly clenched onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder.

No matter how fast Ye Qingyu sped through the air or changed his direction, it seemed not to affect Big Head in the slightest.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu had no trace of fear.

With the [White horse armour] protecting him, he was like a sharp drill, from beginning to end in front of the formation airship. Without reserving any of his strength, using his strongest power, he fought against the current in the black tides of crows, forcibly breaking apart a passage way for the formation airship!

The black crows fell like dumplings from the skies, dying.

The scarlet red demon blood completely covered the air.

It was unknown just how much demonic blood covered the White Horse wings.

Even Ye Qingyu himself did not realise, that in the hidden formations of the white horse wings it was as if it were absorbing these blood. The silver coloured wings of the white horse battle armour, began absorbing more and more of the limitless demonic blood. The white horse wings became increasingly snowy white. The originally somewhat damaged portions, was right now slowly recovering and repairing.

Finally—

Su!

The vision in front of their eyes brightened.

Ye Qingyu had finally rushed out from the flock of crows.

And what followed after was the formation airship.

the current of black crows were left far far behind them.

But everyone did not have time to breath air to recover, when another demon race battalion appeared in front of them.

This time, it was not a natural flying battle division.

It was two massive snow ground demon race battleships.

Because the territory of the snow ground demon race was extremely poor in terms of natural resources and materials, the demon race could not be like the humans and construct airships through raw materials. They used the sea of consciousness of great demons after they had died. The majority of airships of the demon race used the skeleton and corpses of great demons as its main components. Through a special demon formation enhancement process after, they had the power of flight and battle. The demon race airships in front of them were the corpses of two huge eagles. The silver coloured wings were about a hundred metres in length, with a a width of thirty metres. From far away, it was like it was alive. as if two living snow ground huge eagles were there. It gave off an incomparable visual shock.

If not for the appearance of a huge tower and bannisters on the back of the huge eagles, as well as sails and cables and the numerous demon soldiers, perhaps Ye Qingyu would really have thought that they had encountered two terrifying snow ground huge eagles.

Very evidently, the two huge snow ground eagles were at least the class of demon commander when they were alive. When they perished, their body did not rot away and their muscles and bone were as hard as steel. It was the perfect material to construct a battle fort. This was used to great effect, to construct a battle ship.

# Chapter 156: Bizarre matter

For humans, the corpses of experts were something that they regarded as sacred. Normally, they would inter it deeply into the ground, or perhaps use some other methods to preserve them appropriately. This type of method where corpses were refined down into other objects or materials, was regarded as something extremely malicious. It was not allowed by human society and was something that everyone despised.

But for the Snow ground demon race, everything was the complete reverse.

Using the corpses of elders who had passed away to create weapons and battleships, was a method of showing respect to their elders.

Even great demons themselves, hoped that after perishing, their corpses would be of use to the demon race, and contribute to the survival of the race.

From ancient times to now, the demon race had always thought they were the lifeforms that inherited the will of the world. After death, their soul would be in the heavens, brightening the nine heavens. And their corpse would return to the earth, transforming into mountains and rivers as well as the mineral resources of the earth. On some perspective, being refined to weapons or battleships, was also a type of returning to the great earth. It was even more beneficial for their race. Contributing even after their death, was an incomparable glory for them.

It seems like these huge eagle battleships, had a extremely high specification. It could absolutely be counted as one of the top class divisions of the [Southern incline legion] of the demon race.

The instant they saw the two huge eagle battle ships appear, the colour of Liu Zongyuan's face completely changed.

The main battle power of the demon race, would really appear here?

Could it be that the demon race had already set up precautions and defences in front of them?

Wasn't it said that the demon race was right now completely in chaos?

How was it possible that their reaction speed would be so quick?

The expression of the soldiers on the metal plates also changed.

The formation airship they were on had been modified; with their speed and defensive power the strongest. But their offensive power was not that strong. For the purposes of concealment and detection, the airship type they had chosen was a middle class investigative airship and was not the main battle ship of the Youyan army. And as for the two huge eagle battle ship, could absolutely be counted as the main battle force of the demon race. To handle one was already very difficult. If two appeared, they absolutely had no chance of victory. Even if they wanted to escape, they could not escape.

At this moment, the [Army of Youyan Pass] that was known as one of the most elite armies in the empire, completely demonstrated their bravery and quality.

Even in despair, the soldiers did not collapse.

They silently took out a red silk scarf from their chests, tying it on their foreheads.

The red scarf fluttered in the strong winds of the cold air at the demon race territory. It was as if flame after scorching flame was lit.

Every soldier in the [Army of Youyan Pass] believed, that if they died in the territory of the demon race, if they died in foreign lands, that as long as their pride was not dead, as long as their honour did not fall, they could still return home. Even if their bodies rotted away, even if their flesh became the food of the demon race, but this red scarf could still lead the way back in the afterworld back to their homes. They could still make their souls return to the homes that they had once died to defend, they could transform into the sparking stars in the arc of heaven, able to protect their closest people.

When they met with an situation with no hope, the soldiers would wear red scarves on their head.

On one hand it was to lead their souls back home. On the other hand, it was to break the cauldrons and sink the boats\* encouraging themselves and their comrades to fight shoulder to shoulder to the death.

The red scarves fluttered and blew.

Such was the fate of soldiers.

This was the last battle of the soldiers.

Even Liu Zongyuan himself, was wearing a red scarf on his head.

At this time, any speech to encourage morale, would be shown to be superfluous and pale.

If death was really going to descend, if their final destination was really going to arrive today, then he would accompany his brothers, to beautifully finish walking their last stretch of the road.

Ye Qingyu was silent.

Of course he knew, just what wearing a red scarf on the head represented.

Was he afraid?

A little bit.

He had many things he had still not accomplished. He had still not found out the mystery behind the secret priest shrine within the Snow country. He was yet to meet again with the little loli Song Xiaojun that had left with the sword immortal Wang Jianru. There was also Aunt Lan, Little Grass and Tang San, as well as the Wen Wan and Li Shizen of the Vanguard camp....

But, even if so, what about it.

Whatever reason, at this moment, could not become an excuse for him to flee from battle.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu was not only a soldier in the army, he was a martial artist of the human race.

As a martial artist, or as a member of the human race, he had the duty

to protect the existence of his race from the very beginning.

And at this moment, it was time for him to carry out his duty.

Ye Qingyu activated the White Horse armour, white light cold qi encircling his body, the little Shang sword in his hand shimmering with radiance

Everyone, was waiting for the moment where the battle would explode.

As if the next moment, blood and white bone, cannon fire and smoke, would rupture and sputter in front of their eyes.

But--

A breath of time went past.

Two breaths of time went past.

Twenty breaths of time went past.

In Heaven and Earth, it was completely silent.

The opposing demon race huge eagle battleship, still silently floated in the skies.

The hunting sail on the battle ship made noises, the triangle multicoloured sail crashing and fluttering. On the tower and the metal plates, row after row of demon soldiers stood, their expressions solemn and malevolent. There seemed to be nothing out of the ordinary. But there was an extremely peculiar atmosphere that coalesced around the two huge eagle battleships.

Ye Qingyu gradually realised something.

“This is.....something is not right, it’s somewhat too peaceful.”

Ye Qingyu eyebrows frowned, looking in detail at the battleships opposite them.

Normally, when two battleships met, the first one who let out the first strike, would be the one with the absolute upper hand. Such an opportunity was transient and fleeting. On the huge eagle battle ship, there would definitely be demon warriors, even the existence of demon

commanders leading this ship. Everyone of them were well experienced famous leaders. It was impossible for them to delay and not attack after seeing the formation airship of the human race.

But the two huge eagle ships in front of them, maintained a hard to describe silence.

As if they had not seen Ye Qingyu and the others or the formation airship.

Bizarre.

A mysterious bizarreness.

Ye Qingyu frowned, looking at the Big Head who was still quietly lazily basking in the sun. A flash of understanding suddenly appeared in his mind.

Xiu!

He activated the white horse battle armour, the wings extending. He headed towards the two huge eagle battle ships.

The other people were shocked by this.。

“Brother Ye, quickly return.....” Liu Zongyuan loudly shouted.

Ye Qingyu gestured from far away, indicating that they were not to follow. He carefully and cautiously neared the huge eagle battleships.

On the formation airship, the eyes of the soldiers was instantly filled with hot tears.

What a heroic officer, what a selfless youth.

From the moment they interacted, the soldiers excluded and refused to accept Ye Qingyu. The soldiers felt this young man from the academy, was a young man that had not even entered onto the battlefield before. It made the proud soldiers unable to accept the fact that he had such a high military status. But right now, they started to feel ashamed for their shallowness.

Liu Zongyuan similarly felt the blood in his body burning.

A true brave warrior.

An officer that was absolutely worth engraving in one's memory

An.....

Brother Ye, you are far too in a rush!

But.....

Fine!

Rest assured and go first. You go first and I, Liu Zongyuan will quickly come find you and walk the same path. In the underworld, under the nine springs, we will still fight shoulder to shoulder.

Liu Zongyuan was nearly brimming with tears.

It was as if he could already see the Ye Qingyu being surrounded by the experts of the demon race, and the cannon fire, that tragic scene of him perishing and falling.....

But, the coming scene, did not develop according to his expectations.

“Eh?What is this?”

As his tears hovered, Liu Zongyuan was blank.

Because he inexplicably saw, that after Ye Qingyu activated the White Horse battle armour, he unexpectedly, without any obstructions at all, boarded on the huge eagle battleship. The demon race on the metal plates did not have any reactions whatsoever. After Ye Qingyu observed for a brief moment, as if spasming, he waved them over in a exaggerated fashion.....

What was it?

Liu Zongyuan was completely blank.

Why was it that the demon race had no reaction, and allowed Ye Qingyu to board?

Why did the battle not kick off?

After a moment of blankness, Liu Zongyuan suddenly realised



something. His heart could not stop madly beating, turning around to shout: "Everyone protect the airship." He himself activated the wings of his battle armour, transforming into a ray of light that neared the huge eagle battle ship and landing beside Ye Qingyu.

"What is it?" Liu Zongyuan's voice was shaking.

Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulder, his shock and emotionally moved state hard to disguise. "Old Liu, look for yourself, a strange matter.....a false alarm. I don't now what happened, but the demon soldiers on these two battleships has completely died off. There's not even one that is still alive and breathing. Look at this...." Saying this, Ye Qingyu extended his hand to push a fierce and muscular snow ground bear warrior.

Puchi!

This Snow ground demon bear that was enough to uproot rivers and mountain, fell softly without any force in its body.

Liu Zongyuan widened his eyes.

.....

Ten breaths later.

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan had nearly completely searched through the two huge eagle battleships on the inside and outside.

Within the two battleships, there was not even a single demon that was alive.

They had completely died.

On the two huge eagle battleships, there were two thousand or so lifeforms of the demon race. Within, there was not a lack for powerful experts with unfathomable strength as well as high class snow ground demon races. According to Liu Zongyuan's experienced judgement, there were at least ten demon commanders, four hundred or so demon warriors on the two battleships. It was an extremely powerful force, far, far exceeding their previous expectations. Such an arrangement greatly exceeded the standard scale of a battleship. This was nearly a large scale

demon race battle division, But for some reason, so many experts of the demon race, had completely died on this ship.

What was even more bizarre, was that there was not signs of any battle on the huge eagle battleships.

Every demon soldier, every demon warrior, every demon commander was either peacefully sitting or standing. There were different expressions on the faces of everyone on the two battleships. There were faint smiles, peacefulness, and there was some demon races that had gathered around and was conversing. As if a second or two before, nothing had happened whatsoever on the two eagle battle ships. The next second later, there was a terrifying apocalyptic disaster that occurred. No matter how strong or weak they were, their life was reaped away in a split instant.

The arrival of such a disaster occurred so quickly, that not even existences like demon commanders could react in time.

Ten great demon commanders, every one of them was comparable to a top expert of the Bitter Sea stage of the human race.

Instantly dead.

Bizarre.

Horrifying.

Sinister.

Under the arch of heaven, above the sea of clouds, the sun was fierce. But Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan both instantly had cold sweat covering their bodies.

Such a matter, was simply too inexplicable.

For such a strong demon race battleship to be destroyed through such a peculiar method was something that had never heard of before.

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan, could not hide their fear and shock at seeing this sight. They were standing in the fierce sun, but instantly felt surrounded by a gloominess they had never experienced before. As if a Death god was hiding somewhere in a corner, soundlessly and sinisterly

smiling as he stared at them. As if death would descend at any moment.

“Without any injuries, without battle occurring. As if the life force of the demon race was absorbed by some terrifying existence in an instant.”

Liu Zongyuan carefully observed.

Just what kind of power, was able to do such a thing?

A Heaven Ascension stage of the human race?

Or was it a demon king in the demon race?

Hard to imagine.

“No matter what, these two battleships no longer pose as a threat to us. We cannot tarry, we must immediately depart and rush away.” Liu Zongyuan awakened from his shock, and did not dwell on this bizarre matter anymore. Only by rushing and hurrying back towards the territory of the human race, could they be safe.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

But he faintly felt, that something was not right. But he had no reason to oppose Liu Zongyuan's decision.

\*cut off their path of retreat

# Chapter 157: Yan Buhui

If it was in normal times, Liu Zongyuan would definitely not abandon the resources and materials of these two huge eagle battleships. Even if he needed to drag it, he would them back metre by metre to Youyan Pass. Besides, on the two demon battleships, there were so many corpses of experts of the demon race. They would definitely contain some secrets of the demon race. If they carefully searched through the ships, they would absolutely profit greatly.

But right now, they needed to flee for their lives.

Furthermore, on the formation airship, there were tens of snow white maps that recorded down the arrangements of their military bases and terrain of the Explosive Snow glacier as well as the Snow Ground demon court.

On the significance of strategy, the importance of these scrolls were much more important than the two eagle battleships.

After returning to the formation airship, Liu Zongyuan ordered for the ship to speed on utterly, not delaying in the slightest.

Boom!

The airship broke through the cloud layers, leaving a trail through the skies, travelling like a ray of light.

The two huge eagle battleships that were like two spirits, very quickly disappeared behind them.

“Below is the den of the [Snow Dragon] that we have passed previously.” Liu Zongyuan pointed below. He could not help but be somewhat emotional: “This time, we have really escaped from death. Who would have thought that we would be discovered by a flock of boar bats. I guess, that boar bat battalion, should have been coincidentally passing by that area and discovered the traces of us by accident. They only decided at that moment to ambush us. This was our misfortune.....”

Ye qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

He surveyed below him.

Above the ice plains, everything was peaceful.

It seemed that the snow dragon had already hidden deep beneath the icy grounds, in some sort of half hibernation state. They did not see the strange scene of the [Snow dragon turning over] again.

“But it is not right to say our luck was bad. It is as if something is protecting us from the background. The demon race on those two huge eagle battleships died in such a strange and peculiar way. Otherwise, we could not escape so successfully.....” Liu spoke more than he normally did. Even though he was well experienced, and was a famous warrior that had undergone a hundred battles, his emotional fluctuation was still very large after escaping from disaster.

Ye Qingyu was about to say something, but suddenly frowned.

He looked at the icy plains under them. There was a strange shaped icy peak that looked slightly familiar. Thinking about it carefully, his heart could not help but be confused.

Did they not just pass this icy peak?

Why would this icy peak suddenly appear beneath them again?

Ye Qingyu’s memory was exceptional, with the ability to not forget things he had seen. He could confirm, that about ten breaths previously, the airship had passed by this icy peak before. According to the current speed of the formation airship, the distance they had passed since then was more than ten miles. It was absolutely impossible for them to return.....

In an instant, cold sweat seeped out from Ye Qingyu’s back.

He glanced at the excited Liu Zongyuan, and without any expression, continued to observe and take note.

Another ten breaths of time.

Ye Qingyu’s expression became extremely troubled.

Right now, he was a hundred percent sure, that an inexplicable matter,

was occurring on the formation airship.

Because that strange shaped icy peak, had already appeared for the third time below the formation airship.

In other words, the formation airship's speed seemed to be extremely rapid, but in reality, there was no difference from walking in a fixed position. They were not able to fly out from the fifty mile radius around the strange shaped icy peak. Right now, they seemed to be inexplicably travelling in circles.

Ye Qingyu did not dare tarry, giving the results of his observation and informing Liu Zongyuan.

“What? This....how is this possible?” Liu Zongyuan was extremely shaken. He could hardly believe this.

At this time, a voice came from behind them--

“Patrolling envoy Ye is not wrong. We are just running in circles at a fixed position. Officer Liu, tell the formation airship to stop, and not to waste the energy of the Origin crystal.” It was the voice of the [Painting saint] Mister Liu.

Mister Liu had already appeared behind the two at some unknown time.

Ye Qingyu rushed to ask: “Could it be that Mister has discovered something?”

Mister Liu's lean face had a trace of a bitter smile: “Only by listening to the words of Patrolling officer Ye did I realised this fact. We have already mistakenly entered into a seal formation, if we are not able to break it, we will forever be trapped here, with no method to get free. No matter how fast we fly, we will just be travelling around in circles.....although the formation airship is fast, but the laws of space at this area has already gotten disordered. We have no way to leave from here purely by relying on speed.”

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan looked at each other, their hearts extremely shaken.

How was this possible?

Just when had this occurred?

Just what kind of sealed formation was it, that they had not noticed anything and entered into it?

“Then what should we do now?” Liu Zongyuan asked with a frown.◦

He had already began to calm down gradually.

“I also don’t know.....Let’s first observe, perhaps there is still a chance.....” Mister Liu had bitter smile on his face, shaking his head, about to say something.

But at that time, he suddenly saw something inexplicable and incredible. He stood fiercely dumbfounded where he was, as if his entire person had fossilised. Only a while later did he react, then he was as if he saw a ghost, his gaze emitting a disbelieving light. Lifting his hand to point far away, his body began shivering violently. Saying nonsensical words: “You.....Him.....This is.....It’s him, so it was him.....”

Ye Qingyu followed along Mister Liu’s gaze with confusion. He could not help but be dumbfounded.

He could see in the air a hundred metres away, without knowing exactly when, a figure had appeared.

It seemed to be a human, around eighteen to nineteen or years of age. He should be a male, very young, a lean figure, but his face was incomparably handsome. His skin was like jade, with a strange radiance and his face was so pretty that it did not seem real. He was wearing a long white robe, and there was a shocking wound at his waist. He was nearly cut in half at the waist. On the wound, there was an amber like coloured liquid wriggling, as if it was helping him recover his life force.....

This person had his eyes tightly closed, his long eyelashes fluttering in the wind He was laying on a white cloud, his chest slowly rising and falling. His expression was calm and gentle, as if he was sweetly asleep.

But without knowing why, the moment he saw that person, Ye Qingyu

suddenly had a feeling that was like the fear and trepidation one felt before disaster.

The white clouds floated.

The young man silently lay on the white cloud.

His countenance was so peaceful, it as if he was a scholarly noble young master sleeping on a jade bed.

In the silence, there was strangeness contained within.

As if time had stopped at this moment.

After a long time.

Mister Liu finally let out a long breath, as if he had just woken from a terrifying nightmare.

“So it was him, it really is him....” Mister Liu bitterly smiled, shaking his head: “Such is fate, such is luck.”

A sense of dread and misfortune could not be helped but be born in Ye Qingyu’s heart as he heard this. Ever since meeting Mister Liu, Ye Qingyu’s impression of him was that he was a person that would never be shocked by anything, an extremely stable person. Before, even when they met with the Boar bats, the black crows and the huge eagle battleship, this [Painting saint] had always maintained a hard to describe calm expression. But at this moment, the person that was sleeping on the cloud, just what was his background, that it made Mister Liu lose his composure like so.

“Mister knows that person?” Ye Qingyu could not help but ask.

Liu Zongyuan also had a face filled with questions, looking towards Mister Liu.

Mister Liu let out another long sigh, nodding his head. He had an agonising expression. “I know.”

“Who is he?” Ye Qingyu asked again.

Mister Liu was silent for several breaths of time. At last, he seemed to



have made his determination, his mouth lightly spitting out two words——  
“Yan Buhui\* ! ”

Yan Buhui?

He had never heard of this name before.

Ye Qingyu was blank, saying: “It’s the name of a person? What’s his background?”

Before Mister Liu could reply, Liu Zongyuan’s expression greatly changed after hearing these words beside him. This person did not lack for bravery – even when he faced death directly, how would not even feel the slightest trace of fear. But his body began shivering uncontrollably at this instant. There was a shocked expression contained within his eyes.....

Ye Qingyu was greatly curious.

“Officer Liu also knows that person?”

But Liu Zongyuan still had not calmed down from the demons of his dreams.

It was as if he had not heard Ye Qingyu’s words. His gaze was still fixed on that young man lying on the white clouds.

Mister Liu breathed deeply in. “Yan Buhui, is that person.”

“That person? Which?” Ye Qingyu was yet to realise.

But as these words were spoken, a flash of insight suddenly flitted through his mind. He suddenly understood the meaning behind these words. He could not help but ask: “Yan Buhui, is that person? It’s the greatest traitor in the history of the human race that Mister Liu spoke of, that the person who betrayed the empire and his race, the once peerless genius of Youyan Pass?”

“It is him.” Liu Zongyuan had finally recovered from his stupor.

He spent a great deal of effort to calm himself down. Then he said :  
“The name of Yan Buhui, is really the nightmare of countless people of Youyan Pass. After so many years has passed, there is still no one who is willing to mention such a name, whether they are a soldier or an officer.

That name is like a night mare to us. When that matter happened in the past, I was only a little soldier. I have never seen him before, but I have heard his name far too many times. Who would have thought.....that today I would truly encounter him.”

Ye Qingyu’s heart was massively shaken.

He was finally greatly disturbed.

Subconsciously, he could not help but look again at the young man laying there.

Could it really be that young person?

The person seemed to be kind and handsome, like a rich young master, seeming to be somewhat thin and weak. He was pretty like a girl. Was he really the greatest traitor in the history of Snow country? A person that had once killed countless soldiers of the Empire? A person that had nailed countless soldiers of Youyan Pass on the pillar of humiliation?

Ye Qingyu had previously imagined what he looked like.

But he absolutely had not imagined, that he would have such a face.

Just what kind of heart was hidden beneath that peaceful and young face?

Long and painstaking effort had been taken to plan this operation by the [Youyan army]. It was all for this person. Did Mister Liu not say that the front lines were about to succeed. Why was it that he appeared in such a place?

Seeing the frightening and disturbing wound at Yan Buhui’s waist, Ye Qingyu vaguely realised something.

It seemed like the [Gale operation ] of the front lines had not succeeded. They had injured Yan Buhui, but they were not able to kill this traitor.

Wind blew again.

The atmosphere was strange and tense.

Yan Buhui silently lay on the cloud. If not for the movement of the

wound of his waist, if not for the rise and fall of his chest as he breathed, it seemed like he was really dead.

Arrows and cannon, aimed at him.

But Liu Zongyuan did not have the courage to order them to attack.

Mister Liu remained silent for a long time. Finally, he took a step forward, opening his mouth. "Buhui, long time no see."

His tone, was as if reuniting with an old friend and reminiscing about old times.

"Mister Liu, it's been a long time since we last met." The young man on the white clouds had his eyes tightly closed. His tone was gentle, without the slightest killing intent whatsoever. He had not yet opened his eyes, but evidently he had discovered the existence of everyone, and recognised Mister Liu.

\*His name can be translated literally to mean, never returning to Youyan Pass.

# Chapter 158: He stays behind

From his tone, it seemed like Yan Buhui knew Mister Liu.

Ye Qingyu suddenly recalled, that Mister Liu had previously said that Yan Buhui had previously tasted tea along with him. Then did this mean, that the two people were once friends?”

“It seems like even War God Lu was not able to kill you by attacking personally.” When Mister Liu spoke again, his expression was already much more relaxed. There was even a faint smile: “After so many years passed, it seems like your strength has grown yet again.”

On the white cloud, Yan Buhui slowly opened his eyes.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was fiercely shaken.

Just what kind of gaze was this.

It was as if his eyes were unfocused. It was hard to describe just what kind of emotion was contained within his eyes. As if it was peace, as if it was rage, as if it was sorrow....Ye Qingyu had never seen ,that it was possible for so many complicated emotions to be contained in someone’s eyes. It was just a gaze, but it was as if it all the emotions in this world had immersed within.

“If my strength had not grown, I would long be dead.” Yan Buhui replied blandly.

His expression was calm, his gaze without any focus. He did not look towards Mister Liu. As if he could see through the formation airship and the air around, seeing the remote desolate space time.

“But you have been injured.” Mister Liu smiled as he said these words. “To recover from your injuries, you killed and absorbed the life force and yuan qi of the experts of the demon race under your command. From this, one can tell you have been very heavily injured.”

Ye Qingyu heard this and suddenly understood.

It seemed like he was the reason that all the experts of the demon race

on huge eagle battleships had died. The reason such a strange situation occurred, was not because they were ambushed. In reality it was because Yan Buhui used some secret technique to absorb their life force and yuan qi, to recover from the injuries on his body. No wonder there was not the slightest trace of battle on the battleship, and there was not the slightest reaction of the experts of the demon race before dying.

A terrifying method.

A poisonous intent.

He would not even spare the subordinates under his command.

“I have even killed people of the human race. What about a mere demon race.....What does it matter if I was injured. My strength has grown, but so has Lu Zhaoge.” Yan Buhui gaze retreated, finally giving Mister Liu a glance. His expression was still peaceful: “Being injured at his hands, is not something to be ashamed about. Ten years ago, Lu Zhaoge was already someone with a titled Bitter Sea stage of cultivation. After ten years has passed, he has naturally gotten even more powerful. Such a truly powerful expert, he does not dare to do battle in a straightforward fashion, but instead spend time and effort to create a scheme to kill me. Should I not feel honoured? The so called War God of Youyan pass, is only just so!”

Mister Liu’s expression changed.

“You dare, to insult commander Lu!”

“Mad person, shut your mouth.”

“Traitor, go die!”

The soldiers on the formation airship were all elites that had fought in over a hundred battles. Many people treated the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge as their spiritual idol. They utterly respected and worshipped him. Even if they were facing the apocalyptic demon king Yan Buhui they could not help but be angered when they heard him insult Lu Zhaoge. They directly opened their mouths and reprimanded Yan Buhui.

Yan Buhui hearing this, only faintly smiled.

He did not explode and strike out. He did not even glance at the righteously angry elite soldiers.

A short while later, Yan Buhui looked at the clouds far off, as if he was recalling something. Only after a while did he say in a leisurely and cool tone: “Just when was it, that I was worshipping that man like you people. I regarded him as a god, I regarded him as a father. I thought he was righteous and fair, that there was nothing that he was unable to do. I thought he was the saint that could rescue this world.....haha, how laughable. A man will just be a man, how it is possible that he could be a god.....If it was my previous temperament, then you people would have long died ten thousand times over. But right now, I won’t kill you.”

Mister Liu stood at the head of the ship, a faint smile on his face : “You won’t kill us? Could it be that you are about to release us?”

On the face of Yan Buhui, there was a mocking smile. “Mister Liu, it has been so many years we have not seen each other, but you are still a schemer. But in these years, after speaking so much, did it prove to be of use?”

Mister Liu seemed as if he knew what the opposing party was pointing at. He remained silent, not speaking.

“I have not drunk Mister Liu’s tea for some many years.” Yan Buhui’s suddenly changed the subject, his tone calm and tranquil.

Mister Liu lifted his head, sighing. “How difficult can this be. Xinger, bring over the tea set.”

The expression of the student called Xinger was calm as he turned to enter into the cabin of the airship. Very quickly, he came out again. In his embrace, there was a tea table and an entire set of tea utensils. Carefully and cautiously he placed it at the head of the ship. Without waiting for Mister Liu’s instructions, he stood by the side, beginning to boil water.

Yan Buhui lifted his head.

A white cloud floated over, as if it was a physical object. It enveloped the tea set as well as Xinger within, then lifted, floating through the air.

This scene, was as if he was soaring through the clouds and harnessing the mists.

Mister Liu frowned. Then he looked at the Ye Qingyu beside him: “Patrolling envoy Ye, bring me over.”

Ye Qingyu activated his white horse wings, supporting Mister Liu’s shoulder. His figure flashed, landing on the white clouds.

His feet sunk in, as if he was stepping on solid ground.

Mister Liu sat cross legged. His manner was like when he was painting. He began to boil and prepare the tea.

His actions was extremely familiar, every movement and gesture containing a beauty that was hard to describe using language. It was as if these movements contained the essence of the way. Ye Qingyu had previously seen Xinger preparing tea; at that time he had felt Xinger’s tea art was near the way. But only when he saw Mister Liu preparing the tea, did he understood that the difference was still great when Xinger was compared to Mister Liu.

There was no wind in the air.

The white clouds stood there. It was as if the surrounding space had stopped entirely.

The formation airship was silent.

Everyone on the airship was peaceful as if they had fossilised.

In the blink of an eye, the tea had already been prepared.

“Please.” Mister Liu lifted his hand.

Yan Buhui walked step by step through the air, cloud after cloud appearing under his footsteps, like blossom after blossom of perfect lotuses. The translucent petals supported him. He came over and sat in front of the tea table. His entire movement was like an immortal descending to the mortal world. From top to bottom, one could not see the slightest trace of demon qi on him. It really made it hard to believe, that such a elegant and noble young master, was a person that had accepted

the transplant of a demon bone through a secret technique of the demon race. That he was a traitor to the demon race.

In the celadon teacup, the amber coloured tea emitted faint steam.

Yan Buhui opened his mouth and sucked.

The tea transformed into a jet of water, completely entering into his mouth.

Seeing this scene, the Ye Qingyu standing beside them could not help but remember that night when he himself had drank tea with Mister Liu in the cabin. At that time, he had also completely finished it in one gulp. No wonder Mister Liu said emotionally that he was very like that person. It seems like, the relationship between Mister Liu and Yan Buhui was not simple. The two people must have drank tea together many times previously. Otherwise, a fierce person like Yan Buhui would not suddenly want to drink Mister Liu's tea at this moment.

Ye Qingyu at this moment, suddenly felt that he understood Yan Buhui a little.

After all, he was a human. Even if he capitulated to the demon race, but they were after all not the same race. Even if the [Burning snow demon commander] believed in Yan Buhui, but the other demon races would not be willing to accept him. He should have been very lonely in these years?

A human living in the demon race, with his gaze filled with alien races, just how boring would that be?

“Good tea. I have not drunk such for many years.” Yan Buhui drank three mouthful consecutively, sighing in admiration.

Mister Liu did not lift his head, seriously preparing the tea. Pouring tea into another cup: “Even better tea is a waste if you drink it like so.”

“Words that are even more right, by speaking it over and over again so many times, is a waste.” Yan Buhui replied blandly. “Just how many times have you said these words to me?”

Mister Liu had a faint smile. “When the matter is right, no matter how



many times I have to say it, I am willing to continue on doing so.”

These words had a hidden meaning contained within.

How could Yan Buhui not be able to hear the meaning behind these words?

Drinking another cup of tea, Yan Buhui replied calmly: “How do you know that you are definitely right? Like a cup of tea. It originally is something that is used to solve thirst. When it was created, it only has the value of being drank. As long as it is able to realise it’s value, it is the same no matter how it is drank. This is the same as humans; as long as one is able to realise their own value, no matter how they do so is not important. The reason why humans want to become stronger is to control others. Since the human race does not accept me, then by transforming into a demon, I similarly can become stronger. When I truly become stronger, sooner or later I can control all of you.”

His previous manner was apathetic, as if he did not care for fame or profit whatsoever.

But when he spoke these words, his aura changed. His confidence and aura was strong and invincible, like a peerless divine sword being unsheathed.

“You’re wrong. Tea has to be carefully tasted; only then can you sense the special essence within. Humans, has things they can do and things they cannot do. Only then, can they be famous throughout all the ages.” Mister Liu lifted a tea cup, slowly sipping it down, refuting in a leisurely tone.

Yan Buhui had a brief smile. “Really? In the past, when I had my principles, what was my consequence? I nearly died as a consequence, with my wife and children unable to be protected. Today, I do not care anymore. I am completely unscrupulous, as long as I am able to take my vengeance, as long as I make those people pay the price, make them fear me, afraid of me. I will make them hear my name and be scared witless, hiding far away. They will not dare to make me as their enemy. I feel that this can already prove everything.”

“The matters in the past, in truth.....” Mister Liu was about to say something.

Yan Buhui smiled in disdain, waving his hand. Drinking another three cups of tea in one gulp, he fiercely stood up, a aura of rejecting someone outside a thousand miles away. Calmly he said: “Fine, these pointless great teachings, pointless great principles, I have heard far too many times. From when I was small, I have heard far too many moral teachings like this. Yet I still cannot live out my life in a good way. Mister Liu, don’t say anymore. The Yan Buhui today, is no longer the innocent scholar at Youyan Pass of the past.”

Mister Liu hearing this, stopped what he was about to say. Finally he could only let out a long sigh.

“Haha, after so many years, drinking Mister Liu’s tea is still a pleasurable matter. Today, you’re luck is not good. To escape to my place by coincidence, and to mistakenly enter into my recovery formation. But I won’t kill you.” Yan Buhui stood up, laughing loudly. “Mister Liu, I’ll bother you with a matter.”

“Please speak.” Mister Liu let out a breath of relief in his heart.

Yan Buhui clearly said each word: “Please can you go tell Lu Zhaoge, that if he wasn’t able to kill me this time, then he won’t have another chance in the future. In these tens of years, the progress of his martial cultivation is far too slow. If this continues on, then in another five years, he will not be my opponent anymore. At that time, our roles will be reversed. At that time, it is me who will hunt for him and kill him. I hope at that time, he will be as lucky as I have been.”

A extremely powerful aura began exploding from Yan Buhui’s body.

The surrounding was smothered in a aura so powerful that it was inexplicable. Yuan qi was roiling, as if they were huge waves. The massive formation airship, was like a little raft bitterly struggling in tidal waves in such aura. It was as if it could be completely drowned at any instant. The people on the airship, including Liu Zongyuan, could not help but shiver and tremble, face filled with fear. This had nothing to do

with their bravery. Their will and five senses was completely ruled by a instinctive pure fear and respect towards powerful beings.

“I will relay your words.” Mister Liu said seriously.

“Then go.” Yan Buhui flicked his hands.

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, bringing Mister Liu and Xinger back to the formation airship.

The formation airship slowly began to activate. Just as it was about to fly and leave this ominous area.....

At that time, Yan Buhui suddenly turned his head, his gaze like lightning , landing on Ye Qingyu’s body. “I’ve changed my mind. He, stays behind.”

The person he pointed at, was namely Ye Qingyu.

# Chapter 159: Scum

Ye Qingyu's expression changed slightly.

Eh?

What was this?

It seemed like that the person that he was pointing to was himself?

It really is me?

Shit.

In this entire process, that ominous person had clearly not even given Ye Qingyu a glance. He did not even take notice of me, why would he suddenly want me to remain behind? Could it be that it was because I pretending to be unafraid of death, and brought Mister Liu to the cloud with the White Horse wings, so therefore he took special notice of me? This is really too unlucky. That old fellow Mister Liu really dragged me down. If I knew it was like this, then I should have let Liu Zongyuan fly him to the cloud.

The Liu Zongyuan next to him suddenly had a cold shiver for some reason.

"You just said that you were going to let us go." Mister Liu stared at Yan Buhui with a frown. "With your position today, could it be that you want to go back on your words?"

Yan Buhui's expression was apathetic, his tone containing a hardness that could not be questioned. Indifferently he said: "The words I've said, can I not change it? I am not the fake gentleman that Lu Zhaoge is, what matters if I change my mind? Leave him behind, you can go. If you don't want to go, then everyone can stay behind. Make your own decision."

"This...." Mister Liu hesitated for a little. "How about this, I stay behind, and we can drink another cup of teas and reminiscence about old times. Let him go. With your currently position, why must you make it hard on a little child?"

“I feel his words are very correct.” Ye Qingyu quickly jumped out to supplement these words into the conversation.

Mister Liu felt his vision darkening.

“Hahaha.....” Yan Buhui began fiercely laughing loudly.

After he finished laughing, he did not even give Ye Qingyu a glance, but only stared at Mister Liu for a short while. There was a pale disdain in his gaze: “The [Painting saint] Mister Liu, is really a top character in the great army of Youyan Pass. Although you have always been low key but the demon race has long been placed at a disadvantage by you On the bounty list of the [Southern incline legion]. your name is ranked in the top twenty. If I kill you, and bring you back to the demon court, this can be counted as a great contribution, but.....” As he said to here, Yan Buhui smiled: “But in my eyes, even ten Mister Liu’s value is not worth even one of this young man.”

Mister Liu hearing this, did not have anger from being underestimated. He only shook his head: “You have evaluated wrongly,. Patrolling envoy Ye has only been here for a month’s time.”

“That’s right, that’s right.....” Ye Qingyu quickly chimed in.

But he was ignored once again.

Yan Buhui was calm and serious as he said: “Some people, even if their name is even more famous, as long as one sees them, they will feel that they are only just so. Under their fame, they are unimpressive. And there are some people that even if you have never heard of them before, but you can sense how terrifying they are the first time you see them.” He swept his glance across Ye Qingyu. There was a hint of admiration contained within his eyes.”From my eyes, this young man is the latter. Even though his wings has not yet fully grown, but I can already see some things on his body. If I leave him be, in the future he will be the great calamity of the demon race. Why not get rid of him early.”

Mister Liu hesitated.

Yan Buhui looked at him, smiling but not smiling, saying again: “And

according to my knowledge, Mister Liu you are not a practitioner of Buddhism. You would never show sentimentality for people of no value. This time you are willing swap yourself for this young man. Haha, I think that even you have seen through the potential of this youth?"

Mister Liu stared at Yan Buhui for a long time.

He knew that he had lost once again in front of his previous friend.

In reality, ever since Ye Qingyu had comprehend the natural way from his paintings, spirit raising in one night, Mister Liu already had a completely new perspective of this youth. Then afterwards, Ye Qingyu's performance as he killed the enemy was fearsome and valiant, making the [Painting saint] realise that he had estimated Ye Qingyu wrongly initially. He had not seen the value of this piece of rough jade at the very first instance. He was somewhat regretful that he had brought Ye Qingyu to such a dangerous place. If they loss such a genius, then it would be a huge loss for the entire Youyan Pass, even the entire Snow country.

But right now.....

Yan Buhui's gaze, would also be so poisonously sharp.

Seeing that Mister Liu did not continue to speak, Yan Buhui continued on: "This time, Mister Liu you've entered alone deep into the Explosive snow glacier. I don't think I need to state the reason for your excursion. If my guess is not wrong there should be maps of the [Southern Incline legion] on the Explosive Snow glacier military, about their military arrangements and the terrain within the formation airship . For Lu Zhaoge, this should be something that he dreamed to have in his dreams, haha....."

Mister Liu's expression greatly changed.

Liu Zongyuan was shaken, subconsciously clenching the long blade at his waist.

"Haha, no need to be nervous. Those maps, will count as my present to Lu Zhaoge. What matters if you bring it away. I long for the day that Lu Zhaoge really brings the [Army of Youyan Pass] to the Explosive Snow

glacier and do battle with me. And not hide throughout the day in the turtle shell of Youyan Pass.....” In the words of the Yan Buhui, there was a surge of dominance and confidence that normal people could hardly understand. Blandly: “The value of these maps, from my perspective, is not as high as this youth. Therefore, the maps you can bring away but you must leave him behind.”

These words were resolute and decisive.

Without the slightest possibility of negotiation.

Mister Liu understood Yan Buhui’s personality. He knew that since he had said such words, there was no possibility of change anymore.

If he continued to argue, then most likely the other people on the formation airship could not leave either.

But in Mister Liu’s heart, he really was not willing to abandon this peerless unpolished gem Ye Qingyu.

The atmosphere, seemed desperate and solemn.

The gaze of Liu Zongyuan and the others when they looked at Ye Qingyu held both pity and helplessness.

Mister Liu let out a sigh, about to attempt for the last time.....

But --

“Fine!”

An excited noise sounded out on the formation airship.

The previous covering and hiding Ye Qingyu, suddenly had a smile on his face. Stepping forward and giving out a thumbs up, he waved his hand towards Yan Buhui.

“Haha, Yan Buhui is it? Good, this is far too good. In reality, no one has ever praised me like so before. But I cannot deny that your praise is the most sincere and creative. Haha, you are really making me burst with joy. Since you have so sincerely praised me, then if I don’t stay behind, it is far too boring. It is decided then. They can leave, I’ll stay behind.”

The expression of demon king Ye was excited and delighted.

As if he was a little child that had been praised to over the moon, a trace of embarrassed red really appearing on his face.

Yan Buhui was taken back.

It was the first time an expression of surprise had appeared on his face since he had materialised.

Even Mister Liu and Liu Zongyuan stared numbly at Ye Qingyu. The student Xinger barely suppressed his urge to feel Ye Qingyu's head, to confirm if this fellow was burning with fever and speaking nonsense.

“Patrolling envoy Ye, you.....” Mister Liu panicked, about to say something.“

Ye Qingyu waved his hand, a expression of that it was all for the greater good. Generously saying: “Mister Liu, no need to say anymore. He regards me as so important, how can I not cooperate with him. No need to care about me, one of my life in exchange for the lives of everyone is very worth it.”

Everyone on the ship, instantly become moved.

This was a true brave warrior.

What a selfless spirit.

If I don't enter into hell, who would enter in hell. Patrolling envoy Ye, was really a true and fearsome soldier.

Those soldiers that were somewhat more emotional than the others, already had wet tears on their face.

Those soldiers who displayed their emotions on the inside, gave Ye Qingyu the standard military salute.

But who would have guessed, that Ye Qingyu's countenance would quickly changed, laughing: “Besides, I may not really die if I stay behind. If I really reach the end, I still have an ultimate move that will definitely save me.”



“What ultimate move?” Liu Zongyuan’s eyes brightened.

Ye Qingyu rubbed his jaw, shamelessly grinning: “I can surrender.....wahahah, since that person thinks so highly of me, I can choose to surrender. He shouldn’t kill me if so.”

As he finished.

There was silence between heaven and earth.

Liu Zongyuan nearly felt his vision blackening and falling to the metal plates.

Mister Liu could not laugh or cry. He had an urge to throttle this retard to death.

Those hot wet tears, those military salutes, those silent lowered heads, those wiping their armours and weapons and was praying because of they were moved by the actions of that person, their emotions were instantly dispelled. The emotions of the soldiers disappeared like snow at the beginning of snow that had fresh pissed poured on it. Not only did it disappear, it left urine smell that made one mad.....

The mouth of Yan Buhui, curled in a amused way after being taken aback.

Scum!

Nearly everyone had such a phrase appearing in the bottom of their hearts

The retard in front of them, was he really the person that fought shoulder to shoulder beside them, that was hot blooded like a War God that killed demons along with them just before?

Could he have been furtively swapped out with a different person?

The originally tragic and solemn atmosphere was completely swept away in that instant.

Mister Liu kneaded his head, then turned and headed towards the cabin without looking back. As he walked, he said: “Start the airship, quickly start the airship. Let’s go.”

Ten breaths later.

The formation airship, like an arrow leaving the bow, like a startled rabbit, crazily disappeared in the far off skies.

“Eh? They’ve really left? This bunch of scoundrels, they really have no loyalty to their friends. To have really left.....” Ye Qingyu kept staring as the formation airship disappeared in the sea of clouds, clenching his teeth and cursing at them.

Opposite him.

Yan Buhui stared fixedly at Ye Qingyu, his lips twitching several times.

He deeply breathed in a mouthful of air. Forcefully activating the martial heart he had cultivated for tens of years, he suppressed the urge to slaughter this scum into pulp, then said in ridicule: “What is it? Little fellow, do you regret staying behind?”

Ye Qingyu swept his gaze over him, saying in rage: “What’s the use of me regretting? You’re so fierce. Even if Mister Liu hesitates, the ultimate result will still be that I stay behind?”

“You can really let go of your grievances.” Yan Buhui used a gaze similar to a cat catching a mouse, regarding him in an undisguised fashion.

Ye Qingyu did not pay attention to him. His gaze flickered around, evaluating his surrounding environment. He had an expression that he was currently planning something.

# Chapter 160: See you

“You don’t need to waste your efforts. My yuan qi space domain is a thousand metres in range. You cannot escape at all.”

“A thousand metres?” Ye Qingyu smiled a little, nodding his head roguishly. His gaze kept flickering about. With his arms crossed, he regarded the opposing party. “Fine, it seems I really can’t escape.....Let’s speak of the proper matter, why must you have me stay? Could it be that it was because of my peerless martial talent, is really like the will o wisp in a gloomy cemetery that cannot be hidden? It’s been discovered by just one glance by you..... “

A will o wisp in a cemetery?

Jsut what kind of nonsensical analogy was this?

“Young man, be more serious. If you continue using such a tone to speak to me like this, I will kill you.”

The expression of Yan Buhui became icy cold.

In that instant, the surrounding yuan qi seemed to consolidate. A coldness that seeped into one’s bones spread throughout the air.

He had truly been angered.

Because he was able to tell, that what was hidden behind the laughter and chuckle of Ye Qingyu was a heart that did not fear him in the slightest.

In these past tens of years, Yan Buhui had seen far too many people that thought themselves as brave and heroic. But the large majority of these people were forcefully faking it. They were just showing strength on the outside but weak on the inside. Just a look at them was enough to make someone laugh and feel disgusted. But Ye Qingyu was not afraid. Not only was he not afraid, he held a mockery and disdain that he did not hide at all.

“Fine, no need to be so fearsome.” Ye Qingyu lifted both of his hands. “I’ll be serious then. You’ve specially wanted me to stay behind, just what

do you want from me?”

Yan Buhui deeply breathed in.

He did his best to control his killing intent.

Even he did not know why, but when in front of this youth, his emotions could not help but be affected. But he was finally able to control and suppress his killing intent. Staring at Ye Qingyu, he said word by word :”Follow me, I won’t kill you.”

Ye Qingyu let out a snort. “After half the day, you really want me to surrender.”

Yan Buhui did not say anything.

He was waiting for Ye Qingyu’s reply.

“Eh, to speak the truth, you have spent all these years alone among the demon race, do you not feel lonely and isolated? Therefore you wanted to find a person to follow you?” There was a nosy expression on Ye Qingyu’s face, and he said jokingly: “But I am a man. Why can’t you find a woman to follow you?”

In the pupils of Yan Buhui, killing intent and cleverness flickered past.

But he instantly began to smile.

“I was nearly angered by you.” He seriously evaluated Ye Qingyu up and down. Asking : “I’m really curious, just what kind of things do you possess that makes you will be able to escape from my hands?”

The smile on Ye qingyu’s face instantly retreated.

“Eh, you were able to see this?”

The two people chattered away.

.....

.....

The formation airship swept past the arc of heaven like a ray of light.

In the blink of eye, the area controlled by the [Army of Youyan Pass]

could be seen far away.

“Superior, are we really going to abandon patrolling envoy Ye?” Liu Zongyuan asked somewhat emotionally.

He turned his head to look back several times, as if he was going to witness a miracle and that fellow was going to catch up at any moment. But time and time again he was disappointed.

Mister Liu’s expression was calm: “What can we do apart from that?”

“But....but.....” Liu Zongyuan said several buts, but ultimately he could not say anything.

Because he was clear in his heart, that under such conditions, apart from leaving behind Ye Qingyu, there was not any other choice. If they went against Yan Buhui’ will, not only would Ye Qingyu be unable to return, but everyone on the airship would also die. What was more important, was that those precious maps would also be lost. They had to choose the lesser of two evils. Abandoning Ye Qingyu, was absolutely the most logical choice.

“Ye Qingyu is not definitely going to die.” The Xinger who had not spoken, suddenly opened his mouth.

“Ah?” Liu Zongyuan was taken aback, then instantly said in a astonished tone: “Could it be that Xinger really thinks he is going to surrender? I feel that he is not that type of person.”

Xinger smiled and shook his head. “Officer Liu, don’t be fooled that person. From my perspective, his final nonsensical words seems like he has gone crazy, but his motive is very simple. It is to make us not tarry any longer, to quickly leave from there. I feel that patrolling envoy Ye is using his own special method to hint at us to not worry about him, and that he has a method to handle Yan Buhui.....”

“How is this possible?” Liu Zongyuan exclaimed.

Even if his head was damaged, he would not think this was possible. That in front of a top class terrifying expert like Yan Buhui, the Ye Qingyu who was just at the Spirit spring stage would be able to escape.

There was a faint smile appearing on Mister Liu's face. "An abnormal person, cannot be evaluated using a normal way of thinking. In the past I could not see through Yan Buhui, right now I similarly cannot see through Ye Qingyu. He thinks that he has a way to handle it. In truth, if you think carefully, just how many inexplicable matters has appeared on this child? I feel that Xinger's words are correct. The stance and tone of patrolling envoy then was evidently telling us to quickly leave, and that he has a plan."

Liu Zongyuan hearing this, could only shake his head with a bitter smile.

His concern had caused him to lose his composure. At that time he was really worried for Ye Qingyu, so he had not considered so much.

He only just understood, that the reason Mister Liu ordered the formation airship to leave was because of this point.

Liu Zongyuan turned his head to look back at the path they travelled for the last time.

"I hope that he can really return safely."

He prayed in his heart.

.....

.....

"You intentionally said so much, is because you wanted to anger me. In reality, you wanted to buy time for Liu Yuqing and the others. You have confidence you can escape from me? But I really can't see any way you can escape, unless....." There was a suspicious expression on Yan Buhui's face. "Unless you have an unlimited divine talisman, otherwise it's impossible. But just how precious is the unlimited divine talisman. Furthermore, I completely cannot sense the existence or aura of the unlimited talisman on your body."

"So the name of Mr Liu, is called Liu Yuqing. This is somewhat feminine.....you've guessed right." Ye Qingyu smiled. "I really don't have anything called the unlimited talisman."

Yan Buhui nodded his head. "Then you....."

Ye Qingyu let out a chuckle. "But you're wrong about one thing. It is not only the unlimiter talisman that can break through your space formation.....have you heard of a thing called flash before?"

"Flash? What is it?" Yan Buhui was taken aback.

Ye Qingyu began to have a faint smile.

He laughed very happily.

Then his body slightly faced upwards. He waved at Yan Buhui in a confident and at ease fashion.

Xiu!

A pale silver coloured light flashed by on his body.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu had disappeared from his original position.

"What?" Yan Buhui was shaken.

At that instant, he did not sense the slightest trace of yuan qi fluctuation nor did he sense any power of formations. With his cultivation realm, with his experience and with his vision, he really could not see through just what kind of method Ye Qingyu used to disappear from his eyes. He could confirm, that this was not a concealment or invisibility technique, Because not even a speck of dust could evade from his senses. But right now, he could not even sense Ye Qingyu's existence.

After huge shock, there was a shred of a smile on Yan Buhui's face.

"Interesting, really interesting. Who would have thought that such a person would appear in Youyan Pass."

He smiled slightly, and did not chase after.

On one hand, the injuries he had sustained this was not light and the sealed space formation he had created, was in truth used to hide for the attacks of the [War God Youyan Pass] and the other experts of the human race. And on the other hand, Yan Buhui felt that even if he managed to catch up to this youth, he could not harden his resolve to kill him.

Vaguely, Yan Buhui could already see a shadow of himself on Ye Qingyu.

Such an interesting fellow, was already very rare. If he killed him in just one stroke, would it not be such a waste?

Yan Buhui returned and lazily inclined back onto the white cloud.

“The wind will destroy the tree that grows higher than the forest. Ye Qingyu is it? I will see, just how long you can endure in Youyan Pass..... those treacherous hypocrites, when they witness the appearance of a genius that can threaten them, how can they remain indifferent? The things that happened to me in the past, most likely you will also experience. At that time, I will see, if you will still stand by their side so determinedly like today. ahahahaahahah.....”

He closed his eyes.

A nap in ten years.

The heart sutra Yan Buhui cultivated in was called the [Great dream heart sutra].

.....

If Ye Qingyu knew that after he had escape, Yan Buhui did not have the intention to continue chasing, he would definitely curse and shout.

Because after activating the [Flash formation] in the [Titled Fiendgod chart], he had considered just where he could escape to so that Yan Buhui would not instantly discover him and catch up. There was a very long period of time needed to activate the [Flash formation] for the second time so he only had once chance. The direction he chose to flash, was not towards the Youyan Pass, nor was it back North.

He chose to go downwards, directly entering the [Snow dragon den].

The [Snow dragons] had extremely powerful and strong territorial perceptions. And their body was extremely tough, excavating a labyrinth underground that extended everywhere. It was filled with various types of dangers. Yan Buhui had also been injured so he would most likely not chase after into such an environment.



Of course, the most important point was that the Ye Qingyu who thought himself very clever reckoned that Yan Buhui would never imagine he would choose such a place to flee.

Xiu!

Flash ended.

Ye Qingyu appeared in a underground ice cave.

“I’ve really arrived at the [Snow dragon den]/“

He stabilised his mental state, carefully observing. He was able to sense, a rich and dense demonic qi surrounding the entire underground ice cave.

“This should be the demonic qi of the Snow dragons. These passages and caves like a mine, should be the traces left behind by the movement of the snow dragons through the ice. ” Ye Qingyu carefully observed his environment.

The environment was similar to the underground ice cave below the hundred broken mountains. It was just that the ice passageways curved and split even more, like an underground maze. The sensation it gave Ye Qingyu, was as if he had entered into a massive ant hive. Thankfully he did not encounter a hibernating snow dragon, otherwise the situation would be even more. Ye Qingyu guessed that this should be the outer territory of the snow dragon’s den, therefore he could not see the hibernating snow dragons.

No matter what, this was far more hopeful than being in the hands of Yan Buhui.

“What I need to do next, is to think of a method to find the direction and utilise the holes and passages left by the snow dragons to directly travel to the southern border of the Explosive Snow glacier. However the underground passageways of the Snow dragon, is far more complicated and massive than what it seems like from far away.....Damn, I’ve really been pushed to the edge this time. I can only hope that the snow dragons are obediently sleeping away, and not to come out randomly. I am only passing by.....“

Ye Qingyu prayed in his heart.

# Chapter 161: Eat....Yummy!

Boom!Boom!Boom!

The whistle of the wind was like that of a gale. It came from deep within the passageway.

In this underground ice space, there were wind passing through it. This was different from the underground ice cave of the hundred broken mountains.

At that time, Bug Head suddenly crawled out from Ye Qingyu's chest. He climbed onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder and evaluated his surroundings.

Ye Qingyu began kneading Big Head's head, and could not help but jokingly reprimand: "When that fierce person Yan Buhui was here, just where did you die to? You little trash, hiding when there's danger, and only coming out when it's safe. You can eat so much, I've really raised you in vain."

"Wuwu....." The little fellow rubbed his head against Ye Qingyu in an attempt to curry favour, then extended his little tongue panting, as if he was apologising. Suddenly he jumped down from Ye Qingyu's shoulders, his two hind legs bouncing and jumping about. Shaking his tail, he headed towards deeper in to the passageway. In an instant, he disappeared into a far off corner of the crystal passage."

"Eh? I reprimanded you slightly, and you want to run away from home?" Ye Qingyu was shocked by Big Head's action.

Could I have hurt the self esteem of this fellow?

He's only a dog, can he please not have such strong self esteem.

Ye Qingyu was about to rush after him. Thankfully the silly dog Big Head returned after disappearing for a bit.

The glutton turned around to look at Ye Qingyu, still having a countenance of trying to please Ye Qingyu. In his glistening large eyes there was pure innocence written within. He seemed to be giving a signal to Ye Qingyu through his eyes, shaking his head and wagging his tail.

The expression in his black and white large eyes was extremely nimble and flexible, indicating that Ye Qingyu should follow him. This was evidently saying that he would lead the way for Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded for a moment, then followed after.

Could this fellow really know the path?

But he had evidently never been before.

But no matter what, this was the first time the stupid dog wanted to do something of his own initiative.

Recalling Big Head's mysterious history, Ye Qingyu ultimately decided to believe him. He followed after.

Big Head hopped about in a cheerful and lively way.

He was like lightning jumping about. Sometimes he would sniff the air in the crystal passageway, as if he was discerning something. Every time they encountered a split in the corridor, he would seriously sniff, then choose a passage way from among the choices. He seemed to be discerning for real, not blindly walking and relying on luck. The most important point was that this man and dog pair had walked for fifteen minutes, but they had still not yet encountered any Snow Dragons.

"Eh? Can he really recognise the path?"

Ye Qingyu was delighted.

This was a harvest that was out his expectations.

People said that old horses recognised the way, who would have thought that little dogs could also lead the way.

"Hahaha, who would have thought that a little thing like you really have the senses to lead the path." Ye Qingyu quickly followed behind, praising Big Head.

"Wuwu!" The little fellow upon hearing his master's praise, became even more excited. Big Head rapidly ran two circles around Ye Qingyu then rubbed his head against Ye Qingyu's leg. He continued to lead the way.

Very quickly, the man and dog pair walked on for another hour.

Within the passageway, the sounds of the wind became louder and louder.

The sounds of the wind was like thunder. It was as if within the depths there was a terrifying lightning storm that was currently forming.

The fierce wind rushed out from within the corridor, coming them at them like blades. There were also some scattered ice crystals mixed inside this wind. Clustered tightly, these fragment struck against the icy walls. It was as if in the icy underground there was currently a fearsome snowstorm brewing. Snowflakes completely covered the air, the crystals perfect. It was like there were bright blades in the darkness that came whistling towards them. The hardness of these ice crystals were like steel. When it struck the icy corridor, it would leave a paper white crack that instantly disappeared.

“This gale is too terrifying. The snowflakes are like hidden weapons. Martial artists at the level of the ordinary stage has no way of surviving in such an environment. Their skin will definitely break open and their flesh shredded if they are struck by the ice fragments.”

Ye Qingyu casually grabbed at the ice crystals coming over straight at him, his wrist moving. He sense the force contained within these projectiles and could not tremble with apprehensiveness.

Activating his inner yuan, an invisible barrier began to appear around his body. The torrential rainstorm of ice crystals that came at him were all rebounded.

Big Head was not afraid in the least in such a terrifying explosive snowstorm. The icy crystals snowflakes would barely just brush past his little adorable little figure every time. It was as if they would never touch him.

They both continued on forward in such an explosive snowstorm.

As the walked further and further, Ye Qingyu felt that something was increasingly strange.

“That’s not right. According to logic, the air underground should be in a still state. It should not be moving so rapidly but why is there such an terrifying explosive snow storm in the ice passageway, .....could it be that we are about to reach the exit, and there is an opening to a windy terrain outside?”

Ye Qingyu thought silently. His heart could not help but become more cautious.

But Big Head became more and more excited. He jumped about in front, running faster and faster.

Ye Qingyu could not help but rush to chase after.

Another fifteen minutes passed.

The explosive snow storm became larger and larger.

Even with Ye Qingyu’s current strength, he also felt that he needed to expend more energy to continue.

He could not help but activate his inner yuan with his full power, walking step by step forward. The speed at which they travelled became slower. And the snowstorm within the ice crystal corridor became greater, completely terrifying. If this was on the plains, it would most likely instantly uproot trees with a thousand years of age. If an army fought in such an environment, it was very possible that the army would meet the fate of complete annihilation.

“Wuwuwu....“

In front of him came the excited yelps of Big Head.

Ye Qingyu quickly rushed forwards.

The snowstorm in front rapidly strengthened. He forcefully rushed past then Ye Qingyu felt his body lighten and the vision in front of him brightened.

Ye Qingyu fell to one side, the weight of the gale disappearing. Carefully examining, he discovered at the end of the ice crystal corridor there was an incomparably huge large crystal space below him that

appeared in front of Ye Qingyu's eyes. The width and length was a thousand metres long, as if it was a palace for a giant. The place he was in right now was a smooth and flat ice rock, and in the far off space there were two massive ice cyclones that unendingly circulated and wriggled, as if they were two silver dragons. Finally, these cyclones brushed past Ye Qingyu's body, rushing towards the icy corridor that he had just burst out from.

As he looked downwards from the two icy crystal tornadoes.....

Ye Qingyu was suddenly fiercely dumbfounded.

"What is this.....My heavens, could it be.....a snow dragon that is currently sleeping?"

In the bottom of the space, there was a white gigantic object silently laying there. It's body was coiled like a white city wall, roughly the length of a thousand metres, ultimately curled up like a python. It was like an ice and snow mountain range that gave off an indescribable visual impact. If one carefully examined, one could discover that the shape of this leviathan was similar to a dragon. There were silver crystal dragon scales clustered on its body. Because it was coiled, one could not see the dragon claws, but the head of the dragon could clearly be seen, as if it was a true dragon. In legend, the divine dragon had the face the shape of a horse, a hog's nose, ox's lips, antler horns and the tassels of a prawn. The snow dragon did not seem much different from this.....

And the ice crystal gale, was namely being breathed out from the snout of the Snow dragon.

So the gale, was created as a result of it's breathing.

Terrifying!

Just what kind of life form was this.

Even if he had seen the shape of the snow dragon in the diagrams of books before, it was after all just a picture. At this time seeing a live snow dragon appearing in front of his eyes, Ye Qingyu was very fiercely shaken.

Huge, mysterious, noble, powerful.....

There were countless descriptions that flashed by in the mind of Ye Qingyu.

And then his reaction was, to quickly use the time to run away.

In the underground icy layer, to encounter a fully grown adult Snow dragon, even experts of a class like Yan Buhui would have a headache. This was even more so for Ye Qingyu.

Once they were discovered, they would instantly be crushed.

But the next instant, Ye Qingyu realised, that the snow dragon in front of his eyes had not yet discovered them. It was currently sleeping.

In legend, the snow dragon was a special life form. Not only did it live most of its life within the ice layers, two thirds of its life and above was also spent slumbering. Unless it must come to the time to feed or to reproduce, it would not be willing to awaken. The majority of the time in its long life was spent in sleep.

If nothing happened that threatened the life of the Snow dragon, it would not be very willing to wake up even if it was disturbed by the noise.

“Wuwu.....” Big Head jumped excitedly, his nose pointing at the slumbering dragon below them. He completely had the manner of someone taking credit for achievement.

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth, giving off a killing intent as he stared fixedly at this stupid dog.

You fraudulent blockhead.

I let you lead the way to avoid the Snow dragons and to leave from here, but instead you really followed the smell of the Snow dragon, and brought me in front of a live Snow dragon that was currently hibernating.

Bastard, do you want to murder your master?

Could it be that I have mistreated you, and not given you enough things to eat?

Ye Qingyu really wanted to rush over and throttle this stupid dog to his death.



Who would have guessed that as the stupid dog bounced and jumped with his nose pointing at the slumbering Snow dragon, a strange tone would come from his open mouth.

Ye Qingyu heard this. It was as if he was struck by thunder. He was completely dumbfounded.

The stupid dog looked at confusion in his master, then repeated himself: “Wuwu, eat, yummy....”

Ye Qingyu stood where he was for tens of breaths of times, and then was like a bunny that had it's tail stepped on, jumping up immediately. Then he instantly grabbed Big Had. He inspected and pinched him from his head, to his neck, to his belly, to his belly, saying in a flabbergasted manner: “What did I hear, did you speak? You really spoke, when did you learn to speak human.....you.....demon!!”

Big Head, really learned how to speak human language.

It was something that Ye Qingyu would not even have dreamed about.

“Wuwu, hurts.....” Big Head was nearly kneaded into a ball by Ye Qingyu, bitterly struggling, his throat saying another word.

Ye Qingyu looked at him like he saw a ghost. Only a while later, did he really believe that this fellow really would speak.

It had become a ‘jing\*’.

Could it be that the reason he had eaten so much before, was to accumulate enough energy to evolve after it hibernated?

Thinking about this, Ye Qingyu instantly became enraged.

Bastard.

After eating so much what was evolved was really such a useless ability. Hey, I raised you as a battle companion, why don't you evolve other abilities like flight and burrowing through earth. Leading me on the wrong path is fine, but what is the use of you speaking? Could it be that when I am fighting against enemies, that I have to rely on your mouth to mock the enemy?

This was really a failure of a battle companion.

After Ye Qingyu's huge shock passed, what followed was an even greater disappointment.

But very evidently, the cute Big Head had not noticed the thousands of curses from his master.

With great difficulty, he jumped from Ye Qingyu's palm, pointing at the Snow dragon below. Like he was claiming credit for his accomplishment, he said: "Eat, yummy....."

\*a lifeform that gained intelligence

# Chapter 162: Furious Wen Wan

“Eat, eat your father....”

If it was not for the fact that he did not want to awaken the slumbering snow dragon through making too much noise, Ye Qingyu would really have loudly berated Big Head.

In truth, he was really about to faint from being so angered by this stupid dog.

Could it be that gluttons don't value their lives?

It was such a large snow dragon. If they utilised the time to quickly run away before it awoke, perhaps they could keep their lives. But you still want to go eat, this is just like an old man eating poison --- you resent the fact that your life is so long?

Such a terrifying gale was created just through the air exhaled from the snout of the slumbering snow dragon. One could easily imagine just how terrifying it would be once it was awake.

But what was even more terrifying, was that the place they were situated in right now was the snow dragon den. Once this snow dragon was awakened, the other snow dragons would also be startled. At that time, even if the War God of Youyan Pass Lu Zhaoge himself arrived, he could only weep in face of such an scene. In the underground ice world, the snow dragon was the indisputable king, controlling the power of ice and snow. It was completely invincible in such an environment.

“Run, quickly run.....”

Ye Qingyu grabbed Big Head, turning and leaving.

“Eat, yummy.....” Big Head looked reluctant to leave, looking at the slumbering Snow dragon below. Saliva was dripping from his mouth.

.....

A day later.

Underneath the icy ground.

“Speak, stupid dog, how do you want to die?”

Ye Qingyu had red eyes of rage as he looked at Big Head.

Big Head was crouching underneath the ice wall, his head lowered. He was like a child that had done something wrong, the emotions in his eyes brimming with grievance. His throat emitted noises of whimpering, trying to fawn on Ye Qingyu, and his tail was like a little broomstick that swept left and right.

Ye Qingyu was helpless in the face of such a display.

The entire day, they travelled while lead by this glutton. They were like a headless fly that had entered into a labyrinth. They completely lost all sense of direction – fundamentally they did not even know where they were heading. After consecutively passing by six or seven ice caves with snow dragons, Ye Qingyu could confirm that Big Head did not recognise the path at all. His so called ‘leading the way’, was to bring Ye Qingyu to one after another of different deep pits that the Snow Dragons were slumbering in.

Ye Qingyu was lost.

The position he was in right now, was still at the boundary of an ice cave that was thousands of metres long.

At the bottom of this space, there was a huge Snow dragon that was approximately two thousand metres long with his body coiled, like a mountain range. It was currently peacefully slumbering. As it breathed and exhaled, there would be a horrifying snowstorm forming from his snout, the cold wind exploding out. The two crystal gales coming out of his snout was like two huge ice and snow cyclone that rotated in the ice cave. These gales ultimately emitted left to a huge passageway above .

After continuing to see tens of Snow Dragon, Ye Qingyu was yet still shaken seeing this Snow dragon.

They were just descendants of the ancient divine dragon, and the power of it's blood was no longer pure anymore. They had even lost the ability to fly. But the Snow dragon still maintained the outer appearance of the

divine dragon; there was an incomparable nobility and dignity about them. The snow dragon in front of Ye Qingyu was the largest Ye Qingyu had seen, and the crystal gale from its snout was also the most terrifying. It was perhaps the little leader of this Snow dragon den.

“Since I’m lost, I can’t just wildly run about everywhere. It’s possible that I can run into the territory of the other demon races, then this will be even bothersome!”

Ye Qingyu sat on icy boulder, holding his chin in deep thought.

Within the dragon’s den, the passageways left behind by the movements of the snow dragons were like a labyrinth. After Big Head had caused a complete mess, Ye Qingyu did not even know where he was. To return to his starting point was impossible. Furthermore, the large majority of ice crystal passages were unstable. They were passages left behind by the movement of the snow dragon and hence had a possibility of collapse. But this ice den was the carefully prepared hibernating spot of the Snow dragon. Not only was it stable, one could also avoid the snowstorm in the passageway. It was a decent resting place.

Furthermore, after Ye Qingyu’s previous observations, the Snow dragon was in an extremely deep sleep. The noises of the ice gale that formed from its breathing were like the rumble of thunder. It would not wake from noise. As long as they were careful and cautious, this place was conversely the safest place to stay in.

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu decided to temporarily stay at the boundary of this underground ice cave.

The time before the [Flash formation] in the bronze book could be used again was approximately one month.

Staying here for a month of time, then using flash to leave, seemed to be the best plan from the current situation.

Since he had made his decision, Ye Qingyu was not in a rush anymore.

He took off the White Horse battle armour, storing it within the [Cloud top cauldron] in the Spirit springs of the dantian world. Changing into a

black robe, he sat cross legged on a flat ice boulder and began to train.

“The Snow dragon is the descendant of the ancient dragons, and normally lives within an ice and snow world. Even its breathing can form a snow storm containing the power of cold ice. This is much purer than the snowstorms above ground. To train in such an environment has a definite great benefit for my ice qi yuan qi! And the den of this snow dragon was not chosen casually – much care has been placed on its location. This place is the place with the purest yuan qi of heaven and earth within several thousands of miles.”

After his heart had calmed down, Ye Qingyu immediately discovered the profoundness of this area.

From solely the perspective of cultivation, this was the best place for cultivation.

Ye Qingyu closed his eyes, activating the nameless heart sutra, and began to enter the state.

.....

In the blink of an eye, three days had passed.

Youyan Pass.

Within the Pass Lord's residence.

On the third floor of the military council pavilion.

“What? Mister, do we still not have news regarding patrolling envoy Ye?” Liu Zongyuan was so anxious that he was like an ant on a hot wok, walking back and forth.

After the [Painting saint] Mister Liu had checked the secret documents of the military council, he shook his head with a dim expression.

Liu Zongyuan sat on a chair not knowing what to say. Half a while later, he let out a long sigh.

The normally lively Xinger, had examined all the secret documents that had been reported up. After confirming they had not missed anything, there finally appeared a hard to contain disappointment and emotionality

on his handsome face. He could not help but sigh in his heart: "This fellow, why has he not escaped.....he evidently.....really a trash, I had such high expectations.....this makes me so angry!"

After experiencing the journey to the Explosive Snow glacier together, the three had a deep impression of Ye Qingyu. They also harboured feelings of goodwill towards him.

On that day, after the formation airship left the sealed space formation, they very quickly encountered the reinforcement: commander of the Vanguard, Liu Siufeng. They very quickly returned to Youyan Pas. The precious maps on the formation airship were also safely transported to the advisor division of the army, and this was unquestionably a great contribution by the soldiers. Even the [War God of Youyan pass], Lu Zhaoge personally came to praise Mister Liu and the others. Every soldier on the airship received great rewards. Liu Zongyuan's military rank rose by one, becoming the top twenty military officers of the vanguard camp, and the soldiers under his command doubled.

And as for the matters regarding Ye Qingyu, it was temporarily suppressed.

The higher ups of the army, after hearing Mister Liu and the others descriptions, felt much admiration for Ye Qingyu. Since Mister Liu and the others firmly believe that the newly arrived patrolling sword envoy could escape from the hand of Yan Buhui, they ordered for Ye Qingyu's matter to be temporarily kept secret. Everything would wait for until he returned. At the same time, the strategists of the army also sent out large amount of scouts and experts, patrolling at the edges of the southern edges of the Explosive Snow glacier. Once they heard news about Ye Qingyu, they would immediately come and report back.

But after three days had passed, there was still not any news whatsoever.

Gradually, many people believed that Ye Qingyu had died in battle.

There was not any sort of news coming from the demon race. If he had chosen to surrender, the demon race would definitely announce it to the

entire world at the first instance. Like the time that Yan Buhui had chosen to capitulate, they would use this matter to strike and enrage Youyan Pass.

Mister Liu and the others who held great expectations for Ye Qingyu, gradually began to become less hopeful

“Lord Lu once said, that if Ye Qingyu has not yet returned in three days, then this must be reported to the military.....” Mister Liu helplessly smiled, while at the same time blaming himself somewhat. If at that time he had been a bit more determined, perhaps Ye Qingyu could be brought back. Or at the start, he should not have arranged for Ye Qingyu to take on this mission.

However, right now, it was too late to do anything.

Liu Zongyuan sat dumbly on the chair, speechless for a long time.

A youth, a youth with a boundless future, ended just like that?

Thinking back to Ye Qingyu’s smile and laughter, it was as if everything was just yesterday.

The room entered into a deep silence.

—Until—

Boom!

The door of the room, was loudly struck open from the outside.

The two guards could not block the Wen Wan who was like an enraged bull.

Wen Wan’s eye was red, charging in in. Glaring at Mister Liu, he roared in rage: “Where is he? Where’s Ye Qingyu? Just where did you bring him? hand him over!”

Even though he was known as the [Brash officer], but this was the first time that they had seen Wen Wan lose his composure like so.

Liu Zongyuan quickly stood up. “Officer Wen, you’ve gone crazy. Trespassing in the military council pavilion is breaking the laws of the



army. Quickly go away now, Mister Liu is magnanimous and won't hold you accountable for this. Otherwise...." Saying this, he quickly held Wen Wan back. Liu Zongyuan was helping Wen Wan by doing this. He vaguely knew about the relationship between Wen Wan and Ye Qingyu and could somewhat understand Wen Wan's current emotions. But they could not ignore the laws of the army. The military council was such an important place. If the matter that Wen Wan had entered by breaking the door was made known, he would be in deep trouble.

"Scram, scram!" Wen Wan was enraged like a bull, breakthrough through loudly. Pointing at Liu Zongyuan's nose, he cursed: "Liu Zongyuan, do you mother fucking remember what you promised me at that time? At that time you slapped your chest in guarantee that you would definitely bring Ye Qingyu back safely. Where is he? You returned unharmed and safe, promoted, what about Ye Qingyu?"

Liu Zongyuan felt guilt in his heart. He could not become angry and could only bring Wen Wan outside.

Mister Liu silently sat on the table, not even saying one word.

# Chapter 163: The awakened Snow dragon

Only until Wen Wan had been brought outside by Liu Zongyuan, and the sounds of Wen Wan curses came from far away, did mister Liu let out a sigh. In regret: “A pity, a pity, can it be that Youyan Pass really cannot raise peerless geniuses? In the past it was Yan Buhui, and today it was Ye Qingyu.....Xinger, go prepare, lets go to see Pass Lord Lu.”

“Mister wants to go seem him for?” Xinger asked in a questioning tone.

Mister Liu stood up, saying in a determined tone: “Since Ye Qingyu has died in battle, then the things he can receive must not be less in any way. The military order of the Empire is such that even after death, officers can receive the titles of the empire. Ye Qingyu protected the maps so that they were not lost – this can be counted as a great contribution, I need to tell this to the Pass Lord, and request for them to confer a title to Ye Qingyu. This is his reward, no one can take this away.....”

Xinger hearing this, silently nodded his head.

The army of Youyan Pass, was known as the most elite of the ten great armies of the empire. Lu Zhaoge was also known as the most famous warrior of this generation, but once an army was camped at a place for far too long, there would be all sorts of factions that would appear. There would be all sorts of tricks to rob away military rewards of dead people. This matter was quite common – especially for new people like Ye Qingyu who belonged to no factions or possessed any sort of background. Once they died in battle, it was very hard for them to receive their titles after death.

But this time, from what it seemed like Mister Liu would be unprecedentedly firm on this matter.

.....

.....

Ten days later.

Within the snow dragon den.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position on an icy boulder, slowly exhaling murky breaths of air and opening his eyes.

As his heart willed, the ice yuan qi around him retreated, and the translucent snowflakes tens of metres around him disappeared. The originally fifteen yuan qi silver dragons that were roaring around him, transformed into cold air that disappeared strand by strand into Ye Qingyu's body.

“Who would have thought that the power of fifteen Spirit springs, will belong to myself entirely in such a short amount of time. I can control it fully now.”

Ye Qingyu slowly stood up. There was an indescribable comfortableness in his body.

In the dragon den, there was advantages that made one delighted. The yuan qi of heaven and earth --especially ice yuan qi was brimming. This allowed Ye Qingyu who cultivated in such an environment, to train with half the work and twice the result. Furthermore through this type of training, Ye Qingyu vaguely discovered, that in the cold air that the snow dragon exhaled, there was a incomparably strange energy contained within. This was far more pure then the coldness in the surrounding space. After absorbing this into the body, the benefits were extremely great. the power of his ice yuan qi greatly rose.

An ice crystal constantly transformed in his palm.

This was the power of the ice that Ye Qingyu controlled.。

If it was in the past, after Ye Qingyu successfully [Spirit raised], he could control the power of ice yuan qi. This was enough to instantly freeze a martial artist at the ordinary martial level. But for an expert of the Spirit spring stage, this did not possess enough power to kill them. And right now the cold power held in Ye Qingyu's hand, had a great destructive power even towards the experts at the same stages of cultivation as him. Once this coldness entered into their body, it could instantly freeze their muscles and bones. Even the inner yuan could be frozen or perhaps slowed. It was exceedingly terrifying.

This was the effect after absorbing the breath of the snow dragon.

Ye Qingyu's heart moved.

In his dantian world, fifteen spirit springs roiled and roared.

Fifteen yuan qi dragons reappeared around his body.

Every silver yuan qi dragon represented a Spirit spring. If one carefully examined, one would discover that the outer appearance of each was largely different from the yuan qi silver dragons at the beginning. It was unexpectedly exceedingly similar to the slumbering snow dragon at the depths of the pit. It was a perfect imitation, as if it was a shrunken model of the snow dragon.

“After absorbing the pure ice and snow air exhaled from the Snow dragon, my inner yuan can transform into a snow dragon illusion after it leaves my body. It's power is even greater.”

Ye Qingyu was very satisfied.

After cultivating for tens of days, the inner yuan in his body had already reached a complete stage.

He could begin to consider the next step, to consolidate a [Yuan qi kindling] and excavate the sixteenth spirit spring.

This type of speed, was faster than what Ye Qingyu had originally estimated.

He stood on the icy boulder, surveying the huge snow dragon below.

The massive body was coiled, as if it was a thousand metre tall mountain range. The huge head of the dragon was at the peak of the coil of dragon, and the figure of the dragon would rise and fall as it breathed. The crystal scales on its body would vibrate, translucent and sparkling. It was called the Snow dragon, as if it was really a huge dragon sculpted from ice. An unending snow storm formed from its snout because of its breathing.

A faint pressure, was born in this ice room.

Ye Qingyu silently observed it for a period of time, then made a risky

decision.

He walked downwards from the icy rock, slowly nearing the Snow dragon.

The closer he got to the snow dragon, the denser was the pure ice energy from the snowstorm.

Ye Qingyu decided to excavate the sixteenth Spirit spring so he hoped to absorb more of the aura of the Snow dragon.

Ye Qingyu stopped when the Snow dragon was around five hundred metres away.

This type of distance, was already a comparatively dangerous distance.

According to the information Ye Qingyu had seen in the books, and from some little experiments he had done these days, if he entered into a five hundred metre radius of the sleeping snow dragon, it would begin to sense his presence. If it received provocation, it would instinctively sense the existence of danger, awakening from its dream.

Looking at the snow dragon from so close, and seeing such a perfect life form, Ye Qingyu felt that he was as little as an ant.

He sat cross legged in the ice and snow, beginning to train in the nameless heart sutra, absorbing the aura of the snow dragon.

For any martial artist of the inner attribute ice, this type of aura was a holy object to promote their strength.

Ye Qingyu became immersed in the long process of cultivation.

Big Head at the start lay beside Ye Qingyu, seeming to be guarding Ye Qingyu. But after laying there for several hours, he felt somewhat lonely and bored. First he circled around Ye Qingyu, wanting to jump on Ye Qingyu's shoulder. But he was blocked by the ice crystal gale that encircled around Ye Qingyu. The fifteen yuan qi snow dragons was as if it was real, sometimes appearing sometimes disappearing. Big Head could not get close.

Fifteen minutes later, the silly dog bounced and jumped upward. His

little legs ran several hundred steps away, then he peed on the ground to make a marking.

A while later, this fellow with his nose sniffing, left the ice crystal space. It was unknown just where he went.

Time slowly passed by.

Another three days passed.

There was one more yuan qi snow dragon that encircled around Ye Qingyu.

Sixteen yuan qi snow dragons.

Sixteen spirit springs.

Ye Qingyu's strength, had risen yet again.

He did not awaken from his cultivation state, and still had his eyes closed in cultivation.

The unending aura of the snow dragon was emitted from the snout and mouth of the snow dragon, then transformed into a snow ice gale that was ultimately absorbed by Ye Qingyu into his body.

As time passed on, the ice and snow gale began to gradually show signs of weakening.

One could see the aura that was emitted from the mouth and nose of the Snow dragon king, was not entirely a ice and snow gale anymore. One part of it transformed into a invisible pure energy that floated over, enveloping Ye Qingyu like a transparent ripple. Following Ye qingyu's breathing, it expanded and contracted. Unendingly, it entered into his mouth, his nose, his apertures, his pore, constantly entering into his body.....

Ye Qingyu entirely entered into a strange state.

Time passed minute by second.

A day later.

The snow and wind gale in the ice space finally disappeared.

The air emitted from this snow dragon king had already transformed entirely into pure energy, heading towards Ye Qingyu, wrapping him within.

The snow dragon mirage surrounding Ye Qingyu had already become seventeen yuan qi snow dragons.

Seventeen Spirit springs!

Another spirit spring was successfully excavated.

This type of speed was really universally shocking.

Only he was mad enough to dare to train next to a slumbering snow dragon king. If it was other martial artists at the same level, they would have long ran off as far as they could.

Another day passed.

The yuan qi silver dragons around Ye Qingyu became eighteen.

Eighteen Spirit springs

This type of growth in strength, had already exceeded what common sense could explain.

Ye Qingyu still had not sensed this in the slightest, still within his state of cultivation. The him right now, was as if he had turned into the glutton like Big Head. His body was currently greedily sucking and absorbing the pure aura from the Snow dragon king. Endless, his body was like a bottomless hole that could not be crammed full not matter what.

When the third day came, the yuan qi snow dragons around Ye Qingyu had already become nineteen.

Nineteen Spirit springs.

At this time, five hundred metres away, the slumbering Snow Dragon king slowly opened its eyes.

It looked in question at its surroundings. It seemed to find something was weird – why would it wake up prematurely.

The body of the snow dragon race had a extremely powerful behaviour

pattern. After it entered sleep, unless it felt a huge threat, or a great change in the surroundings, otherwise it would not wake up prematurely.

The massive body of the dragon minutely moved, and uncoiled using a nimbleness that did not seem to belong to such a gigantic body. The huge head of the dragon king rose up without sound. After the Snow Dragon king had evaluated its surrounding, it finally noticed the existence of Ye Qingyu far away. As a life form with extremely strong territorial nature, a killing intent flashed by in the huge dragon eyes at the very first instance. Although its vision had already degenerated by a large degree, but at such a close distance, it could still vaguely see Ye Qingyu.

A tiny little ant, dares to appear in my territory?

And to dare steal the energy of me?

This was just courting death.

Soundless frost, began gathering at the head of the Snow dragon king.

The power of ice and wind instantly gathered.

If he was struck, , Ye Qingyu would most likely turn to powder instantly.

But in the next instant, there was a trace of suspicion in the eyes of the Snow dragon king. As if he had noticed something.

“What? Why is there the aura of the almighty divine dragon in the body of the little ant.....”

The Snow Dragon King stopped what he was doing.

His huge head, slowly neared. It bent it's head near, nearly touching Ye Qingyu's body. The long dragon tassels, encircled around Ye Qingyu's body like rope, as if he was seriously sensing something. The questioning look in it's eyes became thicker and thicker.

A mortal, really had the aura of the divine dragon on him?

Too bizarre.

The Snow dragon had not yet thought of what to do when, suddenly —  
A white coloured lightning came from above him.



“Woof, Woof.....Hou ! ”

The white coloured lightning turned into an adorable little dog. The sound of growling came from his mouth, and his little white milk teeth glistened. He had an countenance that he was about to charge over and tear the Snow dragon into pieces.

# Chapter 164: Increase in strength

“Woof!Woof!Woof!.....”

Big Head madly growled, doing his utmost to put on a fearsome expression. He seem like he was about to rush out and pit his life.

The pressure of the Snow dragon king spread out, and it's massive head slowly encroached towards Big Head.

The comparison of their figures was extremely peculiar, making some people not know whether to laugh or cry. Big Head was not even as large as one of the eyes of the Snow dragon king.

“An.....an even smaller ant?” The descriptive words of the Snow dragon king was somewhat lacking.

Something that was weaker than itself, it would always refer to as an ant or an worm. In it's eyes, Big Head was comparable to Ye Qingyu; that is, an even weaker ant.

“Woof!Woof!.....Big worm, release my master.”

A weak voice came from the mouth of Big Head.

The snow dragon king blinked its eyes. There was confusion in its eyes as it stared at Big Head.

Big Head seeing the massive eyelids of the Snow dragon king moving realised danger. These eyelids were like the two doors of the city gate opening and closing. Therefore, he retreated a step to prevent the eyelids of the Snow dragon king clamping onto him when they moved. He still emitted growls of rage from his throat, the sharp little fangs in his mouth used to threaten the opponent.

“It's the aura of the divine dragon again?”

The Snow Dragon king was even more confused.

Why was it that in the body of the two little bugs, there was the aura of the almighty divine dragon.

He released the dragon tassels uncoiled around Ye Qingyu and slowly

lifted its head.

The Divine dragon, was the deity of the almighty dragon race, the omnipotent ruler. The creator of the dragon race and its protector, the highest level of existence.

As the descendant of the dragon race, there was thin dragon blood flowing in the body of the Snow dragon king. It absolutely could not show any disrespect to the divine dragon. Even if the two little worms in front of him.....eh, no, two little lives, they had the divine dragon aura in them so there were not little bugs anymore. The snow dragon king would absolutely not hurt them.

The almighty divine dragon, had disappeared for far too long a time.

The glory of the dragon race, gradually faded along with the disappearance of the almighty divine dragon. Like the sun setting in the east, the previous days of radiance could not be recovered.

If they were able to find the almighty divine dragon, then.....

As the Snow dragon king thought about this, its heart could not help but be emotionally moved.

In its long and icy life before, it had never been so moved like now.

But very quickly, it felt somewhat tired.

Damn, this was the repercussions of awakening prematurely.

The Snow dragon King felt that his eyelids could not be opened anymore, and a dense tiredness was about to drown him in like a tide. The behavioural pattern that had been created from the long years, could hardly be suppressed even if his heart was excited. His body automatically began to coil up again, coiled like a mountain, then his head once again slowly settled onto his body, entering into a deep slumber.....

“After I awaken, I must go find the almighty divine dragon. I have already remembered the aura of these two lifeforms. By following them, I can definitely find his highness.”

The Snow dragon king thought of this in the last of the moment of his slumber.

Then he entered into a long and deep sleep.

Even the snow dragon king himself, did not know just when he would next awaken next.

Opposite.

The Big Head who had maintained a angry growl and a battle state was somewhat dumbfounded upon seeing this scene.

A short while later.

“Woof, woof.....Big worm, are you scared? Pretending to be dead?” Big Head seeing the big worm retreat was somewhat pleased with himself. Then he saw the Snow dragon king entering into his slumber again and was even more pleased with himself: “Haha, you’re so scared you fainted? You should know how powerful I am.....”

Then he loyally returned next to Ye Qingyu to protect him.

“Sigh, to protect such a scatterbrain master, is really filled with troubles. If not for me protecting him, he should have been eaten by that big worm.”

Big Head lay where he was, a worried expression as he spoke to himself.

Without knowing why, just when danger arrived, he could suddenly freely speak fluently when facing the snow dragon king.

Previously, he could only spit out several simple sounds and words. Perhaps it was because he was nervous before?

After his nervousness had gone, Big Head discovered that he could already fluently and smoothly speak the language of humans. This type of feeling of speaking, was really not too bad.

As he thought of this, he had a type of impulse to shake Ye Qingyu awake who was currently training and speak with him.

Thankfully, he vaguely still understood some common sense of humans

cultivating. He knew at this time that he could not disturb Ye Qingyu, finally managing to suppress this urge.

Time passed minute by second.

Half a day later.

“Ah, why has he not awakened yet? Master training is really boring, I should go around and have a look at other places.....woof, woof, that’s right, I remember a place that I just passed by that seemed to have delicious things....” He suddenly thought of something. Glancing at Ye Qingyu, he left with his tail wagging.

Another half a day passed.

The encircling yuan qi snow dragon illusions around Ye Qingyu’s body finally became twenty.

Twenty Spirit springs.

This was a threshold in the Spirit spring stage.

Normally one could begin to [Spirit raise] after twenty Spirit springs. They could even begin to attempt to breakthrough to the Bitter Sea stage. This stage could be counted as breaking past the early stages of the Spirit spring stage and heading towards the middle stage of the Spirit springs.

The number of yuan qi Spirit springs that could be excavated in the dantian of the human race had never had an absolute number of limit.

Normally, once a martial artist was able to cultivate to twenty Spirit springs, they could attempt to breakthrough to the Bitter Sea stage.

But the large majority of martial artist would not do such a thing.

Because the Spirit spring stage was the most important stage of the martial path.

The decision made at this stage, would decide the limits of their future cultivation.

At the Spirit spring stage, the more Spirit springs one was able to excavate, the greater their future potential.

Ye Qingyu had once seen stories relating to this in some biographies. Legend had it that there was once someone in the ancient times, a human ancestor who had accumulated and prepared well in such a stage. He excavated near a hundred Spirit springs in his dantian world. Only then did he enter the Bitter Sea stage. The predecessor, when he was at the Spirit spring stage could already fight against someone at the Bitter Sea stage. Once he entered the beginning stages of Bitter sea, there was a great apparition caused by his breakthrough. Controlling and grasping two types of true wills of martial path, even famous Bitter Sea stage experts were not his opponent. This was the power of accumulation and preparing well at this stage.

There were some who could not resist however. Only after cultivating to twenty Spirit strings, they chose to enter the Bitter Sea stage early. Their future will always remain in such a stage, and they will never be able to touch the Heaven Ascension stage.

Sometimes, their strength was not even as profound and deep as Spirit spring experts.

Such a Bitter Sea stage expert's strength was just average. They had no particular attributes apart from their longevity being extended to five hundred years of age. Such people was called fake Bitter Sea stage experts.

Ye Qingyu had already cultivated to the twenty Spirit springs stage. In theory, he could already attempt to breakthrough to the Bitter sea stage.

But he would definitely not do this.

The twenty yuan qi snow dragon illusions encircling him, became more and more fearsome and lifelike, as if there really was twenty snow dragons protection him. Amidst the faint roars of the dragons, the snow dragons coiled around Ye Qingyu's arms, shoulder, head and neck, like a snow crystal snow dragon armour. It caused Ye Qingyu to seem incomparably fearsome, faintly divine. It was as if he was magical, as if he had broken out from a painting.

After his strength had reached the twenty Spirit springs, his cultivation

could be counted as encountering a small bottleneck.

Ye Qingyu's body did not absorb the aura of the Snow dragon anymore.

He gradually awakened from the state where he forgot himself.

The moment he awakened, he was taken aback. Then a fiercely delighted expression appeared on his face.

"I really leapt to the twenty Spirit springs stage in one go?"

He really could not believe this.

Several days before entering this state, the expectations Ye Qingyu had at the beginning was just to borrow the aura of the Snow dragon to purify his ice yuan qi.

But he had never imagined that his harvest would be so great. This made him overjoyed at the turn of events.

To have excavated five spirit springs in one breath!

Using inner vision to look at his dantian.

In the boundless desert world, the twenty spirit springs were surging and flowing. There was a trace of coldness, but it was filled with a translucent vitality, nourishing the surrounding desert.。

Around the surrounding of the twenty Spirit springs, the yuan qi springs had already encroached several thousand metres. Forming little lakes roughly a thousand metres wide, they seemed like twenty pearls adorning Ye Qingyu's desert world. This was the difference between a martial artist and a normal person. The normal person's dantian world was just desert, void of all life. And the martial artist through cultivation, gave the possibility of life to the dantian world.

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan.

Within the twenty Spirit springs, there were dragon roars and water soaring to the sky, transforming into twenty snow dragons illusion that flowed towards his limbs and bones.

This was the source of Ye Qingyu's energy.

Every snow dragon illusion swirled within his body, moving as his heart willed, extremely nimble. When his inner yuan had completely filled his body, he could sense a unprecedented strength and power.

“I’ve finally left the early stages of the Spirit spring stage, and entered into the middle stages!”

Ye Qingyu could not but help sigh with emotion.

This could be counted as a great threshold in the martial cultivation path.

Twenty Spirit springs did not just represent a growth in strength, but also the increase in the age you could live to.

If Ye Qingyu’s previous longevity was a hundred, then after entering into the twenty Spirit springs stage, his longevity could be increased to above two hundred.

This is because as the strength of the expert increased, their blood, bones and bone marrow would change fundamentally. Their dantian world would become more abundant, their life force strengthening countless times over. Therefore they could live even longer, where normal illness would not afflict them and normal fire or water could not affect them.

“One Spirit springs, has around ten thousand pounds of force. For martial artists, every Spirit spring that is excavated is a upgrade in the nature of their life force. Twenty Spirit springs at least as two hundred thousand pounds of force.”

Ye Qingyu sensed the power inside his body.

Previously, the information he had saw in many books, he had only understood it through words and had not experienced it using his body.

And at this moment, Ye Qingyu understanding towards the martial power and realm became even more clear.

As his heart willed and his inner yuan activated, twenty snow dragon mirage coalesced around his body, cold air surging.



It was as if he just willed, then the snow dragon mirage could jet out, and devour all his opponents.

Ye Qingyu looked at the far off slumbering Snow Dragon king. He did not know, what had happened when he was cultivating was akin to taking a stroll in the gates of hell. But at this time, he could already sense that he was brimming with the aura of the Snow dragon king. There was no way he could absorb anymore.

He knew, that his time to leave had come.

Step by step, he walked to the top of the ice space.

Every step he took, an ice lotus would bloom at his foot that supported him, slowly raising him up. Cold ice like white jade unendingly formed below his feet, supporting his entire person. Very quickly, Ye Qingyu was transported to the icy boulder at the start.

# Chapter 165: Dragon's tomb

“Big Head? Just where has that fellow ran off to again.....”

On the upper edges of the ice space , Ye Qingyu could not find Big Head anywhere. He had a faint feeling of unrest.

Near this current period, this blockhead had always invited disaster. Could he have ran to a Snow dragon's den, and attempted to eat a Snow dragon?

This was far too crazy and ridiculous.

And just when Ye Qingyu was thinking about this, accompanied by two barks, a white streak of lighting suddenly appeared from the passageway. It sprinted in front of him.

“Eat, yummy, quickly come.....Master, something tasty, woof has discovered something good.....” Big Head sparkled with joy. He possessed a countenance of trying to win favour and his tail was wagging like shooting stars.

In Big Head's mouth, he was holding a white coloured egg that was about the size of his own body. His saliva was dripping on it. Carefully and cautiously he placed it in front of Ye Qingyu then he jumped and hopped around Ye Qingyu's leg, his eyes filled with joy. He had the manner of someone awaiting his praise and reward.

An egg?

This was the snow dragon's den, could it be that this fellow had brought a dragon's egg back?

This is.....dragon.....dr-dra-dragon egg?

A light flashed by in Ye Qingyu's mind. He suddenly realised something.

Then instantly he felt his entire body being unwell.

This fellow wouldn't have really stolen a snow dragon's egg from some place?

Ye Qingyu felt his scalp going somewhat numb.

This was really framing his master.

If this was discovered by the Snow dragons, then both of them added together could not even full the crevice between the furious Snow dragon's teeth.

Big Head still did not know what he had done wrong and was waiting for his praise patiently. Ye Qingyu really wanted to send this thing flying with one kick, then pretend he did not know him at all.

"Yummy, this, yummy, master....." Big Head was dripping with saliva while waiting for his praise.

Ye Qingyu wanted to faint at this instant.

This was a Snow dragon's egg.

It could birth a little Snow dragon.

Eat it?

To waste natural resources like this by eating it was simply a sin.

Ye Qingyu eyes glimmered with light. After a slight hesitation, he ultimately picked up the Snow dragon egg.

The lustrous white oval, was much more heavy than what it seemed like from the outside. It was cold to the hand, satin like texture, as if he was clasping a piece of cold ice. A slight chill seemed to encroach along his arm. Even with Ye Qingyu's strength, he could not help but activate his inner yuan to resist against the attack of this terrifying cold.

But the instant he activated his inner yuan, Ye Qingyu's face changed.

The inner yuan in his body followed along his palm and into the egg. Like the release of a flood, it involuntarily rushed towards the egg of the Snow dragon.

This type of feeling, was as if the Snow dragon egg was automatically absorbing nutrition from him.

At the same time, Ye Qingyu felt a faint life force emitting from the Snow dragon egg.

This type of life force fluctuation, seemed to bring with it a faint reliance and familiarity.

Ye Qingyu was startled and immediately stopped activating his inner yuan. His palm moved away from the Snow dragon egg.

Everything returned to normal.

“This egg is slightly strange, it is already showing signs of life. Could it be that the little snow dragon inside is about to break out?”

Ye Qingyu had a strange sensation.

If this egg could really give birth to a little Snow dragon, then this could absolutely be counted as a hard to encounter fortune.

For any human expert, to be able to raise a snow dragon as a battle pet, was an incomparably rare matter.

The strength of the Snow dragon in battle was a factor that did not need to be mentioned. But no matter what the dragon kind, to have one as a battle companion represented power, mystery and nobility within human society.

He turned his head to look at the Big Head taking credit for his achievement.

Could this fellow really be my lucky star?

To really have helped me stolen a battle companion with limitless potential.....

Haha, this fellow must have felt he was far too trash, and felt too ashamed so after his conscience kicked in, he found a powerful battle pet as compensation?

Ye Qingyu was furtively delighted.

But who would have guessed Big Head would open his mouth and say a phrase: “Eat, yummy.....”

Ye Qingyu had the impulse to lift both his hands in surrender.

Fine, a glutton was a glutton in the end. In his eyes, the use of the

anything was to eat. He would not consider any other factors. It seems like he should not have too many expectations for him.

Ye Qingyu with the snow dragon egg at the centre of his palm, began examining it.

The egg was slightly larger than a human's hand. It was sparkling and translucent, as if it was an oval sculpted from the highest quality jade. It emitted a silver white mist, it was as if one could see deep inside or as if one could not see through it. Ye Qingyu did not know whether it was him over thinking it, or he had mistakenly saw something, but Ye Qingyu felt there was something moving rapidly in the egg.

“Woof, woof. That's right, I remember, Master, Little Nine\* saved you yesterday.....” Big Head said, hopping and jumping.

[tl: \*Sounds like Little dog in Chinese. ]

“Oh.....” Ye Qingyu replied automatically without paying much attention, still examining the snow dragon egg. Then he realised something, staring at the glutton, and said in surprise: “Save me? Little Nine? Who is that?”

“Little Nine is myself.....” The silly dog said in a coy manner.

Myself? Your referring to you?” Ye Qingyu said in shock.

The silly dog began excitedly nodding his head, his head going up and down like pounding garlic.

Ye Qingyu instantly became interested: “Aren't you called Big Head? I've long given you a name, how has it became Little Nine? That doesn't sound good, Big Head sounds better. Change it back.....”

Big Head was astonished for a moment, lowering his eyebrows in gloom, then let out a snort. “Woof, woof, I don't want that. Big Head sounds so bad. My name is called Little Nine.....Master, from now on, woof is called Little Nine.”

Ye Qingyu heard this and nodded his head. “Fine, fine, as you wish, Little Nine.”

Little Nine became excited again. “Thank you Master. Woof, woof, I saved you yesterday.....”

“That’s right, where did you find this egg?” Ye Qingyu interjected in Little Nine’s words, pointing at the snow dragon egg in his hand. Seriously asking: “Is there still any left?”

“I discovered it in a very cold ice hole.....that’s right, master, I saved you yesterday.....” Little Nine said excitedly.

“Oh, I know. Bring me over to have a look.” Ye Qingyu’s eyes glimmered, his mind completely occupied with Snow dragon eggs.“

“Fine Master, I’ll bring you over.....” Little Nine excitedly wagged his tail, turning his body and heading towards the outside passageway. As he jumped and hopped excitedly he said: “I only found these bird eggs by accident....That’s right, master, I was just saying to you, I saved you yesterday.....”

“Bird eggs? Did you eat several already?” Ye Qingyu broke apart Little Nine’s words again.

He suddenly felt that to bring this glutton in a Snow dragon egg was a wrong decision. If there really was a nest of Snow dragon eggs, most likely it would be nearly destroyed by this glutton. This was really like realising a great wolf into a flock of sheep, just how many sheep would remain alive?

As they turned to leave the ice space, Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the slumbering Snow dragon king.

That’s right, the time to quickly leave had come.

He did not know just when the Snow dragon would awaken. Since he had already absorbed enough of the aura of the Snow dragon with his inner yuan explosively rising to twenty Spirit springs, he had no way of increasing it anymore in a short time. There was not a need to take risks anymore.

“No, I haven’t eaten yet.....” Little Nine led the way, his little tail wagging adorably. Turning his head to say: “That’s right, master, Little

Nine saved you yesterday.....”

Before he had finished.

There was a slipping noise, then suddenly he slid down.

Ye Qingyu quickly chased after to look. There was a steep incline that extended hundreds of metres downwards. The icy surface was incomparably slippery, as if it was often polished, without the slightest trace of dust or grime. It was metres wide, seeming like a passage, and the two walls on the side was also extremely polished. Little Nine with his little bottom on the ice chute, excitedly barked: “It’s down, it’s down here.....”

Ye Qingyu activated the White Horse wings, following downwards.

Gradually, a strange ice aura began to emit from down the passageway.

Ye Qingyu sensed the bizarreness.

“Below is the place where the Snow dragon eggs are stored? A very pure aura of Snow dragons.....”

He was able to sense, that the aura emitting from below then was even more stronger and purer than the aura emitted by the slumbering Snow dragon king.

As they headed downwards, the ice chute suddenly stopped and a flat space appeared.

Little Nine madly sprinted in front.

Ye Qingyu quickly followed after.

The pure snow dragon aura was richer and purer here. It was nearly at the Xiantian ice snow aura of the Snow dragon This made Ye Qingyu even more curious.

Approximately a hundred metres after, the ice slope changed it’s incline again. This time it was nearly completely vertical, as if it was a huge ice well in front of them.

“Eh, what is this?”

Ye Qingyu activated the wings of the White Horse armour, gradually descending. He suddenly saw, that on the walls of the ice well, there were strange marks left by the chafing of something. If one examined in detail one could see that there were snow dragon scale after snow dragon scale embedded on the walls. Every dragon scale was about the size of shield, bright and resplendent, as if it was created through superlative craftsmanship. It brought with it a faint Snow dragon pressure that was not least in any way to the previous Snow Dragon King.....

“These dragons scales, must be from a powerful being in the Snow dragon race.”

Ye Qingyu understood in his heart.

He did not know how many thousands of metres he descended when he heard the loud barks of Little Nine.

Then suddenly Ye Qingyu felt his eyes brightening.

An entirely new huge underground ice world appeared before Ye Qingyu's eyes.

When he saw the things in this little world, Ye Qingyu was instantly dumbfounded.

“Heavens, this is far too incredible. What am I seeing.....this is dead Snow dragons? Massive dragon corpses?”

Ye Qingyu was fossilised.

There were dragon corpses everywhere.

True dragon corpses.

Everywhere the eye could see, there was one after another of Snow dragon corpses that formed small hills within this huge ice world. Every dragon corpse was at least ten thousand metres long, tens of time larger than the previous Snow dragon king. These dragon corpses silently lay on the icy ground, as if they were a towering mountain range. There was also a strange splendour that emitted from these dragon corpses. The entire space was resplendent, incomparably bright. If not for the fact that there



was not any fluctuation of life in this space, Ye Qingyu would definitely believe that this was the slumbering place of countless huge Snow dragons.

These huge dragons that had died, their expressions was very peaceful.

The pure aura of ice and snow was throughout the air. But it did not cause the atmosphere of this little world to become gloomy and cold. Conversely, there was a sacred atmosphere, as if this place was a holy ground.

“Could this be the dragon tomb of legends?”

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised something.

# Chapter 166: The cemetery of the Snow dragons

It was said in legends, that the dragon tomb was the cemetery of dead dragons. There were corpses of the kings of the dragon race within.

From ancient times, the dragon race's name was tantamount to power and mystery. In the God and Devil race, the dragon race was once the only race able to resist against the two great ruling races out of the thousand great domains. Furthermore, it had always retained the upper hand. Even the Fiendgods dared not incite battle with the dragon race easily. The dragon race was the race that inherited the bloodline of Heaven and Earth. They were naturally born with power and divine abilities. The thicker their blood, the greater their power. As the God and Devil era ended, the glory of the dragon race was also blown away by the wind and rain.....

After the era ruled by the Fiendgods, hundreds and thousands of other races began to rise.

The human race was one of them.

For many races, the body of the dragon was crammed full with treasures. Even a dragon scale, could form a sharp weapon.

Living dragons, because they were far too powerful, had no way of being hunted. Therefore many human gazes fell on the corpses of perished dragons. But the corpses of dead dragons was extremely rare. Under such conditions, the dragon tomb that contained thousands, tens of thousands of corpses of dragons was regarded as one of the most sacred treasure trove by experts of every major races. It was an existence that lifeforms of countless eras wished for in their dreams.

In the long river of time, there had once been precedents of such things happening.

Legend had it that in the upper ancient ages, there was one a human race faction. Because they had failed in their fight for territory, they were

chased down by their enemies. With nowhere else to go, and not wanting to die at the hands of their enemies, they forced themselves to trespass in a forbidden area. This was an area of certain death. Who would have guessed that they did not die, but rather coincidentally discovered a dragon tomb belonging to the dragon age. Bursting out from the brink annihilation, they destroyed all their enemies and began to expand. They finally managed to create a powerful empire, named the [Dragon's Fang divine empire].

The influence of the [Dragon's fang divine empire] surged. Not only did it rule over everything in one domain, it's influence stretched over several domains. It had once ruled over the entire fate of several domains, completely matchless. In the entire history of the human race, the [Dragon's fang divine empire] was a super power that could rank in the top five.

From this, one was able to see the value of a dragon's tomb.

It was hard to blame Ye Qingyu for being so shocked that he could not even utter a word.

He forced himself to stay calm, calm, calm ,and calm yet again.

His fiercely beating heart, finally slowly settled back to normal.

Ye Qingyu activated the white horse wings. One hand cradling his chest, the other hand holding Little Nine, he flew above the dragon's tomb, carefully observing.

After a short while, he descended before the corpse of a huge dragon.

“So this place really was the cemetery of the Snow dragons. But the cemetery of the Snow dragon is far too different compared to the true huge dragon tombs in legends. The Snow dragon is after all only the descendants of the divine dragon. The glory of the dragon race has been lost already. The Snow dragons can only be counted as a slightly strong demonic race right, and this Snow dragon cemetery, was not really as packed with treasures as the legendary dragon tombs.....”

Ye Qingyu looked at the huge dragon corpse in front of him.

After the death of a snow dragon, it's body would not rot. Instead, it would slowly transform into ice.

The corpse sleeping here was a Snow dragon that had died naturally because it's life had reached it's end. The figure was extremely humongous, and the dragon scales on its body had already turned into ice, translucent and sparking. Vaguely, one could see the bones inside. But namely because the corpse had already partially turned into ice, there were not too many uses or value for the corpse. Furthermore, the Snow dragon was not a true dragon, so the scales, bones, veins, head and fangs did not have an extremely high value.

There was a peaceful aura emanating in the cemetery of the Snow dragons.

Ye Qingyu was affected by this atmosphere. His greed could not be roused.

Without knowing, there was a faint sorrow in his heart after arriving in such a place. Seeing the Snow dragons slumbering here one after and another, there was a hard to control sorrow that originated from his very bones. This emotion completely occupied Ye Qingyu's chest. It was as if he saw his own race, subordinates and friends slumbering here.

"The current situation of the Snow dragons is not ideal. Furthermore it is not a race that likes to gather money, wealth, treasure or armours and weapon. Therefore in this Snow dragon cemetery, there are not any objects of value apart from the ice and snow dragon corpses.

Ye Qingyu had a look all about again, and largely came to such a conclusion.

If he chose several dragon corpses that had not yet begun transforming into ice, perhaps he could obtain some rare materials by flaying the skin and pulling the tendons, knocking out their fangs and drawing out their marrow,. If he brought it to the human world, it could be exchanged for significant wealth. But, due to the holy atmosphere in the dragon's cemetery, and the strange emotions in his heart, Ye Qingyu gave up on doing this in the end.

Respect for the deceased should be held as the priority.

Even the glutton Little Nine, did not mutter with words of yummy or the like. He only silently lay on Ye Qingyu's shoulder. Unexpectedly, he seemed to be afflicted with emotions, like a melancholy little girl. Lustrous tear after lustrous tear sparkled in his eyes. The instant they fell into the ground, they turned into ice pearls.

Ye Qingyu took out that Snow dragon egg.

"Little Nine, just where did you find this?" Ye Qingyu asked.

Little Nine let out two barks, then with a whoosh, he rushed out from Ye Qingyu's shoulder.

Because his speed was extremely quick, the little delicate figure left a chain of silver coloured mirages in the air. Constantly jumping, like an bouncing comet, he hopped in front.

Ye Qingyu followed behind.

The largeness of the Snow dragon cemetery far exceeded Ye Qingyu's imagination.

As they travelled over ten thousand metres, the terrain was getting lower and lower.

The surrounding dragon corpses began to show greater and greater signs that they were turning into ice.

The terrain was like a gigantic funnel. And on the surrounding ice slopes, there were snow dragons coiled that were already half frozen.

From the degree of how much they had turned into ice, one could determine that the time of death of these Snow dragons were at least tens of thousands of years ago.

"Their ages are far too distant. And this place is so mysterious. The North ground demon race has occupied the Explosive Snow glacier for so many years but they really have not discovered this underground Snow dragon cemetery. From the surrounding environment, it seems like no outsider have ever came here before....."

Ye Qingyu evaluated in his heart.

“Woof, Woof, woof!” The chubby little figure of Little Nine stopped, turning towards Ye Qingyu. “Master , it’s here, we’re about to arrive!”

In front of them was a flat icy plain.

It was the end of the ice slope heading downwards.

Two ten thousand metre long gigantic corpses that had completely transformed into ice appeared in front of them.

These two dragon corpses were coiled above this ice plain on the left and right, as if they were two sacred holy protectors. Their bodies that were hundreds of metres tall, divided a divine passageway on the icy plain. Their translucent snowy white jade were nearly transparent. A radiance emitted from their corpses. This caused this ice plain to be as bright as day time in a divine country. The divine passageway was as if it was a passageway that headed towards everlasting light.

They were two Snow dragons that had at least died for over a hundred thousand years.

Compared to the normal snow dragons, it’s external appearance was even more like that of a true dragon.

Ye Qingyu could even faintly feel a true dragon pressure from emanating from their bodies.

“That’s not right, these are no longer normal Snow dragons.....could it be that there are true dragons in front?”

Ye Qingyu’s heart, once again began fiercely thudding.

Once a true dragon corpse appeared, this was a matchless fortune of this world.

As they walked forward.

It was another two Snow dragon corpses that were even larger. These bodies had completely transformed into ice.

Their expressions were peaceful, laying on the ground in slumber. Their

bodies emitted a sacred bright light. The pressure of the dragon race was even greater.

Even if they had died hundreds of thousands of years ago, but the sensation they gave off. was as if they were still alive. As if they could casually open their mouth and swallow a person. As if they had the possibility of bellowing , then soaring through the skies, travelling through the nine heavens and surveying all life below.

As Ye Qingyu neared them, he felt as if there were the pressure and weight of mountains hundreds of thousands pounds heavy that burdened him. Every step he took needed a great deal of energy.

He most likely could not have come here if he only had fifteen Spirit springs for his cultivation.

If it was a normal expert of the ten Spirit springs and under, in such an environment, they would absolutely explode with the pressure coming off the corpses of the dragons.

“These snow dragons are life forms that are already dead for hundreds of thousands of years. Then when they were alive, the dragon bloodline running in their bodies must be much more concentrated than the current Snow dragons. It is nearly akin to true dragons.....it seems like the theory of the books in White Deer academy are not wrong. The reason that true dragons does not appear, is that the bloodline of true dragons has become thinner and thinner with the slow passing of time.....This is also the tragedy of countless strong lifeforms. In the past, even the Divine race and the Devil race, could hardly escape from this process of deterioration.”

Ye Qingyu could not help but sigh.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that there was something attracting him, summoning him in front of them.

Approximately fifteen minutes later.

They had finally arrived at the heart of the ice plain.

A lofty and majestic snow and ice summit appeared in front of their

eyes.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look.

The ice peak was tens of thousand of metres high, like a sharp sword that stabbed into the upper regions of this space. An absolute sharp killing intent like that of a blade unsheathed was present on this snow icy peak. Ye Qingyu neared several steps, and only felt pain on his skin, as if was being sliced apart by a divine weapon.....

“On the icy peak, there is an great ominous object!”

Ye Qingyu had seen some ancient text in White Deer academy. He knew what this ominous killing aura represented.

“Woof, woof, it’s here.....” Little Nine bounced over, standing at the bottom part of the icy peak, near a ten metre tall icy boulder. Turning his head to look at Ye Qingyu, he barked: “It’s here, I found that great bird’s egg here.....”

Ye Qingyu looked over.

Underneath this small icy rock, there was nothing at all, without anything like a nest.

Little Nine had discovered the dragon egg from here?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat suspicious. He went over, closely inspecting, but still did not discover anything of note. When he lifted his head, he casually swept his gaze pass an icy rock by him. There seemed to be something sealed within the ice rock. As he closely looked, his heart suddenly madly thudded. His gaze stared fixedly at this ice rock, without budging in the slightest.



# Chapter 167: Ice sealed coffin

How was this an icy boulder.

This was evidently an ice coffin!

A fantastic inner and outer coffin that was in a sealed state.

Outside was the outer coffin, and inside was the inner coffin.

The outer coffin was to preserve the inner coffin, and the inner coffin was to preserve the corpse.

This strange ice inner and outer coffin was transparent on the outside. It was roughly made, as if it was a natural piece of rock, Unevenly matched, there were some minute cracks but this did not affect its outer appearance at all. On the outer surface layer there was something like thin snow covering it. At first glance, it seemed like a natural ice boulder. It was hollow on the inside. Through the chinks in the shallow snow, one could see an even smaller half transparent ice coffin inside.

The half transparent coffin was around thirty to forty feet long, and twenty feet wide. It should have been made from the hands of a grandmaster. There were carvings of flying ledges outside and nine dragons that were swallowing pearls. Its appearance was splendid and magnificent, with green jade tile and curled lines and patterns all over. There were lustrous cauldrons to stabilise the corners pressing down from the top. It was a seven star huge coffin with bells hanging on it, and layers upon layers. The first look gave someone the impression that this coffin was exactly like a half transparent exquisite small scale white jade palace.

This inner coffin was built with a magical material that was like ice but not ice, like jade but not jade.

Ye Qingyu surveyed the outside ice coffin, not able to recognise the material instantly.

Of course, this was not the thing that shocked Ye Qingyu the most.

What made Ye Qingyu's brain completely blank, was because within

this coffin, there was a girl that seemed to be human.

Although this coffin was only half transparent, but with Ye Qingyu's vision, he was able to see the rough features of this human girl.

He was only able to see her reclining inside the coffin with her head pointing towards the south and her feet pointing the north. Her pitch black hair was thick like the clouds. She was wearing a snow white palace dress. Her hair was split apart behind her head, black hair that glistened with light and radiance. The facial features of this girl were clearly distinguished, her features matchlessly lucid and elegant. Her skin was like white jade. Her eyes were slightly closed, her pitch black eyelashes long and narrow. She had a slender figure, wearing a wide palace dress that covered her two legs. Her hands were cradling her abdomen, left hand clasping the right. Her delicate jade like little hands were like little shallot sprouts. Her fingernails were slightly pink, her wrists like snow, and on her right wrist there was a jade bracelet.....

The more Ye Qingyu looked, the more he felt that the beauty of this girl was matchless. She was truly the most beautiful person he had ever seen in his life.

Although she only silently lay in the ice coffin, but the sensation she gave Ye Qingyu, was as if he was looking at the most beautiful painting in the world. His gaze could not be broken away.

“Under the heavens, there was such an outstanding, magnificent incomparable girl.”

Ye Qingyu felt that his gaze had entered into that ice coffin. Even his soul was about to sink in.

At this moment, he stood there dumbly, gazing at the female fairy in the ice coffin. It was hard to pull himself away.

At this time——

“Woof, woof, woof.....Wu, Wu, Hou!”“

From his ear came the low and clear bark of Little Nine.

Ye Qingyu suddenly fiercely turned his head, his mental state clearing. Then he suddenly felt dizziness, as if he was lacking in physical energy, as if he had just experienced a great battle.

“There is something strange about this ice coffin!”

He immediately understood.

Although Ye Qingyu was at the age where one was young and vigorous, but even if she was a peerless beauty, he should not lose his composure like so. The only explanation for this was that this ice coffin had a strange power to affect one's mental state. Unknowingly it had affected Ye Qingyu's thinking, with his consciousness nearly torn apart.....This was an extremely direct and terrifying method that affected one's heart.

“Thank you, Little Nine.” Ye Qingyu lightly patted Little Nine on the head.

The little fellow began jumping up and down excitedly, jumping from his shoulder and circling around Ye Qingyu.

It was very strange. The voice of this little fellow was able to break apart the strange power of the ice coffin at the crucial moment. This made Ye Qingyu have a higher opinion of this glutton.

After praising Little Nine, Ye Qingyu turned his head to continue observing the ice coffin.

He gathered his concentration, activating his defences. He did not stare at the white clothed fairy anymore, and only looked at the ice coffin from the corner of his eyes, wanting to find some clues.

As long as he did not stare at the white clothed girl, his attention would not be drawn.

“On the ice coffin, there are not any characters or diagrams.....this is far too strange. Why is it that in the cemetery of the Snow dragons, there is a human coffin?” Ye Qingyu could not understand this even after thinking it over and over again. He only felt a enormous mystery surrounding everything. “This girl seems to have already been dead for a very, very long time, but her body has not rotted. Why is it like this, just

what is her identity?” Who placed her here into the cemetery of the Snow dragons after her death?”

Puzzle after puzzle flashed by in Ye Qingyu’s brain.

One point he could confirm was that the background of this girl must be extremely terrifying.

Mortal worlds paid particular attention to feng shui\*. And as for the martial world, they would also pay particular attention to fortune, Spirit qi and yuan qi. The energy of heaven and earth was vast and mysterious. Even countless top experts could not truly say that they had fully and truly understood the secrets behind the power of heaven and earth. But those with intelligence far surpassing their peers were able to observe the stars, the veins in the earth, the ripples in yuan qi, mountains and rivers etc., using these to discover some special locations that were either known as ominous or fortune locations. Such places, had different effects if used for cultivation or for interring.

[tl: \*[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feng\\_shui](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feng_shui) ]

Some martial cultivators, their bodies were powerful but they want to possess an immortal body. However, it was difficult for their cultivation to reach an everlasting state, so they had to take short cuts.

The greatest short cut, was borrowing power.

Borrowing the power of heaven and earth.

It was rumoured that in the upper ancient ages, there were various sects that specialised in investigating the secrets within Heaven and Earth. Among them, there was a super power that was called the [Earth Master sect].

The Earth Masters, of the [Earth Master sect] could pry into the secrets of the Earth. Using the power of humans, borrowing the force of the world, they create places of fortune or ominous places, changing the yuan qi in Heaven and Earth. They could even go against heaven and change fate, borrowing destiny from heaven and earth. If some experts of the martial path were buried in the locations they had prepared, their bodies

could be maintained for tens of thousands of years without rotting, retaining a shred of life. When their chance arrived later, they could reawaken again, returning to the living world and living another life. Such a method could be said to steal the natural way from heaven and earth. It was extremely mysterious and peculiar.

And throughout the ages, people had always maintained the study of terrain, human cultivation and heaven's destiny.

Very many great character of top factions and sects, was incomparably glorious when they were alive that wanted to be interred in places of fortune after they perished.

To be interred like this, one was able to retain a shred of life. This enabled them to silently wait for their return and to reincarnate once again.

Such as the previous emperor of Snow country. It was said that he was interred alive. Even though the Royal family of the Empire announced that he died, that the old Emperor had soared as a dragon to the heavens. But the rumours in the public said that old man Huangbing had not died. When he was alive, his cultivation was deep and unfathomable. When his life reached its end, using the power of the Empire, he created a terrain of fortune, interring himself within and retaining a shred of life. He waited for the moment several eras later when he could awaken again, living yet again so that he could once again rule over this Empire.

But Ye Qingyu guessed, that even if the status of the Emperor of Snow country was even more noble, it would not be as elegant and gracious as the Snow dragon cemetery.

The Snow dragons was a powerful race in the demon race. For tens of thousands of years, this cemetery was their territory. This was unquestionably a terrain of fortune.

And this Snow dragon cemetery, was absolutely not a little cemetery. On the way here, he had already witnessed dragon corpses that had been frozen for who knows how long. One could determine, that it had existed for at least a hundred thousand years. It was a location that had been

discovered and protected by the Snow dragon race for hundreds of thousands of year. Normally speaking, outsiders could not enter. But someone conversely placed a ice coffin inside, and the Snow dragon race did not discover this.....

The history of this girl, must be frightening to hear.

Could it be when she was alive, she was an extreme expert?!

Ye Qingyu was full of curiosity. But it was a pity that this ice coffin did not possess any clues whatsoever.

“This Snow dragon egg, was really obtained by you from this coffin?” Ye Qingyu asked Little Nine.

Previously Little Nine had said, that he had discovered the dragon egg from here.

“Here, it should be here.....” Little Nine jumped down from Ye Qingyu’s shoulder, his chubby little head pushing through underneath the ice coffin.

Ye Qingyu had a careful look, and could not help but be taken aback.

The bottom of the ice coffin unexpectedly had a fracture. It was the width of one palm and the length of six palms, as if heavy weaponry had hacked a section apart. And around the fracture, there were tight and clustered white lines that encroached around the bottom of the ice coffin. Behind the fracture, between the inner and outer coffin, there was a bird nest like ice nest. One after another ice line intersected, it was like an ice bird next, a remarkably alike ice snow bird nest.

It was empty within the ice snow bird nest.

“Woof, woof, it’s here.....” Little Nine nodded his head at the ice snow bird next in delight, then looked at the Snow dragon egg held in Ye Qingyu’s hands.

So this Snow dragon egg, was obtained from within the ice coffin.

No.....It was possibly not a Snow dragon egg.

Ye Qingyu looked at the oval white egg that was like white jade in his

hands. Right now, he could not be sure whether it was really a Snow dragon egg. Because he had never heard before, that the Snow dragons were a life form that would create nests like birds, and because the ice coffin was far too mysterious. The things obtained from the coffin, must be even more mysterious. Perhaps this egg, had some relation with the white clothed fairy inside the ice coffin.

But he could be sure of one thing; there was only one egg in the ice snow nest.

Ye Qingyu's plan to find even more eggs had completely fallen flat.

Once his gaze moved away from the ice coffin, Ye Qingyu's gaze once again focused onto the top of the ice peak.

The closer he neared, the more he could sense the faint ominous killing aura that was seeping out from the top of the ice peak.

For a solitary peak to suddenly appear in the centre of the Snow dragon's den, this was already something strange. And the ominous aura contained within the peak made this even more strange. With the behaviour of the Snow dragons, they would absolutely not allow something that contained such a great ominous will appearing in their pure and holy dragon cemetery.....

Ice coffin.

The corpse of the white clothed fairy.

Ice snow nest.

Mysterious white egg.

Ominous peak.

One after another of inexplicable matters appeared at the same time, at the same location. This really was unimaginable.

Even if Ye Qingyu was more clever, he could not guess at the reasons behind this.

Therefore he did not think about this anymore.

Because the previous feeling that was like a family member summoning him had indistinctly appeared again. At the summit of the ice peak in front of him, he could see above him that there was a silver coloured flame flickering.....



# Chapter 168: True Will of the Martial Path

On the top of the ice peak, there was unexpectedly the light of a fire burning.

The power of this flame was in complete contrast towards the great ominous atmosphere of the ice peak. But they appeared at the same time despite this.

“Let’s go up and see.”

Ye Qingyu’s white horse wings activated and he soared into the air.

Little Nine tightly bit onto Ye Qingyu’s shoe, also flying upwards.

The pressure of the surrounding space was extremely terrifying. Twenty yuan qi snow dragon mirage coalesced madly around Ye Qingyu, his entire inner yuan activated to the extreme. The White Horse wings released its brightest radiance. After spending twenty breaths of time, they finally arrived at the top of the solitary ice peak.

He lightly landed at the top of the summit.

“This is.....”

The area of the peak was around that of a field. It was glossy like a mirror, as if someone had specially grinded and polished it.

And at the very centre of the ice peak platform, there was a nine layered ice crystal altar, just like a pyramid like structure. From top to bottom, the ice was sparkling and translucent, without the tiniest hint of impurity. The colour was entirely transparent; one was able to see the other side by standing there. The height of the altar was only one metre and a bit, and at the very top of this ice altar, there was a jade stone the size of a thumb. It emitted a silver fire that was currently burning.

The white jade stone trembled slightly. It was unknown as to just what it was.

And the silver flame above it, moved and quivered like quicksilver. Without sound, it throbbed and pulsed, extremely peculiar.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense the sensation that he had previously felt, that familiarity, that feeling as if he was being summoned. It namely came from within this flame.

The closer he neared, the clearer the sense of familiarity became.

Such a feeling, was as if there was a family member with the same bloodline that was currently in this peculiar silver flame, beckoning Ye Qingyu over.

Ye Qingyu neared step by step to this miniature ice crystal altar.

But for such an altar to appear here, there must be something strange.

Within Heaven Wasteland domain, an altar signified an abnormal power.

Ye Qingyu dared not be careless.

He carefully observed the surroundings of the altar, but did not discover anything special.

Finally he came to the altar before his eyes, inspecting the crystal flame and the rough jade stone.

He extended his hand. When the flame and his hand was at the distance of half a metre, he still could not sense the slightest hint of heat at all.

“This silver flame is peculiar.....it’s rumoured that in Heaven Wasteland domain, there are ten strange flames. They are flames, but they are the strangest flames within the world. Such as Lotus purifying flame, Apocalyptic flame, Divine will Spirit flame, Executioner immortal heart flame, True era flame and others. These are extremely rare flames that possesses strange power. The power of these strange flames are far too terrifying, that even Fiendgods need to fear them. They belong to one of the strongest powers in this world.”

Ye Qingyu silently pondered.

He had once seen information regarding this in the books of White Deer academy. Especially in a specialist book that introduced all the attributes of the strange flames of Heaven Wasteland, its form and the areas where

they were formed. Ye Qignyu had once specially looked over these in detail. Added to his photographic memory, these were remembered remarkably well.

The silver flame in front of him seemed to produce no heat at all. It did not stop throbbing soundlessly, as if it was floating mercury in the air.

From just the outer appearance, it seemed to belong to one of the strange flames.

But Ye Qingyu could not be sure, just what kind of strange flame this silver flame was.

“Could it be the Divine will spirit flame? The colour is similar, the temperature is also similar. But the ancient books have said, that as the divine will spirit flames burns, there are definite peculiar sounds that accompanies it. Like the singing of deities resounding throughout the air, causing one to want to bow down and worship.....could it be the Executioner immortal flame? That’s also not right, the ancient book also said that as the executioner immortal flame burns, there are definitely apparitions appearing along with it. In the air ,there will be drip after drip of immortal blood appearing.....”

Ye Qingyu recalled all the attributes of the ten strange flames, but could not reach any sort of conclusion.

He thought for a while, then took out a formation curved blade from the [Cloud top cauldron].

This blade was a weapon belonging to the previous master of White Horse tower. The workmanship of the weapon as well as the material of the weapon was top class. A hair would be cut cleanly if it was blown lightly on the blade. It could be classed as a divinely sharp weapon.

Ye Qingyu held this curved blade as the tip of this blade slowly extended to the silver flame.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu’s expression completely changed.

A extreme surge of cold, instantly exploded from the flame.

The instant the curved blade touched the flame, the body off the blade was frozen into powder.

And at the same time, the originally soundlessly throbbing flame, suddenly became restless, as if it was a slumbering huge dragon that had been woken accidentally. The silver flame followed along the blade like madly encroaching lightning. What followed after was an vast consciousness, like an mountain avalanche that was released from this jade white stone. It instantly crammed the cemetery of the Snow dragon full.

Ye Qingyu was completely flooded and overran by this vast and solemn consciousness. His entire person could not move, as if he had turn into stone.

“Crap.....this is.....could it be the consciousness of an extreme expert?”

When the martial way had been cultivated to its peak, the wills of those experts could become divine. Those extreme experts could brand their will in the air or perhaps in some special tools, eternally preserving their will. Even if they perished, their will and consciousness would still exist in this world. The people of later generations, in front of a martial will like this, were like ants falling into the ocean. It was impossible to resist against. If they resisted against such a will, they would instantly be crushed into powder.

Ye Qingyu was locked in place by this mysterious martial will. His mouth could not speak, his eyes could not move and he could not take any action whatsoever.

And the silver flame that was encroaching on the curved blade, instantly burned this formation curved blade into ashes. Then it began spreading to Ye Qingyu's hand.

A clear and cold sensation came over Ye Qingyu's palm. Then he lost all his feeling in his limb.

And as the silver flame spread, the flame slowly devoured Ye Qingyu's arm, shoulder, abdomen, head.....

Finally, Ye Qingyu's entire person was enveloped in this silver mysterious flame.

His body, completely lost all sensation.

But Ye Qingyu's consciousness was still clear and awake.

This feeling was as if his spirit had left his body.

Ye Qingyu was shocked to discover, that he was still able to see things.

But the angle of which he saw things, became incomparably strange.

He was able to see that within the snow peak standing alone in the cemetery of the snow dragons, he was able to see the ice altar beside him, he was able to see a figure completely swallowed by that silver flame, it's figure becoming indistinct. The light of the silver flame became larger and larger, ultimately becoming tens of metres high, as if it was a human shaped pillar.....

He was still able to see Little Nine madly howling and barking, as if he had gone crazy. He ran circles around the figure swallowed by the silver flame. There were several time that he wanted to jump in the flame, but was rebounded by this silver flame.....

Without knowing why, the silver flame could not burn on the body of the glutton Little Nine!

Ye Qingyu felt at this moment, as if he was outsider, like a god overlooking the mundane world. Using the cold glance of a spectator he looked at everything that was happening on the icy peak.

That person that was burned by the silver flame, that was about to turn to ashes by the flame lfrom the formation curved blade, that person was evidently himself, but why would he see this happening from such a perspective? Could it be that he was already dead, and his soul was floating through the air, so he could.....

Ye Qingyu could not explain what was happening to him currently.

At this time, a voice, sounded from beside his air—

“Human?”

Ye qingyu was surprised to hear these two ancient syllables.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then instantly understood the meaning behind these two ancient sounds.

These type of syllables, should belong to the early human civilisation language of the God and Devil era. Through the passing of several eras, such an ancient language was now rarely used by people. Only people that had dealings with ancient texts, formation masters, pill masters, or perhaps metal masters were able to know such a language. Today, the human language used for communication had long changed.

Ye Qingyu had spent a large amount of time learning the ancient characters and language for the [Titled Fiendgod chart] bronze book. Therefore such a thing, as long as it was not too esoteric, was not a problem for him.

Without waiting for Ye qingyu's reply, more syllables were spoken.

"For it to be a human.....could it be that this is Heaven's Will acting behind the mysteries?"

It was as if the voice was talking to himself.

Ye Qingyu had already slightly understood at this moment.

This voice, was emitting from the mysterious martial will that completely swept the cemetery of snow dragons like the tide of the ocean.

"Young man, no need to be afraid....." The ancient voice that had undergone great changes, once again sounded. It was still the language of the God and Devil era that had long disappeared from this world. Ye Qingyu could not hear it very clearly, but he could largely understand the rough meaning. The voice continued, asking: "What year is it in the era of the Three Sovereigns?"

Era of the Three Sovereigns?!

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

After the God and Devil Age, the three Sovereigns of the human race rose, supporting the human race and preventing it from being destroyed

in those chaotic times. After that, it was the five Emperors that struggled for the peak, becoming the most powerful in the entire world. They brought about the prosperity of the human race. Then the five Emperors disappeared, the human race multiplied and reproduced. Such continued for several eras. And today, the age of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors were already extremely far away. The people thought of the era of the Three Sovereigns and Five emperors as legends. For this voice to ask what year is it in the era of the Three Sovereigns, could it be that he was someone from the era of the Three sovereigns?

The era of the Three Sovereigns, were already millions of years ago from the current time!

Without hearing Ye Qingyu's reply, the voice remained silent for a while, as if realising something. Asking again: "Could it be that the age of the Three sovereigns has already passed? Then right now, what year is it?"

Ye Qingyu suppressed the huge shock in his heart, saying: "Elder, the era of the three Sovereigns, is already something that occurred six million and six hundred thousand years ago. Today it is the era of the Human Sovereign, this is the explosive snow glacier at Heaven Wasteland domain....." Using the most simple words, he tried to describe the passing of the ages briefly. The language of the God And Devil era was extremely rusty when spoken by him. Ye Qingyu had great difficulty speaking it, and he did not know whether the opposing party understood his words or not.

A very long silence.

Then it was a very long sigh.

Within the sigh, there were far too many emotions contained within.

"Your strength is so weak, why have you been able to come here....." The voice was as if he was speaking to himself. Then an extremely vast and powerful consciousness swept out, as if he was sensing everything around him. Three or four breaths later, he had evidently already understood something. With huge shock in his voice: "The world, has

already changed like this.....For the Ice Throne to deteriorate to such a state, the fall of the protectors, just what has happened.....why is there the bloodline of the divine dragon running in a youth of the human race.....”

There were too many cryptic syllables, Ye Qingyu could only understand a little.

Evidently, the voice was currently sighing over the changes of the world.

But right now Ye Qingyu cared about the situation he was in right now. Within his vision, his shell of a body had completely been swallowed by the silver flame. Indistinctly, he could see his muscles and bones emitting radiance, as if they were ice. Evidently, he was transforming into ice. Like the snow dragon kings that had perished for tens of thousands of years, his body was turning into ice. This was extremely peculiar.

As if he could sense the panic of Ye Qingyu, the voice sounded again—“No need to panic young man. Being swallowed by the Supreme ice flame is your fortune. You have the bloodline of the divine dragon, only through this could you come to this place.....Meeting me is your destiny. The Supreme ice flame cannot destroy you.....This is the will of heaven and earth.....your fate has arrived.....Young man, I will pass on the [True Will of the Sky dragon] of the ten great wills of the martial path], to aid you in assimilating the Supreme ice flame.....”

As the voice finished.

An powerful will, like a sharp sword, pierced into Ye Qingyu’s consciousness and spirit.



# Chapter 169: A strand of consciousness from millions of years ago

At that instant, acute and terrible pain made Ye Qingyu feel as if his soul was quaking.

If was as if there were invisible cutting blades that was currently tearing his soul into pieces bit by bit.

“Don’t let your thinking run wild..... little mud person, condense your mind and accept my will!”

The voice suddenly became passionate, like the morning bell or evening drum that sounded within Ye Qingyu’s mind.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu could not care about this special vision that he was having. He was no longer looking at the figure being devoured by that silver flame. Instead, all of his thoughts and mental power were used to adjust to that power piercing into his consciousness. Such a feeling, was as if there was someone forcefully stuffing countless information into your brain, nearly cramming your brain full till it exploded.

“True Will of the Martial path, the key word is true.....in this world, there are ten great true will of the martial path. Every one of them has power akin to laws. By understanding and grasping these true wills of the martial path, you can completely crush opponents at the same realm of you, as well as other miraculous attributes. There is the blood of the divine dragon in your body. I will pass on the [True Will of the Sky Dragon] to you, this is the one that is most compatible with your body. Use your heart to comprehend, you will forget the pain. Once you have completely grasped the [True Will of the Sky dragon], the power that you can wield will greatly exceeded countless top experts. And when you have comprehend to the extreme, the power of the ancient dragons will appear again.....”

The voice constantly sounded.

The power of this person was so great that it made one tremble. Ye

Qingyu had no way to resist, and could only oblige in whatever the opposing party wished to do.

Thankfully, this mysterious person did not seem to hold any ill intentions.

He forcefully inserted a mental energy of his will into Ye Qingyu's spirit but this would not cause too great a harm to Ye Qingyu's spirit.

This entire process, seemed to have only lasted a single instant.

In the time of a spark, everything was complete.

“Good. The seedling of the [True Will of the Sky dragon], have already been planted. Whether you can comprehend it, and how much you can comprehend it, all depends on yourself.....”

The voice sounded again.

And then the acute pain gradually faded like the ocean tides receding.

Ye Qingyu felt that there were far too many things in a brain. But if he carefully sensed, it was as if there was nothing there at all. This was an extremely special sensation, as if something was slowly combining with his body and blood. This was like the fleeting flash of an idea; the flash of light that disappeared was so far away yet so close. But ultimately, it was hard to grasp in his hands.

“True Will of the Sky dragon.....True will of the Sky dragon.....”

Ye Qingyu did his best to comprehend.

Ye Qingyu had once read in ancient texts legends pertaining to the ten great true wills of the martial path. But for him at that time, this was something too far away. He had once not dared to think too much about it.

In the hundred year history of Snow Empire, it was said that there had never been anyone who had truly comprehend the true will of the martial path. Even if it was top level experts like the [War God of Youyan Pass] Lu Zhaoge, even he had never managed to touch upon the true will of the martial path. In the history of the human race, those existences that were

able to control the true will of the martial path ultimately were able to traverse to the state of extreme experts. They became mountain peak after mountain peak in the martial world. Others that followed behind them could only look upon them with admiration, with no way to surpass such existences.

Therefore this was an extremely rare opportunity for Ye Qingyu.

He did his utmost to capture this minute mysterious sensation in his spirit.

This sensation, was the seedling of the [True Will of the Sky dragon] according to the mysterious voice.

He must grasp it.

If he missed such an opportunity, even the heavens would be furious.

He did not even care at all about the state of his flesh body. His entire will and consciousness, was immersed in this type of forceful comprehension.

Everything that happened outside, already had nothing to do with him.

At this time even if apocalyptic thunder exploded next to him, he would most likely not notice.

Time passed minute by second.

The extremely powerful surging martial consciousness in the Snow dragon cemetery, finally began to gradually settle down.

Within the air, the currents also slightly changed.

A faint yuan qi, slowly began gathering. It finally transformed into a human shaped mirage that appeared next to the body of Ye Qingyu which was completely covered by the silver light.

This person was taller than normal people, his figure burly and muscular, as if he was a little giant. He was wearing a ancient battle robe with a golden helmet. There was a special dignity and authority surrounding him. As if he was an emperor that had traversed through time and space. But it was a pity that his figure was like smoke and cloud;

it flickered and faded like a reflection on top of water. He was extremely like an illusion. There was not the slightest fluctuation of life from him and there was not the faintest hint of energy coming from him. It was as if a slight wind could completely blow apart this smoke that had been gathered together using yuan qi, making him disappear from heaven and earth.

“Supreme Ice flame.....Form!”

He looked at Ye Qingyu’s corporeal body. Accompanied by a low shout, a strand of smoke came from his body that entered into the burning flame.

The next instant, the madly throbbing silver flame immediately stopped shuddering.

The ice flame froze like ice.

The shell of Ye Qingyu’s flesh body could temporarily be preserved.

As he finished doing everything, this illusion like figure finally shifted his gaze, dumbly looking into space.

“Several millions years have already passed. The body of the human race, has already transformed far too greatly. With the desolate passing of time, the human’s path has already undergone great changes. My close friends have already disappeared from the world, why was it that I was awakened.....”

“The battle in the past, I thought I had already died.....”

“The era of the three Sovereigns has finished. This world still has humans, does this means that the battle of the past, could it be that the human race has won? Fine, if there are still humans alive, then I can rest assured. The blood of the Fiendgods were not spilt in vain.....”

“That youth said, that today it is the era of the Human sovereign, and that this is the Snow country of Heaven Wasteland domain....These are completely unfamiliar terms. After millions of years, my era, has already ended....”

The smoke like figure mumbled to himself, looking down at his hands.

He was namely the owner of that ocean like martial consciousness.

He was namely the person that had spoken to Ye Qingyu.

Tens of millions of years ago, he had once been an authority that had completely suppressed an area, ruling over the fate of one era. He had once been one of the few people who were able to climb to the pinnacle. One of his thoughts, could completely change heaven and earth. It caused tens of millions of lifeforms to bow down in worship, caused countless alien races to shiver and tremble. His fame had once travelled through numerous domains, his spoken words were like the law. He was once only half a step from eternal, but he still had perished in that great calamity.....

Several millions years later, the last strand of his consciousness that existed awakened.

In the past, a strand of his consciousness was enough to slaughter he strongest lifeforms of the world in an instant.

Right now, the strand of his consciousness no longer possessed its former strength. Even for him, there was no way to prevent the great deterioration and passing of time. He sensed that his strand of consciousness was beginning to disappear drop by drop, dispersing like smoke. He sensed the strange energy of this world. He knew, that the era belonging to him, had already completely disappeared.

“Why is it like this? Just what has happened? Why can I not sense any of the auras of my old friends.....the old friends in the past, could they have really perished?”

He asked himself in a small voice.

The three Sovereigns of the human races, just what kind of Supreme existences were they? Even if millions of years had passed, would they have really disappeared?

And as for those fiend gods of the other races. One of their thoughts was enough to extinguish stars, how could they perish?

And as for those great enemies of the other races in the battle of the past. Those lifeforms were near immortal. The passing of tens of millions of years, could it really destroy them?

He did not believe this.

The things that had happened in the past, were far too terrifying. Such terrible enemies existed, that even the three Sovereigns of the human races and the ancient ancestors of the other races could not fight against. How could they be destroyed by the mere passing of time?

Just what has happened in these years?

It was a pity, that everything had already no way to be known.

He knew, that the he of that time had already died in battle.。

Right now, somehow a strand of his consciousness had awakened.

For a peerless expert like himself, the awakening of a strand of consciousness, represented reincarnation.

“Could it be after that I died in battle, there has been some expected change that occurred? The three Sovereigns somehow preserved a seed of my energy, allowing me to have such an opportunity today?”

He was deep in thought.

Suddenly awakening from his long slumber and the passing of time, everything had changed.

Everything that was familiar to him had disappeared like smoke. Even one that was a powerful and as strong as him, could not help but feel a spell of confusion and regret. A loneliness arose involuntarily that enveloped him.

He wanted to go in search for the answers to his questions.

Those old friends and enemies in the past, just where had they gone.

But first, he needed to recover his strength and cultivation.

His gaze, fell on the flesh body that had been frozen by the Supreme ice flame.

“This youth to have met me today, could be counted as his destiny. Could it be that fate as already arranged everything. His body is weak like smoke, but his body is flowing with the blood of the divine dragon. No wonder he can enter deep into the Ice throne, and was not destroyed by the seals outside, to come here.....This Supreme ice flame is compatible with his body. Since I have aided him already, why not help him another time, for him to assimilate with the Supreme ice flame.....”

The will of the illusive smoke like figure acted.

Another white yuan qi, splitted from his figure, directly entering into the solidified Supreme ice flame.

The originally peaceful Supreme ice flame, once again began surging and boiling.

Then with a boom, it transformed into tens of thousands of little sparks, as if every one of them was a lively little spirit, that excitedly flowed throughout the air. Finally tens of thousand of them flowed into the flesh shell of Ye qingyu's body, entering into his skin. Drop by drop, they entered into Ye Qingyu's body, finally disappearing.

One could see on the surface layer of Ye Qingyu's skin, there was quickly a layer of faint frost that formed. His eyebrows and hair was covered by silver frost, as if he was a person made from ice.

Then what followed after was that this layer of frost rapidly melted, and Ye Qingyu's skin turned into a lively bright red.

But after another ten breaths, this layer of frost once again appeared, enveloping Ye Qingyu's body, dyeing his eyebrows and hair white.

Then it melted.

Then the silver frost once again formed.

Such a process continued for tens of time.

After the last time the silver frost showed, and the skin became red with vitality, the Ye Qingyu that had no aura like a corpse, finally slowly opened his eyes.

His expression was taken aback, lowering his head to look down at his body and at the surrounding environment.

“I’m fine.....my spirit has returned to my body.....I am well again?”

Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

“Woof, Woof Woof!” Little Nine crazily rushed over, intimately licking Ye Qingyu’s face. “Master, you just turned into a devil. You were burning up, and your hair and beard also turned white. The fire was rumbling, I thought you were going to explode....”

You are going to explode.

Ye Qingyu felt that this glutton did not know how to speak too well.

But after seeing from his strange perspective the Little Nine who madly rushed to protect him, he felt somewhat moved in his heart.

“Young man, your comprehension is very exceptional. It makes me shocked..” the smoke illusion next to him opened his mouth with a smile.

Ye Qingyu only just noticed the mirage next to him.

“You.....Elder, it’s you! You are....” After being shocked Ye Qingyu instantly was able to discern that the voice of this figure was namely that mysterious voice.



# Chapter 170: A person with no fate

Ye Qingyu was not an idiot. He knew the reason that he was able to avoid this disaster, had something to do with the so called divine dragon bloodline in his body. But it also absolutely had something to do with the aid of the smoke illusion figure in front of him. At least this mysterious existence had helped him to obtain the [True Will of the Sky dragon] of the ten great true wills of the martial path. He could already be counted as his benefactor.

Therefore his attitude towards him was so respectful.

“How much of the [True Will of the Sky dragon] did you managed to comprehend?” The face of the illusive figure had a faint smile.

Ye Qingyu closed his eyes, quietly sensing, then deeply breathed out a breath of air. “I am ashamed, I have only approximately understood a tenth....”

“A tenth? Not bad. I thought that you needed at least several years of time, before you can begin to grasp even a part of the essence.” The illusive figure nodded his head, saying: ” To be able to come to the depths of the [Ice throne], you must be an exceptional person, with great fortune. You are definitely not normal. Since ancient times, this has always been so.....are you the descendant of the dragon human race?”

Dragon human race?

There was such a race?

Ye Qingyu was blank for a moment, then shook his head: “I am the of the human race of Snow country, from a common background. I am not of the dragon human race.”

“Snow Empire\* human race?” The illusive figure was blank for a short moment, evidently not knowing about Snow country at all. “Since you are not of the dragon human race, why is there the bloodline of the divine dragon flowing in your body?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

Previously when he was enveloped by the Supreme ice flame, the mysterious person had seemed to say there was the bloodline of the divine dragon flowing in his body. But in truth, Ye Qingyu did not know just what was it that he was referring to. The so called divine dragon bloodline, he had never heard of before. He himself did not know at all, why there existed such a bloodline in his body.....It seemed somewhat ridiculous. He had considered his family background, his parents. They were all normal humans, why was there the bloodline of the divine dragon in his body?

“You don’t know yourself?”

The illusive figure frowned, greatly surprised.

Ye Qingyu said respectfully: “My experience is still too shallow. I have never heard of the existence of the dragon human race. Furthermore.....”

He recounted his background and history in detail.

Without knowing why, in front of this mysterious holographic figure, there was a sensation of trust invoked in his heart. He did not hide his background in the slightest as a result of this.ο

The illusive figure after hearing this, shook his head: “That’s not right, that’s not right.....you should not be of that background.....what is not right.....”

He seemed to have fallen into deep thought and pondering.

Ye Qingyu did not know what the mysterious person meant by not right. He only silently stood there by one side.

The glutton Little Nine that was laying on his shoulder, constantly sniffed in the direction of that illusory silhouette, his little nose twitching. In his large and glistening eyes, there was a trace of a question. Why could his eyes clearly see this illusive figure, but his nose could not smell the slightest trace of his scent? As if there was nothing in front of him. Just what kind of ghost like thing was this, that it could fool his nose?

After a period of time had passed, the illusive figure shook his head.

There was still a look of question on his face. Hesitating a little: "Little friend, if you don't mind, could I see your fate?"

Fate?

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Some ancient texts had mentioned fate before. But this was far too ridiculous and nonsensical. In these several past eras, the thing called fate had long been proven to be a divergent path. Nearly no one cared about such a thing any longer.

But Ye Qingyu still nodded his head.

This mysterious person came from the era millions of years ago. Perhaps it would be different.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had agreed, the eyes of the mysterious figures suddenly exploded with two rays of golden light, shining onto Ye Qingyu's body.

Everywhere this strange light of his eyes passed by, Ye Qingyu felt his body had suddenly become transparent. Layer upon layer of his muscles, flesh, bones, marrow, organs could be seen. This scene was incomparably bizarre.

"Why is it like this?" The more the mysterious illusive figure surveyed, the more he was shocked. "You.....you don't have a fate. You fundamentally should not be a person that should exist in this period, you.....I have never seen such a fate before, too strange, too strange.....could it be a Supreme existence has shrouded your fate?"

Ye Qingyu hearing this, could not make head nor tails of this.

The difference of strength and history between the two people were far, far too great.

After a long while, did the gaze of the mysterious figure retreat from Ye Qingyu. Bringing with him a slight regret, he shook his head: "I can't see through your fate. If not for a Supreme existence helping you cover the track of your fate, then there is only one possibility left....."

“What possibility?” Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and asked.

“Perhaps you are the reincarnation of some Supreme existence, therefore I cannot see through you.” The mysterious figure said.

“Reincarnation? In this world, does reincarnation really exist?” Ye Qingyu asked in shock. Reincarnation had always been spoken of, and was known from ancient times. But he had never heard of before, that someone had really been reborn. There had never been a similar precedent. Even those extreme experts who was famous throughout the past and had shaken eras, ultimately their accomplishments were helpless in front of the battering of the rain and wind. They were not able to able to remain alive until now.

“Perhaps there is, perhaps there isn’t.” The mysterious figure once again sighed. “Since the beginning of the God and Devil age, just how many peerless and mighty people have existed. just how many peerless and mysterious cultivation techniques has been passed on. Perhaps they could pierce through the mysterious heaven and earth and break away from the shackles. Reincarnation, perhaps could be. In this world, everything is possible.”

Ye Qingyu hearing this was greatly shaken.

Similar words, coming from someone else’s mouth, perhaps would be ridiculous nonsense. But coming from the mouth of this mysterious illusive figure, then it represented a great likelihood.

“Although I was not able to see your fate, but I was able to see some other things on your body.” The mysterious figure continued to looked at Ye Qingyu, asking: “Little friend, what sect and faction do you come from? Why are you cultivating in a cultivation technique millions of years ago?”

A cultivation technique belonging to a million years ago?

Ye Qingyu heart was shaken. Instantly he realised, the battle techniques that he trained in, came from the [Titled Fiendgod chart]. Could it be that the illusive figure had seen through this?

That’s not right!

Ye Qingyu shook his head at this possibility.

The things that he obtained from the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart] were battle techniques. They were moves used in battle. They could not be counted as cultivation techniques, then this represented.....

As he thought to here, Ye Qingyu's heart began fiercely throbbing. He had always cultivated in the nameless breathing heart sutra that his father had passed on. Could it be that this was a heart sutra that existed in the God and Devil age millions of years ago?

How was this possible?

His own father, was only a normal martial artist of Deer city. Why was it that he knew a heart sutra that belonged to an era millions of years ago?

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt his brain in complete chaos.

He suddenly realised, regarding to his own parents, was there something area that he did not know?

"I came from White Deer academy. The heart sutra that I cultivate in, has been passed down through my family....." Ye Qingyu did not hesitate, recounting the background of the heart sutra that he cultivated in. He even retold in detail the methods and contents of the breathing cultivation technique. He wanted to confirm and uncover the secrets of this mysterious cultivation technique from this mysterious figure, and to discover the true history of this nameless heart sutra. If so, perhaps he would be able to obtain even more information regarding his father?

The mysterious figure hearing Ye Qingyu speaking his words, lowered his head in thought for a while.

"Natural and free, skilful but seeming to be clumsy, a mystery within a mystery, the intricacies cannot be put to words. This is a true cultivation technique for the the great way. The gate to many wonders is all held within. This seems to be normal from the outside, but even in the age of the Three Sovereigns, this was a technique of the natural Great way. It could change fate and go against heaven.....such a heart sutra, perhaps it

is able to change destiny. I am only able to vaguely grasp a little bit of the beginning. I need to cultivate for a long time, to be able to comprehend the intricacies within.....not simple, really not simple!"

"Could elder you determine, just what sect did this heart sutra come from?" Ye Qingyu asked in a rush.

"It does not belong to any sect or faction. Its aura seems to indicate it belongs near the God and Devil age, but it does not belong within the God and Devil age. I can be sure of one point, this is a cultivation technique created by someone after me." The mysterious figure remained silent for half a moment before saying again: "Furthermore, this heart sutra is only suitable for you to cultivate in. Only then is it effective. Other people cannot cultivate in it. Even if they forcefully do so, they will not receive any benefits and waste their time in vain."

"What? This.....how is this possible?" Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

A cultivation technique that was only suitable for him?

This was really far too universally shocking.

In this roiling world, there were ten thousands of cultivation techniques. Even if there were cultivation techniques with harsh requirements where the vast majority could not cultivate in, but as long as they had the required body type, the small minority could still cultivate. He had never heard of a cultivation technique that only allowed one person to cultivate where no one else could cultivate in it.

"Because only a person with no fate could train in this cultivation technique. From ancient time to now, everyone has a fate. Apart from you." The illusive figure said.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He slowly began to be unable to explain everything that he had seen today.

Could it really be that his background, was really special, that even he himself was not aware of it?

But....

Ye Qingyu's mind was completely blank.

At this moment, he suddenly remembered the words that his father said before he died, that he reminded Ye Qingyu of--

"If there is a day, that your strength is able to enter into the Bitter sea stage, then go to the sacrificial altar of the Imperial family of Snow country. Go there and find a object. If you are able to find that object, then you will understand everything. If you are unable to enter into the Bitter Sea stage in your lifetime, then become a normal person instead...."

These were the last words of his father before he died.

At this moment, these last words, became unprecedentedly clear in Ye Qingyu's mind.

If previously he had felt that these words were just intangible words of his father that he said because of his last unfulfilled wishes, then right now Ye Qingyu fiercely realised the meaning behind these words. It was very possible, that in the altar of the imperial family of Snow Empire, there was a huge secret hidden within that was waiting for he himself to uncover.

Ye Qingyu hated the fact he could not go immediately.

But after a slight consideration, the last words of his father was that he must wait until he was at the Bitter Sea stage before going. This prerequisite requirement must be extremely important.

As he thought of this, he deeply bowed to the illusive figure. "Thank you for elder for showing me the way. My gratitude is endless."

"Perhaps I have already said something that I should not have said. Millions of years have passed, could it be that the schemes of those fellows could be arranged even until today...." The mysterious figure sighed, then as if he had also thought of something. "I should leave. Sleeping for millions of years, my era has already ended. But I still need to go outside, to see if I am able to find some matters of the past. Little friend, the path of Jianghu is long. We will meet again if we are fated!"

# Chapter 171: Returning to Youyan Pass

“Elder, I still have matters I want to consult with you....” Ye Qingyu said in a panic.

But the mysterious figure in front of him had already transformed into a wisp of green smoke. As if ascending towards immortality, he disappeared within the air.

It was as if nothing had ever appeared.

“This piece of [Beiming archaic jade] you are not to bring away. I will leave a strand of consciousness within, to suppress the [Dragon fang submerged in blood], to prevent the killing aura from seeping to the outside world, and causing harm to the lifeforms of this area....Little friend, your future cannot be measured. Look after yourself. If a day of disaster arrives, the hope of your empire perhaps will land on you.....Before leaving, remember you must go back using the path you came. Although the ice throne has decayed, but it still has the power to instantly kill. If not for the fact that you have the divine dragon bloodline, you would have long died halfway....Little friend, we'll meet again. Haha, haha!”

The last words of the mysterious person could be heard.

His laughter resounded throughout the air.

By the time Ye Qingyu had more questions to ask, that illusory figure had already completely left.

Little Nine sniffed everywhere, suspicion on his face.

Ye Qingyu originally still wanted to ask, that just who was the person in the coffin below the solitary snow peak. But right it was already too late.

The illusive mysterious figure did not mention the mysterious white clothed female immortal sealed within the ice coffin. Perhaps there was no relation between the two.

Once again returning in front of the ice crystal altar, his gaze fell on the jade the colour of white mutton fat. This was very possibly the [Beiming



archaic jade] the mysterious person had mention, but as for the so called suppressing the [Dragon fang submerged in blood], just what did he mean?

On the ice crystal altar, apart from this white jade, there was not any sign of existence of the so called dragon's fang.

This made Ye Qingyu feel something was strange.

"It's time to leave. This time following the glutton Little Nine into the depths of the cemetery of the Snow dragon's is somewhat brash and ill-considered. I was nearly killed by the [Supreme Ice flame]. If not for the fact that the mysterious figure had suddenly awakened, most likely right now I would be turned into powder....."

Apart from feeling fortunate, Ye Qingyu also felt somewhat shaken.

Thankfully the benefits he received was extremely great.

"[Supreme Ice flame], come!"

As his heart willed, a burning silver flame appeared floating above his palm, throbbing and moving like a sprite.

This type of flame, was not within the ten strange flames. It's classification was even higher.

Although it was said to be a flame, but its foundation was a ice mist that had reached extreme cold. It seemed to be similar in form to flame. No matter what the material, the instant it touched this ice flame, it would instantly turn into powder from the extreme cold, like that formation curved blade. The effect of its complete destructive power seemed as if it had been burned by flame. But in reality, it was not fire at all.

Possessing the power of such an ice flame, it was tantamount to Ye Qingyu grasping a forbidden power.

Once the Supreme ice flame had been cultivated to its extreme, in legend it was said that it could annihilate gods and destroy devils. Slaying dragons were no longer just words. It was one of the most terrifying

powers in this world. Although Ye Qingyu had only just begun to control it and he could not use it in a familiar fashion, but if he grasped the opportune moment, most likely even experts at the Bitter Sea stage had a possibility of falling in Ye Qingyu's hand.

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously. With a jump, he directly jumped down from the solitary ice peak mountain.

"Woof?" Little Nine tightly clenched onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder, madly barking, his pupils immediately turning wide: "Master? You've gone crazy? What matter can you not think through, you can quickly say it to Little Nine?"

This glutton thought Ye Qingyu wanted to commit suicide.。

Within the air, there was originally a frightening pressure present. Ye Qingyu's descending figure became faster and faster, friction occurring in the air. Around his body, there were a series of sparks, as if his entire person was really a meteor descending from the Ninth heavens. His entire person was completely shrouded by the light of this fierce flame, his body transforming into a streak of fire that directly headed towards the ground.

These was true flames!

Little Nine madly sharply screeched, his little paws tightly holding onto Ye Qingyu's hair.

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously, and a strand of energy from the [Supreme Ice flame] seeped out, causing this throbbing flame around him not able to near his body at all.

There were less than ten metres from the ground.

There was a clear and angry long dragon roar sounding from within Ye Qingyu's body. Twenty snow dragon yuan qi encircled around his body, as if each and every one was alive. The dragon's head, dragon's claw and dragon scales was extremely distinct and clear, as if it was fundamentally alive. This was no longer illusions of before he had previously absorbed the aura of the Snow dragons. These were true ancient silver dragons, possessing singular and majestic power. Ye Qingyu was interlinked with

them, as if layers and layers of divine dragons were coiled around his body in defense. Instantly they stalled Ye Qingyu's body, the gravitational force of the fall gradually lessening, and he quickly descended to the ground.

True Will of the Sky dragon!

There was the aura of the Snow dragons in Ye Qingyu body, and he had received the enlightenment of the true will of the Sky dragon. Under the activation of his yuan qi, his yuan qi transformed into ancient snow dragons, its power powerful and matchless.

Although he was still at the twenty yuan qi Spirit springs stage, but he could not longer feel the slightest amount of pressure from the surrounding space. He could come and go as he pleased.

"Woof woo, you scared me to death. Master, next time before jumping off a mountain, could you first give me some notice." Little Nine covered his heart, panting with his tongue held out. He had the complete countenance of someone scared to illness, his little eyes staring at Ye Qingyu resentfully.

Ye Qingyu only laughed uproariously.

"We should leave here. As for this Snow dragon egg....." Ye Qingyu brought out the white oval shaped egg and carefully considered for a while.

Finally, he made his decision.

" This time we have mistakenly trespassed into the cemetery of a Snow dragon, we are already greatly fortunate and have gained a huge harvest. We can't be too greedy.....So called out of fifty, only forty nine are used in divination. Heaven and earth is originally not complete\* . Every matter cannot be perfect, everything perfect cannot be matter. The way because of perfection cannot resemble\*\*. The so called fortuitous event, will expend my personal fortune. One person's fortune is limited, if I expend all my fortune, I will definitely suffer. As the saying goes, don't take things too far, I cannot be too occupied with profit and loss. Leave the Snow dragon egg behind here....."

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu placed the snow dragon egg back under the ice coffin and into the ice crystal bird's nest.

The silly little dog Little Nine blinked his large eyes. He looked at Ye Qingyu's action in confusion, not able to understand the reason.

"Let's go."

Ye Qingyu held Little Nine, activating the white horse wings and flew towards the outer edges of the Snow dragon cemetery.

After ten breaths, he suddenly had a sensation in his heart. Turning his head to look at the far away solitary ice peak, suddenly a streak of lightning flashed by through his brain. He suddenly realised something.

"This solitary ice peak....."

Within Ye Qingyu's mind, he was extremely shaken.

He suddenly understood what the [Dragon fang submerged in blood] was in the words of the mysterious person.

If one carefully observed from far away, one would discover that this solitary ice peak was not an ice peak at all. It was a broken apart blood red dragon's fang, stabbing into the centre of the Snow dragon cemetery. It was only that the surface was covered by ice and snow, and once was not able to see it directly.....Heaven's this was a dragon's fang that was ten's of thousands metres long!

NO wonder from the beginning he could feel a faint shred of ominous aura emitting from the ice peak.

This was the ominous aura coming off from this dragon's fang.

And as for why it was called the dragon fang submerged in blood?

Just what kind of dragon's mouth, would possess such a gigantic fang?

As he imagined according to the scale, Ye Qingyu's heart could not help but throb in palpitation. Such a leviathan like dragon if the scale of the tooth was to be believed. It's mass was far too humongous.

According to the mysterious person, he needed to leave a strand of

consciousness to suppress this dragon's fang. Could it be that it could come alive yet again?

Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that he today had interacted with a gigantic secret that originated from the great ancient age. A piece of history that had been sealed away by dust, had demonstrated the tip of its iceberg to him himself....there were far, far too many things hidden within this Snow dragon cemetery.

"I need to forever hide the events that occurred here today. The things that happened here, I must not let anyone else know."

Ye Qingyu made his determination. Bringing Little Nine, they left rapidly away from the Snow dragon cemetery.

.....

.....

The southern boundary of the Explosive Snow glacier.

Very early in the morning, a violent snow storm swept through the air.◦

Boom!

A huge noise.

The hundred metre surface layer of ice suddenly cracked and ruptured, icy rocks flying everywhere.

A figure soared in the air, breaking free from the confines of the ground.

"Mm, I've finally came out...."

The figure was namely Ye Qingyu.

As he saw the faintly showing dawn, the radiance of the sunlight made him drunk with happiness.

He had been confined in the Snow dragon den for over a month. Right now deeply inhaling the fresh air of the earth surface, Ye Qingyu could not help but feel greatly invigorated. There was a type of sensation like he had been reborn.

The silly dog Little Nine also deeply breathed in the cold air, a

extremely greedy and drunken countenance!

To prevent himself from encountering the experts of the demon race, Ye Qingyu continued to head south within the surface layers. Using the power of the [Supreme ice flame], he burned through the ice layers, like an ice dragon constructing a den. After travelling tens of kilometres, the position he was in right now was already at the boundary of the Explosive snow glacier. This place was the area controlled by both the demon race and the human race. He no longer needed to worry about encountering existences like Yan Buhui.

“Let's go, return home!”

Ye Qingyu activated his white horse wings, holding Little Nine. Transforming into a ray of light, he headed in the direction of Youyan Pass.

His strength had explosively increased, and the speed he flew at was rapid. In the time of breaths, he had already travelled tens of kilometres.

In the blink of an eye, one could already see Youyan Pass far off in the distance.

A strand of red sunlight, slowly rose from the heaven's boundary. Illuminating the mountains and rivers tens of thousands of miles around Youyan pass, it was utterly breathtaking.

Xiu!

Suddenly, a scarlet red ray of light, shot towards him from within a cloud.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, his two fingers clenching the projectile.

It was a scarlet red formation arrow used to pierce through armour.

A small scale formation ship suddenly broke from the cloud layers, with soldiers of Youyan Pass standing upon it. Leading them, was a military warfare officer. With a bow in his hand, he roared from far away: “I wonder which of our friends have arrived. You have already entered into the boundary of Youyan Pass. Please stop your steps, and indicate your

identity!”

He had encountered people of Youyan Pass.

Ye Qingyu let down his guard, saying: “Youyan pass’s sword patrolling envoy, returning to the pass. This is my military seal.

As he said this, Ye Qingyu activated his military seal and sent it over.

The opposing party extended his hand to receive it. After examining it for a while, he did not give an immediate reply. A fire signal exploded out from the formation airship, dyeing half the sky red. Evidently it was rapidly passing along information.

Ye Qingyu could only patiently wait.

But in less than ten breaths of time, there were tens of formation airship that appeared from the surroundings, encircling towards Ye Qingyu from all directions. Vaguely, it seemed to surround Ye Qingyu at the very centre. Blades and spears were unsheathed, swords prepared. The formation cannon on the airship were also charged, the lights flickering with surging energy. The airships formed an array with Ye Qingyu at the centre, displaying faint signs of hostility.

“Eh? Just what was this?”

Ye Qingyu was somewhat nonplussed.

\*Out of the Great Treatise I, 繫辭上 – Xi Ci I

\*\*Yeah, I’m not going to lie.....it’s some deep taoism stuff that I don’t know what it means so take this translation with a grain of salt.

# Chapter 172: Title of Marquis

Why was this crowd of people treating him like the enemy?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat bewildered.

He could see the military warfare officer that had been the person holding the bow, clasping his hands at Ye Qingyu from far away: “Patrolling envoy Ye, your military seal has already been erased. Because you have not come back to Youyan pass for over a month, the military department thought you have already died in duty, so.....”

Ye Qingyu understood.

So Mister Liu and the others, seeing that he had not returned, thought he had already died.

From the current situation, it seemed like the military of Youyan Pass had already made a public announcement.

Who would have thought that he would return alive. Naturally this needed a reconfirmation of his identity.

Ye Qingyu silently floated in the air, waiting for eventual development of the situation.

Very quickly, a formation airship broke through the air, flying from far away. The person at the lead had a long blade at his waist. It was an expert with a burly and muscular figure. If it was not Liu Zongyuan, then who was it?

“Brother Ye, you’ve really returned?” Liu Zongyuan shouted from far away.

The people who were familiar with this officer that was normally like a boulder could not help but be surprised after witnessing this scene. How was it that this fellow who spoke so little, would suddenly become so animated? They had never heard before of any sort of relationship between the boulder Liu Zongyuan and the sword patrolling envoy Ye Qingyu.



“Officer Liu, we meet again.” Ye Qingyu had a faint smile.

“So it was really you. Haha, this is good, this is too good. I through you had already....to be able to come back alive, this is too good.” Liu Zongyuan could hardly contain his excited mood, repeating the words ‘too good’ three times. Excitedly he patted Ye Qingyu on the shoulders, saying: “If Mister Liu knows of this matter, he will definitely be overcome with joy. So will Xinger....Also, that rash fellow Wen Wan. That fellow is still furious with me until now.....”

Liu Zongyuan was really overjoyed.

In these days, he did not know how to face Wen Wan.

Every time he saw the gaze of Wen Wan that wanted to kill someone, Liu Zongyuan felt both guilty and regretful. He resented the fact that it was not he himself who had stayed behind.

With Liu Zongyuan appearing, the process to confirm Ye Qingyu’s identity was completed very quickly. The formation airships from all around began to be dispersed, disappearing in the clouds far off. The military officer who had held the bow at the start, clasped his hands in apology and ordered the soldiers under his command to activate the formation airship and depart. Liu Zongyuan brought Ye Qingyu along, and flew towards the inner area of Youyan Pass.

“Let’s first go see Mister Liu and retract the announcement of your death. Haha, did you know, everyone thought you had already died in the hands of Yan Buhui. For you, Mister Liu personally went in search of Lord Lu Zhaohe and requested for the conferment of a title and reward for you. In these days, the documents of the imperial military department has been passed down already. They have bestowed upon you a fourth class righteous heroic Marquis\* as your title.....” Liu Zongyuan endlessly jabbered on.

Even the soldiers under his command were surprised.

The fact that patrolling envoy Ye had returned had caused their leading officer’s mood to really turn for the better. In the past half a year he did not say much, but in this hour, he had completely filled this period with

unending speech.

“What? Fourth class righteous heroic military marquis? I’ve been given a title of duke?” This was completely out of his expectations.

The position of marquis, was it not obtained far too easily?

The titles of the empire could largely be divided into people who had inherited titles of feudality and ministers who had provided outstanding service. The former were people who possessed the bloodline of the imperial family, or perhaps they were nobles who had inherited a title of feudality. The latter were ministers who were bestowed upon titles through their outstanding contributions. Both of these cases were split into classes of ‘King’, ‘Grand’, ‘Great’, ‘Duke’ and ‘Marquis’, going from high to low. And every classification was split into first class, second class, three class and fourth class. The classifications were extremely strict, and the distinction between positions were utterly clear. The status of the nobles of the empire were divided very clearly.

Inherited feudal titles were very easily obtained, but the conditions for a title gained through outstanding service were extremely strict.

Since the Empire had been founded a hundred years ago, the number of people who had obtained a title would absolutely not exceed five hundred. And as for those people who managed to obtain titles because of their bloodline and inheritance, there were near ten thousand people.

A fourth class marquis, although it was the lowest class of the classifications amongst the Empire’s nobility, but Ye Qingyu had only enrolled in the army for less than half a year. For a young person without any sort of background, this could be counted as ascending to heaven in one step. From a commoner to a noble, Ye Qingyu used three months of time to finish walking the path other people would walk for their entire life.

After hearing of his title, Ye Qingyu was not overjoyed, but instead bewildered.

This matter, was far too out of the ordinary.

Liu Zongyuan immediately began laughing uproariously. “That’s right, in the document Mister Liu passed on, he did his utmost to describe the situation. he greatly complimented you on the fact that you risked yourself to protect those maps, sacrificing yourself and allowing us to return. Such bravery and loyalness, is something that every soldier should learn from. Even Lord Lu kept praising brother Ye you endlessly. Afterwards through discussions with the military of the Empire, they decided to bestow a title to you. We only knew once the documents of conferment were passed down. The leaders of the military was really generous this time round. To directly bestowing you a title of Marquis, haha, brother Ye, congratulations!”

Ye Qingyu only bitterly smiled.

This time the bestowing of the title, was a bestowal given for the bereaved.。

In other words, they gave him a title because they thought he was a dead person. Such a title, would it still be effective if he came back alive?

This time, most likely the military had caused a great joke to be born.

In the blink of an eye, the airship directly entered into the pass, entering into the city of Youyan Pass.

The two switched their vehicles, heading straight for the Pass Lord’s residence.

When they reached the gates of the outer courtyard of the Pass Lord’s residence, Xinger had already been waiting at the entrance for quite a while.

Evidently, he had long received news.

When he saw Ye Qingyu, this little student could not wait to rush over and give Ye Qingyu a large hug. Then he punched Ye Qingyu, excitedly saying: “Good fellow, you’ve finally returned. I’ve already said, good people do not live long, but villains cause trouble for thousands of years. For a person like you, how can you die so easily.....”

Ye Qingyu: “....”

The words were supposed to be positive, but the way he said it was not that pleasing to the ears.

Are you complimenting me or are you insulting me.

“There’s a strange odour on your body.” Ye Qingyu sniffed. “It seems to be the fragrance of petals, are you recently learning flower arrangement or the like?”

“Ai, your nose is sensitive. Are you a dog!” Xinger chattered in front of them, leading the way. He turned his head back, insulting Ye Qingyu.

“Woof woof!” Little Nine barked in dissatisfaction, indicating that they should not casually insult dogs.

Xinger instantly began laughing loudly.

Liu Zongyuan also shut his mouth.

Ye Qingyu’s sudden appearance, caused the shadows in their hearts in this period of time to be completely swept away. Their mood were unprecedentedly high.

Very quickly, they came to the front of the military council pavilion.

Liu Zongyuan slapped Ye qingyu on the shoulder: “Fine, brother Ye, I’ll take you to here. What follows after, Mister Liu will discuss with you.....When you have time, come to the Vanguard to find me to drink. A brother like you, I Liu Zongyuan, will definitely make.”

“As you say.” Ye Qingyu replied with a laugh.

For such a righteous and silent military officer like Liu Zongyuan, Ye Qingyu had a very good impression of.

Liu Zongyuan left with a large smile.

Xinger brought Ye Qingyu within the military council pavilion.

Second floor.

Pushing the door and entering into the room.

The Mister Liu in front of the table, was currently lifting his brush and painting. He wore a white robe, elegant and graceful.

“You’ve come, Sit, Marquis Ye.”

He pointed to the roughly woven prayer mat in front of him.

The [Painting Saint] was the only person who saw Ye Qingyu, and still remained as calm as he was on their first meeting.

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry at this title, ‘Marquis Ye’. After sitting down, he quickly asked: “Mister Liu, just what is this? The bestowal of this title by the military, is it not a bit too rash?”

.....

.....

An hour later.

Ye Qingyu left the Pass Lord’s residence.

Walking in the familiar streets, he watched the people coming and going. The atmosphere of the world, made him feel especially close to such a place after being away for over a month.

Eating something from the stands by the street, he headed towards White Horse tower.

Not returning for a month, just how was Bai Yuanxing and Mother Wu doing.

Ye Qingyu right now did not want to think about anything, he only wanted to go home to wash and sleep.

Fifteen minutes later.

White Horse tower could be seen vaguely off in the distance.

The crowd in front become more and more clustered.

“En? There seems to be something that has happened? Why is there so many people next to the White Horse tower?” Ye Qingyu suddenly discovered, in the surroundings of White Horse tower, there really was quite a significant number of people gathered. The outside of the tower was completely jam packed. Vaguely, there was the sound of crying emitting, and also screams and shouts.

Just what was happening?

Ye Qingyu rushed forward, pushing through the crowd.

He could hear a cry, emitting from the centre---

“Master Bai, you must right this injustice. My man really did not steal the soldiers’ pay. These silver are the wages Master Bai gave us. Master Bai, you can definitely prove this to them.....” This voice was extremely terrified, somewhat crying. But Ye Qingyu could very quickly determine, if she was not the servant that he had hired, Mother Wu who else could it be?

What exactly was going on?

He pushed towards the front of the crowd, not showing himself, remaining silent and observing.

He could see at the entrance of White Horse tower, Mother Wu was on the ground. Tears filled her face in bitter pain, her hands tightly clenching the leg of the sword slave Bai Yuanxing. She was currently bitterly begging.

On the other side, the soldiers of the supply department, had completely surrounded Mother Wu, Bai Yuanxing and also a man around the age of forty five. His body was covered with traces of blood, and he had already been beaten senseless. A metal hook had pierced through his shoulder, and he had fallen to the ground. Scarlet red streamed from the wound, dyeing the ground red. The situation was incomparably tragic. Most likely he only had half his life left.....

From the cries of Mother Wu, this half dead man, should be her husband.

There was rage on Bai Yuanxing’s face. “How could you go around arresting people without determining right or wrong? This silver I really did give to Mother Wu, you’ve arrested the wrong people.....”

“Arrested the wrong people?” The leading soldier had a cold smile. “These silver has the imprint of the military supply department. Evidently it is the soldier’s pay that we have allocated to the Vanguard. To have

appeared in the hands of such lowly people.” He used his whip to point at the man being dragged on the ground. Casually he flicked his whip, but the senseless man did not even let out a grunt. Another whip scar appeared on his body. Mother Wu let out a howl of pain, falling on the body of this man wanting to block the strike of the whip. Immediately she was kicked rolling away by an armoured soldier. The armoured soldier laughingly said: “For the soldier’s pay that has not been yet been distributed to land in her hands. If she did not steal it, just where did it come from?”

“You....you haven’t even made things clear, how could you be so merciless?” Bai Yuanxing was both shocked and angry. “These are silver I’ve obtained from the military supply department today, and I instantly paid the wages to Mother Wu . There are records that you can check, you guys....”

“Records we can check?” The armoured soldier grunted, and coldly sneered. “The military supply department has not distributed any silver today. I have to ask you, just where did you obtain the silver? My superior was namely about to go investigate to where the lost soldiers’ pay were, who would have thought you would stand out of your own initiative. So a sword slave like you, was the lead conspirator. Very well, since you have admitted by yourself, that these silver is given by you to this mad shrew, then obediently follow me to explain yourself!”

Bai Yuanxing was taken aback, then instantly realised.

A scheme.

He had fallen into their trap.

“You....Bai Yuanxing;s body quivered, pointing at the soldier. “You intentionally schemed against us, you.....”

# Chapter 173: Give me an accounting

“Scheme?” The leading soldier began laughing uproariously, his eyes filled with mockery and disdain. His entire appearance indicated the attitude of ‘what does it matter if you know’ but his mouth denied this accusation: “You really are filled with lies. Is it worthwhile for the supply department to use a scheme on a tiny little sword slave? Just who do you think you are.....People, arrest these thieves who dare steal the soldiers’ pay!”

Four soldiers held steel shackles in their hands and advanced like wolves or tigers towards Bai Yuanxing.

“You... does the laws of the army still exist?” Bai Yuanxing was both angry and enraged, doing his utmost to struggle. “I am a person of White Horse tower, you dare act against me? I know, it’s because my master Ye had disciplined that officer surnamed Zhao. You are using official channels to settle a private revenge. To have used such a plot to get back at us, you guys really are ignoring all the rules.....“

“Hmph, a person that doesn’t know death. To dare say such nonsense. People, come beat his mouth till it’s messed up.” The leading soldier had a cold glint in his eyes.

The mother Wu laying on the floor, seeing this, knew that Bai Yuanxing could not be of any use. Instantly she was in a panic and afraid. Lunging forward begging, “No, no, no, don’t! This has nothing to do with Master Bai....The silver....the silver was really stolen by us.....We admit that we’re guilty.....” She had brought these soldiers of the supply department over, hoping that Bai Yuanxing could stand witness for them, and save her husband.

But seeing the scene so far, this normal housewife, even if she was stupid, would also understand certain things.

Thinking to the attention and care that Bai Yuanxing normally treated with her, Mother Wu crisply bit her teeth and acted bravely. At least this would prevent her from dragging the people of White Horse tower down.



The Ye Qingyu in the crowd seeing this scene, could not help but feel a faint shred of warmth in his heart.

The servant Mother Wu, was a person that he had hired to take care of Bai Yuanxing. He had casually hired her in the marketplace without much thought. After Bai Yuanxing had recovered, he originally intended to ask her to leave. But in those days Mother Wu's performance was very good, and she was also able to cook delicious dishes. Hence Ye Qingyu's heart had softened, allowing her to stay behind. He did not think that such a normal housewife would have such admirable bravery.

"You are breaking the laws of the army....You bunch of bandits, I will report you at the Pass Lord's residence...."

Bai Yuanxing did his utmost to struggle, shouting loudly. He wanted to cause a ruckus and cause the patrols of the city to come to investigate.

The leading soldier had continuous cold smiles on his face: "Reporting this to the Pass Lord's residence? Just who do you think you are? Haha, I think you should just follow me and see my superior...."

Before he had finished.

Another voice sounded.

"I don't think there's a need. Why don't you bring your superior here to see me."

Ye Qingyu slowly walked out from amidst the crowd.

The crowd could only sense a blur across their eyes. The people holding Bai Yuanxing fell backwards with a low grunt. Ye Qingyu was already beside Bai Yuanxing in the next instant.

Patting Bai Yuanxing on the shoulder, he shook his head with a smile: "This can't do. If you don't practice martial arts and you don't have the ability to protect yourself, you will really lose my face. In the time I was not here, the dogs that have no eyes, really think that people of White Horse tower are pushovers."

Bai Yuanxing was dumbfounded.

Then instantly he understood. Doing his utmost to rub his eyes, his eyes instantly moistened.

With a plopping sound, he knelt on the ground. In these days the White Horse sword slave had always been in a state of fear and worry. Right now, such emotions dispersed like smoke. He had an excitement that was like the radiance of the moon finally finally coming out from behind black clouds. His voice was hoarse as he said: "Master, you....you've finally returned, they said you had....I didn't believe them. I knew, you would definitely return."

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, and an invisible energy assisted Bai Yuanxing up. "Don't kneel so casually. The people of White Horse tower can fight, can die, but they cannot kneel."

"Yes, Master, I know." Bai Yuanxing wiped his tears, shouting loudly.

"Go look after Mother Wu." Ye Qingyu said.

Bai Yuanxing went to the side, assisting the Mother Wu that was covered in blood up.

After settling the two, Ye qingyu clapped his hands, coming to the front of the armoured soldier. With a smile: "What is it, after hearing I had died, did someone impatiently wanted to do something? The people of the supply department, their memory is really poor. A bunch of plotting worms, they really are not fit to serve in a place like Youyan Pass....it seems you have not managed to remember the previous incident at all."

The leading soldier's face was completely red. He did not dare to say anything, a expression of complete fear.

When Ye Qingyu had completely caused a chaos in the hall of the supply department, he had also been present. He saw with his own eyes Zhao Ruyun being hung like a dead dog on the [Discipline pillar]. The cool breeze mountain faction as well as the other officers, did not dare to say anything in retaliation. Even the head of the supply department Zhang San, could not do anything against this patrolling sword envoy. Therefore this leading soldier deeply knew how fearful Ye Qingyu was. He was so scared that his heart was pounding.

At this time, the surrounding bystanders only just understood what had happened.

Some people were able to recognise Ye Qingyu's identity.有

“Heavens, that fellow has returned.....”

“Who is that young man?”

“The master of White Horse tower, patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu!”

“He really is Ye Qingyu, he is too young!”

“Is the hero of the battlefield Ye Qingyu? The army in these days, had always publicised his heroic actions?”

“He really is the idol of all young people, he was still alive? This is too good.....”

“That's not right. The army has already sent a notice around regarding the fact that he has already died in battle. How was it that he came back, could it be that he is a ghost?”

“Nonsense, have you ever seen a ghost in broad daylight.....A mistake must have been made somewhere!”

The surrounding people discussed constantly.

Within the crowd, there were some people that understood the intricacies behind this incident. They had long seen through the inconsistencies and secretly held sympathy for Bai Yuanxing and the others. But there was nothing they could do. Right now seeing Ye Qingyu's reappearance, they could not help but become overjoyed.

In these days, the army had always publicly advertised the fantastical actions of Ye Qingyu. The scale of this propaganda was not small in the slightest. Many young people in the city, soldiers viewed Ye Qingyu in admiration. Seeing the rumoured martyred hero appearing alive in front of them, they immediately became excited.

The only people who were not excited, were the armoured soldiers of the supply department.

They would not even dream of encountering such a situation. They knew, they were in great trouble.

Within.

“According to logic, you are only a subordinate who are listening to orders. I should not make things too hard for you.” Ye Qingyu looked at the leading soldier. “However, even though you are just following orders, your actions should not be so cruel. To have hurt the people of White Horse tower.” Ye Qingyu pointed at the bruised and swollen Mother Wu, then pointed to Mother Wu’s husband. Continuing to speak: “Everyone should pay for their own actions. Give me a satisfactory accounting, and I can let go of you today.”

The leading soldier’s body quivered.

His face was sometimes green sometimes red, his spirit ever-changing. Ultimately, he mustered his determination. With a sound he unsheathed the short sword at his waist. Biting his teeth, he stabbed it into his own thigh.

The surrounding crowd let out shocked gasps.

The leading soldier took out the short sword, and a jet of blood spurted out. His face was pale yellow, “Such an accounting, is patrolling envoy Ye satisfied?”

Ye Qingyu seriously gave him a glance, then nodded his head. “It is satisfactory. Go back and tell your superior, that what he should do next, he should be extremely clear. Don’t make me go to the supply department again....Go.”

The bunch of soldiers turned and fled in a rush.

The surrounding crowd, instantly began clapping.

Evidently Ye Qingyu’s neither overbearing and servile attitude, where he was justified and reasonable had won the recognition of some people.

Especially in this entire situation, his authoritative aura had won the respect of many people. Youyan Pass was a heavy military outpost, and

their attitude was extremely martial. There were many talented people with exceptional strength, but someone like Ye Qingyu who was so young was uncommon. To be so firm and to have such authority even when he did not fight, was really rare in recent years.

Ye Qingyu greeted the surrounding people with a smile: "There's nothing to see anymore, everyone can go."

The crowd gradually dispersed.

Then Ye Qingyu turned around, heading to the doors of White Horse tower.

Mother Wu had her face filled with tears as she hugged her husband. With a light voice, she breathed out the name of her husband. Bai Yuanxing stood by the side helpless, not knowing what he should do.

Ye Qingyu bent down and a pure strand of yuan qi entered into the body of this man, protecting the meridians around his heart. Using a special method, he sealed away the pressure points of his shoulder, then slowly took out the metal hook in his shoulder little by little.

"Master, my husband he...." Mother Wu said anxiously.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile: "Don't worry. It's only that his external injuries are somewhat heavy. After you return, find a doctor to take care of the wound and rest for a while. The problem should not be large."

Mother Wu knelt on the ground with a bang, bowing constantly: "Thank you master, thank you master....."

"You are a person of White Horse tower. It is natural that I should protect you. Quickly get up." Ye Qingyu said sincerely.

Bai Yuanxing quickly assisted Mother Wu up. The two people went to find a stretcher, and brought the man within White Horse tower. After settling down, Bai Yuanxing under Ye Qingyu's instructions, went outside in search of a doctor. Mother Wu filled with gratefulness, went out with her shopping basket, saying that she needed to make something good for Ye Qingyu to eat.....

Such a disturbance, temporarily ended for the moment.

Ye Qingyu returned to the quiet room at the fourth floor of White Horse tower. Sitting on the prayer mat, he stared out through the window towards the outside.

He had finally returned.

The silly dog Little Nine happily crawled back to Ye Qingyu's bed. Sensing the softness and familiar smell, he was very quickly snoring away.

Ye Qingyu's heart, was peaceful for once.

He once again thought back to the words that were said between him and the [Painting saint] in the military council pavilion.

"The Empire has obtained the maps of the Explosive Snow glacier, and also heavily injured Yan Buhui. This is an extremely crucial opportunity. Because of the betrayal of Yan Buhui in those years, the [Army of Youyan Pass] has always bided their time for all these years. Our military power is already surging to its peak, its time we retaliate. I believe very quickly, a large scale war will begin. No matter whether it is the imperial family of the Empire, army of Youyan Pass or Lord Lu, they all want to break past the Explosive Snow glacier in one strike, heading straight towards the Northern ground demon court. Exterminating the snow ground demon race, and getting rid of the worry in the hearts of Snow empire...."

"Battle is about to arrive. All the other preparations for battle, naturally has sped up it's progress."

"This time, you have been given a title, directly becoming a Marquis. Although I certainly supported this, a very large reason for your title, was the need for propaganda prior battle. The army of the Empire wanted to construct an image of a hero for everyone to aspire to. Therefore the army has greatly advertised this, using it to raise morale, and to incite the will to fight of the soldiers. You came from a common background, and is also a inheritor of a heroic military badly. Sacrificing yourself, you made a great contribution. At such a crucial time, you are unquestionably the ideal candidate for their propaganda. Furthermore, because you were

announced to be dead, bestowing the title of Marquis to a dead person would not touch upon the nerves of the noble factions. Therefore they did not oppose this.....As such, at such a time, you became the youngest Marquis in the history of the Empire.”

“But this time, they bestowed a title on you when you were dead. To have come back alive, you have created a hard problem to the army. Is this bestowal still still in effect.....Haha, I think that once the news that you have come back alive has been passed on the heads of the army must have a headache.....”

# Chapter 174: Speak, just what is this

Ye Qingyu was able to obtain lots of information in his conversation with the [Painting saint] Liu Yuqing.

A point that made him pay particular attention to, was that the entire Empire and the great army of Youyan Pass, was currently preparing to retaliate against the demon race. They wanted to completely reverse the situation of the last ten years, and launch a frontal assault against the Snow ground demon court.

Without question, this was a matter that would affect the entire fate of the Empire. It was a battle that was related to the fate of everyone from top to bottom in Snow Empire. Once they were able to completely destroy the Snow ground demon court according to the plans of the army of the Empire, then Snow Empire would no longer have any opponents in the entire Heaven Wasteland domain. They could rule entirely over Heaven Wasteland domain.

Ye Qingyu faintly felt, a vast and tremulous era, was about to open in front of him.

He did not like war.

But such matters, was not for him to decide.

Right now, what he needed do was raise his strength greatly. Before the descent of battle, he had to increase his ability to protect himself. This was the most important thing.

As for the bestowal of Marquis by the military, Ye Qingyu did not care about this at all.

In reality, he did not have too much interest in the title of Marquis that he obtained through his contributions.

The reason he had enlisted in the army at Youyan Pass, was partly due to the the fact that he did not want to see the plots and schemes between the nobles and commoners at White Deer academy. The other part was that he wanted to train and refine himself within the military.



From Ye Qingyu's perspective, a person's personal strength was the only factor that could be used to decide their own fate and status.

Just now, in the words between him and Liu Yuqing, Ye Qingyu had roughly described how he had managed escaped. Of course, he did not say anything regarding the Snow dragon cemetery and the mysterious illusive figure, Supreme Ice flame, Dragon's fang submerged in blood, etc. These were issues that would not affect the interest of the great army of Youyan Pass. Furthermore, Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that right now for the time being, this should only be known by himself.

As for whether Mister Liu believed, and how much he believed, this was not something Ye Qingyu cared about.

No matter what, he had a clear conscience.

As he slowly sorted his muddled thoughts, Ye Qingyu's heart gradually began to settle down.

He began to activate the nameless heart sutra, cultivating his yuan qi.

After breaking to the twenty Spirit springs stage, through Ye Qingyu's forceful suppression, the ancient bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart] did not further refine his yuan qi. Right now, this was the moment for this to happen.

Ye Qingyu's consciousness used inner vision.

With his dantian world, the twenty Spirit springs were distributed in the vast desert world, like twenty bright pearls embedded within the desert. It formed little lakes thousands of miles long. There were constantly silver mist formed from the springs that steamed up, like a tornado sweeping through the air. Ultimately it transformed into twenty strands of inner yuan that flowed through Ye Qingyu's body, meridians, like rivers and lakes. It constantly nourished Ye Qingyu's body, beneficially changing Ye Qingyu's body for the better at every minute and at every second.

And in the very centre of this desert world in his dantian, a silver flame, as if it was the sun , was currently burning, shining in all directions.

This was the Supreme ice flame.。

“The mysterious person, has helped me assimilate the Supreme ice flame to its beginning stages. But he has only allowed my flesh body to get used to it, and for it not to destroy my body. This does not represent, that I can utterly control and use it as I will. I need to slowly refine it step by step. When the Supreme ice flame has completely combined with my inner yuan, only then can I fully use the Supreme ice flame and explode with a the ultimate pinnacle cold power....”

Ye Qingyu comprehended in his heart.

But he was not in a rush.

Training in martial arts was like sailing. It could not be rushed no matter what.

His consciousness retreated from the desert dantian world. Ye Qingyu used inner vision on his sea of consciousness.

It was time for him to allow the [Titled Fiendgod chart] to purify his inner yuan and return it to himself.

The ancient bronze book emitted a radiance, floating within his sea of consciousness.

He activated his inner yuan, removing his suppression and activating the bronze book.

He could see as if the bronze book had awakened from its slumber. The pages quivered slightly, then a bronze radiance emitted. Instantly a powerful suction, absorbed the yuan power around Ye Qingyu, that headed crazily towards the ancient book. At this moment the ancient bronze book was as if it was alive. Like a whale sucking water, it completely absorbed the inner yuan of Ye Qingyu. Even if Ye Qingyu did not use inner vision anymore, he could clearly feel that his yuan qi was like an absolute mountain avalanche that rushed madly towards the bronze book.

Ye Qingyu maintained his consciousness, observing all that happened.

Such a matter, had already occurred several times already. In his heart he was calm, not feeling strange at all.

After a whole hour , the ancient bronze book had completely sucked dry all the yuan qi in Ye Qingyu's body.

Then began the repayment.

Incomparably pure yuan qi rushed out from within the bronze book. According to the path it came, it headed towards Ye Qingyu's body, roaring past every meridian.

Within such a process, Ye Qingyu's body emitted a noise like that of a rumbling great river. This was the yuan qi travelling at high speed, rumbling like a meteor. It was rumoured that only experts who had cultivated to the Bitter Sea stage, would cause such a scene when they activated their inner yuan. For Ye Qingyu to be able to do this, it was evident just how powerful and surging his inner yuan was.

Such a process, continued for two hours.

Repayment was finished.

Ye Qingyu felt his body unprecedentedly comfortable.

The inner yuan in his body flowed naturally, like the river roaring past, flowing through his meridians, Growing and multiplying without end. Circulating and completing a whole cycle. His strength, even if he did not pay particular attention to training, would also naturally rise. Cultivating had already become an instinctive action of his body.

Ye Qingyu deeply breathed in air, summoning the bronze book and flipping through the pages.

Every time refinement occurred, there would be new contents unlocked in the bronze book.

"I wonder what part of the bronze book would be unlocked. Is it a technique, or is it a strange object?"

Ye Qingyu waited expectantly in his heart.

He began serious translating.

Five minutes later, Ye Qingyu closed the book.

“The section unlocked this time is a cultivation technique, called [Grass Wood heaven yuan power]. It’s able to control the surrounding vegetation to do battle. It seems to be not bad, but it does not have much use for me. The yuan qi cultivation techniques that belong to wood of the five attributes, is not suitable for me to cultivate. Furthermore, in a battle environment of the Explosive Snow glacier, controlling vegetation using such a cultivation technique was useless. There were far, far too little plants in a world of snow and ice.....”

Ye Qingyu was slightly disappointed.

But after thinking over it, this was normal.。

Within the ancient bronze book , there were many bizarre and unknown techniques contained within. It was not that every time he unlocked it, there would be contents that was suitable for his cultivation. Furthermore after his [Spirit raise] had undergone successfully, the Ye Qingyu who had chosen an ice attribute, had even stricter requirements towards cultivation techniques. His field of choice became much narrower.

“This cultivation technique, I can temporarily put aside.”

Ye Qingyu would not cultivate in the [Grass wood heaven yuan power].

He brought the bronze book back into his sea of consciousness. When he was about to continue cultivating, suddenly there was something that knocked into himself from behind.

Ye Qingyu turned around and looked and was shocked.

The silly dog Little Nine, without knowing when had soundlessly crawled behind his back.

The glutton lay on the floor, his limbs twitching, and white foam dripping from the corner of his mouth. His large eyes were completely showing white, as if he had been poisoned. He vomited white foam and dry heaved, but could not vomit anything. His body was bent into an arc, twitching and quivering.

“What is it ?” Ye Qingyu quickly rushed over to carry him.

“Disgusting, I want to vomit.....” The silly dog Little Nine said without any strength. “Master ,my tummy hurts.”

“What has happened?” Ye Qingyu seeing Little Nine’s appearance, his heart was hurt but at the same time he also felt bewilderment: “You were fine just now....could it be you have caught a cold? Or perhaps you have eaten something bad?”

This glutton had always eaten everything. Even that Snow ground dragon ape, had been eaten alive by him. He had never seen Little Nine in such a state before.

“Don’t know. It hurts....” Little Nine said weakly, his mouth spitting out white foam again.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to do.

“Go, let’s go see the vet . I don’t know whether there is any vet within the city!” Ye Qingyu was in a panic.

Even though normally this glutton was not particularly pleasant to the eye, but after being together so closely for so long, in reality deep feelings had already been born in his heart. Little Nine was equal to his family. Seeing Little Nine suddenly in such a state, Ye Qingyu’s heart was in pain.

“It’s hard to bear.....ugh.....” Little Nine suddenly spat out a pale green liquid from his mouth.

A strange fragrance, suddenly wafted throughout the entire room.

Sssssssss!

A strange noise came.

When the green liquid landed on the floor, it instantly completely melted the boulder like stone floor. Like metal being dissolved, strange noise came out, the rock emitting white smoke, and a large hole appeared.

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt an acute pain from his arm.

His arm had lightly touched upon a little bit of the pale liquid Little Nine emitted. Instantly his skin had been completely dissolved, and his

flesh also. One was able to see the pearly white bone inside his arm.

“Just what is this? Ye Qingyu was greatly alarmed. ” His digestive juices? This is far too terrifying, this is acid enough to dissolve any metal. My flesh body is so strong that even Spirit weapons would be hard pressed to hurt me. For it to have been instantly dissolved by this green liquid?”

He quickly activated a strand of Supreme Ice flame to envelop the back of his hand. Only then could he get rid of the pale green liquid.

And right now Little Nine, looked like he was on his last breath, doing his utmost dryly heaving.

“Master, it hurts, hurts.....” The Little fellow said pitifully towards Ye Qingyu.

“Endure it a little, I’ll bring you the vet right now! ” Ye Qingyu said, activating his White Horse wings and was about to rush out from the window.

At this moment---

“Pok!”

Little Nine suddenly madly vomiting.

Large quantities of the pale green liquid was vomited out.

What followed after was a noise of something dropping, then one could hear something white was vomited from his mouth, falling to the floor. Rolling about in the green stomach acid, it was completely unharmed. The acid was not able to dissolve in the slightest. It emitted a pale white silver colour, and a strange ice aura, instantly enveloped the entire room.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He felt that this white oval object, was somewhat familiar.

Carefully inspecting.

“Eh? Isn’t this the Snow ground dragon egg?”

Ye Qingyu was slightly shocked.

This oval white thing, was evidently the mysterious snow dragon egg he had seen in the cemetery of the Snow dragons.

Ye Qingyu evidently recalled at that moment had had clearly returned this snow dragon egg beneath the ice crystal coffin and into the ice crystal bird's nest within. Why was it that it would suddenly vomit from the mouth of the silly dog Little Nine?

Could it be?

Right now, he could already see Little Nine immediately recover his vitality and life force. The white foam at the corner of his mouth had already disappeared, and he madly jumped from the ground. His previous painful state, had completely disappeared. He excitedly barked and shouted "Woof woof, woof? It doesn't hurt anymore? Woof is good again? This is too strange, my tummy is completely right again.....Thank you, master!"

He rubbed his head against Ye Qingyu's leg, doing his utmost to be adorable.

Ye Qingyu immediately had a dark face. Looking at Little Nine, he then pointed at the Snow dragon egg again:" Speak, just what is this?"

# Chapter 175: Let's discuss things first

Little Nine blinked his eyes, staring innocently at Ye Qingyu: "Master, what are you saying? Little Nine doesn't understand."

"Stop pretending in front of me." Ye Qingyu had a dark face. "Just what is this egg? Did I not put it back already?"

"What egg? Little Nine was dumbfounded, then followed along to the the direction Ye Qingyu's finger was pointing to, and instantly began jumping up in shock. He had a face of bewilderment as he said: "Eh? This is too strange why is it there is a egg in here? This egg is very familiar, as if I've seen it some place before....."

Ye Qingyu's face turned darker and darker.

A faint killing intent, began spreading through the air.

Little Nine lowered his head, as if he had suddenly thought of something. "Woof, master, I suddenly thought of something that I still have yet to do. Master you have to obediently train, bye bye Master, I'll leave first and I won't bother you!"

As he said this, he turned around and was about to jump out from the window.

"You little rotten scoundrel. Pretending to be confused are you. You want to leave?" Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, grabbing at the hind legs of the little white ball, dragging him back., Pointing at the white coloured snow dragon egg: "I've evidently placed it back, to have sneakily eaten it when I was not paying attention? No wonder your stomach was hurting, to have eaten a big icy lump in your stomach, could you be comfortable? You little brat is really capable, just when did you swallow this snow dragon egg, for me not to have noticed!"

Little Nine paws madly scrambled in the air, saying in a wronged tone: "Master, it hurts, quickly release me.....you've made a mistake, this is not that egg, this is the egg I gave birth to!"

Ye Qingyu: "....."



“You can even tell such a lie.” Ye Qingyu was completely speechless.  
“Let’s see you give birth to another egg then.”

Little Nine seeing that he had no way to explain himself, crisply decided not to explain himself. His watery eyes looked at Ye Qingyu, his tender little tongue sticking out, panting and pretending to be adorable. “Master, woof is so cute. I’ve only eaten a dragon egg, I’ve already vomited it out. How could you still want to punish me?”

Ye Qingyu.”.....”

Just what kind of battle companion have I raised.

At this moment--

Crack crack!

The snow white dragon egg that was on the ground, a minute crack suddenly appeared on it’s surface.

Ye Qingyu and Little Nine looked at each other. All four of their eyes displayed suprise.

The egg had cracked?

The thing inside was about to come out?

Crack crack crack!

Fracture after fracture constantly appeared on the egg shell.

A white coloured claw, broke apart through the egg shell and slowly stretched outside.

Was it really going to be born?

Would it be a little snow dragon?

Or perhaps some other creature?

Ye Qingyu and Little Nine jumped in front of the egg shell, their eyes fixated.

Crack!

A piece of the white shell was broken apart by a claw.

Through the gap of the egg shell, they could see a pair of beautiful little silver eyes staring outside. Bringing with it curiosity, bringing with it fear, bringing with it yearning, it was currently looking towards the outside. No matter what the life form, the moment it was born, it would have such an expression.

Ye Qingyu was about to come closer and have a even closer look.....

Xiu!

A streak of white light, broke apart from the shell of the egg.

“Yiya.....”

The white light emitted a strange noise, encircling around Ye Qingyu and Little Nine. It's weak voice was filled with adorableness, and finally the brightness of the white light dimmed, floating in front of Ye Qingyu.

It was a little silver dragon that was the size of a finger.

This silver little dragon was as if it was sculpted from ice crystal, his body emitting a faint white light. It's dragon scales was tight and clustered, sparking with a radiance, as if it was a divine jade ice crystal. It four little claws was sharp, its tail faintly moving. Budding little horns, its eyes black and white, like minerals embedded, extremely adorable. From top to bottom, there were no imperfections on its body.

“Yiya, Yiya yiya.....”

Naughty sounds came out from the mouth of the little dragon, its eyes curiously regarding left and right. Sometimes looking at Ye Qingyu, sometimes looking at Little Nine, it seemed to be doing its utmost to discern something.

It was said that after a creature had been born, the first life form it sees, it would treat it as if they were their parents.

The little silver dragon, could it be that it was doing its best to distinguish its parents?

From its outer appearance, this should be a little snow dragon?

Ye Qingyu was able to sense from the body of this little fellow, a faint

icy cold. It was extremely similar from the air exhaled from the slumbering Snow dragon King, but also somewhat slightly different. Snow dragons were the descendant of the dragon race, and it was said that the more their outer appearance was like that of ancient dragons, then this represented the purer their dragon bloodline was. And in reality, this was so. In the snow dragons Ye Qingyu had seen, the higher their strength the more they were like the legendary dragons.

And the finger thick silver little dragon in front of him, was exactly the same as the pure dragon race the ancient books had described.

“Could it that the bloodline of this little fellow has returned to his ancestors?” Ye Qingyu’s heart was faintly moved.

If there were signs that it had returned to its ancestral roots, this meant that the dragon bloodline within the body of the little silver dragon was extremely pure. It was very possible that it had already exceeded the normal level of a snow dragon.

Ye Qingyu slowly stretched out his palm.

“Come, little fellow. Who would have thought that the moment you were born, you a little snow dragon king.” Ye Qingyu attempted to communicate with this little fellow with a faint smile.

“Yiya?” In the eyes of the little silver dragon, a questioning look appeared. It slowly headed towards the centre of Ye Qingyu’s palm.

Little Nine seeing this, immediately let out a bark. He placed his long tail from his behind in the way: “Woof, quickly come over my side. Woof is your real mama, its me that brought you out from the snow dragon den. You came out from my tummy.....”

Ye Qingyu was instantly speechless.

This glutton was becoming more and more shameless.

“You dare steal from me?” Ye Qingyu said furiously.

The silly dog Little Nine eyes flitted to the side, mumbling in a low voice: “Woof is just fairly competing.”

“Yiya?” The little silver dragon slowly neared them. Floating in the air, it looked at Ye Qingyu, and then looked at Little Nine, then looked down at the egg shell on the floor. Finally making its decision, it slowly floated towards Little Nine.

Ye Qingyu seeing this, ‘mother, just what was this, he could not even beat a dog?’

“Woof, woof. Master, perhaps you are going to lose to me.” Little Nine said in a fashion of someone taking delight in someone’s misfortune. “I’ve already said, it came out from my belly, it would definitely recognise me. Recruiting a little dragon as a servant, just what a fortunate thing this is. From now on I can ride it everywhere to play, a dog’s life is just perfect. Woof, hahaha!”

Ye Qingyu really wanted to throttle this thing.

As a battle pet, apart from eating, all he did was sleep. And apart from sleeping, all he did was eat. Without the slightest battle power, and right now, it was stealing a battle pet from his master. This was completely against the heavens.

And ever since this thing was able to talk, he became more and more mischievous.

As he saw the little silver dragon slowly nearing, Little Nine began grinning delightedly in victory.

At this moment—

Pak!Pak!Pak!Pak!

The little silver dragon suddenly used its little tail, to fiercely strike Little Nine on his mouth.

“This.....” Ye Qingyu’s mouth was wide open.

The clear noise of the impact made Ye Qingyu’s teeth also ache just from hearing the sound.

Little Nine was completely knocked dumb, tottering about with golden stars about his head, as if he was drunk.

And before anyone could react, the little silver dragon transformed into a ray of white light that appeared in front of Ye Qingyu.

The silver coloured little head light rubbed against Ye Qingyu's cheek, and its little dragon head that was like a little silver strand or a little hand, touched Ye Qingyu's head. Within it's mouth, yiya yiya noises constantly came out, an expression of incomparable familiarity and closeness.

And when the dragon antler of the little silver dragon touched Ye Qingyu's head, a clear and distinctive noise, sounded within Ye Qingyu's mind——

“Mama!”

It was the little silver dragon.

It used a special exchange of consciousness to communicate with Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu did not know whether snow dragons would have such abilities just when they were born. But it was not only able to fly about at lightning speed, it also had powerful mental power. However Ye Qingyu could be sure of one point; he was absolutely not the mama of this little dragon.

“Errr, call me brother.....but I have to first make something clear, little fellow, you may have identified the wrong person.” Ye Qingyu replied probingly with his consciousness.

“It can't be wrong. You are mama, I am able to sense the aura of mama from you. It's mama you who gave me life....” The little silver dragon said in a determined fashion.

I gave you life?

I don't have such an ability.

I didn't give birth to this egg.

I don't have that function.

Ye Qingyu was about to deny this, when suddenly a flash of light flitted

through his mind.

He suddenly remembered, during the time at the cemetery of the snow dragons, when he was holding this snow dragon egg, an abnormal change had happened. The dragon egg had abruptly absorbed the ice inner yuan energy from his own body, and the dragon egg that had always remained silent, suddenly changed. He faintly felt, within the dragon's egg, there was a little thing that was swimming about in the half transparent dragon egg.....

Could it be at that time, his ice inner yuan had awakened the slumbering little silver dragon? Therefore it had remembered his aura, and identified he as its mother?

It seemed like this was possible.

“Hey, hey, hey. Mama's here, you've got the wrong person.....” Little Nine reacted, and said with his nose swollen.

The little silver dragon did not even give him a glance.

Ye Qingyu was about to say something, when at that time --

Boom!

The silent door, was suddenly kicked open.

A figure like a hurricane rushed in and headed towards Ye Qingyu, a punch striking out.

“You little bastard.....”

The figure shouted loudly, his emotions moved.

After a slight shock, Ye Qingyu finally saw the person clearly. Quickly evading, he cried: “Hey, speak first, there's no need to use violence. If you break something you have to pay for it.....”

“Pay for it my ass. You little bastard. Time after time you play at being lost and pretending to be dead. Could you consider other people's feeling? Your father I will just decide to kill you today, to prevent me from worrying about you time after time again.....” Wen Wan was like a person with mad cow disease, clenching his teeth and punch after punch striking

towards him with no mercy.

Boom!

A stone table, was crushed into pieces.

Ye Qingyu felt the wind from the punches were like the ocean, about to drown him. Dodging to the side, he shouted: “Hey, Old Wen, quickly stop, you’ve crushed my table.”

“I still need to crush your head.” Wen Wan screamed with red eyes. “Little bastard, coming back alive, you don’t even send someone to notify me. I was the last person to know.....don’t dodge, let me hit you three times for me to release my anger.”

Ye Qingyu felt both moved and funny.

“Yiya, yiya yiya.....”

The little silver dragon seeing its own ‘mama’ being chased after by someone, in its mineral like eye there was the colour of rage. With a sissy like roar, it spurted a stream of silver light towards Wen Wan.

# Chapter 176: Borrow him for me to play with for a couple of days

Wen Wan suddenly felt a coldness on his face.

“Eh? What’s that thing? It dares to spit at my face?” Wen Wan turned to look behind him, his mouth wide open with incomparable shock at the floating silver dragon in front of him.

The next moment his shocked expression solidified.

A layer of silver ice, two fingers thick, began spreading out from his body. Before Wen Wan could have any sort of reaction, he was completely sealed in ice with the silver light at the centre.

Ye Qingyu was also dumbfounded.

He had always felt Wen Wan’s strength was deep and unfathomable, but right now, he began to doubt his impressopm....

Seeing the ice sculpture in front of him, was Wen Wan really that strong?? Just a mouthful of spit from the little silver dragon was enough to completely freeze him. Wen Wan still maintained the posture of lifting his fist with an expression filled with shock and bewilderment. He was a freshly made ice sculpture, filled with power and beauty.

“Yiya Yiya....”

The weak voice of the little dragon sounded, and another globe of silver light slowly gathered.

He wanted to spit again?

Ye Qingyu was shocked by this and quickly covered the mouth of the little silver dragon: “There’s been a mistake, he’s our friend....”

“Woof woof? Hahahaahah.....” Little Nine hugged his tummy with his tail, and began laughing in an unrestrained and loud manner.

“Wahahaah, compared to that misfortunate fellow, I’ve only been hit a few times by his tail. I am really fortunate indeed.....”“



Fine, it seems that glutton was trying to make his heart feel better through this.

“Yiya?” The little silver dragon looked at Ye Qingyu in confusion. He seemed as if he did not understand why his mama wanted to protect that vicious person.

Ye Qingyu also could not present an explanation. Qingyu looked around to find a hammer and began pounding at the ice sculpture, wanting to break apart the surface layer of ice on Wen Wan away..

-Clang! Clang! Clang!-

As hammer after hammer was struck, tiny little white fractures began appearing on the silver ice on Wen Wan’s body, but it did not shatter apart.

“Why is it so tough?”

Ye Qingyu was completely stunned.

Anything hammered by him, even if it was refined steel, would be shattered and broken. The ice that the little silver dragon spat out was of such a degree of hardness.

No wonder Wen Wan did not use his inner yuan to break apart the ice after being sealed.

What could he do now?

Would Old Wen freeze to death after being sealed in ice for a while??

“Yiya? Yiya yiya.....” Seeing Ye Qingyu’s actions, the little silver dragon slowly floated up from the ground. Using his little horn that was like a little bone flower blossom that had yet to grow fully, he lightly tapped the ice.

-Kacha! Kacha!-

Clustered white cracks and fractures began to appear.

Afterwards, the silver ice covering Wen Wan’s body cracked apart, falling to the ground with a crash.

Wen Wan maintained the posture of punching Ye Qingyu. Only after a short while did he let out a breath and coughed several times, looking somewhat confused. Looking at Ye Qingyu, his gaze fell on the body of the little silver dragon. With a trace of disbelief, he inspected him for a while before asking, “Just now, was it this little fellow who spat at me?”

“This is a misunderstanding.....” Ye Qingyu attempted to give an explanation.

He was afraid that Wen Wan was about to get mad again.

“It’s kind of cute.” Wen Wan’s expression changed, kneading his fist. Turning around as if nothing had happened, he sat on the stone chair, grinding his teeth. “All the bones in my body were frozen stiff. Let me tell you, just now I was not prepared. That’s the only reason I was hit by his spit. The next time won’t be so easy. But seeing that this little fellow is so cute, I won’t take things further with him.....”

At this point he suddenly cast his glance to Little Nine who was currently relishing in his misfortune. Frowning he said: “To think that this trash glutton has not yet died? I thought he had already been devoured by the demon race....”

In an instant, the subject had changed.

Little Nine had a feeling of being shot by an arrow despite laying on the floor.

He was instantly enraged, his face filled with innocence. Jumping up, his tail pointed at Wen Wan’s nose, “You are the trash, your whole family is trash.....”

Wen Wan had a face filled with shock, jumping up like he had seen a ghost: “Just what is happening? What has happened, why can this dog speak the human language?”

Ye Qingyu stared at the two living treasures, not knowing what to say.

Five minutes later the bickering finally died down.

“You little bastard, exactly what happened? You scared me to death....”

Wen Wan once again asked about the events on the Explosive Snow glacier.

For Old Wen, Ye Qingyu did not conceal too much. He roughly described that on the way back, he had encountered Yan Buhui who was treating his injuries. Thankfully he had managed to escape from Yan Buhui's clutches. He recounted in detail about the matters in the Snow Dragon Cemetery. But as for the events concerning the illusive mysterious figure and the white clothed immortal in the crystal coffin, he concealed them. It was not that he did not trust Wen Wan, it was just that for such matters, Ye Qingyu felt that the less people that knew, the better.

"In other words, this little fellow, is he really a little snow dragon?" Evidently Wen Wan was extremely interested in the little silver dragon.

"Eh.....he can be counted as one I guess." Ye Qingyu was not able to discern the true identity of this little fellow.

Since it had come from the bird's nest in that ice crystal coffin, it was possibly not a snow dragon. According to some ancient books, normal snow dragons, when they were born, would not have such strong intelligence. And furthermore, the vision of the snow dragon race had deteriorated extremely seriously, but it was evident that the little dragon's eyes were perfectly fine. Perhaps the fact that its genes had returned to its ancestral state was one explanation, but Ye Qingyu felt that matters were not quite this simple.

Wen Wan attempted to stroke the little silver dragon.

But just how prideful was the little silver dragon? ?

Apart from treating Ye Qingyu affectionately and relying on him like he was his mama, he absolutely would not pay attention to anyone else. As Wen Wan attempted to stroke him, he began making sounds of 'Yiya yiya', and silver light gathered in his mouth. A chill that seeped into one's bones began emanating throughout the air.

"Ai? I really cannot stroke it...." Wen Wan's hand retreated, looking at Ye Qingyu. "This fellow is the same as you; he cannot be teased at all. Ai,

the things that happened here cannot be spread around, or I will really have no face.....”

“Woof? What’s face? Can you eat it?” Little Nine’s tail began wagging happily.

Wen Wan gave him a glare: “You useless trash damn dog, scram to the side.”

Ye Qingyu: “.....”

He felt that Wen Wan and Little Nine were more and more like a pair of destined foes.

Wen Wan, after all, was once a teacher at White Deer academy. Why must he fight with a dog?

“Ai, to speak truthfully, the next time you encounter such a situation, can you not be so earnest? You’ve made me worried for such a long period of time.” Wen Wan’s expression became serious, saying these words in a deadpan manner. “Such as that old man Mister Liu. If he wanted to stay behind and accompany the great demon king Yan Buhui, then you should just leave him behind to die. What does it have to do with him? You really stayed behind of your own initiative to die. Your head has really been kicked when you were young. I look down on you.”

Ye Qingyu: “.....”

Just where had the iron blood of a soldier and their unflinching righteousness gone?

Ye Qingyu suddenly imagined that if Old Wen was captured he would, at the first instant, kneel down and surrender?

The two again bickered and conversed for a period of time.

Wen Wan spoke again: “In this near period of time, the matters in the Pass are somewhat chaotic. I’ve heard that the people of the supply department have come over here to cause trouble again. These matters are somewhat complicated to speak of. You are too young, so you best not interfere too greatly in such matters. Since the military bestowal has

already been passed, the chances of them retracting it is not high. After all, the military has already begun to publicise about you. They want to construct you into the classic image of a hero as propaganda. This is tantamount to an arrow already nocked in the bow; they have no choice but to fire it. If they were to retract the bestowal, they are just hitting their own face, and it would affect morale. Without any incidents, your position of fourth class Marquis should be stable. But the prerequisite is that in this period of time you do not commit any errors which could be utilized by people with bad intentions.....”

Although in Ye Qingyu’s heart he really did not care about such matters, but after hearing Wen Wan say this, he was somewhat moved.

If there was one person in Youyan Pass that truly cared about him, that person was absolutely Wen Wan.

Although the painting saint Liu Yuqing had treated Ye Qingyu well, this was based on the foundation that he was extremely valuable.

“That’s right, after being given the title of Marquis, you will possess a separate military authority. You will no longer only command ten people like a patrolling sword envoy. Once the dust has settled down in this matter, the Pass Lord’s residence will definitely send an order for you to choose a camp out of the Left, Right, Vanguard and the Rearguard. From there you can select and gather soldiers to participate in battles. In the army, apart from individual strength, your military power is also one of the factors when evaluating someone’s strength. Therefore you had best make your preparations. In this time, you should spend some time thinking about what camp you wish to select from and to spend some time walking around the different camps. After understanding the details of the military order, you can secretly choose some elite soldiers.....” Wen Wan said again.

The right to commander soldiers?

After he became a Marquis, he had the power to lead soldiers?

Mister Liu had not mentioned this point before..

Ye Qingyu thought this over in detail, then nodded his head: “I

understand, thank you Old Wen.”

“Qie, thank you my arse, so pretentious.” Wen Wan said in disdain.

Ye Qingyu: “.....”

“Also, the person called Ye Congyun that you asked me to find, I have some slight clues as to where he is. He should be within the Vanguard, but I have not yet managed to find him personally. After I have confirmed it, I will give you some reliable news.” Wen Wan said with an embarrassed face. After spending so long but not yet having found such a person, his old face also could not help but turn red.

“He’s in the vanguard? This is too great.” Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

Ye Congyun was the younger brother of the armoured sentry. Ye Qingyu had promised the sentry that he would definitely take good care of him.

“Also, the old man Li Shizen situation is not bad within the vanguard. If you have time, you should go see him. There were several times that the old man talked about you.” Wen Wan stood up, stretching his waist, his mood evidently much better. Patting Ye Qingyu on the shoulder, he suddenly leaned in closer and said with a shifty eyed expression: “Little Ye, lets negotiate. Speak truthfully, can you let me borrow this little dragon for me to play with? This little fellow’s spit is so threatening. If I bring him to the vanguard, whoever displeases me, I can let him spit on them, hehe.....”

When he got to the end of the sentence, Wen Wan’s crafty looking eyes began to gleam with a light.

# Chapter 177: I've come to give an accounting

Seeing Wen Wan's thief-like manner, Ye Qingyu shivered in his heart.

"You ask him yourself." Ye Qingyu pointed at the little dragon.

Wen Wan turned around to glance at the little dragon and saw that the little silver dragon was glaring at him viciously. He suddenly realised that this little fellow would not be too willing to listen to his commands, and gave of a shiver. Waving his hands at the little dragon, he laughed: "Look at you, I was just having a joke.....I'm going."

Saying this, he quickly turned and left.

As he left, he kept a close watch on the little dragon. The matters that he had been spat on by the little silver dragon must not be spread around.

After seeing Wen Wan off, Ye Qingyu's mood was brightened.

To be able to sit and talk with friends, teasing each other, was really an enjoyable event of life.

"That bastard. Thankfully for him he ran quick, or I would definitely eat him." Little Nine said in a huff.

He felt that after the little silver dragon had appeared, he had evidently been neglected. Especially Wen Wan's attitude, it was completely the classical personality where one preferred new objects to old objects.

Ye Qingyu did not pay attention to this sensitive fellow.

A while later Bai Yuanxing came back.

Ye Qingyu asked him to take care of the rubble of the stone table in the quiet room.

As he silently stood by the window still, Ye Qingyu surveyed from a high position. Looking at the Youyan Pass covered in a blanket of vast snow, his thoughts were many.

After a complete day of hustle and bustle, just what kind of turbulence would the Pass that seemed peaceful contain.

This time Wen Wan's visit, although it had seemed disordered and chaotic, in reality he had brought many pieces of information.

"It seems I should head towards the Vanguard to have a look. After being in Youyan Pass for such a long time, ultimately I feel like I'm missing something if I do not enter into the camps. Out of the four major camps, if I am able to choose, then of course I would choose the Vanguard. Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan are both people of the vanguard. When the time comes, we can assist and aid each other. With the aid of two military warfare officers, I will be more easily immersed within the camp. Furthermore once battle breaks out, the vanguard will definitely be the front lines who enter in the first instant into conflict. This will act as even greater training for myself....."

In Ye Qingyu's heart, he had already made a decision.

.....

.....

In the next few days, Youyan Pass was comparatively peaceful.

As for the news that the great army was about to retaliate against the Explosive Ice glacier, it had already been spread out through various channels. The large majority of people were able to sense the increasingly tense atmosphere. Only some higher ranking officers would know of just how high the concentrations of the troops being mobilised were. [Army of Youyan Pass] was like a platform of vast and precise machine, that began to function methodically. Right now it was currently storing great power, waiting for the day to explode.

The [Black eagle jade statue] constantly appeared above the skies of Youyan Pass.

More and more advisors and strategists began to come and go from Youyan Pass.

Wagons of files would endlessly be carried out from the Pass Lord's



residence, then there would be new dossiers entering.

The golden flickering lanterns of the military council pavilion would not dim even during the night. The advisors and strategists of the Pass Lord's residence could hardly find time to return to their homes to sleep for the night.

On the streets, more and more patrols could be seen.

Various restrictions began to be enacted during the night.

Within Youyan Pass, they had discovered the secret agents of the demon race several times already. Battles that that could not be described as small or large had sprung up as a result of this.

Before the real battle had begun, the agents of both parties already began exchanging blows soundlessly in darkness and shadow.

Ye Qingyu saw with his own eyes, a white ape of the class of demon warrior, being captured by the experts of the military. This type of white snow ground ape was a demon race that specialised in transformation. It could transform into the figure of a human that was indiscernible to a regular person. Furthermore it was extremely skilled at hiding and climbing. Even in Youyan pass where it was situated in a precipitous mountain pass thousands of metres high, it was able to use purely its physical power of its limbs to enter without utilising any sort of demonic qi whatsoever. Within the demon races, the white apes were natural born spies.

As for that white ape, it was ultimately imprisoned in the blood prison of the Pass Lord's residence.

What awaited it was a hard to imagine painful and bitter torture.

Under the silver torrent-like arrest and investigation of the army, there were constantly demon races being captured within Youyan Pass.

One day, outside White Horse tower, there were sounds of conflict outside.

Ye Qingyu quickly rushed to see. It was the squadron responsible for

investigating and capturing the demon races. They were currently capturing a pig demon.

Even Ye Qingyu was not able to discern, that the chubby and amiable owner of the bun stand opposite White Horse tower, was transformed from a pig demon. His tracks were discovered by the squadron of the Pass Lord's office. During his capture, the pig demon understood that once he was captured, his life was not worth living anymore. Therefore he choose to resist till his death, ultimately being killed at the bun stand.

Even the human wife of that pig demon, and his twin sons not yet ten years of age, were also killed on the spot.

“Who would have thought, fatty Zhang was a pig demon.....”

“That's right, boss Zhang has at least opened the bun stand for tens of years in Youyan Pass. I have never seen him do anything to harm anyone!”

“Ai, lower your voice. Such words, if they are heard by the demon capturing squadron, then you will be in trouble. This is sympathising with the demon race!”

“But the wife of fatty Zhang was evidently human. And his two sons, do not have any attributes of the demon race.....Ai, they've died too tragically!”

“As long as they are the demon race, then we cannot show mercy.”

Within the crowd, all sorts of discussions and arguments broke out.

Ye Qingyu lightly shook his head.

He had also visited the bun stand several times. The buns that fatty Zhang made was definitely tasty, and could be counted as the best from several streets around. But with Ye Qingyu's strength, even he was not able to discover that fatty Zhang was a demon in disguise. In the instant that fatty Zhang fought to his death, in the midst of his despair and rage, he transformed into his original demonic appearance. A black massive wild boar metres high, shimmering with demonic qi, causing one to suffocate. He was definitely a demon at the class of demon warrior.

Seeing the completely scarlet red eyes of that pig demon, Ye Qingyu knew, that the slaughter had only just begin. It had not ended by far.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised, would there also be humans hiding within the territory of the demon race?

If these hidden humans, their identities were discovered by the demon race during their investigations, would they die in despair in battle?

The Ye Qingyu at this time, did not imagine, that the roiling flames to eradicate the spies of the demon race, would begin to light on his body less than half a month later.

Amidst the discussions, Ye Qingyu turned and returned to the White Horse tower.

.....

.....

The morning of the second day.

A visitor came to the White Horse tower.

The head of the supply department Zhang San, brought the allocation officer Zhao Ruyun who had previously gotten in a conflict with Ye Qingyu to White Horse tower along with him.

Four armoured soldiers stood guard outside White Horse tower.

The two people came to the room to receive guests in White Horse tower and saw Ye Qingyu.

“Marquis Ye, this time coming here was mainly to resolve the grudges between the White Horse tower and the supply department. I hope that Marquis Ye does not blame me for being too direct.” Zhang San sat on the chair with his legs wide opened, then leant backwards and placed his foot on the table in front of Ye Qingyu. Squinting his eyes, he said with a smile that was not a smile to Ye Qingyu: “Marquis Ye wants us supply department to give him an accounting. I, Zhang San, have come to give an accounting today.”

The head of the supply department Zhang San, was absolutely an

extremely famous person within Youyan Pass.

It was rumoured that he was once the personal bodyguard of the [War God of Youyan Pass] Lu Zhaoge. Afterwards, he had established many contributions in battle, and was extremely sensitive towards resources like money, food etc, excelling in the accounting and allocation of these resources. He was entrusted with the task of head of the supply department of Youyan Pass. In these years, he had made several contributions. The reason that hundreds of thousand of the [Army of Youyan Pass] were able to eat so smoothly was definitely due to Zhang San's efforts. From his history, he could definitely be counted as a part of the achieving faction in the [Army of Youyan Pass].

But Zhang San's personality was arrogant and conceited. He was also extremely protective. For any person that dared to go against his subordinates, no matter whether they were in the right or not, he would definitely cause a great fuss. He would frequently give no face to anyone, making a significant number of enemies in the army. But relying on his background, and the deep relationship between the [War god of Youyan Pass] Lu Zhaoge, there was nearly no one who could do anything against him.

Three years ago, Zhang San had once caused a great chaos in the Right camp after his personal bodyguard was injured by a military warfare officer in the Right camp. He caused the commander of the Right camp Peng Yizhen to apologize personally. As a result of this, his fame greatly rose.

Zhang San was known to other people as the [Worry of ghosts].

The meaning behind this was that even if a ghost met him, the ghost would need to worry.

Such a title, did not have positive connotations.

But after Zhang San knew of this, he was proud of this title, spreading it about of his own initiative. There were several times that he expressed satisfaction of his title.

In these three years, there were nearly no one who dared to go against

the head of the supply department, the [Worry of ghosts].

And under the influence and personality of a person like Zhang San as head of the supply department, practically everyone under him became overbearing. Furthermore they controlled the allocation of all sorts of resources such as weaponry in the army. They could be counted as the wealth god of the army, they were characters that everyone needed to request something from them. Unless they were extremely enraged, there was no one that was willing to incite them of their own volition.

Two months ago, Ye Qingyu and Zhao Ruyun had butted heads. Ye Qingyu forcefully hung Zhao Ruyun on the [Discipline pillar]; this was tantamount to viciously striking the faces of everyone in the supply department.

It was also tantamount to striking Zhang San, the [Worry of ghosts] face.

Within Youyan Pass, there were many people eagerly waiting for Zhang San, the [Worry of ghosts] to take care of Ye Qingyu who was like a newly born calf that was not afraid of the tiger.

But what made people eyes wide open with shock, was the fact that Zhang San had not displayed any sort of stance, and did not go looking for trouble with Ye Qingyu.

But two days ago, Ye Qingyu had once again fiercely struck the faces of the soldiers of the supply department. He had released them and told them to bring people of the supply department to 'account for themselves'. When the [Worry of ghosts] Zhang San brought Zhao Ruyun outside, there were already people who realised. News spread out through various channels. Before Zhang San had even reached White Horse tower, there were many people hidden around the surroundings of White Horse tower observing.

At this time, apart from the four guards outside White Horse tower, there were also a significant number surrounding the tower.

The [Worry of ghosts] was finally about to go crazy?

The Ye Qingyu who was a newly born calf that was not afraid of the tiger, would he be able to cope with this vicious person that could shake Youyan Pass just by a stamp of his feet?

“This time, I want to see if that trash surnamed Ye, is able to bear this.” Lin Lang said with a cold smile, rejoicing in Ye Qingyu’s misfortune.

He and his group sat in the upper floor of a restaurant two hundred metres away. Coldly they observed everything around White Horse tower. Apart from Lin Lang and the others, there were also people of the cool breeze mountain faction belonging to Yi Sance of the Pass Lord’s residence. They had rushed here the first moment they got wind of this.

Apart from this, there was also the [Painting saint] Liu Yuqing and his student Xing’er. They sat on the second floor of the restaurant, quietly sipping tea.

On the door of the restaurant, there were Liu Zongyuan and his trusted subordinates. They wore full armour, holding their blades and standing straight.

And in the road five metres away from White Horse tower, there was Wen Wan. His expression was as dark and as gloomy as water. He had used the quickest of speed to rush towards White Horse tower.

# Chapter 178: Table and mud

White Horse tower.

“I wonder just what kind of accounting Marquis Ye wants?” Zhang San inclined back on his chair, not concealing the mockery and disdain on his face at all. He looked at Ye Qingyu with a smile that was not a smile.

The person behind him, was Zhao Ruyun, standing as straight as a spear. His lips were also faintly curled.

As part of the younger generation among the allocation officers of the military supply department, Zhao Ruyun was greatly admired by his superior, Zhang San. Due to the fact he understood Zhang San's personality completely, Zhao Ruyun was extremely clear that when such an expression appeared on his superior's face, someone was going to be in deep, troubled waters.

He stared coldly at Ye Qingyu.

He had always awaited the moment when Ye Qingyu's misfortune would come.

Opposite them.

Ye Qingyu had a faint and calm smile.

As if he had not noticed the mockery within Zhang San's tone at all, the young man said seriously: “The accounting that I want, is very simple. Whoever is behind the schemes against the White Horse tower, they will admit it and accept military discipline. Using the soldiers pay to create a plot to frame someone, is very seriously going against the laws of the army. They cannot be spared.”

Hearing this, Zhang San opened his mouth and laughed.

Behind him, the mockery in Zhao Ruyun's face became even more evident. He stared at Ye Qingyu like he was looking at a retard.

“What if I said the person behind all the plots and schemes, was me?” Zhang San's feet was on the table, casually and arrogantly shifting it

about. He made the entire table to creak and squeak, moving it about. He lifted his head to look at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu's gaze was straight and direct as he looked into Zhang San's eyes, without any shred of fear whatsoever: "What difference does it make?"

Zhang San was slightly taken aback, then immediately chuckled: "What you mean is that, even if that person was me, you want me to go and receive military punishment?"

"Is there anything wrong with that?" Ye Qingyu smiled faintly. "Even the [War God of Youyan Pass] Lord Lu Zhaoge, if he breaks the military laws, will have to pay the right price. Why can't Zhang San? Could it be that you are already at the stage where you can ignore all the laws of the military?"

"Impudence, you're looking to die." Zhao Ruyun shouted furiously.

Ye Qingyu turned his head and gave him a glance.

His eyes were filled with contempt and disdain.

At this moment, Zhao Ruyun had a sensation of defeat without even doing anything that made him shocked and angry at the same time.

In that moment, Ye Qingyu's gaze represented far too much coldness. Out of the things held in the gaze, the thing that pierced Zhao Ruyun's self dignity the most was the fact that it was as if Ye Qingyu was saying 'just who do you think you are, that you have the right to speak here?'

The atmosphere was slightly heavy.

Zhao Ruyun looked at Ye Qingyu's expression carefully. After confirming that the young man in front of him was not making a joke, he smiled and nodded his head.

"Being young is really great, with hot blood in your heart, doing things without care. Such new people do things without fear at all. Many times, this really makes one envious, however.....young man, there are some matters that one cannot solve just by having hot blood in your chest. I



have seen far too many stubborn little fellows like you. But ultimately they have either become corpses on the battlefield, or have turned into trashes which remain silent.”

Saying this, Zhang San took his feet off the table.

“Just like this table. The material is far too hard. If it is not able to be flexible, once it encounters some pressure, it is easily destroyed.” As he spoke, the stone table slightly quivered. Without any sound, it suddenly transformed into a pile of white powder. Without knowing when, Zhang San’s exceptional inner yuan had already crushed it into dust.

Such technique, was really extremely exquisite.

According to rumours, the [Worry of ghosts] Zhang San, was not only the head of the supply department. He was also an exceptional martial artist. it was said that ten years ago, he had long entered the Bitter Sea stage.

On the face of Zhao Ruyun, a smile appeared. He was rejoicing in Ye Qingyu’s upcoming predicament.

He nearly burst out laughing.

Have you seen, the fate of the table?

Haha, just how can you Ye Qingyu compete with head Zhang?

With his position and his background in the great army of Youyan pass, Zhang San was definitely an officer of great contribution, achieving countless deeds. When these achievements were placed together, it was able to form a chainmail of protection. Ye Qingyu had not even been in Youyan Pass for three months, just what right did he have? He was far, far from being enough to go against him.

Comparing martial strength, head Zhang was already a Bitter Sea stage tens of years ago. And as for Ye Qingyu, he was only a mere Spirit spring stage, the difference was tens of thousands of miles apart.

From these two important indicators of power, Ye Qingyu was far too lacking. No matter how much dog shit luck you have that you were able

to become the person that the military wanted to build the model example of a heroic soldier of, it would not be enough. With the large scale propaganda done, there were some special political meanings behind Ye Qingyu. If not for that, why would Head Zhang still have the mood to waste time chatting with you. He would long have tied him up and hung him on the [Discipline pillars] outside the supply department. After being hung for ten days and night, at that time he would definitely submit.

Ye Qingyu looked at the white rock powder on the floor and remained silent for a moment.

Namely when Zhao Ruyun felt that the unfortunate patrolling sword envoy was about to submit, Ye Qingyu suddenly spoke.

“You have to pay for it.” He said.

“What?” Zhang San was taken aback.

Ye Qingyu said seriously: “You’ve broken my table, pay for it.”

Zhang San was dumbfounded.

He had already predicted under his pressure and threat, what sort of reaction this young patrolling sword envoy would have —There should be largely two reactions. He would either remain silent and submit or forcefully resist to the end. But he would never have imagined that Ye Qingyu would say such words.

Pay for my table?

Was he crazy?

Was this a matter concerning a table?

Was the main point of this conversation, whether or not he would pay for the table?

Zhang San felt that he was being mocked.

He looked at Ye Qingyu with a shred of anger.

At this moment, Zhang San had an impulse to burst out laughing.

He suddenly felt that the reason that this young patrolling sword envoy had always taken such a hard stance, evidently knowing of his protective nature yet still taking action against Zhao Ruyun, was not really the fact that he was the type to fight for justice and righteousness. It was merely because, that this little brat had mental problems.

This Ye Qingyu, was completely a mental psychopath.

His brain had problems, therefore he could not discern the severity of the situation.

A person with a normal mindset, would absolutely not come provoke him after understanding the benefits and costs involved.

Zhang San took out a piece of gold from his interspacial ring, throwing it to the feet of Ye Qingyu. "A stone table is worth a tael of silver. This piece of gold is worth two hundred taels of silver. I'll give this to you, you don't have to give me change. The money left over you can save, in case you knock into something when you go out, or get beaten up by someone. In that case, you can at least buy some medicine."

This was a bare and naked threat.

Ye Qingyu looked at the gold near his feet, then looked towards the Zhang San coldly sneering. He had the impression, that the person sitting opposite him was not a high ranking military officer holding great power in the [Army of Youyan Pass] but rather a ruffian holding people ransom on the streets.

For such a person to be able to assume the position of the head of the Supply department, was really a strange matter.

After thinking it over, Ye Qingyu extended his hand and activated his inner yuan. A suction force appeared from his palm.

This piece of gold flew to his hand.

The moment it touched his hand, Ye Qingyu was about to say something when an abnormal change occurred --suddenly an incomparably hot aura exploded from this piece of gold. It was as if he was holding a little sun within his hands, this terrifying hotness was

about to completely dissolve half his arm in an instant.

This Zhang San, had left a hidden force within this piece of gold.

In his shock, Ye Qingyu did not show any emotion on his face. The moment he encountered this hidden attack, he activated the Supreme ice flame.

Between his five fingers, there was a faint silver light that flashed slightly.

The heat from the piece of gold, immediately disappeared completely.

“Thank you head Zhang.” Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, his nail lightly slicing across the piece of gold. The gold sliced apart like tofu, and he kept a tiny piece of gold behind but tossed the large majority of the gold back. “I should only take what I deserve. After all, if I take too much, I will once again be suspected of stealing the soldiers’ pay. Such a crime, I cannot bear.

The piece of gold flew through an arc, towards Zhang San’s face.

“Impudence, little trash you are looking to die!”

Zhao Ruyun was both shocked and angry. This Ye Qingyu was really asking for his death, to be so bold and impolite. To throw something at head Zhang’s face. Even the commanders of the four main battle camps would not dare to do such an action.

He stepped out, extending his hand to grab the piece of gold.

His hand clawed through the air, successfully catching the gold.

“Little trash, you really deserve to die ten thousand times over.....” Zhao Ruyun reprimanded in rage. With Zhang San next to him, he completely was not afraid of Ye Qingyu.

But, before he could finish his sentence, he fiercely felt a coldness explode from the palm of his hands.

Lowering his head to look, the shock in his face could not be controlled.

A layer of silver frost, began to spread out from the centre of his palm.

In but a split moment, half of his arm was sealed in ice. This frost was incomparably frightening, everywhere it passed, his arm would entirely lose its feeling. He wanted to activate his inner yuan explosively to resist against his cold, but he discovered that his own inner yuan had no way of activating within his arm.

“Ahhh.....”

Zhao Ruyun began screaming in fear.

In the blink of an eye, the silver frost had already spread to his shoulder.

Zhang San seeing this, let out a slight snort. His palm shot out, lightly pressing it onto Zhao Ruyun’s shoulder.

A stream of warmth entered into Zhao Ruyun’s body, resisting against the silver frost.

Seeing that Zhang San had acted, Zhao Ruyun completely let out a breath of relief.

But very quickly, an alarmed sound came from behind him

“Eh?”

A trace of alarm suddenly appeared on Zhang San’s relaxed and contemptuous face. The palm that he had casually placed on Zhao Ruyun’s shoulder faintly quivered, then fiercely shone with a piercing orange. A terrifying heat exploded.

The next instant, the silver frost on Zhao Ruyun’s shoulder gradually disappeared.

Zhao Ruyun’s expression finally relaxed.

“Little trash, you are pretending to be strong? A clown that does not know his own strength.” Zhao Ruyun insulted Ye Qingyu. From his perspective, if Zhang San was willing to act, Ye Qingyu’s tiny little cultivation was not even worth mentioning.

But he did not see, that on the fingers of Zhang San, there was a faint silver frost that had not yet disappeared.

Zhao Ruyun turned his body around respectfully. He presented the piece of gold in his hands with boths hands towards the Zhang San behind him.

Zhang San received the piece of gold.

Within his eyes, there was a shock that was not easily noticed. Tossing the piece of gold in his hand, a short while later he nodded his head: “Somewhat interesting. It seems like I have underestimated you, otherwise you would not dare to be so wild.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile.

“It seems like we cannot discuss matters peacefully today?” Zhang San once again returned to his arrogant and overbearing manner. Staring straight at Ye Qingyu. “In other words, Marquis Ye wants to go against the entire supply department?”

“I only want an accounting.” Ye Qingyu said word by word. “It’s that simple, and is also what my White Horse tower should receive.

Zhang San: “If you want an accounting, then you will have to pay the price.”

“The price?” Ye Qingyu pointed at the white powder on the floor. “My table, if it is not hard enough, then can items still be placed on it? A table that bends is not the original nature of a table. Such an object, can no longer be called a table. Therefore it transformed into powder under Head Zhang’s feet, and not bent into a pile of rotten mud\*.

Saying to here, Ye Qingyu looked towards Zhao Ruyun. Saying meaningfully: “Some people choose to bend and become a pile of mud, but I wish to be a table that will never bend.”

Zhao Ruyun’s face instantly turned red as if pig’s blood had been painted on his face.

\*Used to describe a useless heap or a person without a spine.

# Chapter 179: People may be afraid of you, but I'm not

Even an idiot could tell that Ye Qingyu's words were mocking Zhao Ruyun.

But Zhao Ruyun's face turning such a shade of red was equal to admitting that he was a pile of mud without a spine.

Zhan San's gaze passed by Zhao Ruyun's face. A shred of disappointment flashed in his eyes. Zhao Ruyun was originally a young talent of the supply department that he had high expectations of because his personality was extremely like his own. In these years, his performance had not been bad, but today, Zhao Ruyun was really far too lacking when compared to Ye Qingyu.

"If you want to be a table, then you should be prepared to be crushed into powder." Zhang San slowly walked towards the door. "I am really curious as to just how long you can endure."

Ye Qingyu coldly snorted. "Everyone says that you are arrogant and bossy. Seeing you today, you are not just domineering, you are also mad. As a soldier, using the power in your hands as you will to suppress others, really too unscrupulous, you treat all the laws of the army as invisible. Using the word insane to describe you is really just about right.

Zhang San's face instantly changed colour.

His footsteps immediately halted.

Just how many years had it been since someone dared to say such words in front of him?

"Little thing, you have angered me time and time again. Are you really looking to die?" Zhang San sinisterly turned around, his gaze was like a blade stabbing into one's bones. He stared tightly at Ye Qingyu, ready to strike at any moment.

Ye Qingyu looked at him straight in the eye, without any fear

whatsoever. "Just by you? Try it and see."

Within Zhang San's heart, a flame as hot as if it was the true flame of the ninth heaven burned.

His chest rose up and down because of his fury. Zhang San originally was not a person skilled at hiding his emotions, and after Ye Qingyu's words, he was about to explode with anger.

But....

Zhang San suddenly looked at his five fingers and the silver frost that had not yet dissipated. His heart shivered.

Just now, when Ye Qingyu returned the gold piece, he had prepared it with his silver frost qi. Such a technique was exquisite and such a cold power was an energy that Zhang San had never witnessed before in his life. Even with his Bitter Sea stage of cultivation, he could not get rid of the cold qi from Zhao Ruyun's body in the first instant. Instead, he was invaded by this invisible cold power into his own body, like a maggot seeping into the bones. This was exceedingly frightening.

This made Zhang San unable to discern and identify Ye Qingyu's true strength.

After thinking back to the youth in front of him, Ye Qingyu's action of returning alive from the clutches of Yan Buhui made him even more mysterious and unfathomable. Zhang San was faintly apprehensive of him. If today he really struck out and could not defeat Ye Qingyu, he would be humiliated and become a laughingstock.

Those who were protective normally cared about their face highly.

Zhang San was protective, but he cared more about his face.

If he fought with Ye Qingyu today and his raft capsized in shallow waters, this was something that he could not accept.

As this thought flickered through his mind, Zhang San's desire to act began to wane.

If he was not confident in succeeding something, he would definitely not



attempt it.

He then thought further. How was Ye Qingyu so strong? What was he relying on? A little thing that had only arrived recently; he dared to act against him? Strength was one part of the equation, but who could say whether there were people behind the scenes supporting him. In these years he had offended many people. What if there were people acting together in the shadows against him, and this Ye Qingyu was only their blade that was used in their schemes against him?

“Good, very good. Little fellow, it seems you really want to go against me.” The orange flame in the centre of Zhang San’s palm slowly dispersed. Fiercely nodding his head: “But this is something that you sought by yourself, so I’ll play with you a little. Lets see who will play with whom to their death. Those who dare act against me directly these years is not only you. I remember two years ago there was a military warfare officer in the Vanguard. From a little noble family, he had exceptional martial talent with many contributions in battle. He thought he was out of the ordinary, so he rejected me. His name was called Gao Sheng Han. Why don’t you ask him, just what he is doing now.....

Before he finished, Ye Qingyu could not bear it any longer, suddenly exploded.

“Shut your mouth.” Ye Qingyu said in rage. “A dog like thing, to be so prideful and brag while talking about your betters.. You used your position and status to suppress a young officer with limitless potential, causing the army of the Empire to suffer a huge loss, do you think you’re great? You dog like thing, you’re really the parasite of the army. A ruffian with a scum like personality, not only not repaying the debt of the Empire by serving loyally, you’re also not grateful of the fact that you know the [War God of Youyan Pass] Lord Lu Zhaoge and your debt to him. Instead you plot and scheme, you think this is how you establish authority. I spit on this. You go and ask, just how many people are pointing at you behind your back and cursing your ancestors. To be here so prideful of your own actions is really outstandingly shameless!”

Ye Qingyu had never hated and felt contempt for a person like he did

now.

This Zhang San was really the tumour of the army.

It was really hard to imagine why the [War God of Youyan Pass], Lu Zhaoge, that was known as one of the ten greatest warriors of Heaven Wasteland domain, would allow such a shameless person like Zhang San to control the supply department.

Zhao Ruyun was completely stunned speechless.

He completely did not believe what his ears were hearing.

As for Zhang San, he was pointing at Ye Qingyu, similarly struck speechless. His finger began quivering, his face the colour of blood: “You, you, you.....

The head of the supply department had been angered so much that he could not even finish his sentence.

He had never experienced someone insulting and cursing him to his face. Even Lu Zhaoge had never reprimanded him like so.

But conversely he felt that there was something in Ye Qingyu words that turned into invisible power. Word after word heavily struck his heart, causing a part inside his body to instantly collapse, not able to form any resistance.

“I, I, I? I what?” Ye Qingyu rose up.

His originally muscular figure, in this instant, seemed to turn vast and unfathomable. “I am only a little military officer, with nothing to rely on. But my actions are righteous, with a clear conscience. People may be scared of you, but I’m not afraid of you. A little ruffian that isn’t even clear of what the situation is, why are you trying to pretend to be glorious in front of me? Today you are the high up head of the supply department, but tomorrow just what kind of thing you will become, who can say. The person who walks a lot on the night roads cannot help but encounter a ghost. You’ve done so many terrible things that one day, karma will definitely come back to bite you. When you have fallen to the ground, look to those people who fear and respect you now, just how will they

treat you!

Word after word, as if it was apocalyptic thunder, struck heavily at Zhang San's heart.

Zhang San's face became deathly pale. He shouted furiously, "You ....you just what do you know little scrap, I'll kill you.

He had gone completely mad with fury.

He could originally hold his temper, because he evidently had come here to humiliate this young man, but right now, he was so angry he could spit out seven kinds of flames from all the apertures in his body. He had never been angry like he was today. And even after exploding with fury, he was still able to sense a shred of emotion hidden deep within his inner heart.....fear!

"Haha, I really don't understand anything. But even I know, that there are things that you can do and that there are things you can't do. I pity you that your arrogance has long ruled your mind, that you have long dug your own grave. You are situated in an Asura realm, but you do not know yourself." Ye Qingyu coldly smiled.

The gaze he looked at Zhang San was as if he was looking at a pitiful bug.

In these years, Zhang San had used his position to bully and oppress others. He seemed to be really glorious, such that even the commander of the right camp, Peng Yizhen, lowered his head to him. He seemed faintly to be the second person after Lu Zhaoge, but in reality, he was digging his own grave. The more people that he offended, the more people that hated him.. Seeing his status, the others did not do anything. But once he even slightly lost his position and status, then what was awaiting Zhang San from everyone was definitely a disaster that would turn his bones into powder.

Ye Qingyu's words cut to the heart, deeply inciting Zhang San. He had completely gone berserk.

This head of the supply department forgot all about his apprehension.

There was no way he could suppress the killing rage in his heart anymore.

Within both his palms an orange light flickered. A terrible yuan qi heat fluctuation, instantly surged in the large hall. With the surging flames burning, he acted instantly.

The power of the Bitter Sea stage was enough to make one suffocate.

Zhao Ruyun let out a tragic cry. This violent energy instantly struck him, sending him flying backwards. He struck the stone wall and spat out a jet of blood, his expression extremely alarmed.

“Come.”

Ye Qingyu shouted loudly, acting at the same moment.

The power of twenty spirit springs activated with its full strength. His entire body exploded with the roar of dragons, the inner yuan madly flowing throughout his entire body, like the surge of a great river. Twenty silver snow dragons encircled around his body, giving him huge power. At the same time, he did not hesitate at all to activate the [Supreme ice flame] within his dantian world.

Out of all of the aces Ye Qingyu had, only the [Supreme Ice flame] could pose as any sort of threat to experts of the Bitter Sea stage.

At the same time, Ye Qingyu's spirit focused. His mind, qi, and soul combined, and thankfully he managed to activate the state of the [Limitless Divine Way]

It was only the first limit of the [Limitless Divine Way], but that was already enough.

His battle power instantly doubled.

The power of forty spirit springs instantly exploded out.

-Boom! Boom! Boom!-

The moment the two people met, they exchanged three fists.

Every time the fists met with each other, there would be orange and

silver rings of light that appeared. Layer after layer, the rings spread out with their center at the place where the fists met.

The battle fluctuations that could be seen, but not felt, quickly exploded out towards all directions. Everywhere they passed, the stone chairs and tables would turn into powder. The yuan qi formations on the stone walls of the White Horse Tower were activated, and the formation light was like lightning running along the walls.....

Behind them.....

Zhao Ruyun madly activated his inner yuan to protect himself. He spat out fresh bloods in great quantities.

He felt like he was a piece of paper. He was stuck to the wall like a painting by the yuan qi turbulence that crushed him against the wall. Not only was there no way for him to move and evade, he could not even open his mouth to speak. If he opened his mouth, this terrible qi would stuff into his mouth, making him suffocate.

Three explosions exploded within White Horse tower.

The entire White Horse tower was as if it was situated in an earthquake. It began quivering and shaking, as if it could collapse at any moment.

On the walls and the floors, streak after streak of lightning-like formation flickered, reinforcing and stabilising. Finally the historic building managed to withstand the terrible yuan qi fluctuations.

Ye Qingyu spat out a mouthful of blood and was sent flying backwards.

However, even in the air, he did not lose control.

Lightly floating towards the wall, Ye Qingyu's left hand pushed against it. A large swathe of ice spread out across the wall, and by borrowing this force, he managed to gently land on the ground, like a fluttering butterfly. His body movements were elegant, full of vitality, and his figure was stable.

Apart from spitting out a mouthful of blood, there were no internal

injuries within Ye Qingyu. His yuan qi was flowing strongly and smoothly like usual!

Opposite.

Zhang San's robe fluttered and both hands were behind his back. His stance was relaxed to the extreme.

At this moment, the power of an expert at the Bitter sea stage was demonstrated fully.

The yuan qi fluctuation in the large hall slowly settled down.

Zhao Ruyun was in a utterly sorry state as he slowly slid off the wall to the floor. The pain throughout his body was as if every bone in his body had broken into inch sized pieces.

But currently, Zhao Ruyun could not care about this at all.

The shock and fear in his heart could not be described purely through words alone.

Because when he was sliding down, he could clearly see that Zhang San's two hands behind his back was currently trembling. A scarlet red trail of blood was slowly dripping down to the ground from his forefinger, emitting nearly audible sounds of the drops plopping to the floor.

Zhao Ruyun's mind went completely blank.

"The head was injured? How was this possible?

At this moment—

-Boom!-

The great door of White Horse tower was pushed open by someone.

Countless figures rushed in.

The person at the very forefront was Wen Wan.

"Zhang San you bastard. Today I will fight to the death with you..... Little Yu, Little Yu are you okay?" He roared like a mad tiger. Wen Wan evaluated everything within the great hall. Behind him was Liu Zongyuan who did his utmost to hold him back, but it was a pity that Wen Wan had

broken free from his restraints.

Liu Zongyuan had also followed closely behind him.

Behind them another crowd rushed in.

Evidently they had been shaken by the impact of those three punches and the turmoil it had caused. Apart from Liu Zongyuan and tens of soldiers from the Vanguard, there was also Lin Lang, Yi Sance, people of the Cool Breeze Mountain faction, soldiers and allocation officers from the supply department, the Rear camp, Vanguard, Left camp, Right camp, people of the Pass Lord's residence, and also the guards on patrol. It was a significant number.

The people of all parties that paid attention to the White Horse tower instantly rushed in at the same time.

Originally everyone had thought that Zhang San had come to White Horse tower to make things difficult for Ye Qingyu. But they only expected him to verbally humiliate him or threaten him a little. They had never expected that he would really act out personally and cause such a great commotion.....

Zhang San had completely gone berserk.

Ye Qingyu, after all, was recently bestowed a title and had greatly contributed during the battle. He was also the target of a propaganda program by the military to construct him as a model hero. At this time, whoever wanted to act against him needed to think it thrice over. This type of situation where one was positioned where the winds and waves were the fiercest was really troublesome to get oneself into.

No one imagined that Zhang San would strike out and activate his Bitter Sea stage level of cultivation to kill Ye Qingyu.

That's right, everyone felt that Ye Qingyu would be killed.

No one felt that Ye Qingyu would be able to survive in front of the powerful strength of someone at the Bitter Sea stage.

Just now the terrifying strength of those three punches could clearly be

sensed by everyone even through the walls of the White Horse tower. The power was like the abyss itself, stifling people. The only possibility was that the [Worry of ghost] Zhang San had completely gone crazy. With his exceptional strength, he had forcefully slaughtered Ye Qingyu, turning him into mush.



# Chapter 180: Shocks and suspicions

To face a Bitter Sea stage expert, and especially Zhang San; a person who had reached the Bitter Sea stage long ago. No one had expected Ye Qingyu to be able to survive.

The difference between the two realms, was like the difference between Heaven and Earth.

The reason Wen Wan had gone berserk, was because he felt that the chances of Ye Qingyu's survival were slim.

Even Liu Zongyuan was overcome with fury, and could not hold onto Wen Wan any longer. He did not care about anything anymore, and loudly shouted, "Head Zhang, you are far too tyrannical. Ye Qingyu is the future star of the Empire, and has contributed greatly to Youyan Pass. To kill him as you please, the things that you have done in these past years are too over the line. Today no matter what, you will have to give us an accounting."

Liu Zongyuan completely tore apart all pretense of friendliness with Zhang San.

Lin Lang, Yi Sance and the others could only coldly sneer.

Zhang San fiercely turned around, coldly glaring at Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan. Killing intent seeped out from his heart. "Haha, the dogs that bite people do not bark. Just what kinds of things are you two, to not even dare to let out a fart in front of me before, but leaping out to bark madly right now? Haha, if I want to kill a person, do I still need to ask you two little dogs and give a report to you guys?"

"Trash, I will fight with you to the death." Wen Wan was like a crazed tiger, rushing forward, about to strike out.

At this moment

"Old Wen, quickly stop."

A familiar voice sounded.

Everyone felt their vision blurring, and could see a figure flash out from the dust behind Zhang San, holding Wen Wan back.

His white robe was like snow.

This person was namely Ye Qingyu.

“Release me, you motherfucking.....” After being held back, Wen Wan’s first instinctive reaction was to roar in rage. But he had only screamed for a bit when he suddenly realised something. Turning his head to look, he saw the face that was horribly familiar appear next to him. The fellow that he had originally thought had long died, was still alive.

His mind went completely blank.

“Brother Ye, you.....are you still alive?” Liu Zongyuan’s state of mind was more stable and was the first person to react.

Ye Qingyu had a face of helplessness: “I say, Old Wen, can you have a little more confidence in me, why is it that I would die? Haha, I’m a person that even Yan Buhui cannot kill. To want to kill me, no matter who it is, they will have to pay a small price!”

Liu Zongyuan could not say anything, before Wen Wan next to him went berserk yet again.

“Bastard.... ” Wen Wan roared in rage, a punch landed on Ye Qingyu’s chest. “I remember I motherfucking told you not to scare people needlessly, yet you pretended to be dead yet again!”

“Ai.....”

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and spat out a jet of blood.

“Eh? Are you okay?” Wen Wan was shocked by this, quickly taking back the second punch that he had thrown out.

Ye Qingyu had a bitter face. “If you punch me a few times more, I really won’t be fine.....Old Wen, could you be a little gentler. Everytime I see you, you meet me with fists. It’s causing me to have psychological pressure everytime I see you.”

Wen Wan swung his fists about resentfully. "I, your father was only worried about you, little bastard....."

Ye Qingyu was also moved in his heart.

This time, Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan had completely gone against Zhang San, one of the huge figures in Youyan Pass in their panic for himself. Just who was Zhang San? Ye Qingyu completely understood today. That the two people before him, in front of so many people to reprimand Zhang San, just how much courage did this need?

Especially Liu Zongyan. Previously, Ye Qingyu really regarded him as a friend, but only as a normal friend.

But right now, Ye Qingyu knew that the military warfare officer was a true man. He was a staunch and resolute person, a person that was truly worth knowing.

Ye Qingyu was not used to using words to express his own emotions.

But he would forever remember such a scene.

Only after Wen Wan had completely inspected Ye Qingyu from top to bottom, and confirmed that he had not sustained any hidden injuries, could he lay his worries to rest.

As for the other people, they had fallen into an extreme shock that they could not break out of.

Ye Qingyu was still alive?

Furthermore, his injuries did not seem that serious.....

This.....

Countless gazes turned towards Zhang San in this instant.

This great figure of the military, did not slaughter Ye Qingyu in the first instant. Those three huge and terrifying sounds as well as that yuan qi fluctuation that nearly caused the entire White Horse tower to collapse, just what was that about? Could it be that Ye Qingyu had directly fought and resisted against Zhang San?

No matter whether it was Lin Lang, Yi Sance or other various people belonging to the major camps or factions, they felt that this matter was somewhat ridiculous.

“Just what has happened?” Lin Lang stealthily went over, asking Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun’s face was deathly pale. He shook his head, not saying anything.

Even if he was a stupid pig, he would know to absolutely not disclose what had happened in the hall just now. Otherwise Zhang San would definitely cut him up alive. For Zhang San, this matter was definitely a great humiliation. He would absolutely not let anyone know of his humiliation.

Zhao Ruyun right now was in tremendous panic and shock.

He had no way of believing, that Ye Qingyu really could directly fight against, and even injure Zhang San.

He really could not see through Ye Qingyu at all.

But there was one point that he could be sure of. Zhao Ruyun swore, that in his entire life he would never ever face a monster like Ye Qingyu. Despite how despairing and defeated his heart was, but he must admit that he and Ye Qingyu were not on the same level.

The atmosphere of the large hall, was slightly strange.

“Little thing, who would have thought you had some level of cultivation. It seems I was mistaken.” Zhang San looked at Ye Qingyu, coldly snorting. “But you are still not enough. There is still a great distance for you to go if you want to overthrow me. Wait and see, one day you will see my true power.”

As he finished, Zhang San turned around, heading outside the large hall.

The crowd that had rushed in through the large door, hurried to open a passage like they were avoiding supernatural beings, snakes or scorpions.

Zhang San brought Zhao Ruyun away from the large hall, heading outside White Horse tower. With the protection of the four soldiers outside, they slowly disappeared in the streets far off.

At this time, the sky was already dark.

The last afterglow of the sun descended on the streets.

The restricted time was about to arrive. There were very few people left on the streets, making it extremely spacious.

Zhang San's figure, in this twilight seemed somewhat lonely.

Without knowing what he thought of, he suddenly turned to look at White Horse tower.

As his back was towards the sun, his body blocked the rays of light. Therefore his facial expression, in this instant, was covered in shadows and was extremely unclear. But in his eyes that were oblique and long, like blades, there was a deep coldness that flashed by.

Everyone that saw that gaze, would shiver in their heart.

Only until Zhang San and the others disappeared in a corner far off, did the large majority of people relax greatly.

Everyone's gaze once again returned to Ye Qingyu.

Everyone began to newly re-evaluate this young man due to their extreme shock.

Originally, everyone thought that he was only a minor character. Right now, they could not help but think even deeper. As they thought back carefully of the things that had happened ever since this young man came to Youyan Pass, more and more people realised that the new master of White Horse tower was really not as simple as he seems.

At least from the matter today, it was very possible that Ye Qingyu had directly fought against the three punches of Zhang San.

Could it be that Ye Qingyu's strength had already entered into the Bitter sea stage?

Even if it was not the Bitter Sea stage, he had at least stepped on the boundary of the Bitter Sea stage.

This was the evaluation in the hearts of everyone.

Heavens, a person that has not yet reached sixteen was suspected to be a Bitter Sea stage expert?

Thinking of the weight behind such a person was enough to make anyone feel light-headed.

“Since Marquis Ye is fine, then I can rest assured. I will bother you no longer, and we shall say farewell. We will call on Marquis Ye another day.” An officer of the Right camp clasped his hands and said.

These words were extremely intricate, vaguely expressing friendly intentions.

As he said those words, other people also reacted.

“Marquis Ye really is a young hero.....”

“The army is really somewhat chaotic these days.”

“Farewell!”

“The mentality of a young man, you need to pay more care in the future.”

The other people spoke up and said a sentence or two, either displaying their good intentions or saying a few perfunctory words. They then clasped their hands in farewell. The matters today, were somewhat complicated. The two parties in confrontation, looking at the situation now, were both fierce characters. The large majority had high praises for Ye Qingyu, but they were absolutely not willing to offend Zhang San. Therefore the best practice was to quickly leave.

Ye Qingyu did not say much, smiling and clasping his hands to see them off.

Very quickly the large hall packed with people, became empty again. The crowd that had rushed in turned and departed.

“Brother Ye, I’ll first go back, too. Tonight I am on duty, and there is an hour left till the roll call. We’ll meet again another day.” Liu Zongyuan let out a breath of relief, clasping his hands in farewell.

“Qingyu dares not forget the debt of Brother Liu’s aid today.” Ye Qingyu did not leave things at half measures, clearly expressing his attitude.

Liu Zongyuan smiled slightly, and nodded his head heavily. He brought the soldiers under his command and left.

“Big Willow, I, Old Wen will offer my apologies to you for some other day. Several days ago I have offended you, today I must admit that you, Big Will, is a true man. I admire you.” Wen Wan shouted at Liu Zongyuan’s back.

Liu Zongyuan did not turn back but lifted his hand and waved, indicating that he knew.

“That fellow, at least he still has a conscience, to dare to speak.....” Wen Wan had his arms folded across his chests and said with a smile.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, and said thoughtfully, “That’s right, if true men like Liu Zongyuan are everywhere within the army, people like Zhang San, how could they dare be arrogant..... The army of Youyan Pass, if they really want to launch a strike against the Snow Ground demon court, with their current attitude, this will be difficult.”

Wen Wan laughingly insulted, “You stinky brat, just what do you know. There is naturally a reason for why Zhang San is so arrogant. It is not as simple as you imagined. This time you are in the limelight, but the trouble you have incited is also not few. There are times that you need to submit and nod slightly. Today you really provoked the madman Zhang San to strike out.....”

Ye Qingyu smiled. “I intentionally provoked him to act.”

“Eh?” Wen Wan was taken aback, then was instantly enraged. “You mean, that you hate the fact that your life is too long? This is absolutely crazy.”

Ye Qingyu began laughing. “Of course I was confident, so I did this.

Zhang San really was at the Bitter Sea stage, but according to the rumours, Zhang San chose to enter into the Bitter Sea stage when he was at the thirty five Spirit springs stage. Therefore he can only be counted as a fake Bitter Sea stage. Today I provoked him to strike, so I could test his strength.”

“You are completely crazy.” Wen Wan glared at him. “A fake Bitter Sea stage expert to a Spirit spring expert, is also a great mountain they can never overcome. To think that you.....”

Ye Qingyu laughed but he did not say anything.

Wen Wan suddenly realised a matter, “You little brat, how do you suddenly know so much? To have understood Zhang San in such detail, who told you? Also, honestly tell me, just what stage have you reached?”

.....

.....

Liu Zongyuan came out from the White Horse tower. The smile on his face gradually disappeared.

Today at White Horse tower, for him, was an extremely great choice.

To completely go against a person like Zhang San, was a thought that he dared not even think three months ago.

For a military warfare officer like him, Zhang San could casually flick his wrist and that was enough to send him into hell.

Even if he did not like Zhang San’s way of doing things, but Liu Zongyuan would still choose to evade him.

But today, he did not understand why he would reprimand Zhang San in front of so many people.

But he did not regret this.

Because he had received the true friendship of Ye Qingyu.

The officers behind him had worry on their faces. They were currently fretting over their own masters.



As they walked past the restaurant opposite them, they saw two familiar figures walk out from within. It was namely the [Painting saint] Liu Yuqing and his student Xinger.

# Chapter 181: Evaluation

“Mister Liu has also come.....” After Liu Zongyuan had said his greetings, he pointed at the White Horse tower behind him.

Liu Yuqing had a faint smile: “I’ve heard there were matters undergoing here, so I came to have a look.”

“But you did not enter and see.” Liu Zongyuan was taken aback, but after seeing the calm smile on Liu Yuqing’s face, he suddenly understood. He said in surprise: “Mister Liu, you long knew the result of this?”

Liu Yuqing nodded his head. “I can largely guess. The way Marquis Ye does things is out of people’s expectations. But he rarely does anything that he has no confidence in. Like last time when facing Yan Buhui, he was able to escape from his clutches. According to my expectations, he should be able to bear it even if he was facing the [Worry of ghosts].”

Liu Zongyuan had for long greatly admired the thinking of this strategist of the Military council. As he listened to him, he nodded his head. “That’s right, Zhang San was enraged till he went crazy. He struck out by himself, but he nearly could not gain any advantage whatsoever. Brother Ye only suffered small external injuries. After resting for two or three hours, then he should be recovered.....” As he said this, Liu Zongyuan said in a somewhat questioning tone: “Mister Liu, Brother Ye’s strength, to have.....”

Liu Yuqing shook his head: “I also don’t know. Perhaps he has an ace up his sleeve, and is not afraid of normal fake Bitter Sea stage experts. This little Marquis, has encountered many fortuitous events, and his fate is even more peculiar. I cannot see through him. But from the situation at the present, this person is not something destined to live in a pond. This is only his temporary hibernation; once his opportunity arrives, after experiencing wind and rain, he will transform into a dragon to soar above the Ninth Heaven. His achievements in the future, is not something we can guess at.”

Such an evaluation was extremely high.

In Liu Zongyuan's memories, he had never heard Mister Liu praise a person like so before.

"Today you went against Zhang San?" Liu Yuqing asked with a smile.

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head with a bitter smile. "I was in too great a panic. The way Head Zhang does things, is far too tyrannical. I thought that Marquis Ye had died under his hands, therefore....."

"You may lose at sunrise but gain at sunset. For you, this perhaps is a fortunate incident. Zhang San will recompense all the slights he received. You must be careful in the near future. Liu Yuqing reminded, then said. "Since you have chosen Marquis Ye, why don't you walk this path completely to its end. Perhaps there is a completely different world awaiting you."

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head: "Thank you Mister Liu for your advice."

The Central Military officers behind him, after hearing these words apart from feeling shock had also grasped a great deal of information. The worry in their hearts gradually dissipated. They were the confidants of Liu Zongyuan; not only were their strength's exceptional, but their thinking was also extremely nimble. Hearing this, they understood that their superior's action was not a moment of rashness. It was a decision that he had deeply mulled over.

This Marquis Ye, could he really arm wrestle with a huge figure in the army like Zhang San?

No matter what, everyone was utterly clear, that since their superior officer Liu Zongyuan had made his choice, then their fate would rise and fall along with Ye Qingyu's.

After discussing for a bit more, Liu Zongyuan clasped his hands to say farewell, rushing towards the camp for his duty.

Liu Zongyuan and Xing'er walked slowly and leisurely.

Without knowing when it started, snow once again floated through the air.

Xing'er lifted up an oiled paper umbrella, standing on his tip toes to hold the umbrella for Liu Yuqing. His eyeballs were whirling, and there was a trace of curiosity on his fair face: "Mister, did Zhang San really get injured?"

"You little fellow, you have long seen through this, why did you ask me?" Mister Liu reprimanded with a smile: "Your power and cultivation is significantly higher than mine, but instead you ask me. Are you bullying the poor eyesight of this old man?"

Xing'er stuck his tongue out. "Mister is the Painting Saint, his eyes are the best."

Liu Yuqing had always spoiled his personal student. With a smile: "En, Zhang San was injured, and his injuries are not light. This Ye Qingyu, more and more I cannot see through him. That day when he returned to Youyan Pass and saw me, after recounting his own experiences, his first words were to ask me what level of cultivation Zhang San was at. It seems like, at that time, he had already predicted the matters today. His foresight is somewhat frightening."

Xing'er humphed, and said in a disagreeing tone: "Mister is overestimating that fellow. Perhaps he was afraid that Zhang San would seek him for vengeance, so that's why he preemptively asked you for information beforehand."

Liu Yuqing shot a glance at his little student, and said with a smile: "What you say is possible, but you have missed a point. It seems that today he intentionally provoked Zhang San to strike out, so it should be that everything was in his plan. Zhang San meeting him could be counted as his tribulation. Whether he can pass through this, will depend on his luck."

"Zhang San's tribulation?" Xing'er had his eyes opened wide. "Mister, are you not over exaggerating?"

Liu Yuqing smiled, but did not say anything.

Looking at the floating snow in the sky, his heart slowly became heavier and heavier.

The effect of the battle of three punches in White Horse tower today would very quickly become evident. If Youyan Pass could be said to be an extremely compressed barrel of gunpowder these days, then the actions of Ye Qingyu today would become a fuse that would cause the explosion of this gunpowder.

And right now, the fuse was currently burning.

.....

.....

Supply department.

The great hall of the head.

Zhang San, step by step, walked up the platform. Every step of his was extremely slow.

He had ordered the other guards to retreat, and behind him was Zhao Ruyun with a deathly pale face, respectfully following behind him.

When there was only the last step between them and the entrance of the great hall, Zhang San suddenly stopped. He stood for a long time on the steps, not heading forward, not moving in the slightest.

The Zhao Ruyun following behind him, felt something was slightly strange.

He originally wanted to ask what the head was thinking, but he did not dare make a noise. He silently stood behind Zhang San.

After a total of fifteen minutes.

“Hold me.” Zhang San suddenly opened his mouth, suppressing his voice.

Zhao Ruyun was taken aback: “What?”

Zhang San slowly lifted his head. “Come over and assist me.”

Zhao Ruyun suddenly understood. His heart filled with tremendous shock, he took a quick step forward, holding Zhang San’s arm. Zhang San lightly breathed out a mouthful of air, and with Zhao Ruyun’s assistance,

walked step by step into the great hall. After entering through the door, they closed the doors of the hall.

At the moment when the large doors were closed--

“Pok!””

Zhang San’s figure quivered fiercely, a jet of blood came spitting from his mouth.

Scarlet fresh blood, fell on the smooth and polished jade like floor of the great hall. With light ‘chi chi’ sounds, it transformed into scarlet red ice, emitting a dense coldness.

“Superior, you.....” Zhao Ruyun was greatly shocked.

Zhang San waved his hands, not saying anything. He directly sat in a meditative stance, circulating his qi to recover.

An orange light seemed to emanate from within his body, enveloping his entire figure. It was as if his entire person had transformed into a scorching and burning flame. Originally in the somewhat dark great hall, instantly it turned completely bright. Hot air filled the entire space.

Zhao Ruyun stood dumbly by one side.

Although he had previously seen Zhang San’s fingertip dripping blood and knew that he was injured, but he would have never dreamed that the injuries were this serious. When Zhang San was climbing the steps, the reason that he walked so slowly step by step, was not because he was pondering something. It was because his injuries were far too serious, that he had no way of walking normally.

Time passed minute by minute.

Zhao Ruyun’s entire person was completely drowned in a type of fear that was hard to express.

A full two hours passed.

Only then did the orange flame on Zhang San gradually retreat within his body.

His face was somewhat more vigorous. Walking deep into the great hall, he sat on large white jade chair, then let out a faint breath. "This Ye Qingyu, to have controlled such a strange ice power. I did not suspect it for a short while, and nearly fell into his trap."

Saying this, he felt apprehension after the event.

This strange power was like a maggot burrowing into the bones, there was no place it could not enter. Even with his flame power at the Bitter Sea stage, not only could it not obstruct this power, but instead, it invaded into his inner organs. If not for the fact that he expended his life yuan qi to forcefully eradicate it, most likely right now he would have turned into a block of ice already.

"Superior, right now.....are you fine?" Zhao Ruyun rushed over and asked anxiously.

Zhang San gave him a glance. "I am fine, you can go."

Zhao Ruyun did not dare say anything, retreating backwards.

After walking several steps, Zhang San's voice came from behind him: "The things that happened here today, is not to be known by other people."

Zhao Ruyun rushed to indicate he understood.

.....

.....

White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu saw off Wen Wan who kept insisting he wanted to borrow the little silver dragon to play with for a couple of days.

Eating the dinner Mother Wu sent over, Ye Qingyu returned to the clean training room.

The heart of the White Horse sword slave Bai Yuanxing was particularly excited, an emotion that was hard to describe using words. After so many years, he had the sensation where he could stick out his chest. The people who usually regarded him with disdain, right now

hated the fact that they could not become his good friend.

The countless worries in his heart, were completely laid to rest in this one day.

He had already begun to worship the new master of White Horse tower.

The curse of the White Horse tower, had not shown any results on the new master.

Bai Yuanxing could vaguely see, the last wishes of his ancestor being fulfilled again. The White Horse tower, would soon rise again.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

His sword like lightning, Bai Yuanxing did his utmost to train with his sword.

With the powerful demonstration of his new master, apart from making him excited, it also gave him an unprecedented vitality. At this moment, he felt like he had an inexhaustible supply of energy, and his speed when he cultivated was numerous times higher than normal.

“I need to quickly raise my strength. Only then, do I have the qualifications to stay behind Master.”

Bai Yuanxing swore in his heart.

He felt, he was finally welcoming his new life.

.....

.....

The next three days.

Ye Qingyu stayed within White Horse tower to cultivate.

There were numerous people who came to pay their respects, but they were all kept outside by Ye Qingyu. The bruises on Mother Wu's face had already subsided, so she once again swung her broomstick outside. She stood at the doorway to White Horse tower, and completely kept all the people from the various parties outside, waiting to pay their respects. Nearly in an instant, the fame of the White Horse Shrew, once again



began spreading.

Counting the time, the coldest season of Snow Empire had already passed.

It was the season of spring.

The weather was no longer as cold like it was previously. In the corners of the city, one could faintly see tender sprouts emerging from the accumulated snow, displaying a faint life force.

The rise of the temperature, was an extremely beneficial matter for the army of the human race.

And as for the Snow Ground demon race that lived all their lives in the Explosive Snow glacier to the North, this was not good news.

# Chapter 182: Strangers in the Pass

Every year when spring arrived, the [Army of Youyan Pass] would symbolically organise a spring time attack. But for the large majority of the time, this would be like thunder with little rain. Their main objective was in training soldiers, if they really wanted to invade into the territory of the demon race, then for the previous [Army of Youyan pass], this was beyond their power.

This year, it seemed to be different.

The movement of military troops were more frequent.

Apart from this, within the city of Youyan Pass, there were explosive movements against the agents of the demon race that continued on at a crazy pace. Those demon spies that had hidden extremely deeply were all unburied. On the [Beheading demon platforms] everywhere in the city, there were constantly demons who were captured and executed. The heads were hung on the two sides of the [Beheading demon platform], on the stone obelisks of the iron cage, exposing it to the elements.

The mood of the people were like tar, nervous.

Under the propaganda and the encouragement of the military, all the military citizens of Youyan Pass seemed to transform into berserk beasts. The hatred they felt for the demon race, was currently frantically growing and accumulating. Everyone wished that they could rush outside the Pass, and fight to the death with the demon race.

The smell of the blood of the demon race, spread throughout the entire city.

And it was also on that day, that the matter pertaining to Ye Qingyu's appointment was finally decided and announced.

Out of some people's expectations, the final appointment and reward, was that the previous decision would not be retracted. Ye Qingyu still was the fourth class heroic Marquis. Not only this, because he had returned alive, there would also be extra rewards. A thousand pieces of gold, a

Spirit weapon, ability to command soldiers, half a pound of origin crystal. Furthermore, he was also bestowed with a hilly region with the perimeter of around a hundred miles that was thirty miles North of White Deer city.

Once this news came out, all parties within Youyan Pass were shaken.

And on the ceremony where Ye Qingyu was bestowed his position as Marquis, even the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge, personally appeared. He personally gave the seal of the Marquis to Ye Qingyu. That day, the commanders of the Vanguard, Rearguard, Left and Right camp as well as military warfare officers, and various major and minor nobilities also attended this ceremony.

Apart from the head of the supply department, Zhang San.

This huge figure that ranked within the top of the Army of Youyan Pass, because of a reason that everyone knew, did not attend this bestowal ceremony.

When Ye Qingyu received the seal of the Marquis from the hands of Lu Zhaoge, countless gazes focused on the body of this young man.

A new page of history was born in the Empire.

He was the youngest Marquis in history, and was also the military officer that rose the fastest through his contributions.

That day, tens of thousands of gazes were gathered on Ye Qingyu.

This signified that Ye Qingyu had officially entered into the upper echelons of the Youyan army.

At this moment, the entire Youyan Pass was discussing this young Marquis.

The military spent even more efforts in advertising Ye Qingyu's heroic feat, not sparing any expense at all. Manpower, money and materials were spent. They wanted to create him as a person the [Youyan army] and even the army of the Empire would model themselves after.

Apart from making countless people envious, it also made them start guessing. This Ye Qingyu, just what was his background, that he was able

to ascend so smoothly? Could it be that he was a hidden successor of some noble family of the Empire? Or perhaps he was a young talent of the Imperial family of the Empire?

In the long history of the Empire, it was not that there were not some exceptionally talented young people that appeared and rose through the ranks quickly. But ultimately, they were all proven to be noble young masters with great backgrounds. The roots of the noble and wealthy were deep and intertwined and they controlled the heart of the relatively young Empire. For a commoner to want to ascend through the ranks, it was really too difficult.

Since the founding of the Empire, the greatest achiever of the commoners was the current Left Minister of the Empire.

But even this Left Minister, was completely suppressed by the forces of the Right Minister who originated from the Empire.

If Ye Qingyu did not have the support of the nobles families, for Ye Qingyu to become a Marquis when he was not even sixteen was really somewhat unbelievable and mysterious.

The person who had just fought with Ye Qingyu several days ago, the [Worry of Ghosts] Zhang San, he could be counted as a huge figure in the military. But even he was not yet bestowed a title. The greatest obstacle, was because of the fact that he came from a common family.

In such wind and rain, Ye Qingyu at this moment became the most sparkling and dazzling figure in Yoyan Pass.

The doors of White Horse tower, became even more jam packed.

It was a pity that due to mother Wu's the shrew's existence, those who wanted to get closer and network, abruptly found the door barred.

.....

Three days later.

Ye Qingyu went out the doors.

The morning sun had not yet risen and there was a spring chill in the

air.

Ye Qingyu brought his personal sword slave Bai Yuanxing, onwards towards the path to the Vanguard.

This was his first time going out ever since he became a Marquis. Ye Qingyu decided to have a look around the Vanguard.

The first objective was to go visit Li Shizen, that old grandfather and friend. He had to hand over several letters that the little girl Qing Qing at Deer city gave him. The second objective was to go see Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan. Previously they had already arranged for a small gathering, and today it was just right that they were not on duty and were on break. The third objective was to pay his respects to the commander of the Vanguard, Liu Siufeng. Ye Qingyu had already indicated his stance that he wished to enter into the Vanguard after receiving his military command at the celebratory feast after the bestowal ceremony. At that time, Liu Siufeng had indicated that he would welcome Ye Qingyu with open arms.

The streets were empty.

The curfew had just ended, so there were not many people on the streets.

Ye Qingyu had civilian clothes on, his white robes like jade, and there was an elegant long sword engraved with gold at his waist. From his outer appearance, he seemed like a carefree and aimless young master. And following beside him, wearing a green little hat and robes, was Bai Yuanxing. He wore the evident attire of a servant boy.

They casually chose a morning stand and ate a bowl of soft tofu pudding.

Ye Qingyu placed down the bowl with a sigh: "Mother Wu's cooking is better. The food outside cannot satisfy me anymore." In these days, the mouth of this Little Marquis had been spoiled by the good cooking of the Shrew of White Horse tower, Mother Wu.

These words, turned the face of the owner of the morning stand angry.

But very quickly, after Bai Yuanxing tossed him a tael of silver, the fat stand owner who was around fifty years of age expressed a delighted grin.

Finishing his soft tofu pudding, Ye Qingyu was about to stand up and leave when suddenly there was the sound of footsteps.

One could see tens of figures that walked hurriedly towards the morning food stand. The person at the lead of this group was a young man with sideburns, loudly shouting for the stand owner to prepare twenty bowls of soybean pudding. They then combined several tables for the people behind him to sit in. The leader of this group was a middle age man with black long hair, his temple swelling. There were flickers of light in his eyes. He was evidently an expert with unfathomable strength.

This group of people, largely wore brocaded long robes, and did not wear armour. The way they spoke was casual, without the restrictions and discipline of soldiers. They sat down and began chattering and laughing, evidently not part of the military. They should not even be military citizens of Youyan Pass, and originated from outside the pass.

But if they were merchants, they did not bring any sort of merchandise next to them, and they were without any wagons. They did not seem to emit the aura of merchants.

Ye Qingyu was faintly curious, and could not help but give them a few glances more.

“Stinky little brat, what are you looking at. Be careful I don’t cut your eyes out.” A young man with his face of haughtiness, glared at Ye Qingyu. Sitting next to him was a young girl with a gorgeous appearance. He thought Ye Qingyu was secretly glancing at the girl. The young man scowled, cursing at him, viciousness between his eyebrows.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then smiled a little.

The White Horse sword slave was instantly enraged. In his heart he said, ‘just what kind of wild duck and chickens were they, that they dared to come here to create trouble. To even curse at his Marquis, they really don’t know how to write the character death’. He was instantly about to rush and shout at them, but he was held back by Ye Qingyu’s raised arm.

He indicated for Bai Yuanxing to ignore them.

Bai Yuanxing quickly retreated.

The two stood and left.

After walking tens of steps, they could hear a burst of laughter from the stand behind them. There were people pointing at the back of Ye Qingyu and Bai Yuanxing. Evidently this was laughter mocking Ye Qingyu.

Bai Yuanxing turned his head back, seeing the entire scene. He was about to rush back and fiercely teach this group of people a lesson.

But seeing Ye Qingyu leave as if he had not heard this at all, Bai Yuanxing could only follow behind.

“Sooner or later those fellows with eyes but no pupils, will know my Marquis’ awesomeness.”

Bai Yuanxing said in his heart resentfully. There was a saying that the disgrace of the monarch was the death of the minister. The meaning behind this was that if the servant could not protect his monarch’s dignity, then he was better off dead. Bai Yuanxing completely worshiped Ye Qingyu to his bones, he would not allow anyone to show Ye Qingyu disrespect.

He remembered those faces in his heart.

At the morning food stand.

“Within the city of Youyan Pass, why is there such a carefree and idle young master. Seeing his perverted gaze looking at junior sister Little Hua, I really want to cut off his dog like eyes.....” The young man with sideburns that had previously cursed at Ye Qingyu, said with a large laugh.

The young gorgeous girl next to him, hearing this only had a faint smile.

There was a lofty pride concealed within her expression.

The other young people all laughed loudly.

One was able to see, that the charming young girl was very popular among her peers.

The middle aged man with long black haired coughed: “Coming to Youyan Pass, one should be more careful. Don’t bring your usual careless attitude in the sects to the military. After all, everyone here is part of the military. If you offend someone of the military, it will bring trouble.”

“Shishu[1], you are being too careful. We have come to give aid. These military brutes, should be grateful to us.” The young man with sideburns laughed without giving too much care: “Besides, the experts of the Crepe Myrtle sect has as many experts as the clouds. The military should give us the respect we deserve.”

“That’s right, we are people of the Jianghu. We are not those dumb military brutes, being a little more undisciplined is normal.”

“Hehe, if we show our moves, if those military brutes see it, would they be so shocked that they would screech?”

“The people of the sects, do not cater to the worldly rules, and we are above the common populace. We don’t have to pay attention to the profane army.”

The young people laughed and chuckled with an uncaring attitude, ignoring the words of their Shishu.

Within the area of Snow Empire, there existed many sects and factions.

The Crepe Myrtle sect was one of the three sects and three factions that were the six greatest in Snow Empire. Their strength was deep, and had already existed before the founding of the Empire. It was said that their history was already hundreds of years old. After the Snow Empire was founded, they accepted the rule of the Snow Empire, and became one of the subjects of the Imperial family of the Empire. Receiving the permission of the Imperial family, they were allowed to accept disciples and passed down their martial arts. They could be counted as one of the forces outside the army of Snow Empire that had exceptional power.

The martial way passed down through the disciples of the six top sects



were deep and profound. Throughout history, they had produced significant numbers of military experts. Walking through the Jianghu, they went from high to high, a complete appearance of someone above worldly affairs. There were many rumours circulating about them around the citizens, that everyone of them thought of themselves as exceptional.

Regarding the martial way, martial artists who came from the sects had it easier when it came to finding deep and profound cultivation techniques. Compared to those experts who relied on fighting on the battlefield to gain their skills, their martial way was more profound. This created the haughtiness and arrogance of many disciples of the sects.

Hearing the discussions of her senior and junior brothers, this pretty young girl's face had a faint and proud smile.

[1] Master's junior brother

# Chapter 183: The situation of the sects

Nan Hua had a faint smile on her face as she listened to her senior and junior brothers debating.

Seeing her senior brother Tianming, the man with the sideburns, spouting and discussing loftily, there was a shred of disdain in Nan Hua's heart.

Every disciple of the sect thought of themselves as exceptional. Their traditions were age old, profound cultivation techniques, they were the chosen children of heaven. But Nan Hua knew extremely well in her heart, that since the Snow Empire was founded, the greatest power within Heaven Wasteland domain was the Imperial Family of Snow Empire. Under the rule of the Empire, all the glory of the sects had long been blown away by the wind and rain. The age that belonged to the sects, had already gradually ended.

There were many disciples of the sects that normally had been affected by the philosophy that the sects were the greatest. They felt that they towered above others, sleeping out in the open, not influenced by worldly affairs, and had distanced themselves away from the mortal world. They thought of themselves as immortal like beings; they looked down upon the worldly soldiers, calling the soldiers military brutes.

But Nan Hua was clear, that in the Empire today, there were countless experts.

Not mentioning others, just solely from the Youyan Pass army, the overall commander [War God of Youyan Pass] Lu Zhaoge's power was so strong that the patriarch's of many sects were not his opponent.

The free and unrestricted sects was a helpless radiance that had slowly elapsed.

For the top sect like the Crepe Myrtle sect, even they could not help but open their sect deep within the mountains. They said that they had already left mortal affairs, tranquil as immortals, but who would not yearn for the flourishing world in their hearts. Especially those disciples

who were inexperienced and unaware, they were immeasurably self satisfied. The higher-up elders of the sects, who would not reminiscence over the glorious era where they received enormous tribute and the admiration and respect of the flourishing cities?

Senior brother Wei Tianming and the others brought the attitude that they were above the others of Youyan Pass. They felt that they were immortals descending from the heavens; here to rescue the pain and suffering of the common people.

But Nan Hua was different.

The strength of this charming girl could not be counted as the greatest within the Crepe Myrtle sect, only above average. But when comparing her appearance, she could be rated as stunning, her beautiful aura causing countless fellow disciples to fall for her. As a result, there were always disciples of the Crepe Myrtle sect surrounding and pleasing her. If it was previously, within the sect, and she chose a core disciple with a great future and exceptional talent and married him, it would definitely be a choice that would make countless people envious. Perhaps in the future she would become the wife of an elder, or perhaps the future wife of the leader of the sect.....

But right now, ever since leaving the Crepe Myrtle sect and experiencing the flourishing human society, Nan Hua's heart was no longer concerned with the sect.

If she was able to select a talented young man with both status and strength, and marry him, then she could enjoy the high position and wealth endlessly. This was a god like living style that was far more perfect than staying in the old mountains and forests and living a tranquil life composing poems to the moon.

Therefore, Nan Hua felt that Wei Tianming and the others were childish.

But her mind was nimble, and her subtleness was far deeper than her peers. She naturally would not express her true thoughts, only a faint proud smile to represent her own attitude.

Of course, Nan Hua also looked down upon useless and idle young masters.

Such as the young man that was wearing a white robe with an elegant long sword at his waist. Just a glance was enough for one to determine that he was an idle trash. There were no experts that would have such a useless sword that looked good but could not be used. He also brought a servant wearing a little green hat next to him.....

If she had to choose such a spoiled rich young master, she would rather choose her fellow disciples of her sect.

Nan Hua once again thought of the various rumours that she had heard on the way. There was a person called Ye Qingyu, that sounded not too bad. Young age, with decent strength he had also been given a title of Marquis. Holding two roles simultaneously in Youyan Pass army, it was said that he had not yet married. He was the youngest Marquis in the history of the Empire.....

“This Ye Qingyu, could barely count as a candidate. After seeing him and observing for a while, just to see what he is like. If he was really as the rumours say, then it was not a bad choice to make some investment.....”

Nan Hua silently planned in her heart.

She had extreme confidence in her beauty and quality. As long as she made some moves, and displayed a fake countenance, then that person called Ye Qingyu, could easily be captured.

.....

.....

Ye Qingyu walked leisurely through the large streets and small alleys.

His meeting with Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan was in the afternoon. The time was still early so he was not in a rush.

Ever since coming to Youyan Pass, Ye Qingyu had never really taken a good stroll throughout the streets of Youyan Pass and experienced the

culture of Youyan Pass. Today was mostly a good chance, so he came out to have a look.

Compared to the free, flourishing, laid back, and mercantile aura of Deer city, Youyan Pass was evidently more disciplined. On the two sides of the streets one was able to see some little stands, but the number was far less compared to Deer city. The large majority of the shops on the two sides of the streets were square and straight. Normally all architecture was constructed with defence as its number one priority; so these buildings were extremely stable.

The goods within these shops had many weapons and armour, materials for formation, rice, flour, and noodles. There were all sorts of essential living materials. As for silks and fabrics, paintings of flowers and the such, these were extremely rare.

But what made Ye Qingyu somewhat surprised was that on the way he encountered many martial artists rushing about who seemed to come from Jianghu. One look was enough to see that they had different temperaments to the people of Youyan Pass. Evidently, they were people who had come from the sects.

Why were there suddenly so many disciples of the sects within Youyan Pass?

As for the situation regarding the large sects within Snow Empire, Ye Qingyu only knew approximately from a book. As for the details, he was not too clear.

For White Deer academy students after graduating from their fourth year, they would have choices. Some would choose to enroll in the army; while others would choose to enter into their families. There would also be some outstanding graduates that would be chosen by some great sects in Snow Empire and choose to enter these sects to cultivate the martial way, devoting themselves to martial arts.

As far as the top ten class experts within Snow Empire, it was said that six of them came from the sects.

But experts and disciples of the sects liked to act alone. They tend to

appear and disappear without any signs whatsoever, so they rarely had any interactions with the army of the Empire. This time, for there to be so many people of the sect to appear in Youyan Pass greatly surprised Ye Qingyu.

“I’ve heard that the Imperial family of the Empire has called an Imperial summons. Using the name of the Emperor, they are recruiting experts of the sects for a short term service in Youyan Pass to aid the military. This time, the top six sects within the Empire will send people to help in the Spring attack.....”

Bai Yuanxing gave an explanation.

Ye Qingyu remained confined in his room training and did not pay attention to outside matters. But Bai Yuanxing, apart from training, would also pay serious attention to the small and big activities within the Pass. Very consciously, he became the eyes and ears of Ye Qingyu. After sorting through all of the large and small information, he could provide useful information to Ye Qingyu at any moment.

“Oh, so they came to help.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

There were good and bad people intermingled within the sects, but one could not help but admit that the foundations of the sects were extremely deep, and the cultivation techniques that were passed on had a long history. The requirements for becoming a disciple were also extremely strict, therefore many experts came from the sects. If the Empire really wanted to form a large scale invasion, then the aid that came from the experts of the sects could be used to fight against the demon warriors and commanders of the demon race. This would have an extremely good effect.

The experts of the sect could supplement the weak points of the army, not having enough battle power from top class experts.

But there were definitely misgivings. The discipline of the people of the sect were far too unruly. A huge problem facing the higher ups of the Youyan Pass army was how they were going to harmonise the two parties.

After all, the army was an entity that placed great importance to discipline.

As he thought, Ye Qingyu shook his head with a smile.

Since the army of the Empire had already issued such an enlistment, then they should have already formed their own strategy and plans. There was no need for him to worry. As long as he performed his own duty, it was fine.

With this thought in mind, Ye Qingyu did not think about such miscellaneous matters anymore.

Since it was difficult for him to come out normally, clearing his mood and walking about the streets was the right thing to do.

Leisurely strolling along the way, he really seemed like a wealthy person with nothing to do. Adding to this, the white robes of Ye Qingyu as well as the ornamental [Cutting Wind Sword] that the sixth master of the White Horse tower had left behind made Ye Qingyu look even more like an idle young master in the city.

Bai Yuanxing was a local of the city and hence was comparatively familiar with it. On the way he explained different aspects of the city to Ye Qingyu, acting like a tour guide.

Ye Qingyu's understanding of Youyan Pass increased little by little.

The two then arrived at the Northern district of Youyan Pass at around noon.

There were gradually more and more military installations.

This was the area controlled by the Vanguard of the Youyan army.

"If we head forward for another five or six miles, we will be at the great camp of the Vanguard. Master, the meeting point that you have arranged with Officer Wen and Officer Liu is there....." Bai Yuanxing pointed at an octagonal black stone building with nine stories to the left.

"Eh? That's the [Breeze and Drizzle building]? There's still an hour of time left from the arranged time, let's just first go in and have a seat." Ye

Qingyu smiled as he headed towards the octagonal black stone building.

This [Breeze and Drizzle building] had a considerable history.

It was said that this was a temporary imperial residence constructed during the first time the Emperor of the Snow Empire led troops into battle to fight against the Snow ground demon race. There was the founding Emperor's personal inscription, and that was where the name of the building came from. This was the only octagonal building tens of miles away and it was also the tallest architecture. Compared to the square and straight buildings around, it was rather beautiful, and could be counted as a scenic spot within Youyan Pass.

In the battle following after, both parties struggled, but this eventually fizzled out to nothing, without a victor being decided. His Imperial majesty returned to the court and this building was at first managed by the military. However, as time passed on, a higher up of the army received the right to manage it, opening it to the public and creating a restaurant that was famous throughout the Pass.

The meeting point with Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan was namely this restaurant with a long history.

Very quickly, they came to the restaurant.

There were eight soldiers on duty wearing bright armour at the door. One could tell that the owner behind this restaurant was indeed, not normal.

"Two masters, please....." There was a young server wearing short cotton clothes that quickly rushed to welcome them, drawing his sound out and receiving the two.

The server of the Breeze and Drizzle building was a person with great eyesight, and extreme observation ability. Seeing Ye Qingyu's appearance, he knew that he was someone with money so he welcomed them passionately, leading Ye Qingyu and Bai Yuanxing into the hall.

The moment they entered into the hall it was as if they had entered into a whole different world.



Outside there was a spring chill, but there was a warm breeze hitting one in the face in the hall. The green vegetation refreshed the mind; Also, there was a fresh and clear smell of plants that met them, as if it was a flourishing garden. In an instant, it filled one with energy.

The arrangement of the tables in the hall was also extremely intricate.

# Chapter 184: Provocation

The large hall was not completely flat; it was in picturesque disorder. There were largely four layers in the hall, with two or three steps between each platform. It was a classic split level hall, with decorative mountains, running water, war songs, vegetation, summer flower partitions. It caused the entire large hall to fill with a sensation of delight.

Ye Qingyu, after a slight observation, was able to sense the subtleness of this formation.

Within the [Breeze and Drizzle building], there were a multitude of large and small formations arranged everywhere. Apart from defensive formations, there were many tiny formations for controlling the air, temperature, light, humidity and so on. Such a design evidently came from a formation master; it was absolutely not something anyone could do.

No wonder it was the temporary Imperial residence of the Emperor of the Snow Empire.

Ye Qingyu sighed with emotion in his heart.

“Two masters, did you reserve a seat?” The server bent his back, asking with a smile.

Ye Qingyu considered. That fellow Wen Wan seemed not to have told him just what table he had booked, so he lightly shook his head.

The business of the [Breeze and Drizzle building] was really curiously good.

With a glance, one could see that the first floor was completely packed with people.

“Since it is like this, why not go to the fourth floor?” The server explained eagerly with a smile. “The first to the third floors are already full. In these two days, there are many sect people that have come, and they spend a lot. There are many that have already reserved a seat, and there are many that just directly come, therefore....”

Ye Qingyu nodded: "That's fine, then let's go to the fourth floor."

The server led Ye Qingyu to a small pavilion behind a decorative mountain.

In the pavilion there were two girls in the prime of their age wearing tight fitting violet dresses that were welcoming guests, smiling and asking after them. There was a jade coloured badge in their hands that activated slightly and one could see on the floor of the small pavilion, there was a strange formation light that functioned, a radiance surging out.....

This was a small scale teleportation formation.

In the interior of the [Breeze and Drizzle building], there were no stairs between the floors. Unexpectedly, they used a small scale teleportation formation to transport people about that made Ye Qingyu shocked and impressed.

Just from solely this point, it was somewhat extravagant.

"Two honoured guests, please enter the [White Jade Stairs]."

Seeing the surprise in Ye Qingyu's eyes, there was a trace of pride and satisfaction twinkling in the server's eyes.

So the small scale teleportation formation had a nice name called the [White Jade Stairs].

Ye Qingyu did not notice his expression at all and did not pay attention. Conversely, he seriously praised the design and architecture of the [Breeze and Drizzle building]; it really had workmanship similar to heaven's creation. It was the most marvelous structure that Ye Qingyu had ever seen.

As they spoke, the small scale teleportation formation was about to operate.....

"Eh? Wait a moment, quickly stop.....there's still us."

A somewhat familiar voice was heard.

When they lifted their head to look, there were tens of people led by another server that rushed to the outside of the little pavilion. The

leading young man had a face filled with sideburns and a muscular build, wearing a pale violet loose fitting clothes. It was namely the group of people that Ye Qingyu had encountered at the morning stand earlier.

The girl with the flirtatious expression, Nan Hua, as well as the black haired middle aged man were also within the group.

As the group neared, the Wei Tianming with sideburns evidently recognised Ye Qingyu. He coldly snorted, his attitude untamed, and walked in large strides into the transportation formation with the others following in a line after.

After approximately ten or so people had entered, the leading server reminded: "This [White jade stairs] can at the most transport fifteen people. Please can the remaining honoured guests, wait ten breaths of time, is this possible?"

At this time there were namely two people of the Crepe Myrtle sect outside the pavilion.

Wei Tianming had a look, his glance falling upon Ye Qingyu and Bai Yuanxing. He directly opened his mouth, without any reservations "Hey, you two, get out. Enter the next one."

Bai Yuanxing was instantly enraged.

Ye Qingyu shook his head, telling him to stay calm. Then he further shook his head at Wei Tianming and said: "No."

The Wei Tianming with sideburns was immediately angered: "Little kid, have some vision. Don't go finding pain for yourself."

The other people of the Crepe Myrtle sect also stared evenly at Ye Qingyu, a mocking expression on their faces. There was a faint threat and there was even someone who slightly released a yuan qi pressure, wanting to scare Ye Qingyu out.

Ye Qingyu smiled: "Such words, are also what I want to say to you. Take away your childish games. Coming to Youyan Pass, even a dragon has to stay coiled. You best not cause trouble, otherwise if it is too much, even if your patriarch comes, he cannot interfere."

The people of the Crepe Myrtle sect were taken aback.

Wei Tianming, after a temporary blankness, was furious. He was about to say something, when the black haired middle aged Shishu gave several evaluating glances at Ye Qingyu and said to the Wei Tianming behind him: "Tianming Shizhi[1], calm down, don't cause trouble."

Wei Tianming coldly snorted, warning Ye Qingyu with slanted eyes, then sneered. "You little brat, your sure have guts. Let's see if you are still so arrogant later." Saying this, he said in a snort: "I'm heading out, I'll take the next [White Jade Stairs]."

Saying this, he walked out of the pavilion.

But his eyes always remained on Ye Qingyu like a dagger, with an unfriendly expression.

Ye Qingyu acted as if he did not see this.

At this time, the small scale transportation [White Jade Stairs] was activated. Everyone only felt their vision blurring, the scenery becoming indistinct and in the next instant they arrived at the fourth floor of the [Breeze and Drizzle building]

The people of the Crepe Myrtle came out the pavilion with a clamour.

There were people that intentionally turned around to look at Ye Qingyu, with cold smiles on their faces. There was even someone who drew their hand across their throat, their eyes vicious, threats evident.

Ye Qingyu completely ignored them.

"Two honoured guests, please follow me." The server, very professionally, led the way.

Ye Qingyu and Bai Yuanxing walked from the pavilion of the fourth floor and evaluated their surroundings in detail.

The area of the fourth floor was similar to the large hall of the first floor, slightly small. But the furnishings was much more elaborate, with formation screens dividing different areas. Apart from being spacious, it was particularly secluded, with flowers and grass for decoration. There

were dancing and singing girls with slender figures and beautiful faces as companions, their voices light. It was as if someone had ascended to a divine island through climbing a vine.

Sitting at the tables of the fourth floor, the large majority were people of the Jianghu.

The wild aura of people of the sects was evidently different from the serene atmosphere of the large hall. It was extremely noisy, with shouts and screams, there were even people playing drinking games. Originally, it was supposed to be a meeting place between elegant people, but now it was completely rough and crude. There were even people who did not have fun, and began arguing and shouting.....

It was a pit for the singing and dancing girls that were like flowers or jade. In such a scene where the atmosphere was completely spoiled, even a more beautiful dance or song would become like playing the harp to the bull. It was completely pointless, but these were the rules of the restaurant, so they could not leave....

There would occasionally be some crude men that would harass the girls with their mouths, with the girls all enduring it.

Ye Qingyu frowned, shaking his head.

Very quickly, they sat near a table near the window enough for six people. Casually ordering some food and wine, they waited for the arrival of Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan.

The scenery of the window was decent, able to survey from high up. One could observe the terrain around.

Inside the large hall.

The Crepe Myrtle belonged to the top six sects of the Snow Empire, so their status was extremely high. When the group entered, it immediately attracted many people's gazes. Out of every table, there were continuously people standing up, greeting, and paying their respects. There was not a lack of flattery.....

In this moment, the people of the Crepe Myrtle became the heart of

people's gaze on the fourth floor.

A while later Wei Tianming and his two junior brothers also ascended and also received many greetings.

“So you are the great hero [Flying Heaven Sword] Wei Tianming, I have long heard of your name!”

“According to the rumours, hero Wei half a year ago, slaughtered the Black Wind bandits of Flowing Jade Mountain alone, killing a hundred and sixteen people, spreading your fame throughout Jianghu. Today, seeing you, your graceful bearing is really like a celestial being!”

“I am the [Wind Chasing Foot] Ma Ben. I have long ago heard of your name; you really are fitting of the name. Hero Wei, we should find an opportunity to get closer later!”

There were many people that stood up, clasping their hands in respect.

This Wei Tianming belonged to the movers and shakers of the third generation of disciples in the Crepe Myrtle sect. In these years of travelling throughout Jianghu, he has had some fame and received the title of [Flying Heaven Sword]. He could be considered the number one figure within the third generation.

“No, no, this is just the over praise of various friends. I am ashamed to have such a title, everyone has over exaggerated.” Wei Tianming said such words, but in his heart he was extremely pleased with himself and there was a satisfied expression on his face.

Ye Qingyu looked from the side, faintly shaking his head.

The people of Jianghu and the sects liked their fame. Everyone praised everyone; if they did not have any great hatred with each other, when they met they would praise each other to familiarise themselves.

It was just that the group of people on the fourth floor seemed to be largely under the twenty Spirit springs of cultivation. Their actions were crude, and Ye Qingyu, who originally had some expectations for the sect, could not help but be disappointed.

This crowd of people was evidently a disorderly bunch. To want to rely on such people to aid the army in resisting against the demon race was really somewhat optimistic. If the situation turned for the worse, such people would become the horse that would cause harm to the rest of the herd[2].

And when Ye Qingyu was thinking such thoughts, there was suddenly someone who came before his table and heavily rapped on his table.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look. It was a disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect.

This disciple from the Crepe Myrtle sect had a look of disdain when he looked at Ye Qingyu. He held a cup of wine in his hand and said: "Hey, little kid, my big brother Wei treats you to a cup of wine."

Ye Qingyu looked towards the seated table.

He could see the Wei Tianming, with the sideburns, was speaking and laughing with several other people of the Jianghu. Instantly they also looked over, the crowd staring at Ye Qingyu, mockery and contempt on their faces. Evidently they could not wait for Ye Qingyu to drink this cup of wine.....

Ye Qingyu looked at the cup of wine held in the hands of the Crepe Myrtle sect disciple.

The wine was jade like and there was a black ink smell that was hard to detect emitting from the surface of the wine. It was tasteless, but was somewhat strange.....

There evidently had been something done to the wine.

Perhaps it was poison, perhaps it was a type of drugs, who could know.

Ye Qingyu's heart was really angered through this.

This bunch of stupid people that did not know what's best for them, really did not know how to write the character [Death]. To not affect the strategy of the military, he had already avoided creating conflict with the people of the sects, but did they really think he was easy to bully? To



intentionally come over and make trouble for him, did they really think he was a pushover?

“Take back this cup of wine. Scram and tell that person surnamed Wei to not test the limits of my patience. If he wants to die, then I will fulfill his wishes. What dog fart [Flying Heaven Sword]. A trash that has not even reached twenty Spirit springs; a clown that is self satisfied over nothing. Coming to [Youyan Pass], you had best behave yourself. Otherwise you won’t even know how you died.”

Ye Qingyu said word by word.

----

[1] Shizhi – nephew relationship but within a sect

[2] Chinese idiom for one bad apples spoils the lot

# Chapter 185: You are the trash

Ever since Ye Qingyu left White Deer academy, he had experienced countless life and death battles. Facing experts like Liu Yuancheng, Chen Moyun, he had experienced first hand the villain of this age; Yan Buhui, faced the crushing pressure of the Snow Dragon King, and even on the snow ice peak, had an exposure to the martial will of the mysterious figure that had slumbered for millions of years. In this short half a year, his experience and encounters were not something that a normal person could imagine. As a result of this, he had formed a powerful will and imposing aura.

Once he was angered, an invisible pressure instantly exploded.

The disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect who was holding the cup of wine felt a hard to describe force hitting him.

Such a sensation was like facing the Patriarch or the disciplinary elders within the sect. As if he was to say one word more, this terrifying pressure would completely crush him.

This Crepe Myrtle sect disciple did not say anything else, like a duck that had been scared by the storm, was shivering and trembling. He brought his cup of wine and quickly left.....

“Master, I’ll go find someone to take care of this bunch of people who don’t know the distance between Heaven and Earth,” Bai Yuanxing said angrily.

If not for Ye Qingyu previously holding him back, this White Sword slave would have completely exploded with rage.

A bunch of idiots from the sects, that don’t know how to tell the difference. Using their bad habits that they performed in the Jianghu within Youyan Pass, they really did not know how to live. With Ye Qingyu’s status and fame today, he only needed to say a word and it was enough to completely arrest and imprison this group of retards within the military prison and teach them a lesson. At least they would have to waste half their lives away for the elders of the Crepe Myrtle sect to collect them.”

“Let’s not rush, wait and see.” Ye Qingyu faintly shook his head.

If there was not a need, he did not want to enlarge the problem. After all, this would affect the cooperation between the army and the sects. He himself had been in the limelight for far too much recently, and he was already the tree that had grown taller than the forest. If he caused an incident, it could possibly give an opportunity for people who had the appetite to target him.

Bai Yuanxing hearing this, could only sit back down in simmering anger.

-At this moment—

-Pang!

The sharp sound of a cup of wine breaking on the ground was heard.

The clamour and bustle of the hall on the fourth floor instantly halted. Countless people looked in surprise at the place where the cup had fallen.

It was the table of Wei Tianming and the others.

One could see the previous disciple of the Crepe Myrtle that had came over, was currently standing next to Wei Tianming. He was currently saying something at the same time, as well as pointing to the Ye Qingyu far off. Evidently he had nothing good to say and was over exaggerating the story.....

Wei Tianming’s face turned darker and darker.

The person sitting next to him, from his clothing, was not a disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect. He should belong to the other sects, and should be the friend of Wei Tianming. The person who had thrown the cup to the ground, was him.

This person had a slender build with messy yellow hair, a sharp mouth, and a monkey-like chin. He seemed to be around twenty years of age, with viciousness on his face. He fiercely threw the cup to the ground, and after attracting the attention of all parties, stood up with a sound. He slammed his hand onto the table, coldly sneering, “I’ll have to disturb the

enjoyment of everyone. I am the [Flying Divine Monkey], Huang Ran. Just now, I have encountered something that I really cannot stand, and broke my cup through being too emotional. I'll first apologise to everyone....."

Saying this, he clasped his hand.

"So it was hero Huang!"

"The great name of hero Huang, [Flying Divine Monkey], I have long heard of. The thirty seven moves of the wind lightning staff, known as invincible under the twenty Spirit springs, I have long admired."

There was praises and compliments from all around.

It seemed like this Huang Ran was rather famous.

"I wonder just which blind thing it was, that dared to incite hero Huang. Why don't you say who it is, so we can all know." Someone intentionally stood up, shouting loudly.

Huang Ran clasped his hand, glancing at Ye Qingyu's direction. With a cold smile, he said, "Today the experts from all the sects in Snow Empire have gathered in Youyan Pass.

Cooperating on a great project, we are answering the call of the great Emperor of Snow Empire, to assist in battle and resist against the demon race. I am not enough, but I am willing to aid the great matter of the human race in Snow Empire a hand. Even if I die in battle in the Explosive Snow glacier, I have nothing to say....."

There was a surrounding of applause and praise.

Huang Ran clasped his hands in thanks. Continuing on, "I think that every hero and man here will have the same thinking with me; hot blood in their hands and share the burden of national matters. But there was someone who said such words, that the people of the sects are all trash, not worth mentioning. That they are not enough to succeed but more than qualified to fail. Not only this, they also singled out and insulted senior brother Wei Tianming. I am only a martial brute, but even I cannot stand such humiliation. Therefore I broke the cup just now....."

Before he'd finished.

"Fuck his mother, just what kind of turtle dare say such words?"

"That little brat, to dare insult us great heros. Quickly stand up."

"Fuck, whoever said that, scram out in three breaths time."

"Kneel down and apologise. Otherwise even if it is the Heavens themselves, we will cut them."

It was like scattering a handful of salt in a hot wok of oil, instantly the entire great hall of the fourth hall began boiling. One after another, the people of the sects that thought of themselves as heroes, just how could they accept such humiliation. They stood up one by one, breaking cups and dishes, causing clatter and clamour. Killing intent spread throughout the hall.

The people of the Crepe Myrtle sect, with the black haired middle age man and Nan Ha in the lead was sitting in the table opposite. Hearing this, they also stood up. Hearing someone insult their senior brother Wei Tianming, they were righteously angered, instantly someone wanting to rush out and fight.....

"Sit down." The middle aged Shishu lightly ordered.

The Crepe Myrtle disciple was taken back, but seeing the seriousness and anger in the Shisu, all sat down.

Nan Hua glanced at her Shishu, then again looked towards Ye Qingyu's direction. She already understood in her heart, what had largely happened. Between Wei Tianming and the white robed rich kid, there had already been many small conflicts. It seems like this time, a real fire had been created.

Nan Hua calmly smiled.

Senior brother Wei Tianming had walked the Jianghu for many years. With his experience and methods, it was not something that an idle and useless wealthy kid could compare to. With only a little trick, it was enough to incite the rage of all the people of the sects, pushing this white

robed person into an extreme situation. It seems like that white robed person was going to be unlucky.....

Nan Hua had a pitying expression as she looked at Ye Qingyu.

“If one carefully looks, that white robed person is somewhat handsome, and his aura is somewhat vigorous.” Nan Hua had several looks, and could not help to lightly praise. But her heart will not be moved. She had long passed the stage where someone’s outer appearance could charm her. An even greater shell, if they did not have status or power, was only a brocaded pillow. Sooner or later, it would be stomped beneath the feet of others.

She silently sat there, waiting for the development.

At this time, the [Flying Divine Monkey] had already embellished the story, causing the emotions of the entire fourth floor to become extremely passionate. Dishes and plates broke, as if they were really going to rush out and kill someone. There were even people who unsheathed their swords and blades, stabbing it quivering into the table.....

Huang Ran became even more pleased with himself. Coming to Ye Qingyu’s table, he pointed at him. “It is this wealthy little brat, a little scrap that doesn’t understand anything. He insulted senior brother Wei Tianming personally, insulting everyone.....”.

Immediately, killing like gazes like wolves and tigers gathered on Ye Qingyu’s body.

If it was a normal person, most likely they would be completely dumbfounded by such a situation.

Ye Qingyu acted as if he had heard nothing at all, lowering his head, he calmly and slowly sipped at his cup of tea.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had lowered his head, Huang Ran thought that this white robe youth was afraid. With a cold snort he spoke, “Little thing, are you burying your head into the soil? Today you have to give us an explanation, just who is a trash? Heh heh, what words do you have to say for yourself, what explanation do you have?”

The surroundings were in complete clamour.

Ye Qingyu drank a mouthful of tea, feeling the faint bitter taste swirling around the root of his tongue. Then he looked at the angry and vicious face of Huang Ran. He suddenly had a feeling of wanting to laugh out loud, faintly smiling in a calm manner, "Explanation. Just what do I need to explain?"

Huang Ran was dumbfounded.

Ye Qingyu's reaction was completely different from what he imagined.

On this white robed youth, he could not see a single shred of fear or worry. But conversely, in his bright eyes, there was mockery and disdain that was not disguised in the slightest.

"You....you dare call us trash, you....." Huang Ran momentum weakened immediately.

Ye Qingyu laughed slightly again, then said in a matter of fact tone, "That's right, I said you people are trash, what about it? Are you not satisfied?"

Once these words were said, all the vicious faces like tigers and wolves in the great hall were all stunned.

What was called arrogance?

What was called overbearing?

This was.

At this moment, nearly everyone of the sects in the large hall had the wrong impression, that their actions of throwing their plates to the floor and unsheathing their blades, in front of this calm slight smile of this white robed young man, was the extremely childish actions of a little kid. It was incomparably laughable.

Far off.

The faint smile on Nan Hua's face also froze.

This white robed young man.....

Did she overlook something?

This pretty young girl from the sect sat in front of a table, lightly asking herself in her heart.

The table next to them.

Wei Tianming and several of his Jianghu friends' expressions had already changed. They faintly felt something.

At the centre of such an atmosphere, the [Flying Divine Monkey] Huang Ran's expression had completely changed. When Ye Qingyu's reaction was so forceful that it was out of his expectations, even if he was a brute, he would have already noticed something. In such a situation, to be calm like ice, this white robed young man was definitely not a pushover.

"You.....you....." Huang Ran struggled to find words that he could use to regain his face."

At this moment—

"Eh? Brother Ye? You were here?" A clear and bright voice travelled over.

It was the military warfare officer Liu Zongyuan, as well as four of his most trusted experts. Coming to the fourth floor and seeing Ye Qingyu, he instantly let out a big grin. "Mad Tiger Wen has long been waiting in a room on the eighth floor. We waited for you for a long time, then we came down to ask the server. He said there was someone with a similar appearance to you who came to the fourth floor. I went to have a look, and you really were here."

Ye Qingyu laughingly greeted him, "Brother Liu!"

Liu Zongyuan had the uniform armour of a military warfare officer which was pitch black, like steel. One glance was enough to see he was a powerhouse who held power within the military, his aura like that of an eagle or a tiger. In his long time within the battlefield, it was unknown just how many demon lifeforms he had killed. His body emitted an ominous aura that shook one's heart, that normal people could hardly detect, But for the people of Jianghu, such a butcher like aura, they were



the most sensitive to. They looked at Liu Zongyuan's behavior, then looked at the armoured experts that had the same bloody chilling aura behind him. Instantly, the colours of everyone from the sects in the large hall completely changed.

# Chapter 186: A phrase, a sword stroke

The people of Jiang Hu were known to play around, typically completely ignoring the Imperial laws. But when they truly encountered experts of the military that held true power, they would feel uneasy.

When they saw officers from the army such Liu Zongyuan, call the white robed youth 'Brother Ye', the crowd was greatly shocked. At the same time, they realised that the wealthy white robed youth was not as simple as they had previously imagined.

"Sorry to have kept my two brothers waiting." Ye Qingyu seemed as if nothing had occurred at all, as calm as clouds in a light breeze. With a slight smile, he stood up, "Let's go."

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head.

His gaze swept across the crowd of Jianghu people. Apart from the black haired elder of the Crepe Myrtle sect, no one dared to meet the eyes of an expert from the army that was like a sharp cold blade. They all lowered their heads.

The [Flying Divine Monkey] Huang Ran was in an awkward position. Standing there, he could neither push forward nor retreat; he was like a stone sculpture.

And Wei Tianming in a far off table had a completely green face, not daring to say anything.

"Haha, good, let's go. Mad Tiger Wen is waiting anxiously; if we wait any longer, then he'll go crazy again," Liu Zongyuan said with a large grin.

Besides him, there was a little manager wearing golden silk clothing. His manner was extremely respectful towards Liu Zongyuan.

Seeing this scene, the Jianghu crowd became even more anxious in their hearts.

The [Breeze and Drizzle Building] was a particularly special place within Youyan Pass. It was famous outside and was also a significant

place within Jianghu. The rules of this building, the people of Jianghu largely understood the rules of this building. People on the fourth floor and under would be received by the servers while those who were received by the little managers wearing golden fabric, represented the true experts and powerful nobles.

For the little manager wearing golden fabric to be so respectful to the black armoured military officer, one could determine that his position within the army was absolutely not low.

For such an officer to be courteous towards this White robed youth and vaguely seemed to respect him.....this white robed youth, just what was his identity?

The crowd could not help but be aghast with shock.

Ye Qingyu and Bai Yuanxing rose, then headed towards the [White Jade Stairs] accompanied by Liu Zongyuan.

When they passed by Huang Ran, Ye Qingyu did not speak, but Liu Zongyuan abruptly stopped.

As this iron blooded military warfare officer looked at the so called [Flying Divine Monkey] the smile on his face retreated. A killing intent was exposed as he spoke, "Huang Ran? Three months ago, you were in the Deer Mountain range; under the Seven Flying Mist Waterfalls, you ambushed and killed the third generation disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect, Liu Youtian. You also stole the [Crepe Myrtle Dailuo cultivation technique] manual from him, then shifted the blame to people of the Flying Mist Mountain. Yet today, your relation is so good with the people of Crepe Myrtle mountain?"

Before he'd even finished.

Huang Ran was as if struck by lightning; his face turning tragic.

His entire body quivered, screeching: "You.....who are you? You are speaking nonsense; you are falsely accusing me....."

On the other side, the people of the Crepe Myrtle sect, including the [Flying Heaven Sword] Wei Tianming, completely changed their facial

expressions.

[Shooting Star Sword] Liu Youtian had been killed three months ago. It was an incident that made the entire Crepe Myrtle sect tragic and furious. Afterwards, through their secret investigation, they suspected the perpetrator to be the people of the Mist mountain. Crepe Myrtle sect was currently preparing to eradicate Flying Mist mountain, to pay blood back with blood. It was just that an elder class expert felt that this matter had some inconsistencies and temporarily halted the operation. Everyone from the Crepe Myrtle sect was furious, because the [Shooting Star Sword] was extremely popular within the third generation disciples of the sect.....

Who would have guessed, that this military officer would blurt out such a secret.

Seeing Huang Ran's reaction, those that were clever would most likely know that the accusation was true.

The atmosphere immediately became strange in the large hall.

After saying this phrase, Liu Zongyuan did not say anything more. He accompanied Ye Qingyu with a smile and left using the small scale teleportation formation [White Jade Stairs].

Huang Ran was currently loudly explaining something.

One of Liu Zongyuan's trusted expert following behind turned around to look at Huang Ran. With a chilling smile, he said, "You did it, but you don't dare admit it. So many useless words.....The person surnamed Huang, I've heard that your thirty seven moves of the wind and lightning staff is known as invincible for all under twenty Spirit springs."

Huang Ran right now felt hatred and anger. Hearing this, he screamed, "What about it?"

This trusted armoured soldier was only at most twenty or so years of age, with a fair face. He coldly smiled, "Then bring out your wind and lightning staff!"

Huang Ran hesitated.

The trusted soldier gradually took out the long blade at his waist, the cold glimmer of the blade bursting out. Holding the hilt of the blade in one hand, he said, "Bring out your wind and lightning staff."

Huang Ran only just understood the opposing party's intention.

He was instantly enraged.

The previous black armoured officer's strength was powerful; he perhaps was not his opponent. But for a tiny little soldier to dare unsheath his blade in front of him, did they really think that the fame of Jianghu was false?

Huang Ran drew his hand across the air, a copper staff appearing in his hands. It was the thickness of a duck's egg, with coiling dragon patterns and was flickering with light. It was evidently a Spirit weapon.

"Why don't you act....." With a staff in his hand, Huang Ran's aura greatly increased and he said these words in a mocking manner.

Today I will let you experience the power of the wind and lightning staff.

Before he could finish his words a cold light, like the light of the galaxy descending to mortal land, had already met him.

Huang Ran lifted his staff to meet his opponent.

-Pang!

An explosive clash of metal meeting shook one's eardrums.

When the standard military issue blade met the staff, the wind and lightning staff was like an anaconda that had been frightened, madly struggling and vibrating in Huang Ran's hands. This huge power caused the skin of Huang Ran's hand to drip fresh blood, as if the bones in his wrist had been broken. His arm immediately could not be lifted anymore.....

Heavens, what was this power?

Too terrifying.

The next instant, the standard military blade had already pressed against his throat.

Huang Ran was completely dumbfounded, cold sweat dripping down. His face was deathly pale, like a dog from a mourning family, with a decrepit expression.

The young armoured soldier coldly smiled, "With your standard, you are fit to be known as invincible under the twenty Spirit strings? You are really a frog in the well. If I casually chose any of the soldiers with fifteen Spirit springs and above in the Vanguard, they could completely slaughter you in a second. Like a clown, with your foolish conceit, to dare jump out. To not even know your own death you dare make trouble for Master Ye."

The cultivation of the young soldier was nineteen Spirit springs.

The truth speaks louder than words.

Huang Ran did not even dare say a word, deathly afraid that the blade would draw across and end his life.

As the young soldier finished, his wrist shook.

The standard military blade turned into a flash of lightning, cutting apart Huang Ran's interdimensional pouch. An assortment of items fell to the ground. Within the items, there was a violet manual, which attracted the most attention.....

"[Crepe Myrtle Dailuo Heart Sutra?]" A Crepe Myrtle disciple screeched, so shocked that he screamed.

The young soldier coldly smiled, sheathing his blade. He did not say anything else, turning and leaving .

He did not need to say anything else.

At this time, everyone in the hall no longer paid any more attention to this young soldier.

In an instant, every Crepe Myrtle disciple's gaze fell on this manual.

"Why is it that the [Crepe Myrtle Dailuo Heart Sutra] of senior brother Liu Youtian would be on your body? Huang Ran, give me an

explanation.....” Wei Tianming could no longer hold back his shout.

Connecting the words that Liu Zongyuan had previously said, the truth was already evident. 联

The third generation disciple [Shooting Star Sword] Liu Youtian’s death most likely had something to do with the [Flying Divine Monkey] Huang Ran.

Huang Ran had panic on his face; his mouth was stuttering and was not able to say anything. He did not have any of the confidence he felt when he was plotting against Ye Qingyu.

“Huang Ran you bastard. ‘One knows the person’s face’ but one does not know the person’s heart.’ To think that you did such a thing.”

“I peh, to think that I called you hero Huang just then, I really was blind.”

“Everyone, I think that the [Flying Divine Monkey] has already fallen to the evil ways. To ambush the great hero Liu Youtian. Today we must not let him escape alive.....“

The men of the Jianghu in this hall changed their stances quicker than flicking through a book. Previously they called him hero Huang, but at this moment, they were all cursing and insulting him.

The [Flying Heaven Sword] Wei Tianming slapped the table and rose. “Huang Ran, to think that I previously thought of you as my brother and treated you sincerely. I introduced so many people of the Jianghu to you and have always protected you. Who would have guessed that you had the face of a human but the heart of a beast. To dare steal the secret manual and kill my senior brother Liu Youtian, this is really unforgivable. Today, I will take revenge for my senior brother Liu Youtian!”

As he said this, his long sword shot out.

Wei Tianming turned into a ray of light, flashing and arriving to kill.

The longsword in his hands, became a dragon like ray, extremely rapid, the surrounding air exploding. Everyone in the hall felt as if the radiance

of the sun had shone into their eyes; no one was able to open their eyes, using their hands to cover their faces.....

The burning light flashed by and was gone.

When the vision of everyone returned to normal, there was a sword embedded in Huang Ran's chest.

This sword was held in Wei Tianming's hands.

"You.....I .....you....." Huang Ran had eyes of disbelief as he looked at Wei Tianming. Within his eyes there was a thick hatred and unwillingness to accept this. He struggled to say something but, instantly, Wei Tianming retrieved his sword and added another palm strike to his chest.

Huang Ran spat out fresh blood, his figure meeting the heavens.

His eyes were round and open, not dying in peace.

"Brother Liu , I've taken revenge for you!" Wei Tianing let out a long sigh.

The surrounding people all went and comforted Wei Tianing.

The black haired, middle aged Shishu in the table far off had a trace of suspicion that flashed across his eyes. It was unknown what he was thinking about.....

As for the gorgeous girl Nan Hua, her eyes were always in the direction of the teleportation formation [White Jade Stairs].

Ye Qingyu and the others' figures had already disappeared within the small scale teleportation formation.

However,Nan Hua did not recover for a long time.

"Who would have thought that the history of that white robed youth is not little. Most likely he is some young master of some noble family. No wonder he is handsome and elegant, with an exceptional quality. But this is really a pity. If only I knew about this earlier, I already had several opportunities to interact with him; I've let it go in vain....."



Nan Hua could not help but regret this.

But very quickly a self confident smile once again appeared on her lips.

“Since I’ll be in the Pass for a very long time, there’s plenty of opportunities for me. For such a hot-blooded youth, he is probably easily handled. I’m not afraid that he won’t get hooked. I’ll find an opportunity and use some methods; it’ll be very easy to figure out his background. Haha, this wealthy white robed person can be considered a decent backup.....”

The girl of the Crepe Myrtle sect thought.

The hall settled down very quickly.

The corpse of Huang Ran had already naturally been taken care of by the restaurant. The laws of the Snow Empire were extremely strict, but it did not restrict people of the Jianghu from taking vengeance on each other. Wei Tianming killing Huang Ran was a matter between the people of the Jianghu; the military would not pursue this further.

The matters of the Jianghu would be left to be solved by the Jianghu.

This was a tradition.

The atmosphere and mood of the Jianghu people on the fourth floor receded a lot.

Everyone from the sects originally was in an energetic mood, feeling that they were invincible. They were immortal characters here to save the mortal world; their self confidence surging too high. Coming to Youyan Pass, they were in the role of a saviour, but they never would have thought that they would encounter such an incident.

Before they had even entered the battlefield, they were fiercely struck on the head by the white robed youth and the young armoured soldier.

One phrase, a sword stroke, made them so shocked that they did not even dare to speak any longer.....

At this moment, everyone was not as arrogant and conceited as they were before...

Everyone became much more honest.

“Just what is the identity of that white robed youth?”

This was the question in many people’s hearts.

There were many people quietly discussing this.

# Chapter 187: Imperial Court and the sects

While the Jianghu people were discussing things disappointedly, Wen Wan and Ye Qingyu had already arrived at a quiet booth on the eighth floor.

“Little bastard, your wrist is slightly large these days, wanting to pretend to be self-important? To make the two of us old men wait for such a long time.” When Wen Wan saw Ye Qingyu, he could not help but hop up and glare at him.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly and said, “If I do not remember wrong, the time that we have arranged to meet, should be exactly at noon. Look at the position of that sundial.....”

Wen Wan turned his head to look. The direction the shadow was pointing at on the sundial, was still a finger’s width till noon.

It was still not noon just yet.

It really wasn’t time yet?

Mad Tiger Wen blinked his eyes.◦

Why did he feel that he had already waited for a long time here?

For it not to have reached the appointed time yet.

He was dumbfounded for a moment, then instantly responded in an unresigned angry tone, “So what? You are of the younger generation, can you not come a little earlier to wait for us. Instead you make the two of us old men wait for you? Just what kind of reasoning is this!”

Fine.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands in surrender.

Comparing the standards of being unreasonable, he really was not the opponent of Mad Tiger Wen.

“Haha, the time is just right. Everyone quickly sit. Let’s first agree, we’re not returning without being drunk.” Liu Zongyuan laughed boisterously, bringing Ye Qingyu to the main seat of the room.

The four trusted soldiers behind him, were also young men not exceeding twenty five years. They were true elite soldiers that had survived along with him through numerous battles. They had been looked favourably upon by Liu Zongyuan and heavily cultivated. They had great room for development in the future, and at least were soldiers who would become military warfare officers. Within the army, they had some fame.

At this time, the four people and Bai Yuanxing were sitting in the supplementary table outside the room.

The ages of the five people were similar, so their conversation was enjoyable.

At the beginning Bai Yuanxing was somewhat restrained. With his strength, normally he would not have the right to sit together with expert soldiers like these. But behind him, after all, was a little Marquis famed throughout Youyan Pass. Even Liu Zongyuan was respectful towards Ye Qingyu. The four young soldiers would naturally not be disrespectful in the least towards Bai Yuanxing.

The atmosphere gradually became harmonious.

The three people were currently seated at the main table of the room.

“Why did you run to the fourth floor?” Wen Wan laughingly poured wine, completely filling Ye Qingyu’s and Liu Zongyuan’s cups.

Ye Qingyu smiled and replied, “I encountered some people of the Jianghu and was curious in my heart. I went to see the graceful bearing of the rumoured good men of Jianghu who goes from high to high.”

Wen Wan laughed loudly, “And the result? Are you satisfied with the graceful bearing of the good men of Jiang Hu?”

Before Ye Qingyu could speak, Liu Zongyuan had already answered for him. Coldly sneering he said, “What good men of Jianghu, they are just a mob. This time the reward of the enlistment of the army is extremely high causing some clowns of Jianghu to see their chance. Adding to this, someone is agitating the waves; there are clowns from thousands of miles away rushing to Youyan Pass, wanting to share in the gain. These people

came for the riches available, and the people who have arrived at the Pass these days are people with substandard strength. Not knowing how to die, the army has already arrested several who caused trouble in the Pass.”

When he was on the fourth floor, Liu Zongyuan had already long known everything that had occurred there.

But his considerations were the same as Ye Qingyu. He did not want to cause trouble and be placed with the blame of spoiling the cooperation between the sects and the army. Therefore he artfully took care of Huang Ran, at the same time, he dealt a retaliatory blow for Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was a clever person, so he naturally understood the intricacies behind this.

After he heard Liu Zongyuan finish speaking, Ye Qingyu nodded his head while saying, “That’s right, although the strength of these men of Jianghu is not bad, they lack discipline, not liking any constraints. There are too many with a flighty dispositions, and as for the spirit of brotherhood in Jianghu, it seems more like the spirit of bandits. Even if they are released to the battlefield, most likely they would not prove to be of much use.

“The bosses from the military, their brains must have been kicked. To have really released such a foolish summon.” No wonder Wen Wan was Mad Tiger Wen, he dared to say anything. Lifting his cup, “I don’t care anymore. Come, come, come. Let’s first drink a cup then speak.”

The three lifted their cups, hitting them together.

As the excellent wine entered into Ye Qingyu’s mouth, he felt a warmth in his chest, his entire person feeling utterly comfortable. He could not but sigh in praise, “Good wine.”

Wen Wan chuckled, “The [Breeze brew] and the [Drizzle brew] both used to be tributes to the Emperor. Only the imperial family could drink it, and although we can now buy it, one earthen jar is worth a thousand golds.”

Ye Qingyu squinted at him from the side, and could not help but

suspiciously ask, “Really? It’s really rare for Mad Tiger Wen to be so generous.”

Wen Wan answered in a strange tone, “What do you mean? I’m not paying for the meal today!”

“If it’s not you, could it be.....” Ye Qingyu was taken aback then looked towards Liu Zongyuan.

Liu Zongyuan instantly said in an upright tone, “There’s no need for Marquis Ye to look at me. I am only a tiny little military warfare officer, my wage is pitifully small. My entire month’s salary is not enough to pay for one earthen jar.....”

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded, then was instantly amused and outraged by the shamelessness of these two martial officers. “Then today you invited me, is to make me pay? To even have chosen such a pricey place, you had long planned to completely ruin me.”

Wen Wan chuckled gleefully, “Since you were bestowed with your title of marquis , you obtained a significant amount of money, why be so stingy?”

Ye Qingyu was utterly speechless.

Originally Wen Wan was shameless, but at least Liu Zongyuan was somewhat reliable. In the end, those near the cinnabar would turn red; Liu Zongyuan was becoming more and more shameless. He really was too incautious when making friends.

“Returning to the subject, the considerations of the summons of the army must be greater than what we can think of. The writers of the official military documents brains are so devious, even a little bit squeezed out is enough to make someone fall into a scheme.” Liu Zongyuan brought the subject back to what they were originally discussing. “To make such a decision, they must have some other plans. Most likely, this time, the opponent that the Empire needs to take care of, is not only the demon race but also the sects within the Empire.”

“Taking action against the sects?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head, saying, "This is only my guess. Think about it. Ever since the Empire was founded, the sects have always been placed outside the law. The laws and rules of the Empire are completely useless against the three schools and the three factions, the six top sects of the Empire. It is prohibited for us to arrest them for crimes. Within the sects, there has never been a lack of top level experts. For the Imperial family of the Empire, this is, in the end, a shade over their hearts. As the saying goes, the matters of Jianghu will be resolved in the Jianghu. It sounds good, and countless Jianghu people feel proud of this statement, but this, for the Empire, is already a significant humiliation. Everywhere under the heaven is the Emperor's soil, and everyone is the subject of the Empire. Just what is the reason for the Emperor not being allowed to interfere in the lives of the subjects within the area he rules?"

Liu Zongyuan spoke a lot in one breath.

Ye Qingyu faintly understood after hearing this.

Wen Wan laughed slightly, "To want to eradicate the sects is not that easy. The great founding Emperor, just how powerful and mighty was he. And even he, could only negotiate with the six large sects. The Snow Empire today has wasted far too much energy against the Snow ground Demon court, and they are in an even worse position to resist against the top class experts of the sects. This time the enlistment, is merely urging the wolves to swallow the tiger, then watch the fires burning across the river. (delay entering the fray until opponents are exhausted fighting against each other) However, what we have summoned this time, is a horde of mice. They cannot even be counted as wolves, then how can we sit back and reap the harvest?"

Ye Qingyu looked in surprise at Wen Wan.

This mad tiger, seemed like a brute, but he had some inner qualities. To think that he could be so incisive when looking at matters.

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head when he finished hearing his words. "This is hard to say. After all, the Imperial family of the Empire has nominal sovereignty. Even the large sects have to give some face to the

Imperial family. Even though it is a rabble that have come to Youyan Pass in these days, but the true geniuses and experts of the sects will slowly arrive. At that time, everything will be made clear.”

“True experts?” Wen Wan chuckled, “Those old monsters shouldn’t appear. If [One blade], [Twin swords], [One whip], [Three dragon and three phoenix], these characters of the true dragon rankings appear, then it will be really lively. At that time Little Ye can meet the inheritors of the six top sects.”

“Why am I the topic again?” Ye Qingyu glared at Mad Tiger Wen.

The three laughed boisterously, drinking again.

As they had three rounds of drinks, the delicious food and delicacies began to be served.

The cooking arts of the chefs of the [Breeze and drizzle building] were very famous. It was naturally extremely delicious. Ye Qingyu’s appetite could not be help but be greatly aroused, beginning to devour ravenously. Since these two martial brutes wanted to take advantage of him, then he should eat more and gain something back first.

As they were eating, a clamour suddenly came from the outside.

Very quickly, the little manager wearing golden silk clothing came in and apologised with a smile, “Three honoured guests, sorry to interrupt you. Recently a strange white little dog and a silver snake that can fly have appeared from who knows where. They often come here to steal food, and are extremely nimble. We’ve tried to capture them several times without succeeding. This time they have come, and have stolen three jars of [Breeze brew]. The experts of the restaurant have gone out to chase them, so therefore it is a bit noisy. Please don’t take offence!”

A white little dog?

A silver snake that can fly?

Ye Qingyu was stunned, then instantly realised something. He said in a natural tone, “These type of little robbers, are really hateful. You must capture it and beat them!”



The little manager said many agreements, giving them complimentary wine then retreated.

Wen Wan grinned roguishly, looking at Ye Qingyu. He was about to say something, when he could hear someone let out an exhalation of shock from the four soldiers of the Vanguard outside. Then the four stood up uniformly, armours clanking, evidently performing a military salute.....

When they turned their heads to look, a middle aged man that was evidently short and stout, gradually walked in.

This short and stout middle aged man, seemed to be around thirty years of age. His face was white and clean, face filled with amiableness, a gentle smile filling his face. He seemed like a wealthy man completely at peace with the world, with no hair at all on his face. He wore a black coloured cotton robe, without any aura or impulsiveness whatsoever. In his right hand, there were two silver coloured Baiding balls that were swirling.....

If one had met such a normal looking chubby person on the streets, most likely you would not even give him a second glance.....

But at this moment, Wen Wan jumped up like his bum had been hacked by a blade.

An expression of startlement appeared on the face of the normally stable Liu Zongyuan. He quickly stood up.

Ye Qingyu was also surprised, clasping his hands and paying his greetings. "Commander Liu!"

This normal looking short and stout man, had a great background. He was one of the six huge figures of Youyan Pass.

The commander of the Vanguard.

Liu Siufeng!

# Chapter 188: The suddenly arrived demonic qi

Apart from the War God of Youyan Pass Lu Zhaoge, there were six huge figures of the Youyan army. They were the commanders of the Vanguard, Rear Camp, Left and Right Camp, the head of the Military Supply Department as well as head of the Military Council. These six commanders of the army were the peak existences of the military.

And among these six great figures, this Liu Siufeng was the most famous.

If you look at his amiable aura and the image of his white chubby appearance, it is really hard to link it together with the legends regarding him. It was said that he had slaughtered millions of demons. Within the Snow Ground Demon Court, the name Liu Siufeng existed side by side with titles such as Death God, Demon King, and Monster. When the demon races discussed of him, their faces would pale in fear.

The Vanguard of the four great camps had a fierce way of doing things, with strict discipline. It was said that this was influenced by the way Liu Siufeng personally did things.

Tens of days ago, in the bestowal ceremony, Ye Qingyu saw Liu Siufeng for the first time. He could not help but be taken back. It was very difficult to connect the fair faced chubby man with the fierce commander of the Vanguard.

The two had a short exchange at the bestowal ceremony, so they were not complete strangers.

As they saw Liu Siufeng enter, both Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan quickly rose to give a military salute.

Liu Siufeng amiably nodded his head, telling everyone not to act so restrained. Then he said with a smile, "Today I had a meeting within this restaurant, and coincidentally heard the little Marquis was also here. Therefore I came to have a look....."

Ye Qingyu quickly said he did not dare.

Even though he had become a Marquis, but compared to a huge figure of the Empire like Liu Siufeng, there was still a large difference no matter when comparing status or military contributions.

From all areas of evaluation concerning this commander of the Vanguard, apart from being fierce and vicious in battle, it was basically all positive. In front of this person who had so many achievements for the Empire, Ye Qingyu did not dare to pretend to be self important at all.

In reality, when he was at the White Deer Academy, Ye Qingyu had already read a record concerning the different army leaders of the Empire. In the introduction concerning Liu Siufeng, there was a phrase that Ye Qingyu remembered clearly even until now — “The great army of Youyan safeguards the northern gates of the Empire. Fifty percent is due to one of the ten great warriors, Lu Zhaoge, and thirty percent is thanks to the contribution of the of the commander of the Vanguard. The other twenty percent, is thanks to the other people of the Youyan army.....

From this, one could see just how important Lie Siufeng was to the Youyan army and the borders of the Empire.

As for the lifetime achievements of Liu Siufeng, Ye Qingyu could not help but be impressed.

He had always admired Liu Siufeng like an idol. But seeing him in reality, even though he could not help but have a feeling of his idol being destroyed due to his outer appearance. Still, Ye Qingyu clearly knew, a person should not be judged by their outer appearance. For someone with such an ordinary appearance, to have such a high reputation, he must have his particular qualities.

“On the day of the bestowal ceremony, the process was rushed so we could not talk fully.” Liu Siufeng smiled, the silver steel balls in his hands swirling, a strange aura of the sun and moon moving in motion together. “On that day, you once said that you had the intention to serve in the Vanguard. I wonder just what your decision is after several days of consideration?”

His words were straightforward and direct.

There was unexpectedly a slight hint of impatience in his words.

Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan could not help but sneakily give each other a glance, both able to see the surprise in each others' eyes.

Commander Liu was a famed person for having high expectations. For the soldiers of the Vanguard, he had extremely strict requirements. There were many noble families of the Empire that wanted to place their family members into the Vanguard, making the ordinary seem special. But they were all decisively rejected. In these years, it normally was people asking him for a favour. He had never invited anyone into the Vanguard of his own initiative.

It was said that the military had greatly advertised Ye Qingyu's actions, and there was a momentum to cultivate him into the hero of the army. But with the personality of Commander Liu, he would not pay attention to this fake fame at all. Those so called geniuses, even if they really had talent, would all be sniffed at by Commander Liu.....

And today, he would think so highly of brother Ye?

Ye Qingyu hearing this, quickly said, "Thank you for Commander's heavy favour, I do not deserve your praise. I have already made my decision, I am willing to enter into the Vanguard, to hear the instructions of the Commander.

Liu Siufeng began laughing uproariously, "Good, this is a wise choice by the Little Marquis. I can finally put this matter to rest....." Saying this, he lightly patted Ye Qingyu's shoulder and continued to speak, "I've commanded soldiers for tens of years, and have seen countless of people. I have seen many of those so called geniuses. But none of them have been able to arouse my love for talent and want to raise him as the next Commander. Little Marquis, you are the first."

As these words were said, apart from feeling greatly surprised, Ye Qingyu rushed to say, "Commander, you have over praised me."

Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan on the side, however were not too greatly

startled by this.

The personality of Liu Siufeng had always been direct and straightforward. The way he said and did things, he would not go about in a roundabout fashion. There were very little matters he would hide in his heart. Since he had said such words out, then it was real, he would not put on false pretense and give fake praise.

For Commander Liu to have such an evaluation of Ye Qingyu, made the two both shocked and overjoyed.

Previously when Ye Qingyu had gravely offended the head of the Supply Department Zhang San, he could be said to have made a great enemy within the army. In the future, he would definitely suffer the vengeance and obstructions of Zhang San. But right now, when Commander Liu spoke such words without any disguise, then this represented that there was a mountain he could rely on that was even higher than Zhang San's. This meant they did not need to worry too much.

As these words were said, and received Ye Qingyu's affirmation, the mood of Liu Siufeng became especially pleased.

He stayed to speak some more, and Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan mustered their courage to give him a toast. He did not reject, drinking it all in one cup, then turned and left for his meeting.

Before he left, he once again reminded Ye Qingyu that very quickly someone would specially hand over the prepared uniform and seal for Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu and the others rose to see him off.

After Liu Siufeng had left, the three returned to their seats, looking at each other then bursting into laughter.

"This is my first time seeing such an impatient expression appear on the Commander. Haha, I nearly couldn't bear it and almost burst out laughing. His expression, was as if he was a little bit late, brother Ye would have been stolen away by someone else," Liu Zongyuan could not restrain himself from saying such with a smile."

Wen Wan said in an excited tone, "This is great, since Commander Liu has such high expectations for this little bastard, then in the future it will be much easier within the army. From now on as long as I throw the name of this little bastard out, let's see who dares incite me within the Vanguard."

Ye Qingyu was completely speechless.

"That's not right. It's not like you don't understand the Commander's personality. The higher the expectations he has for someone, the stricter his requirements. From my perspective, the reason Commander was so amiable with brother Ye was because he has not yet a person of the Vanguard. When brother Ye wears the battle robes of the Vanguard, the Commander will treat him like he is a normal soldier, or perhaps even stricter." Liu Zongyuan shook his head.

As he finished saying this, he could not help but once again remind Ye Qingyu. That he should not be beside himself with joy just because of today's meeting. Within the army, one relied on military contributions. He should not become conceited over someone's favour and break military discipline.

"You really are such a woman." Wen Wan looked in disdain at Liu Zongyuan, and said in a tone of contempt, "what you just said, do you think the little bastard doesn't know? This fellow, is extremely devious. You don't need to worry about him. He'll be able to perform even better at the same tasks than us. There's a pole in his heart that can be used to measure everything in the world."

"That's right." Liu Zongyuan thought back to the things Ye Qingyu had achieved. He suddenly felt that his worry and reminders were needless. For a monster like Ye Qingyu, using the words accomplishing many when young was not even enough to describe him.

Ye Qingyu could not hold back his laughter after seeing the bickering of the two.

Like a cyclone, they completely devoured all the dishes on the table. There was only wine left.

“The Commander said he came here for a meeting.” Wen Wan said in a curious tone. “Why don’t you guess, just who has he arranged a meeting with?”

Ye Qingyu was also slightly curious.

Liu Zonguan said, “Within Youyan Pass, there are only six people with the requirements for arranging a meeting with the commander. Of these six, Lord Lu rarely comes out from the Pass Lord’s residence. Then there are only five people left. It is somewhat difficult to guess.....”

Before he’d even finished.

Boom!

Everywhere, suddenly quaked a little.

The surrounding walls, floor, tables, screens, suddenly had the flicker of light from the activation of the formations. The formation appeared to reinforce it, only then could the building stabilise. A layer of invisible energy protected the restaurant within.

But at the same time, numerous extremely powerful demonic qi, surged and broiled, shooting towards the skies.

“There’s demonic qi....”

“Experts of the demon race has appeared?”

“A demon horde has gathered?”

Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan rose at the same time, the expression on their faces greatly changing.

The yuan qi within the two shimmered out. In an instant, they were like a drawn bow, the yuan qi in their bodies activated to the fullest. They prepared to act at any moment.

This was the instinctive reaction of a martial artist.

In Ye Qingyu’s body, it was similarly surging with inner yuan, as if it was a raging great river.

The expression on the three faces, became incomparably serious.

Four young armoured soldiers, also rushed in.

What followed behind them was the White Horse sword slave, Bai Yuanxing, his face filled with shock.

“Within Youyan Pass, why is there such a level of demon qi within? Furthermore, there is not only one, and for it to be so close to the Vanguard.....This group of demons, do they not want their lives? To so publicly appear, they are asking for their death.” Liu Zongyuan walked rapidly towards the window, looking out.

“In the east, there are three demon qi auras. There are at least three demon warriors! In the west.....” After a slightly observation, Wen Wan could discern what was happening. Outside, there were significant numbers of the experts of the demon race that had appeared. Demon qi was roiling and shrouding the skies, causing one to suffocate.

There had never been so many experts of the demon race that had appeared within Youyan Pass.

This sudden change, completely exceeded everyone’s imagination.

“Slaughter all the demons. We cannot delay, we must quickly act, otherwise chaos will break out within the Pass.” Liu Zongyuan had already prepared to strike.

Wen Wan nodded his head.

Ye Qingyu frowned, a noise of surprise coming out of him, as if he had observed something. “There are also experts of the demon race that has appeared within here.....En, it’s on the fourth floor, its three demon warriors....I’ll go take of them.”

Saying this,his figure flashed, breaking out through the window.

“Be careful.” Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan followed behind them.

For the experts of the demon race to suddenly show their faces, this was something greatly out of the norm. But they could not care about this. They first must kill and capture the experts that had already shown themselves. Otherwise they would bring terrible harm and loss to the



citizens of the Pass, and they would also destroy the military buildings within the Pass. If allowed to wreck as they pleased, complete chaos would break out.

At the same time the three reacted, the martial experts of all areas of the great army, also struck out.

At this time, demon qi shrouded the skies.

Countless figures, were torn apart within the demon qi, turning into blood mist and becoming the food of the demon race. Countless buildings collapsed, demon fire raged and burned large areas. Demonic wind blew, bringing with it sand and dust. The citizens of the human race tragically cried within, as they, along with their houses was blown into the skies.....

.....

On the fourth floor, there were shocked and alarmed cries.

# Chapter 189: A dragon amongst men

When a middle aged man that had always sat quietly, who had never even spoken a single word suddenly took off his clothes and tore apart the human skin on his body, the bustling atmosphere instantly ended as he transformed into a blood red six armed huge bear.

The two people from the sects next to him was instantly dumbfounded.

Before they could have any sort of reaction, their bodies were cut into six parts by the terrifying sharp claws of the blood red bear demon.

Demonic qi that was like a bloody flame, instantly exploded from the body of the six armed bear.

A bloody smell enveloped the entire fourth floor of the Breeze and Drizzle building.

“Demonic qi.....blood flame demon bear!”

There was the exclamation of shock from a young swordsman.

But very quickly, his face of despair transformed into a puddle of blood.

Because the seductive woman he had been happily ‘conversing’ with, her tongue suddenly transformed into a silver line that pierced through his chest. This was a toxic tongue, and the venom instantly traversed throughout his entire body. It dissolved his blood, bones, and organs, leaving only his human skin behind.

This seductive woman cackled with an enrapturing smile, while her figure started bloating up.

When the skin on her face had completely blown up through expansion, her seductive figure turned into a terrifying white scaled lizard.

It was another demon.

The fourth floor instantly became chaotic.

The people of the sects became disordered and chaotic. Various kinds of weapons were unsheathed. There were distraught and distressed screams and screeches. There were people who activated their yuan qi in the first

instant, holding weapons in their hands, guarding against their comrades. They were afraid that the fellows they were laughing and conversing with just now, would also tear apart their human skin and transform into sinister and horrifying demonic beasts.

“Hou.....”

The blood flame demon bear struck his own chest, his body constantly enlarging. In the blink of an eye, it was four or five metres tall, like a huge beast. A blood red flame exploded from its massive body, as if it was like fireworks, demonic qi roiling that caused one to suffocate.

There were several men from the sects that were touched by the blood red flame by accident. With a speed indiscernible to the naked eye, they became dehydrated and began to shrivel up. Like a flower that had boiling water poured on it, in the blink of an eye, they turned into several corpses.....

“Careful, the surrounding blood flame of the blood flame demon bear is toxic. Do not breathe it in....” The flying heaven sword Wei Tianming shouted in caution.

“Everyone don’t panic. Surround these two beasts, we have so many people here, how could we be afraid of it? Act together, and slaughter these two beasts!” Another disciple of the Crepe Myrtle Sect also shouted.

At this time, the quality of the disciples of the large sects could be seen.

As for those who came from small sects, they were completely frightened out of their guts. After all the Crepe Myrtle Sect was the top sect, so the disciples of this sect were the first that reacted.

“HO!”

The blood flame demon bear let out a roar of rage. From his mouth, a pillar of blood flame shot out towards Wei Tianming.

“Flying Heaven One Sword.....cut!”

Wei Tianming shouted loudly, the heart sutra of the Crepe Myrtle activating to its extreme. There were twenty one Crepe Myrtle stars

swirling around his body, displaying that his highest level of cultivation was at the twenty one Spirit spring stage. The violet colour on his sword greatly increased its radiance, then the sword struck out.

This Flying Heaven One Sword was his most accomplished battle technique.

He had relied on this move to obtain the title of the Flying Heaven Sword.

Wei Tianming had intentionally shown his face in front of this people, so he used his ultimate technique at the first instant, wanting to hack this blood flame demon bear apart.

Boom!

The violet sword and the blood red pillar struck together.

The light of the sword was extinguished in an instant like boiling water splashing on snow.

He could not even withstand a strike.

The pupils of Wei Tianming became constricted.

He was about to be swallowed by the blood flame pillar of the demon warrior, a thousand pounds hanging on a single thread, a figure flashed by. It saved Wei Tianming from the fatal strike by a hair's breath.

The person who had acted, was namely the black haired middle aged Shishu.

Wei Tianming had cold sweat all over his body. This experience of returning from the death god's hand, made sweat drip from all over his body.

"Careful, this is a titled demon warrior. One must take care....." The middle aged Shishu shouted to remind everyone.

A so called titled demon warrior was comparable to an expert at the forty Spirit springs of the human race. It was completely not someone, with Wei Tianming's level of cultivation, could resist against. Just now, if it was not for the middle aged Shishu acting, this flying heaven sword

Wei Tianming would most likely have already turned into a dehydrated corpse.

When they were speaking.

There were several other nameless people of Jianghu, that was torn apart by the blood flame demon bear. Fresh blood and intestines flowed from their bellies, broken limbs splashed about. There was no one that could withstand a single strike from the demon bear.

“Kekeke.....” Within the mouth of the huge snow white lizard, there was the cackle of the seductive girl.

The snow white tongue in its mouth, shot out like lightning, as a silver thread that was fast to the extreme. A normal disciple of the sect could not possibly evade, so this silver thread pierced through their bodies. Afterwards, their entire person, flesh, bones and internal organs were instantly dissolved. Pus like fluid effused out, and what remained was only human skin.....

The power of this huge white lizard was not in the least lower than that of the blood flame demon bear.

Only tens of breaths had passed when the two demon monster broke apart their disguise but over twenty people had perished on the fourth floor. The power of these two demons, completely crushed them.....

“Run.....”

There was a person sharply screaming in panic.

These good men of the Jianghu, after a short lived resistance, when the demon warriors displayed their strength, their courage was like thin snow meeting scorching water, turning to steam in an instant.

When the first person sharply screamed for them to run, the originally rabble like Jianghu people were in an even worse state.

No matter how much the black haired elder of the Crepe Myrtle shouted, he could not stabilise the defeated situation.

“Kekeke.....the flesh of this little girl is not bad. I am currently lacking a

human skin.....” There was human language coming out of the out of the huge snow white lizard. It’s bloody red fierce pupils, looked towards Nan Hua.

The human skin of beautiful people had always been collected by her as a hobby.

Nan Hua’s gorgeous face instantly went pale.

She instinctively retreated backwards.

“Careful” The black haired Shishu seemed to have discerned something. With a shout of alarm, the long sword in his hand struck, cutting in front of the space in front of Nanhua. With a light sound, he cut apart a silver strand.

This was namely the tongue of the huge white lizard.

Nan Hua was so frightened she kept scrabbling backwards.。

If not for the sword of the black haired Shishu, then most likely now she would have turned into a piece of human skin through the toxin of the tongue.

But—

Xiu!

After a slight vibration, the silver coloured tongue suddenly softened, entangling with the sword. It pulled fiercely.

“Ah.....” The black haired Shisho screamed, as if he had been struck by thunder. There was fear on his face, and his figure quivered, madly retreating backwards. Throwing away the long sword in his hand, his right hand formed a blade that cut towards his left shoulder. The entire left limb was hacked apart.

Pok!

Fresh blood spurted everywhere.

IN an instant, the silver arm that had been hacked apart on the floor, transformed into silver pus.

So his left limb had been pierced by the silver tongue.

Thankfully the cultivation of the middle aged Shisho was a little stronger, that he could use his yuan qi to seal and prevent the demonic qi poison from spreading. Luckily, in the first instant he had cut apart and sacrificed his left limb. Otherwise, his entire person and bones would have turned into pus, leaving only a piece of skin behind.....

Within the fourth floor, the cultivation of this middle aged Shisho was the highest. He should be higher than the Spirit springs stage, but in an instant he was heavily injured. This made the other people scared out of their wits even more.....

The other disciples of the Crepe Myrtle Sect's will to do battle completely broke apart in this instant.

Why did it become like this?

This was completely different from the normal sayings of the sects. Why was the demon race so terrifying?

The crowd fled in all directions with sharp screams.

But many people discovered in their despair that after the two servant girls, responsible for the White Jade stair small formation, were killed, the formation had no way to function anymore. And suffering the strike, all sorts of formation of the Breeze and Drizzle building had activated automatically, reinforcing the walls and windows with the power of formations. They could not break this apart, so they had no way to escape.

They were trapped like beasts.

No one could flee.

The shadow of death, in an instant, shrouded the malevolent faces of the Jianghu people.

"Kekeke, little girl, no need to be afraid. It doesn't hurt in the slightest. Give me your human skin, hehe, come quickly come....."The huge white lizard laughed delicately, constantly nearing Nan Hua.

“No.....no, no .....save me.....” Nan Hua was completely frightened senseless.

She did her utmost to retreat backwards. Turning her head, she saw Wei Tianming standing by the side. She begged for aid: “Senior brother Tianming, save me.....”

Wei Tianming rapidly headed somewhere else to hide, as if he had not heard her plea at all.

Those senior brothers who normally were beside her, who slapped their chests with guarantee that they would eternally protect her with their lives, right now had completely and utterly forgotten the oaths that they swore to pursue for the beauty. They ran faster than dogs.....

The middle aged Shishu's figure quivered then fell.....

Nan Hua was enveloped in despair.

“Senior sister Nan Hua, quickly run, let me block...” A skinny appearance, blocked in front of her.

Nan Hua was shocked: “Junior brother Li, you.....”

The Liu Rui blocking in front of her, was the most stupid disciple with the lowest cultivation within the Crepe Myrtle Sect. Normally he was the person that the other disciples mocked and laughed at, because he was stupid and cowardly. He did not dare resist with his hands or mouth. Nan Hua normally had little impression of this junior brother with ordinary talent. But she would never have imagined, that when lives were on the line, it was this cowardly youth that would block in front of her.....

But it proved to be no use whatsoever.

Xiu!

The air was broken apart. A soul ripping silver strand easily pierced through the shoulder of the cowardly youth Li Rui.

The venom activated.

Li Rui felt him losing feeling in his body.



He opened his mouth, using the last of his vision, to look at the girl who for him had always been as proud as a girl on the ninth heavens. He wanted to say his last words, but he discovered that no sound could come from his throat any longer.....”

“Senior sister Nan, you are beautiful. I also like you.....”

He could only sigh in his heart.

To die like this, he did not regret.

Because he did the bravest thing in his life opposite his normally cowardly self.

An action that he would never ever feel regret for.—

When the silver tongue was taken out of his body, he felt acute pain. The weak youth felt he was about to turn into pus. At this time.....

In the spark of a flint, an unexpected change occurred.

A palm, lightly patted on his shoulder.

A seeping cold went into his bones, instantly covering his entire body.

“Retreat to one side and activate your qi to treat your injuries.”

An unfamiliar voice sounded from beside his ear.

The weak youth was dumbfounded, then he discovered in surprise that his body did not dissolve into pus from the poison of the giant lizard. Conversely, a layer of silver frost completely erased the venom within his body in a single moment.

A gentle power, pushed him to one side.

At this time, only then could Li Rui see who it was that acted to save him.

It was the wealthy white robed youth.

It was the wealthy white robed youth that had previously arrogantly insulted senior brother Wei Tianming as trash on the fourth floor.

At that time, in the hearts of everyone, they thought that he was an idle

and useless wealthy youth of some noble family. But right now, with his white robe, there were tens of silver dragons roaring and encircling him. He held an autumn water clear sword that was the width of five fingers in one hand, like an immortal that walked towards the terrifying white lizard.

The white robe flickered with radiance, as if he was a god of war.

For it to be him?

The skinny youth Li Rui was completely dumbfounded.

# Chapter 190: Just who was he?

Nan Hua in this instant, completely did not dare to believe her eyes.

In that instant, the white robed wealthy youth was like a divine soldier descending from the heavens. From the window beside her, he broke in and entered, breaking apart the window that had been reinforced by formations, the same window that no one had been able to break apart. In front of this white robed wealthy youth, it shattered apart like tofu....

Outside, a light, which was piercing to the eyes, surged in.

The figure of the white robed youth, was like a mountain that could not be climbed over, blocking the white coloured huge lizard. Nan Hua was currently staring at the back of this white robes. A feeling of security she had never felt before, made her forget to be afraid.

“He really was an expert....”

At this moment, Nan Hua finally understood.

The black haired middle aged Shishu, Wei Tianming and the other disciples of the Crepe Myrtle Sect, and the entire people of the Jianghu people on the fourth floor, also understood this at this moment.

In that instant, everyone's gaze was gathered onto the body of the white robed youth.

There were people's gaze that brightened from the moment the white robed youth had broken apart the windows and came in, as if someone drowning in water with no hope left had seen a patch of grass that they could grab onto. Like dogs of a mourning family, they flew towards the windows and fled outside.....

With one person leading the way, there were instantly people mimicking.

These people completely did not care whether this white robed youth would be able to defeat the two demon warriors. They wanted to quickly escape from this Asura bloody hell place. Protecting their own life was most important....

“Don’t escape, everyone act together to assist this little brother.....” The middle aged Shishu shouted, wanting to stabilise the situation. With the appearance of the white robed youth, he was able to see his chance. If everyone was able to unite together, then they would definitely be able to kill these two demon warriors.

But only a few people listened to him.

The so called good men of Jianghu, was heading as a hive towards the only possible route of escape, the window. There were even people who for the right to leave first, fought against each other.....

At this moment—

Xiu!

A green demon qi light pillar, suddenly brushed past the broken window, flashing by outside.

“Ahhh.....”

“No....“

“Save me, save me.....”

Even more tragic and despairing cries came from the outside. Those Jianghu people who excitedly and impatiently ran towards the outside, was wrapped around by the green demonic qi light. As it whistled past, one could faintly see them transforming into bloody rain.....

“There are also demons outside!”

“It’s even more dangerous outside....”

Howls and squeals like pigs being slaughtered, sounded.

At this time, there was no one charging outside anymore.

.....

Ye Qingyu’s twenty spirit springs were activated to its fullest, the Little Shang sword in his hands. While observing in detail the strength of the two demon warriors, he walked step by step closer.

“It’s a titled demon warrior!”

Ye Qingyu did not dare to let down his guard.

The demon warrior realm of the demon race, was largely similar to the Spirit spring of the human race in terms of cultivation, and could be compared to each other. When the human race was at the twenty Spirit springs, it was approximately at the stage of a four star demon warrior. This was a great threshold in the path of cultivation for both of these two great races.

And these titled demon warriors, their strength was comparable to the people at the forty Spirit springs of cultivation.

If these demons had some innate battle ability, then its battle power could even be greater than forty Spirit springs.

Within Ye Qingyu's body, there was a constant roar of dragons sounding.

After absorbing the aura of the Snow Dragons, there was already a faint pressure of the dragon race within Ye Qingyu's inner yuan. This point was hard to be noticed by other experts of the human race, but for the demon race that was extremely sensitive naturally towards the classification of their bloodlines, this was an extremely evident matter.

As such, when Ye Qingyu appeared, the gazes of these two titled demon warriors focused on Ye Qingyu.

They could feel the descent of danger.

"Human?" The blood red flame was burning around the blood flame demon bear. Like a Fiendgod, it stared at Ye Qingyu.

The scarlet red eyes of the hue white lizard emitting a chilling light, focusing on Ye Qingyu's body. It emitted the language of the human race: "Kekeke, what a handsome little boy. Another perfect human skin, give me, quickly give me, I want....."

There were twenty snow dragons that danced around Ye Qingyu like divine dragons.

"Not knowing your own death. Two tiny little demon warriors, to dare

appear within Youyan Pass?" Ye Qingyu's robe was white like jade, his sword like frost, his gaze sharp like a blade: "What, are you so impatient to die?"

"Human, die!"

The blood flame demon bear roared, and like a small hill, came charging at him.

"Hou!"

Opening its mouth wide, a blood flame pillar shot towards Ye Qingyu.

At the same time, the tongue of the white lizard also moved slightly. Unexpectedly, there were two tongues that shot out from her mouth, like a bolt of lightning. With the cover and concealment of the blood flame pillar, it headed lightning quick towards Ye Qingyu without any signs.

These two demon warriors, cooperated extremely intricately.◦

Ye Qingyu frowned slightly.

Originally he could rely on the speed of his body techniques to evade this attack....But if so, then the Jianghu people behind him most likely would die a tragic death.

His thoughts flying like lightning, Ye Qingyu let out a low grunt, reacting.

Instantly activating a membrane that was even thinner than white paper formed on his palm, as if it would collapse if one just lightly poked it. It grew around his body, blocking towards the direction of the terrifying blood flame pillar and the two silver white venomous tongue.....

"Too arrogant..."

"Is he looking to die?"

"Why does he not use his sword to block?"

The far off Jianghu people, seeing this scene, let out exhalations of shock. No one had imagined, that a layer of thin membrane formed from yuan qi, was able to block the attacks of the two titled demon warriors.

Was this white robed youth looking to die?

In the spark of a flint--

Boom! Boom!Boom!

Fearful explosions sounded.

The entire building fiercely shook, as if it would collapse at any moment. The four walls, stone pillars, windows, the formations greatly activated. One could faintly hear the creak and squeak of the walls, as if this building was about to split apart.....

The hearts of every Jianghu people, nearly jumped out.

The blood flame exploded in the air, completely covering Ye Qingyu.

At this moment, many people thought that Ye Qingyu would die for sure.

But the next moment, the blood flame disappeared. What came was the shocked bellow of rage from the blood flame demon bear along with the sharp screech of its comrade, the white huge lizard. These two titled demon warriors, was as if they had just suffered an incomparably terrifying matter, emitting a howl of fear and anger.....

“He blocked it?”

Countless people were shocked.

A light screen that was thin like paper, could it really defend against the attacks of two great demon warriors?

The blood flame dissipated.

Countless gazes saw Ye Qingyu's charge like a white robed killing god.

He had come out completely unharmed from the exploding blood flame. The Little Shang sword in his right hand vibrated at high speed. Between the hilt of the sword and his wrist, there was a radiance like quicksilver that fluctuated. This was evidently the signs that an extremely profound sword technique was about to be performed.....

Xiu!

Ye Qingyu increased his speed.

Three steps later, his figure became blurry. He transformed into a ray of light, with an explosion like sound, that appeared like a ghost in front of the blood flame demon bear. A sword with the force of ten thousand pounds struck down!

“To want to kill me?” The blood flame demon bear bellowed.

On it's shoulder, a silver flame the size of palm began to burn. Burning large swathes of his flesh, exposing white bone, completely provoking its ferocious nature. The claw of the palm was like metal, striking towards the Little Shang sword.

It was able to recognise that this was a Spirit weapon.

But so what?

The Spirit weapons of the human race, as if it could break apart the natural weapons of demons?

His pair of metal bear claws had already been trained to the extreme. This was its natural demon weapon. On the battlefield of the Explosive Snow glacier, just how many Spirit weapons of the demon race had it broken apart....

Ding!Ding!Ding!

In an instant, the bear palm and the Little Shang sword clashed together causing sparks to fly.

The blood flame demon bear was about to activate its demonic qi, to crush the Little Shang sword, when it suddenly felt there was a bizarre power seeping from the Little Shang sword, and the originally surging demonic qi, suddenly quieted down with no way to activate. It was as if all the demonic qi within his body had frozen.....

“This.....” It was greatly shocked, it's eyes widening.

But Ye Qingyu would not give him a chance.

Retrieving the Little Shang sword, his figure was in mid air. His left palm struck towards the skull of the blood flame demon bear, and his



hand passed by like autumn lightning, without the slightest trace of resistance.....

Time, seemed to freeze at that instant.

This shocking sword strike, caused the hearts of everyone to stop.

At this time, Ye Qingyu's figure was in the air. Suddenly, he seemed to have noticed something. With a slight hesitation, his head turned, and the moment he twisted his body, the snow white venomous tongue of the white lizard had already struck his shoulder like a bolt of lightning.....

He exerted strength with his left hand, lifting with a mighty force.

The head of the huge blood flame demon bear, was in his hands.

And using the force of the attack of the snow white venomous tongue, he lightly floated backwards.

His figure landed on the ground.

The long sword in his right hand was like frost, and his left hand held the head of the enemy.

Ye Qingyu's with his white robe swirling, stood towering and alone.

Beside him, before the figure of the huge blood flame demon bear fell to the ground, demonic blood spurted out like a fountain from his chest, splashing tens of meters, like a bloody waterfall falling.....

Ye Qingyu held his sword alone, his body bathed in demon blood.

Far off.

Everyone of the Jianghu seeing this, was completely stunned.

No one could describe the astoundment in their hearts.

No one was able to capture the breathtaking power of that sword.

No one knew just what had happened in that instant that made the blood flame demon bear lose its head without even moving.

Even more, there was no one that dared to stare directly at the white robed figure that was bathed in blood, holding a sword.

The impression of the wealthy white robed, completely collapsed at this instant.

What replaced it was a figure like that of a god in front of their eyes. At this moment, the people of the Jianghu, only now just understood how ridiculous their error was. Only now did they knew just how laughable it was to be so arrogant in front of such a person. The so called fact that the Jianghu people did not like constraints, going from high to high, elegant like an immortal, in front of the breathtaking white robed youth awash with blood holding his sword, was completely an incomparably ridiculous joke.

Forceful!

Incisive!

Heroic and decisive!

Was this the battle method of the army?

At this instant, the people of Jianghu lowered their heads.

They knew the way they regarded the army, was wrong.

But....

This white robed youth, just who was he exactly?

In the hearts of countless people, such a question floated to their minds.

# Chapter 191: Let me stab you once

Boom!

The huge body of the blood flame demon bear, fell like that of a mountain collapsing.

This heavy sound was as if it really exploded in the hearts of everyone.

The snow white demon lizard emitted a furious roar: “You have really killed Blood Flame, you deserve to die ahhhhh.....little brat of the human race, you have been infected with my toxin, you are dead for sure.....”

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the bloodstain on his shoulder.

The snow white poisonous tongue was indeed powerful. The strike from the distance was like a ballista used to siege a city. All the bones in his arm and shoulder had fractured a little, but.....was it really poison?

Ye Qingyu smiled in disdain.

A pale silver flame, slowly disappeared from his wound.

The [Supreme Ice flame] was the nemesis of everything.

Previously when he had acted, he had relied on the [Supreme Ice flame] to save the skinny Crepe Myrtle Sect disciple. If he was able to save someone, then of course he could save himself. Therefore, at the moment the snow white poison tongue had attacked him, he had already activated the [Supreme Ice flame] to erase the demonic poison.

This entire battle process was within Ye Qingyu's expectations.

It could even be said that the moment he first struck out, Ye Qingyu had already made preparations for him to be injured. The power of two titled demon warriors, could not be compared to a normal demon warrior. Although Ye Qingyu had confidence in himself, but even he would not be as conceited as to think he would be unscathed.

He had relied on the [Supreme Ice flame] to block the first wave of attack from the two titled demon warriors. But the power of Ye Qingyu's

[Supreme Ice flame] could only be used to form a thin barrier to block the attack, and was not able to strike back. Therefore, to kill the blood flame demon bear, he had used the [Soul Stealing Heaven Strike] of the four moves of the unmatched peerless warrior. The instant he cut his opponent, he had frozen the yuan qi within his opponent.

In the battle between experts, a short moment where one could not use his yuan qi, was absolutely fatal.

Ye Qingyu had relied on this point to beat the blood flame demon bear to the point that it could not retaliate at all, killing him.

“To have dared to appear here, you should have long made preparations for your own death.” Ye Qingyu looked at the snow white demon lizard, walking step by step, inching nearer. Around his body, the power of the twenty yuan qi snow dragons roared and howled, as if divine dragons were protecting his body. A special snow dragon pressure began to emanate from, with a hard to describe imposiveness. The aura around his entire person, completely suppressed the titled demon warrior facing him.

“Even if I die, I’ll drag you to hell with me.” The snow white demon lizard looked at the corpse of the blood flame demon bear. In her scarlet red eyes, a color that seemed to indicate she would not be willing to die alone shot by. She said sinisterly: “Just who are you? There has never been such a character like you existing in the report of the [Southern Incline Legion].”

When this question came out, everyone in the fourth floor began to perk up their ears.

The people of the Jianghu and the sects were entirely stunned. They wanted to know, just who this white robed person was?

Nan Hua was by one side. Her eye were widened, waiting for the reply of the white robed youth.

In her beautiful eyes, there was a different kind of light flashing.

But—

“Peacefully accept your death. Even if you know my name, what use is it

for you?"

Ye Qingyu let out a faint smile, striking out with his sword instantly.

It was still the [Soul Stealing Heaven Strike].

Taking two steps forward, there were still tens of metres between the snow ground white lizard and him.

But at the moment when he took the third step, he was instantly in front of the snow white demon lizard. The Little Shang sword, which was like a clear spring, spilled over the galaxy of the nine heavens. A snow white dragon soul was wrapped around the body of the blade, and this bizarre battle technique instantly exploded. Even the air was cut apart by this sword, like waves of turbulent winds being sliced apart.....

The snow white demon lizard roared in rage, and from her mouth, four snow white toxic tongues shot out.

The four silver strands were like a spider's web, wanting to entangle the Little Shang sword.

But the [Soul Stealing Heaven Strike] had the power to temporarily halt her from using all her abilities. Then in an instant, this power invaded the body of the snow white demon lizard through the poison tongues.

The demonic qi was frozen, and her demonic power was scattered.

The snow white demon lizard finally understood in this instant, why the blood flame demon bear was so easily hacked apart by this white robed youth. In truth, this sword technique was too bizarre. Even though she was roaring furiously, she already comprehended the difference between them at this moment and had begun to retreat.....

Of course, Ye Qingyu would not give her a chance.

[Storm of Swords!]

The Little Shang sword rotated, and Ye Qingyu seemed to transform into a cyclone.

The sword qi was like frost, and a coldness instantly turned the entire fourth floor into an ice cave. Everyone let out a shiver.

They could only see the blade and not the person.

It was as if Ye Qingyu had combined with the sword.

In this moment, it was unknown just how many sword cuts the snow white demon lizard received. The sharp spirit weapon received the enhancement of cold ice qi, and was able to instantly slice apart the clustered silver scales on her body. One after another, fatal chill sword strokes cut wound after wound, invading into her body.....

In a flash, the sword shadows disappeared.

The figures intersected.

Ye Qingyu with his back to her, stopped, stowing his sword away and standing.

The massive body snow white demon lizard silently stood there. In her scarlet red eyes, a light like that from a fire, was currently disappearing little by little. The white lines from the sword strikes completely covered her entire body. But what was strange, was that there was no fresh blood seeping out from the wounds. Instead of this, layer after layer of cold ice was constantly freezing her.....

“This.....just what kind of battle technique is this?” The snow white demon lizard still had one final breath remaining, staring at Ye Qingyu.

She could clearly sense that her cultivation was not weaker in the least to the white robed youth in front of her. It was even much stronger than his, but ultimately the person that would fall and be defeated was herself.

She was not willing to accept this.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

The snow white demon lizard let out her last breath, tragically saying with a laugh “Good.....a sword wind that does not leave anyone behind.....But today.....we are just cannon fodder.....fated to die.....but what can we do, what can we do? And you guys.....will also pay the price.....kekeke.....everyone prepare to be shocked.....”

Before she finished.

A layer of white cold qi dispersed from her body. Ultimately she turned into a silver white huge block of ice, that completely froze her body inside.

The snow white demon lizard, perished.

Ye Qingyu slowly turned his body around, looking at the demon corpse sealed within the ice. He let out a slow sigh in his heart.

It was absolutely not a coincidence for such a great number of experts to appear in Youyan pass at this time. There must be some sort of plan or follow up behind this. This was definitely an intricately planned attack. But as to what exactly it targeted, one could not be sure as of this moment. What one could be sure of was, that the old demons of the [Southern Incline legion] really wanted to do something. Even the blood flame demon bear, snow white demon lizard was only cannon fodder, it was to distract and entangle the attentions of the experts of the Youyan pass.....

The blood flame demon bear, these two titled demon warriors, were only the beginning. They knew very clearly, that they were going to die by coming to Youyan Pass.

Humans valued their lives.

Demons also valued their lives.

But a military order was like a mountain. They could not refuse the order to come.

The words that the snow white demon lizard had sighed out just before her death, 'what can we do', had completely expressed the helplessness and bitterness of her life being controlled.

But the meaning behind her words, caused Ye Qingyu's heart to panic.

Just what did the 'prepare to be shocked' represent?

Just what did the demon race want to do within Youyan Pass?

Within the [Breeze and Drizzle building] at least twenty to thirty titled demon warriors had appeared. Such a power, if they appeared in the

battlefield, would perhaps be a powerful force. But right now appearing in the great camp of Youyan Pass, were like flies rushing to the fire. Once the human race reacted, they would very quickly be extinguished.....

The thousand year old demons of the [Southern Incline legion], would absolutely not create such a foolish plan where they rushed to their deaths.

Then, just what were the lives of twenty to thirty demon warriors in exchange for?

At this moment, Ye Qingyu could not think of the answer.

He was silent.

Everyone from the sects and the Jianghu were silent.

No one dared to make any sort of noise at this moment.

They were deathly afraid that they would affect Ye Qingyu's thoughts, and attract the attention of the death god. After all, not long ago, they had mocked and provoked the white robed reaper of death.

Only until Ye Qingyu lightly shook his head and slowly walked past the frozen demon corpse, did the fossilized movements and expressions of everyone in the fourth floor finally unseal.

Countless gazes gathered and focused on Ye Qingyu.

The white robed reaper of death bathed in demonic blood, suddenly placed his left hand on the slab of ice of the snow white demon lizard.

A cracking sound.

The slab of ice turned into countless pieces, falling at the same time, along with the corpse of the white demon lizard.....

The Jianghu people seeing this scene let out a cold shiver and an exhalation of shock.

This youth, would not show mercy even to a corpse.

From the moment Ye Qingyu appeared to the death of these two titled demon warriors, only fifteen minute had passed. But the fierce and



decisive methods Ye Qingyu had exhibited in battle, made everyone shiver in fear. Everyone who was a Jianghu person on the fourth floor, never wanted to encounter such an opponent in their life. For some people with little guts, most likely they would have a nightmare every time they met Ye Qingyu.

After a short but long silence.

“I am the elder of the Crepe Myrtle Sect, Liang Quan. Thank you brother for your aid, I wonder little brother you.....” The black haired middle aged shishu who had his arm cut off came forward, lifting his hand in greetings. His tone, and his attitude were extremely respectful. Evidently he wanted to release some tension from the atmosphere.

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, then faintly nodded his head.

But the next instant, the Little shang sword quivered, fiercely pointing at one of the Crepe Myrtle next to the middle aged Shishu, Liang Quan.

“Ah.....” This Crepe Myrtle sect disciple screamed, quickly running to one side. With fear on his face: “You.....what are you doing?”

Ye Qingyu did not reply, cutting out with his sword again.。

“Shishu, save me.....” This Crepe Myrtle sect disciple was nimble, sharply hiding and burrowing himself within the crowd. He pointed at Ye Qingyu, screaming “You....what are you doing.....I did not offend you.....senior brother and sisters, save me.....”“

The facial colour of the black haired Shishu changed, holding his sword with one hand and entering the battlefield.

The long sword was as if it was burning the heavens. This was namely one of the three greatest defensive sword techniques of the Crepe Myrtle [Seal and Obstruct].

Forcefully blocking Ye Qingyu’s sword, Liang Quan’s expression was both shocked and angry: “You.....you.....why do you want to kill a disciple of the Crepe Myrtle.....if we were wrong previously, I apologise for them. The misunderstandings previously, really were our fault.....”

Liang Quan swallowed his anger.

The powerful strength that Ye Qingyu had exhibited along with his mysterious identity, made even the elder of the Crepe Myrtle Sect, one of the top six sects, cautious. He could not help but bow down in order to survive.

But Ye Qingyu did not even say a word.

His figure flashed, striking out with his sword yet again.

“Ah....ah, why, do you really not like the people of Crepe Myrtle sect? Do you really want to kill everyone of the sects?” This disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect, while he fled constantly talked and incited the emotions of the others.

The people of Jianghu were also disturbed.

“This.....brother, if you really want to kill someone, you at least have to give a reason.....” Wei Tianming shouted, his face red.

Who would have guessed Ye Qingyu would not even give him a glance. He struck out with his sword at this Crepe Myrtle disciple once again.

This disciple sharply screeched, retreating.

“Don’t.....” Nan Hua could not help but exclaim, loudly screaming.

The crowd was shaken.

There were displays of people wanting to act.

Suddenly--

The skinny Crepe Myrtle sect disciple Li Rui who had always been recovering from injuries, suddenly rushed over with hobbled footsteps. Blocking in front of this Crepe Myrtle disciple, he said loudly: “Great, great hero, you are a good person. I beg you.....Don’t kill junior brother Miao, he’s not a bad person, he.....”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu’s sword, had descended on the tip of Li Rui’s nose.

There was only the distance of the width of one hair between the sword

and the nose.

The sword, stopped.

Ye Qingyu gave a look at the youth that was skinny but possessed a strange power. He saw that his legs were shivering and quivering, but he still blocked in front of his sword not budging an inch. He shook his head, and a hint of admiration flashed by in his eyes. He lightly laughed: “Idiot, foolish, a good person.....”

Li Rui was taken aback.

Pak !

The sword struck horizontally with a flick of Ye Qingyu’s wrist. The back of the sword struck on Li Rui’s waist.

Li Rui was directly sent sailing, landing tens of metres away.

Ye Qingyu’s controlled his power extremely well. Li Rui was still standing when he landed. Apart from feeling a sword qi roiling in his blood, he was not hurt in the least.

After striking Li Rui, Ye Qingyu did not cut out with his sword yet again. He only coldly smiled, looking at the disciples of the Crepe myrtle sect, and said in a mocking manner “To be able to avoid four of my strikes, your strength, is even higher than your Shishu. To be so young, yet to have such strength, haha.....”

The frightened disciples face suddenly became stunned.

The Liang Quan by one side that was both furious and angry, suddenly had a flash of insight through his mind. He suddenly realised something, turning and staring fixedly at the disciple surnamed Maio. Biting his tongue “You.....you are not Miao Xiu, just who are you? Why is your appearance so similar to Miao Xiu, you.....”

The Crepe Myrtle disciple had a face of innocence: “Liang Shishu, just what are you saying? I don’t understand.”

Liang Quan angrily said: “You still want to fool me? Miao Xiu is only at the ten Spirit springs level of cultivation, why would he be able to avoid

the consecutive four strikes of this young hero here? You seem to be scared, but your body techniques are extremely nimble. Each sword strike has no way of hurting you, Miao Xiu does not have this ability. You are not Miao Xiu....just who are you?"

Once these words were said, the entire four floor was shocked.

Countless gazes, focused on Miao Xiu's figure.

The people originally standing beside him, retreated like the tide with a crash, keeping their distance.

Miao Xu turned to look at his surroundings, then began giggling.

His voice had changed.

The low male voice, had turned into the charming voice of a girl.

The atmosphere was incomparably strange.

As this Miao Xiu was giggling, he grabbed at his own hair, and suddenly pulled. With a sound of something breaking apart, like fabric being torn apart, a shocking scene could be witnessed. One could see Miao Xiu tearing off his scalp and face, and along with that, all the surface skin of his entire body.....

It was as if he was taking off his clothes.

A piece of human skin was torn away.

And what was under the skin, was not bloody flesh, muscles and bone.

It was.....

A little girl that seemed to be around fifteen to sixteen years old.

A translucent and sparking girl, as if she was carved from jade. Like a little fairy that had descended into mortal lands.

This sweet and charming laugh, had namely come out from the mouth of the little girl who had large eyes, as clear and pure as the autumn waters.

"It's not fun, it was discovered by you guys....." As the Little girl took off the human skin of Miao Xiu, she unsheathed a toy like little short sword

and pointed it at Ye Qingyu. Panting with rage, her cheeks puffed up:  
“You bad person, to have uncovered my disguise. I need to kill you.....come  
over, you’re not allowed to dodge, I need to stab you!”

# Chapter 192: The reappearance of the Unmoving City of Darkness

This pure and innocent little girl, like a spoiled girl throwing tantrum, stabbed over with her sword. Everyone had a feeling of not knowing whether to laugh or cry, as if they really needed to willingly go over and let the young girl stab them to allow her to vent her anger.

In truth, the moment Miao Xiu had torn apart his human skin, even Ye Qingyu reckoned that a terrifying monster would appear similar to the blood flame demon bear and the snow white demon lizard.

But he did not imagine what jumped out was an eccentric little girl.

What kind of demon was she?

Ye Qingyu could not be sure.

“Evildoer, just where has junior brother Miao gone? Just what are you?” The [Flying Heaven Sword] Wei Tianming loudly shouted: “You must have killed junior brother Miao. Everyone go together, let’s slaughter this little demon.”

Seeing the demon monster was only a little girl, the men of the Jianghu were no longer that afraid.

“Tut tut, your junior brother Miao is a pervert. Originally I didn’t want to take his life, but who would have guessed that he would be so perverted, to dare harass me and say that he will rip my clothes apart. Therefore I killed him with one strike.” The little girl with large eyes laughed charmingly. “Such a person, even if he dies, he deserves it! Therefore I cut off his skin to play around with.”

As the words were said, the colours of all the faces of the Crepe Myrtle disciples changed slightly.

Just what kind of personality Miao Xiu had, they were extremely clear. He was definitely perverted. Seeing such a young girl carved like jade, and to have sneakily gone and harassed her, was definitely something he

could have done.

But Wei Tianming's face was red with indignation. Saying angrily: "Evildoer, to spout such lies. We, the Crepe Myrtle sect are a righteous sect, how could we do such thing? You are throwing mud on junior brother Miao Xiu's name, don't think you can leave today....."

"That's right, as a disciple of the Crepe Myrtle sect, how could they do such an act?"

"How can we believe in the words of an evildoer?"

"Kill her."

The surrounding people of the sects became disturbed, screaming for them to kill her. But no one dared to take a step forward.

Everyone's gaze focused on Ye Qingyu, hoping this white robed reaper of death would act.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He abruptly turned to look at Wei Tianming, and said in contempt: "Disciples of righteous sects, can perform no wrong? They must be saints?"

Wei Tianming would never have thought, that the white robed killing god would suddenly interrogate him like so. As he thought back to how he had continuously made things hard for this person, there was a hard to ignore fear in Wei Tianming's heart. He subconsciously took three or four steps backwards. Only after breathing in a mouthful of cold air into his chest, could it make his head function a little clearer. He said stutteringly: "Because.....the sects has rules.....us.....famous righteous sects will not do such evil acts, we....."

"Heh....."

Ye Qingyu let out an evident laugh of mockery.

"This is really a strange logic. Righteous sects, haha....." Ye Qingyu thought back to the Azure Phoenix pill king Chen Moyun of Azure Phoenix academy; he was also one of the righteous sects, enjoying the

title of a pill master of Snow Empire. But the person behind that facade, was as sinister as a jackal.

The faces of the disciples of the Crepe Myrtle instantly turned red like pig's blood.

There was a fiery feeling on their faces, as if they had been ferociously slapped on their faces.

But they did not dare argue back.

The middle aged Shishu Liang Quan also remained silent.

At this moment—

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Four figures, suddenly came flying in from the window Ye Qingyu had broken.

These were namely the four trusted soldiers following beside Liu Zongyuan.

The four people had rigid armour, wearing a black steel flat plate. From top to bottom, only their eyes were exposed to the outside. They had the stances of the armoured soldiers, and in their hands were the standard steel blades of the Youyan military. Made from the hands of a master, they were near Spirit weapons, incomparably sharp. In these steel blades there were blood rivulets with demon blood dripping. Evidently, they had just experienced a battle....

A metallic blood smell, arose involuntarily.

The figures of the four men formed a line behind Ye Qingyu.

“We greet Marquis Ye. Officer Liu has ordered us four to give our assistance to Marquis Ye.” The person who had acted to hurt Huang Ran said respectfully.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

From the window far off, one could faintly see, the experts of the demon race doing whatever they pleased. They were madly destroying, but the



experts of the army had already reacted. Ray after ray of yuan qi light pillars exploded out, like divine dragons soaring through the skies exploding upwards. Like the clap of thunder, they roared. The experts of the Vanguard, reacted at the first instant.

True top class experts, had not yet acted.

Evidently they had taken a lot into consideration. Before the true motives of the old demons of the [Southern Incline Legion] were made clear, the top level experts of the Vanguard remained silent. On one hand, it was to defend against the sudden appearance to the true experts of the demon race, and on the other hand these titled demon warriors that had appeared were not worth it for them to act. They naturally left it to martial experts at the level of the military warfare officers to handle!

Soldiers vs soldiers!

Warriors vs warriors!

Ye Qingyu's gaze looked away, turning to look at the innocent young girl in front of him. "Today you cannot escape. Submit and be captured, then I can give you a quick death."

He was able to sense that there was demonic qi within the body of this young girl.

And furthermore it was a demonic qi that was not in the slightest less than that of the two titled demon warriors, the blood flame demon bear or the snow white demon lizard.

Although he did not know exactly what she was, her outer appearance was extremely similar to a human. But who could know for sure, whether this was another human skin shell, and her original appearance was that of a ferocious and cruel demon monster.

He had seen too many scenes of the demon race slaughtering the human race. Ye Qingyu would not show any pity towards the demon race.

The four black armoured soldiers, came stealthily from all directions, surrounding this strange young girl.

But this young girl seemed not be afraid of this in the slightest.

She giggled coquettishly: “The old demons of the [Southern Incline Legion] really made their descendants and students come here to be cannon fodder. They does not care about this in the least. But the people of the Unmoving City of Darkness, are not so stupid. We are not prepared to go to our death so easily.....”

Saying this, the short sword in her hands, suddenly emitted a silver radiance. It completely enveloped her entire person inside.

“Not good, this evildoer is about to escape.....” Someone shouted.“

But Ye Qingyu was as if he was struck by lightning. He stood there stunned, remaining where he was.

There was an unprecedented light twinkling in his eyes. He stared at the young girl, and exclaimed in shock: “What did you say? The Unmoving City of Darkness? You are a person belonging to the unmoving city of darkness, you.....”

“Hehe, I’ll remember you. You’re interesting, I’ll come find you again.”

The young girl smiled charmingly, then the light surrounding flashed. She disappeared from where she was standing.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, wanted to make her stay behind. But it was already too late.

The charming laugh of the young girl reverberated throughout his ears.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu’s heart was in complete disorder and chaos.

Why was it the Unmoving City of Darkness?怎

At this moment, countless memories, appeared like a flood within Ye Qingyu’s mind.

He had no way of controlling himself, he recalled on what had happened when he was at White Deer academy. A clumsy and ditzy little loli calling him brother Qingyu. On the first morning of the academy, the little loli that had fallen over because her robe was this long. A person that trusted him unconditionally, a person that because she wanted to see

him in the disciplinary hall, had wasted her precious academy points.....

That girl called Song Xiaojun.

In Ye Qingyu's life, she was the girl that he worried over and showed the most affection for.

She was also a girl that Ye Qingyu swore he would find.

She was an extremely special person in his life.

A year had not passed since the female sword immortal Wang Jianru had brought the little loli who possessed the bloodline of darkness away from people who wanted to kill her. But Ye Qingyu already felt that as if countless years had passed. It was hard to describe just what sort of emotion Ye Qingyu felt for the little loli. But Ye Qingyu knew that in the silent night, when he had just finished cultivating, he would think about her.

It seemed to have become a type of obsession.

There was a devil in the heart of the martial way. Ye Qingyu's martial heart was the Asura Killing Heart, the devil in his heart should be related to the word killing.

But right now, the Song Xiaojun whose body flowed with the ancient bloodline of darkness, had become his obsession on his martial path.

Ye Qingyu originally thought that for a very long period of time, he would never hear of the names the Unmoving City of Darkness or the name of Song Xiaojun. But he had never thought that today he would hear the words Unmoving City of Darkness from such a clever and intelligent girl.

"Why has the Unmoving City of Darkness and the [Southern Incline Legion] of the demon race joined forces?"

"Was the Unmoving City of Darkness not a force that is not allowed to exist in this world by the human race as well as the demon race?"

"Just how is the little loli doing?"

"The bloodline of darkness in her body, has she completely merged with

it now?”

“What about Wang Jianru? That peerless female sword immortal, is she still protecting Song Xiaojun?”

Question after question madly sprouted from Ye Qingyu’s mind.

He stood there dumbly.

He did not know how long had past—

“Marquis Ye, Marquis Ye, are you okay? What should we do after this?” The young armoured soldier finally could bear the silence no longer, attempting to ask.

He had no way of understanding, why the decisive marquis Ye seemed to change into an entire different person after the little demon girl had said those words and left. It was as if he had lost his soul, standing there dumbly staring into nothing.

But this was not the time to be standing there staring blankly into space, therefore the young soldier attempted to break Ye Qingyu out of his daze.

“Ah?” Ye Qingyu turned to look at the young soldier. Shaking his head: “Mm, I’m fine.....”

Before he had finished, another abnormal change occurred.

Boom!

The entire [Breeze and Drizzle Building] began shaking and quivering fiercely.

The numerous formations madly flickered, the reinforcement formations activated to their maximum. But one could see with their own eyes, fracture after fracture still appearing on the walls.

A hard to describe power appeared outside the [Breeze and Drizzle Building] without any prior signs whatsoever.

In front of the force of this incredible power, the building known as the [Breeze and Drizzle Building] was like a broken bamboo building in a

violent storm. It shook and quivered, emitting creaking noises, giving a sense to people that it was going to collapse at any moment.....

“This building is about to collapse, quickly leave!”

Some people began losing their composure and started yelling.

# Chapter 193: The reappearance of Yan Buhui

Ye Qingyu finally recovered his state of mind.

His gaze swept over everyone on the fourth floor, his thoughts like lightning, and his figure flashed. In an instant he came to before the wall, punching out. There were the clear roars of a dragon's howl emitting from his bones and muscles, as if the power of a dragon or tiger had enhanced his body.....

Boom!

Half the wall completely exploded outwards.

Light that stung one's eyes surged out from the outside.

The people of the Jianghu dispersed, everyone of them escaping into the hole on the wall.

If not for Ye Qingyu' destroying a side of the wall, it was most likely that everyone would be trapped within the [Breeze and Drizzle Building] that was about to collapse.

Ye Qingyu did not regard these Jianghu people highly. However, he also did not want them to die here in this place just like that. He would not leave them alone.

Amidst a swathe of voices of panic and gratitude, Ye Qingyu stood at the opening, looking to the outside.

Thousands of metres away in the air, a familiar figure stood like a God or a Devil, towering above the clouds.

Within this apocalyptic pitch black aura fluctuating everywhere, the demonic qi that was like that of an ocean in the air emitted from his body. It completely shrouded the skies as it spread out, nearly covering the entire sky. It was unknown just how many miles it covered, one could not see the end of it. It was as if this world had entered into the apocalypse.

This terrifying demonic qi, was namely the reason for the collapse of the [Breeze and Drizzle Building].

Yan Buhui!

It was Yan Buhui!

Ye Qingyu's pupils' constricted.

Just how was this possible? The most evil person of this aura, would appear within Youyan Pass?

Ye Qingyu's shock was not little.

Was he crazy?

For Yan Buhui to have appeared in Youyan Pass. Was he not recovering from his wounds?

Did he recover so quickly?

Even if this peerless villain was at his full strength, unless his brain was retarded, or else he would not have come to Youyan Pass alone. This was like an old man eating poison, resenting the fact that his life was too long. Even if he was fiercer and stronger, such actions were not any different from suicide. Previously to kill him, the Youyan army had expended countless efforts of strategists to lay the trap, to make you come out. But they wasted their efforts and only heavily injured him.....

Who would have thought that the Yan Buhui who had only luckily escaped, would come back into the net of his own volition.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu thought he had mistaken this figure for another person.

He even rubbed his own eyes, carefully looking into the sky. The person standing alone on top of the clouds, like an apocalyptic Fiendgod, was namely the villain of this era, Yan Buhui.

"You are Ye Qingyu, the heroic Marquis Ye Qingyu of Youyan Pass?"

An extremely peculiar noise came from behind him.

It was Nan Hua.

This prideful and gorgeous female disciple of the Crepe Myrtle did not pay attention to the Fiendgod like figure outside. She did not pay attention to her comrades fleeing like beasts and birds, and she even did not hear the shout of her Shishu Liang Quan. She just suddenly shouted in a tone of enlightenment. It was unknown whether she was happily surprised or disappointed.

Ye Qingyu turned to give her a glance.

In reality, he did not have a shred of goodwill to this charming Crepe Myrtle sect disciple.

For such a girl skilled in manipulation, one could tell with one glance that she was a clever character. The exclamation of surprise right now, contained a preplanned sensation that made Ye Qingyu instinctively uncomfortable. The less he interacted with such a character, the better.

But Nan Hua's exclamation of surprise, still attracted the attention of the JiangHu people on the fourth floor.

The gazes looking at Ye Qingyu instantly transformed.

"So that White robed youth, was Ye Qingyu!"

"He is the youngest marquis in the history of the Empire who received his title through his own achievements."

"In this period of time, the rumours of the Empire have fluctuated. The young man that has caused the entire Jianghu to discuss him, is him?"

"No wonder!"

"His fame is not in vain. He really has the requirements to be proud."

"He was that battle hero? He is not an easy character to handle....."

Different kinds of thinking, floated from the hearts of different people.

Wei Tianming at this time had fallen into an extreme state of fear and trepidation.

He finally understood, the white robed person that he thought was beneath him, the person he provoked and targeted, just what his identity



was. Thinking back to his extremely overbearing actions, the conflict at the [White Jade Stairs] and even ordering someone over to incite trouble at the fourth floor.....this entire process, was like a dog using every method to want to humiliate a fierce tiger. It was utterly seeking its own humiliation.

Thinking back right now, if Ye Qingyu really wanted to slaughter himself, it was only the effort of raising a hand.

And even if he died, it was likely that the Crepe Myrtle sect would not do anything for him. They would not go against a rising star of the Empire that was so popular it was burning just for him.

Thinking to here, the sweat of the [Flying Heaven Sword] Wei Tianming was like rain. His back was completely drenched. A hard to describe fear enveloped him; it was like the hands of the reaper was grasping his heart. He soundlessly retreated, hiding behind the backs of Liang Quan Shishu as well as the other disciples of the Crepe Myrtle sect, afraid that he would attract Ye Qingyu's notice.

As for the other Crepe Myrtle sect disciples, they all completely shut their mouths.

Even the Liang Quan who had experienced and seen many things, had a face of shock, an expression of enlightenment.

"Marquis Ye, it was really you." Nan Hua had a face of worship, her entire person seeming to emit a hard to describe charming light. It seemed like a young girl encountering the prince on white horse of her dreams. Such a gorgeous face, made any male have a type of instinctive action to rush out and protect her.

But Ye Qingyu was not a normal man.

He had seen many beautiful girls; such as Jiang Xiaohan, such as Bai Yuqing, such as Song Xiaojun, such as the strange and clever girl of the demon race. For Ye Qingyu's perspective, if he just casually chose any from among them, they would be even more stunning than Nan Hua after they had grown and matured.

Therefore he only turned his head to calmly look at Nan Hua, then coldly looked away.

Nan Hua's expression changed.

This was like fiercely punching empty air, with nothing she could latch onto to exert force. It made her feel hurt, as well as somewhat angry.

The situation was different from her imagination.

Just what was wrong with this Ye Qingyu?

Could it be that he did not like women?

Her performance had been very obvious.

Could it be that he was a martial lunatic, a wooden lump that was completely insensitive?

Nan Hua was about to make her own actions even more obvious.....

But Ye Qingyu's figure had already flashed, disappearing from where he was.

He transformed into a ray of light, directly flying out of the [Breeze and Drizzle Buidling].

"Go notify officer Liu and officer Wen, to tell them to quickly return. There has been a change in the situation." Ye Qingyu's voice came from the outside. His figure already could not be seen.

These words, were said to the four armoured soldiers.

The four armoured soldiers figures also flickered, and the sound of them tearing through the air could be heard. They rushed out from the [Breeze and Drizzle Buidling], acting according to Ye Qingyu's instructions to find Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan.

Nan Hua's pink lips that were open, were frozen in midair.

"You.....this .....Hmph!"

Seeing Ye Qingyu's disappearing figure, Nan Hua hatefully and angrily snorted, then ferociously stamped on the ground.

Which man did not like women?

She did not believe, he could escape from her palm.

Nan Hua fiercely grinded her teeth. She decided after she had obtained and captured Ye Qingyu's heart, she would viciously torture and play with him. Hmph, he was only a tiny little Marquis, just what was so good about him.....

"Let's quickly leave from here!"

The shout of Liang Quan awakened the surrounding Crepe Myrtle sect disciples.

From just one glance, one could discern the demonic male far off was a top level expert. Just solely the demonic qi fluctuation emitted by him was enough to make normal martial experts suffocate. Evidently the battle between top level experts was about to explode. The [Breeze and Drizzle Building] was at the center of the battlefield, it was really far too dangerous.

This crowd of people in a sorry state left in a state of fear and fright.

.....

.....

Ye Qingyu landed on the ground the moment he flew out from the [Breeze and Drizzle Building].

Using the constantly falling walls and the dust soaring into the skies as cover, he constantly changed his position, observing the battles surrounding him. The twenty to thirty titled demon warriors that had appeared in the beginning had already fallen by half. Those who were still stubbornly enduring, were the old famous titled demon warriors. There were many hidden aces up their sleeves, so even under the combined attack of the experts of the Vanguard, they still had the ability to resist.

Voice after voice of alarm and alert sounded throughout Youyan Pass.

Countless formation lights flickered through the air. All sorts of

restrictions and formations in the city, were continuously activated.

At the same time, there were endless formation airships converging to this spot. They were like black sharks swimming through the air, the light of the formation cannons constantly gathering. Large and small yuan qi energy of different attributes flashed throughout the sky, as if they were stars twinkling in the daytime.

The reaction of the Youyan army, could be said to be decisive.

One could see the experts of the demon race including Yan Buhui, were completely surrounded at the center from top, left, right and bottom.

The battle also began to die down.

The experts of the army gradually stepped aside.

The titled demon warriors also gradually neared Yan Buhui.

Ever since Yan Buhui had appeared, such a level of battle was no longer needed.

What truly decided the fates of both parties, was the exchange of blow between the top class experts.

On the ground.

Ye Qingyu had completely hidden away his aura, controlling the yuan qi in his body. Using the purest physical power of his body, he pierced through alley after alley, nearing the direction that Yan Buhui was in.

Doing it like so, would avoid Yan Buhui's notice to the greatest extent.

"For Yan Buhui to have appeared, just what is his motive?"

His heart was extremely nervous.

What made Ye Qingyu even more worried, was that there was a terrifying premonition in his heart.

The appearance of Yan Buhui, perhaps had something to do with the Unmoving City of Darkness.

If it was really so that the power of the Unmoving City of Darkness had also participated in this matter, then would the little loli Song Xiaojun

also appear? Wang Jianru had once said, that Song Xiaojun had the bloodline of the Unmoving City of Darkness within her, that she would sooner or later enter the Unmoving City of Darkness. For the Unmoving City of Darkness that had disappeared for many years, for it to appear today, it was hard to say there was not the factor of Song Xiaojun behind it.

At this time, Xiaojun should have completely lost all her memories?

This made Ye Qingyu's heart slightly hurt.

If they met again today, would the little loli who liked to hold his sleeve and call him brother Qingyu, still recognise himself?

If she really stood at the side of the demon race and acted to aid Yan Buhui.....

Ye Qingyu could not dare to imagine, just what should he do if such a thing happened?

Should he helped Lu Zhaoge handle Yan Buhui, or aid the little loli to fight against the Youyan army?

And just when Ye Qingyu was finally approaching just below Yan Buhui, and hid behind a collapse building to observe in detail, the Yan Buhui that had always remained silent within the air finally opened his mouth to speak.

# Chapter 194: Invincible

“Lu Zhaoge, didn’t you want to kill me? I’ve come, why have you still not come out?”

Yan Buhui words were like he was reuniting with an old friend.

His voice was like a Fiendgod singing, reverberating throughout the air, travelling through the entire Youyan Pass. Countless civilians, at this moment clearly heard the provocation of the great villain of this age towards the War god of Youyan Pass.

Two rays of light, shot out from the collapsed structure of the [Breeze and Drizzle Building].

It was the commander of the vanguard, Liu Siufeng.

The other figure was another figure that was similarly smiling, and was a taller than Liu Siufeng by a head. His figure was thin, and the wide robe drifted about his body. From far away, he seemed like a bamboo wearing a piece of clothing. The lower part of the robe flapped about as if there was nothing there at all. This man had a horse shaped face with a broad mouth, possessing tangerine orange short hair. His two eyebrows were extremely peculiar, the two eyebrows growing very near the centre of his forehead. It was extremely clustered at the end of his two eyebrows, causing them to droop down, like two blades were hanging from his face.

This was the commander of the Right Camp Peng Yizhen.

He was one of the six great figures of Youyan Pass.

He was the person that Liu Siufeng said he had a meeting with.

The two figures soared into the skies, standing above the clouds, facing the Yan Buhui far off.

“The power of that villain, has gotten so strong?” There was surprise on Liu Siufeng’s face.

When he had betrayed and left the Youyan army, Yan Buhui was only at the forty spirit springs stage. After leaving for a year, he reached

the seventy Spirit springs. In three years, he reached the eighty sixth Spirit spring stage, and in the fourth year he had reached the Bitter Sea stage. In these years, the growth of Yan Buhui's stage was shocking, but it largely still remained within the early stages of the Bitter Sea stage.

Even if just accounting one month ago, in the encirclement and assassination operation, the strength Yan Buhui exhibited was not as strong as it was today. If Yan Buhui really had such strength, then at that time he would not have been so heavily injured. He had nearly perished.

But two months had not yet passed, but Yan Buhui's strength had risen to the middle stages of the Bitter Sea stage. This was completely unprecedentedunprecedented.

Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen were similarly of the Bitter Sea stage in terms of cultivation. But facing Yan Buhui right now, they still felt spells of suffocation. They were able to sense that the aura of the opposing party, was as deep and as unfathomable as the ocean, like a divine mountain that they could not climb over, a. As if the enemy could crush and destroy them at any moment. At this moment, these two top class experts did not dare strike out.

"Could it be that this villain has used some secret technique or weapon?" Peng Yizhen's blade like eyebrow moved, his expression unprecedentedly serious.

On the ground,.

Ye Qingyu's gaze left the three great experts.

He constantly searched around on the ground, attempting to find any traces of the little loli Song Xiaojun.

A premonition that was clearer and clearer, caused Ye Qingyu to nearly suffocate.

He could nearly be sure, that the little loli was definitely hiding at some place.

The power of the Unmoving City of Darkness, had absolutely already descended at Youyan Pass.

“Little girl, little girl, if you’re really here, you must not come out.....”

Ye Qingyu prayed in his heart.

However no matter how much he searched, he could not find any traces of the little loli.

As for the previous young girl wearing a short dress and holding the little dagger, there were also no signs of her.

In the skies.

“Old man Lu, if you still don’t appear, are you not afraid I’ll kill off all your lackeys?”

Like a Fiendgod standing alone in the skies, Yan Buhui’s voice thundered throughout the skies. Not seeing the appearance of Lu Zhaoge for such a long time, he had finally gotten a little irritated. He slowly lifted his hand, and gradually began to exhibit his pressure to crush everything in front of him.

Following along with his movement, the surging demonic qi that was like the ocean behind him, also began acting violently.

A gigantic palm made from demonic qi, began to be born that shrouded the skies, heading forward to crush all in its path.

Immediately the clouds and wind were moved.

The yuan qi of heaven and earth intersected in disorder.

The cloud of the skies were blown everywhere.

An indescribable terrifying force, headed crushingly towards Liu Zongyuan and Peng Yizhen. This demonic palm was thousands of metres wide, as if a legendary Fiendgod beast had broken apart space and time and descended. The entire Youyan Mountain range, began quivering at this moment.....

On the ground.

Ye Qingyu’s found it hard to even breathe.

He felt that of this moment, he was like a toad being pressed beneath a



mountain. The houses and structures that stilled remained intact were also affected. One after another, they fell into pieces. Even if Ye Qingyu utilised his entire strength, his entire person was deeply sunken into the ground, being pressed down by an entire metre.....

Was this the power of the Bitter Sea stage?

Ye Qingyu's heart was utterly stunned.

This was not a power a mortal should be able to possess. It was completely like a deity.

Ye Qingyu when he killed both the blood flame demon bear and the snow white demon lizard, was calm and elegant. But right now, just facing the residual forces of the gigantic demonic palm in the skies, he had already lost all his battle power. He bitterly struggled to resist against this force.....

In his body, the twenty Spirit springs began to boil. The Supreme ice flame began flickering more and more rapidly.

The power of his inner yuan that he had bitterly suppressed was about to surge and explode after receiving the stimulus from this external pressure.

“Die.....”

Ye Qingyu swore, biting apart his lips, forcefully suppressing his inner yuan.

This was a moment of life and death. Once his inner yuan activated, the Yan Buhui in the sky would definitely notice. This villain was exceedingly sensitive to his own aura. At that time, even if he were to abandon the maps, he still wanted to make him stay behind and kill him. If he were discovered by Yan Buhui right now, he could annihilate him with just a snap of his finger.

Ye Qingyu continued to do his utmost to forcibly suppress the yuan qi in his body. It gradually settled down.

But within the skies, the situation of Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen was

not as good as Ye Qingyu's.

“Ai.....”

“What type of power is this?”

When the gigantic demonic qi palm had not yet pressed against them, the two great experts had activated their yuan qi to obstruct it. They discovered that this unstoppable force was not something that could be obstructed through the power of man. They felt an acute pain in their chests and their wrists as if it had snapped. They spat out a jet of fresh blood, their bodies flying backwards.

The two top experts were indescribably shocked.

Comparing cultivation and battle power, even if two months ago they could not have defeated Yan Buhui, but any one of them could fight against Yan Buhui for over a thousand moves without being defeated. Right now, even with the strength of the two combined, they were heavily injured with one move.....

Just what kind of power was this?

Just solely from the residual waves alone. The gigantic palm had not yet truly descended upon them, but the two were already heavily injured?

Peng Yizhen and Liu Siufeng let out a roar of rage, their yuan qi activated to the extreme. Golden radiance completely covered their bodies, and line after line of golden light exploded from their bodies. It was as if two little golden suns had appeared in the air.....

They nearly completely expended their entire strength to stabilise within the air after being sent shuddering backwards hundreds of metres.

The tide of battle was evident.

The two great figures, were absolutely not the opponents of Yan Buhui.

“Hahahaha.....”

Yan Buhui let out a long laugh to the skies.

Everywhere the gigantic demonic qi palm passed by, the air vibrated, as

if it was about to tear apart space itself.

The surrounding formation airships also began to quiver and tremble. Especially the tens of ships at the very front, were like little rafts dragged into a whirlpool in the great ocean. They had no way to be controlled, and were dragged along by the terrifying air currents. The air could not help but rotate, and the ships inside flickered rapidly with formation arrays, that let out a frightful explosion. The formations had no way to withstand the pressure of the gigantic demonic qi palm, and exploded.

The airships that had lost the formations to act as their energy source, were like kites that had their string cut. They fell from within the air.....

Ye Qingyu risked his life to crawl from a pit in the ground, looking up towards the skies. Lying in rubble, he saw everything that had happened in the skies.

Such a scene was too ridiculous and unbelievable. Facing this Yan Buhui who was like a Fiendgod, the countless battleships, and experts of Youyan army were like a group of ants surrounding a massive dragon.

“The effect of a top class expert, is it really so frightful?”

Ye Qingyu sighed with emotion.

Not long ago, he felt what decided victory and loss in battle was strategy, military power, formations, resources etc. But seeing the Yan Buhui ruling over all, such a preconception was completely broken.

The Youyan Pass that had been carefully cultivated by the Empire, having a reputation of being invulnerable to attack. But it had been invaded sneakily by Yan Buhui. And he had appeared with great fanfare. It seemed that there was no power that could defeat him.

In the skies.

Yan Buhui was like the master who overlooked every little being struggling in the mortal world.

“Hahaha.....Lu Zhaoge, if you still don't dare come out to see me, then I'll completely slaughter your fangs and claw. Haha.....” Yan Buhui said

this and within the air, the gigantic demonic qi palm increased its speed. Like the clouds overtaking the moon, it headed towards the direction of Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen, completely destroying everything in its path.

At this moment, the faces of the two great figures of Youyan Pass completely changed.

Facing such a power, they completelycompelthey could not block it.

Seeing the huge palm was already in front of their eyes, both of them wanted to flee. But they were locked down by a terrifying qi, their flesh not able to move in the slightest. They felt an acute pain everywhere around their body, as if they were about to transform into powder.....

At this instant, within Youyan Pass, the faces of countless people went pale.

The Liu Zongyuan, Wen Wan and the military warfare officers hiding far off, roared with rage, wanting to rush out and save them.....

And it was also at this instant--

Xiu!

A sword light cutting everything from the direction of the residence of the Pass Lord far off appeared.

A golden sword light.

Cutting through everywhere it passed.

The sword light was like lightning, piercing through the gigantic demonic qi palm, like a whale sucking water. It completely dispersed this gigantic demonic palm.

Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen rapidly retreated.

Within the skies, from the ground, from all directions, the entire Youyan Pass exploded with mad screams and cheers.

Every soldier and civilian screamed and shouted with excitement.

Such shouts and cheers were like an avalanche, like a tsunami, like the clap of thunder, like a divine song. There was a divine power that began

to emanate from Youyan Pass.

The originally tragic atmosphere was completely swept away.

Because all those who had lived for more than a year at Youyan Pass, at the moment when they saw that sword light, they would abandon all their fears and worries. They would forget all their suffering and danger, because they understood, just what that golden sword light represented. Its meaning was --

[War God of Youyan Pass], Lu Zhaoge.

A living legend of the empire that belonged to this era.

An invincible human legend.

After remaining silent for approximately fifteen minutes time, the deity of Youyan Pass finally acted.

This was the first time Ye Qingyu had seen Lu Zhaoge act.

This sword light, apart from being piercing to the eyes, one could not sense any other energy or fluctuation. But it was through this that the gigantic demonic qi palm was cut apart. The intricacies and profoundness of the martial way contained within that strike could not be understood at all with Ye Qingyu's current level of cultivation and experience.

# Chapter 195: Perhaps it was I who was wrong

But it was such a seemingly normal and ordinary sword light, that cut apart the gigantic demonic qi palm of Yan Buhui that had completely shook the heavens.

Once this sword light appeared, the eyes of everyone in Youyan Pass immediately became bright and beautiful.

And the formation airships that had been shaken to disorder from the leftover vibrations of the demonic palm, gradually began to steady their footing. Under the orders of some officers, they rapidly retreated in order.....

And those formation airships that had fallen, was able to receive assistance of others at the first instant.

Within the air.

Yan Buhui did not strike out towards the weaklings again.

He looked at the far off Residence of the Pass Lord, a strange smile appearing on his face: "Haha, Old man Lu, you've finally acted? I thought you were so scared that you had pissed your pants, haha....."

Within his words, there was a heavy mocking and provocative tone.

This was the first time in eleven years, that there was someone who used such a tone to speak to the War God of Youyan Pass above the air of Youyan Pass.

At this instant, from top to bottom, it was unknown how many people went to a berserk state at Youyan Pass. They hated they could not rush over, and bite this lunatic who had insulted the deity of Youyan Pass to death, bite by bite, crushing him into smithereens.

At this moment, everyone awaited the arrival of the Deity of Youyan, for him to slaughter this villain.

But only a long sigh sounded between Heaven and Earth.

.....

.....

“Is this the power of the military of Youyan?”

Approximately five or six thousand metres away from the main battlefield, atop a collapsed rubble of a high building, the Crepe Myrtle sect disciple Wei Tianming had large and wide eyes.

The junior and senior brothers behind him were similarly dumbfounded.

The Shishu Liang Quan who had lost one of his limbs, sat on a boulder with a pale yellow face.

He had already bandaged his wounds.

For a expert at the Spirit stage, losing an arm was rather serious. Only experts of the Bitter Sea stage could regrow their limbs, while experts at the Spirit spring stage can only at the most reconnect their limbs. But the arm that Liang quan had cut off himself, had already turned into pus by the the venom of the Snow White Demon lizard. It was impossible to retrieve.

The best result, was to find a formation metal master, and ask him to construct a metallic arm.

But a metallic arm would never be as nimble and as flexible as flesh and blood.

An incomplete body was a very misfortunate issue for martial artists. This represented that it would become extremely difficult for them to take a further step forwards, their martial path would become greatly obstructed. To want to pry into the heavenly way with an incomplete body was far more difficult than with a completely body.

Therefore at this time, Lliang Quan’s mood was not that good.

But he was still attracted by the battle in the skies that was like a legendary battle between a God and a Devil.

The Crepe Myrtle sect was the top sect within Snow Empire, and there

were many top level experts with the sect. But after reaching such a realm, these experts would focus on cultivating their mental state, and would not normally act. Therefore, even as the elder of the outer sect, and being in the Crepe Myrtle sect for over thirty years, Liang Quan had never seen a battle at this level before.

“In these years, it is not for no reason that the sects are suppressed and controlled by the Empire. Not mentioning others, just solely the two commanders of the two great camps, is in reality extremely terrifying existences. Within the Crepe Myrtle sect, perhaps there are only core elders or perhaps several exceptional of the young generation that would be their opponents. At this time, they are only suppressed utterly by the demonic villain, so they did not demonstrate their strength fully....”

Liang Quan speculated in his heart.

And as for the realm the Military god of Youyan Pass had demonstrated with that sword strike just now, it was already not something that he could estimate at.

Within the tens of thousands people in the Crepe Myrtle sect, there were barely anyone at all who had reached such a realm.

“The machine of the Empire really is the machine of the Empire. Once it begins to move, it is intricate and terrifying.....The foundations of the sects is older than the Empire, but comparing efficiency, organisational power, human and financial resources, there is still too large a gap.” Liang Quan pondered. Looking at the dumbfounded disciples far off, he lightly shook his head.

This generation of disciples, had been nearly completely spoiled by the sects.

They had never experienced any great suffering. Normally, all they heard were the praises concerning the Crepe Myrtle sect. When they travelled around the Jianghu, as long as they announced the name of the Crepe Myrtle sect, everyone would compliment them. They would absolutely not go against these disciples in an obvious fashion. As time passed on, they really began to believe that the Crepe Myrtle was



invincible. Adding to this, the allowances made by the Empire towards the sects, caused the disciples of the sects to really think of themselves as the favoured children of heaven.

If it were a peaceful era, there was not anything bad with such an attitude.

But Liang Quan could already faintly sense, that tempestuous times were about to descend upon them.

With his status and power, he already had such a premonition. As for the high elders and the sect master of the Crepe Myrtle sect, they were known to be able to pry into Heaven's will, surveying the entire world. Naturally, they should have long noticed this, and made their own arrangements.

This time, the sect ordered him to bring these little fellows to answer the summons of the Empire and reinforce Youyan Pass. Perhaps this was one of their strategies.

But....

Liang Quan shook his head.

To rely on these little fellows, these flower buds in the greenhouse, just what use could they be?

Liang Quan's mind flash back to the meaningful words said by the disciplinary hall elder before leaving the sect. He still could not grasp the meaning behind these words.

As he was about to close his eyes and treat his injuries, he suddenly felt a heat at his chest.

Liang Quan was surprised, flipping his palm over. From his chest, he uncovered a dim red jade annulus.

There were five distinct brilliant patterns on the jade annulus, but a line of clustered character flashed by and disappeared.

"En? Li Qiushu is coming to Youyan Pass?"

Seeing the contents, Liang Quan was greatly shocked.

Li Qiushiu was one of the top three young talents of the Crepe Myrtle sect, known as the [Breaking heaven sword]. Ten years ago, he had long been recognised as one of peerless geniuses that could take over the position of the leader of the Crepe Myrtle sect. His strength was unfathomable; even in the world of sects within the Empire, he could be ranked in the top ten of prodigies. He had always remained in isolated training, for him to come to Youyan Pass now?

“The situation is becoming more and more splendid.....”

Liang Quan sighed in his heart.

Looking at the time, there was most likely only another four hours before the young leader of the Crepe Myrtle sect was going to arrive.

.....

.....

“Ai.....”

From the direction of the Pass Lord Residence, there was a long sign emitting.

The voice sounded.

The deity of the Youyan army, Lu Zhaoge, had already arrived before Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen.

No one was able to see clearly just how he had arrived.

It was as if he was there from the start to the beginning.

At this time, there were countless worshipping eyes that turned to look at the deity of the Youyan army. It was as if the most religious fanatics were regarding their religious leader. The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth, also began swirling and rotating around him.

Lu Zhaoge, a legend.

A legend that had created countless stories and fables.

There were countless versions about Lu Zhaoge's appearance and manner. Some people said he was as muscular and as strong as a

Heavenly God, some people said he was as elegant as jade, a dainty scholar. Some people said he had three heads and six arms, with the body of a god. Some even said he was a peerless beautiful woman.....

But in truth, he was only a very common and normal old man.

Coarse woven roben, ash grey white hair. He was not tall, his back somewhat bent with a common looking face.

This was Lu Zhaoge.

But it was such a face, that when he stood in front of Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen in the air, he was was like a mountain that could never be mounted. He gave off an indescribable sense of safety.

The Yan Buhui who's qi surged throughout the skies, could not help but remain silent the moment he saw Lu Zhaoge.

When the sigh resounded throughout Heaven and Earth, it seemed to have made everyone immerse themselves into sorrow and regret. There was a power that affected everyone's emotions. It caused this slice of the world, to remain silent for a brief moment.

The pupils of Lu Zhaoge were like the deep ocean. It had a power that sucked one's souls in, flickering with an old and wise light.

"Why must you come?" Looking at Yan Buhui, Lu Zhaoge let out another long sigh.

Yan Buhui suddenly fiercely broke out of his daze, his mouth curling into a cold smile: "What do you think? Hahaha, of course I came.....to kill you."

"You should not have come." Lu Zhaoge said calmly. "You have only came here to die."

"Haha, using such a tone, could I understand it as that you are worried about me?" Yan Buhui began laughing in disdain: "A month ago, the person who had painstakingly planned to kill me was you. And today, the person that tells me I should not have come is you. Old man Lu, after so many years are so passed, you are still so hypocritical. You're so pitifully

artificial.”

As these words were said, there were faces of rage on the top level experts of Liu Siufeng, Peng Yizhen and the others.

There had never been anyone, who dared to be so disrespectful towards the deity of Youyan Pass.

Bt Lu Zhaoge’s expression did not have any major change: “You should know, that the only reason you were able to escape from the assassination last time, was because I showed mercy.”

Before had finished.

The expressions of everyone transformed.

What?

Lord Lu, had showed mercy in the last encounter?

On the ground.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was surprised at hearing these words.

The painstaking plan that the army had spent countless days planning, expending the efforts of countless people, had been created so that they could kill Yan Buhui in one strike. But for Lu Zhaoge to personally admit, that the reason the plan failed last time, was not because a problem had occurred within the plan itself. It was only him, the person that was supposed to complete the mission, had showed mercy at the crucial moment.....

This, was completley somewhat ridiculous.

If this matter was placed on the body of anyone else, there would instantly be an accusation of a traitor of the county placed on them. An accusation that they could never overturn.

But after all, the person who said these words were Lu Zhaoge.

Although the facial expressions of everyone changed, there would absolutely be no one who would say anything.

Since Lu Zhaoge had the confidence to say these words, he utterly was

not afraid that someone would utilise this matter to target him.

“Hmph, really? Showed mercy?” Yan Buhui sneered. “The cold blooded you, weren’t you always known for caring about the greater good? Only by killing me, could the greater good benefit. Then why did you show mercy? What, are you feeling guilty?”

Hearing these words, the face of Lu Zhaoge that had remained calm, finally showed a trace of suffering that flashed by.

He had evidently remembered something.

“That’s right, it’s guilt.” Lu Zhaoge nodded his head, honestly admitting. “The matters that happened in the past, perhaps I really was the one who was wrong.”

Yan Buhui was somewhat taken aback after hearing these words.

The expression of this villain of the generation seemed to soften somewhat. But immediately, it was replaced by a chilling and sinister colour. He madly chuckled: “Hahaha, really? Perhaps.....although, you’ve added the words ‘perhaps’, but at least it sounds like something a human would say. But saying these words today, do you not feel like it is too late? When A’Heng had died, what did you say then? What’s the use of saying such words now? Even until today, I still remember your cold blooded face. At that time, I swore, even if I expended my entire life, I would kill you.....”

There was a hatred that was buried deeply into his marrows exhibited through these words.

Even though they were very far apart but Ye Qingyu could sense the rage and despair within Yan Buhui’s heart.

Just what had happened in the past?

The story of Yan Buhui seemed to be even more intricate and mysterious than what Mister Liu had described.

Could it be that Lu Zhaoge had wronged Yan Buhui in the past somehow?

Ye Qingyu could sense the incongruencies, but he was still completely clueless.

# Chapter 196: Have you seen my little bear?

After Yan Buhui had finished saying such words, he did not say anything more.

He originally had a cold stance high up in the air, distantly surveying the entire mortal world. But he could not maintain this posture any longer. This cold posture transformed into an unsuppressed rage, and the ocean like demonic qi that completely covered the skies behind his back, began violently surging. This roar of yuan qi was like a tsunami, emitting a sound of rage.

It seemed Yan Buhui had decided to act.

“My vast will like the ocean, Sky demon judges the world.....Lu Zhaoge, prepare to die!”

The skies filled with hatred transformed into a bellow of rage. In but a moment's time, Yan Buhui consecutively struck out six times.

Demon waves surged over the demonic qi ocean that floated above his head. There were six massive palms that coalesced, that rumbled crushingly towards Lu Zhaoge.

Between Heaven and earth, there was instantly a vortex of turbulent airstreams.

The air currents madly rotated within the air, causing a hurricane to form, as if a vicious dragon was slicing apart heaven and earth.

Under the pressure of such a terrifying force, it was as if Youyan Pass was about to be crushed apart by this frightening power.

Previously when Yan Buhui had acted, he had only used one gigantic demonic qi palm. That was already like the apocalypse. Right now, he instantly used six demonic palms all at once. The power of this could not be imagined. Both Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen were overwhelmed with horror; if they faced such power, wouldn't they instantly be crushed into pieces?

Previously, Yan Buhui did not even exhibit his true strength.

In this instant, within a thousand metres, countless experts were blown backwards by the residual forces of the hurricane in the air. They found it very difficult to open their eyes, struggling to breathe and could not even emit a single sound.

There was only Lu Zhaoge left that still stood silently in the air alone.

There was a hurricane wind around him, but his robe had never been affected by the wind.

“A power that does not belong to you, has no way of ever hurting me.” The old head of the God of Youyan Army shook. He slowly lifted his left hand, his fingers slightly bending, as if it was the claw of a divine dragon that slowly extended inch by inch.

This movement looked to be extremely simple.

But Lu Zhaoge's palm was like a claw, and the rhythm in which he extended his hand out was particularly special. Every part of his movement was extremely gradual, as if this hand was causing the entire world to rotate.

It was extremely slow, but also extremely fast.

After stretching out an inch, the palm suddenly fiercely swiped through the air.

“Scatter!”

Lu Zhaoge lightly spoke a word into the air.

There was not the slightest energy fluctuation.

But at that moment, the six gigantic demonic qi palms that were only ten metres away from Lu Zhaoge and was about to crush him seemed to be seized by some sort of power and crushed apart. Like an invisible divine wind had blown it apart, this apocalyptic demonic palm dispersed like an illusion in the fog, turning into wisps of smoke with a rumble.....

The pressure disappeared between Heaven and Earth.

The hurricane dispersed.



And the six demonic Fiendgod palms were as if it was just an illusion that had disappeared.

Everything, returned to normal.

Far off.

“The fourth word of the seven true words?”

From far away, there was a hint of surprise on Yan Buhui’s face.

But very quickly, he recovered back to normal. He laughed in an arrogant manner: “Fate comes, fate scatters, fate is water.....The seven true words of the [Emotionless Heart Sutra]. For you to have cultivated to the fourth word [Scatter]. Haha, old man Lu, if you want to cut off all your emotions, why don’t you just die early, what’s the point of living? As long as one is alive, can one truly cut apart their seven emotions and six desires?”

Lu Zhaoge sighed again and shook his head. “One cannot.”

“Hahaha, so even you know it’s impossible.” Yan Buhui sneered in disdain. “Since even you know it’s impossible, then your [Emotionless Heart Sutra] will never be cultivated to a perfect state. Your martial way, will forever have a flaw. Even if your martial power is peerless, in the end you will suffer the heart demon of your emotionless sutra. You will fall into hell, eternally suffering.”

“And what about you?” In the eyes of Lu Zhaoge, there was pity and sorrow. He asked a question instead. “Your [Sky Demon Passion Sutra], can it ever be cultivated to a perfect state? Although you have not cut apart all your emotions, but you have been completely enveloped by hatred. In reality, you have even cut apart your emotions even more fully than me. Only hatred remains from your seven emotions and six desires; how can you have a myriad of emotions?”

Yan Buhui laughed loudly upon hearing this. “Who says I only have hate? Old man Lu, a cold blooded animal like you, will never understand, just where does hatred originate from. There is no benefits to talking. Die!”

Before he'd finished.

He took a step forward, the demonic qi around his body surging.

The ocean of demon qi floating behind him, once again began violently bubbling.

This time, what appeared was not a palm conjured from demonic qi. But there was a sky demon figure that was thousands of metres tall conjured. First it was the head, then it was the shoulders and arms, then the torso and ankle and foot.....A time and space demon spirit that seemed to have escaped from the desolate era, this unbelievable towering figure, appeared between Heaven and Earth.

This space and time demon spirit was behind Yan Buhui.

Both its legs towered in mid air, with mist curling around its abdomen. Its head was nearly higher than the ninth heaven.

This was a true gigantic space time sky demon spirit.

It caused one to feel fear just from looking at it.

“Hahaha.....although it has been said that being passionate will lead to hate. But those who cut off their emotions are even lower than dogs and pigs. Only dead people, can be emotionless. Let's decide the victor, and end everything here today.” Yan Buhui's figure, amidst his laughter, slowly floated.

In the blink of an eye, he had soared thousands of metres, coming to the head of the space time demon spirit.

Then his body gradually retreated backwards, opening up both his arms, a bizarre smile on his face. His person seemed to dissolve into the ice and snow, immersing himself into the head of the space time sky demon spirit.

“Hou!”

The originally silent sky demon spirit, suddenly seemed as if it was alive.

The two red vicious light suddenly emitted from its pupils, like bolts of

lightning from a thunderstorm. It pierced through layer after layer of air, directly striking to kill towards Lu Zhaoge, bringing with it a hard to describe killing intent. Death and bloodiness, as if these were two blood spirit arrows that had shot out from hell itself.

The killing strike arrived.

Lu Zhaoge lifted his head to look.

In front of the space time sky demon spirit, it was as if everything were ants.

But he did not make the slightest movement.

When these two blood red death light entered ten metres away from his body, it was suddenly blocked by an invisible energy. The red rays of the light scattered everywhere, but ultimately were not able to press forward any longer.

“Let me see just how long you can block this for.”

The space time sky demon spirit opened its mouth, but it was Yan Buhui’s voice that came out.

This gigantic figure descended, punching out. There were sparks caused in the air through the friction, demonic qi and flames intersecting with each other. Half the sky was engulfed in a calamity, and a punch like a mountain burning with a black flame crushed downwards.

Lu Zhaoge still did not move in the least.

Boom!

This flaming demonic fist came to ten metres before the god of the Youyan army and was once again blocked by the invisible energy.

This space time sky demon spirit was as if it was a shattered boulder. With a bang it cracked into pieces, the fingres, joints and bone scattering everywhere into the sky.

In this instant, it was unknown whether it was just a mistaken sensation, but everyone including Ye Qingyu, felt as if this world was acutely shaking. Everything in their vision was quaking, but there was no

energy fluctuation whatsoever.....

“The turtle shell is really hard....let’s see just how long you can withstand?”

Yan Buhui’s voice once again sounded from within the mouth of the Space time demon spirit. The shattered pieces of the fist spread throughout the air transformed into strand after strand of yuan qi, once again reforming. Unexpectedly, it did not seem to weaken in the least. It was as good as new and once again reattached itself on the arm of the space time sky demon spirit.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The space time sky demon spirit once again punched out.

This time, it was no longer a slow punch.

The fist of the space time sky demon spirit was like lightning.

The speed of the punches could not be matched with the gigantic figure of the demon spirit. They were like shadows and mirages. The surrounding experts could not see clearly, just how many punches this massive figure threw.

Then the world in everyone eyes, like it was a painting, began quivering violently, as if this painting could be torn apart at any second.

On the ground.

Ye Qingyu stood there dumbfounded at the scene in the sky.

He had already understood, that it was not this world that was shaking. It was also not Lu Zhaoze who was shaking --from the beginning, Lu Zhaoze was as stable as a boulder. Not even a strand of hair of his had been shaken.....

The reason that the scene in everyone’s eyes was shaking, was because their line of sight had been warped by an invisible energy.

This was an energy fluctuation that came when two great top experts exchanged blows.

It already could not be described as simple energy.

The realms of cultivation of these two great experts had already exceeded the limits and imagination a normal expert could touch.

In a moment, it was unknown just how many punches the space time sky demon spirit had thrown out.

Gradually, there were some people who could not see from their eyes anymore. Everything in their line of sight became murky, and there was an acute pain from their eyes, as if it had been stabbed with needles. Those with lower strength had tears streaming down and would most likely not recover without tens of days of rest.....

Ye Qingyu also began to feel a sharp pain in his eyes.

He could not help but lower his head, avoiding staring directly at the battle.

At this time, between heaven and earth, the voice of Lu Zhaoge resounded -- "Scatter."

A strange fluctuation flashed by.

Then one could see the fist of the space time sky demon spirit that was madly swinging, inexplicably disperse like a hurricane blowing apart the mists. Then it was its arms, its shoulders, its neck, then its head.....

This space time sky demon spirit that was thousands of metres tall, like a fiendgod, was like a sand dune blown apart by the wind. Without sound, it scattered, unable to maintain its form any longer. Strand after strand of demonic qi streamed away like sand, transforming into nothing that disappeared from this world!

Scatter!

It had really scattered.

This mountain range like leviathan like object had really did according to the word of Lu Zhaoge: it had dispersed like mist or smoke.

From the dispersing demonic qi, there was the bellow of rage of Yan Buhui.

But it seemed like he could not prevent his defeat.

A shocking aura that shook the heavens, a demonic qi that shrouded the skies, a demonic spirit that travelled through time and space, the passionate sky demon power.....everything seemed not able to face the calm and unhurried 'Scatter.'

It was as if the word was a law.

There was no other explanation.

In the blink of an eye, everything had scattered.

Yan Buhui's figure gradually emerged from the demon qi cloud that was currently disappearing.

"A power that does not belong to you, does not belong to you in the end. Therefore, you are not my opponent." Lu Zhaoge looked at the figure of Yan Buhui that gradually appeared from the demonic qi mist, and said lightly: "The way that you do things may be mad, but it is rarely impetuous and rash. This time to come to Youyan Pass of your own initiative to challenge me, apart from borrowing a power that does not belong to you, what other cards have you hidden up your sleeve?"

Yan Buhui remained silent and did not speak.

"The matters of the past, let us conclude it today." Lu Zhaoge deeply breathed in a breath. Even until now, his emotions had only been shaken by a tiny amount. "Today, you cannot escape. Why don't you surrender, I guarantee I will not kill you."

"Not kill me?" Yan Buhui laughed in a mocking manner. "Are you going to do what you have done to me before, imprisoning me? Making my life not worth living anymore?"

"At least this way, you can save your life." Lu Zhaoge said seriously. "Although you have hatred, but you have walked the wrong path. Last time, I heavily injured you, and thought that you would at least need to recover for three years, and would disappear for a period of time. Who would have thought.....This time, I cannot allow you, to return and give succor to the enemy anymore."

“Really?” Yan Buhui suddenly let out a strange smile.

And at nearly the same moment, an abnormal change occurred.

A melodious but cold voice like ice sounded slightly in the ears of everyone. It seemed to be a young girl that had lost her pet, and was currently anxiously asking—— “Have you seen my little bear?”

# Chapter 197: Another person

Have you seen my little bear?

In the moment that the voice of this girl sounded, Yan Buhui's mad laughter had risen to an extreme point.

It gave off an extremely conflicting sensation.

In the previous battle, the defensive formations of Youyan Pass, as well as the formation power of the structures in the air had already been activated. The power of the army was soundlessly running in the background. In truth, they had already completely sealed away everything in the surroundings, to prevent Yan Buhui and his demon warriors from escaping. At the same time, they confirmed the aura and identity of everyone in the demon race. The qi of all sorts of top level experts had already locked onto all the titled demon warriors...

One could be sure, that within the air, apart from the tens of titled demon warriors beside Yan Buhui who were lucky enough to survive, there were no other experts from the demon race present.

Just what kind of person was Lu Zhaoge. The moment he appeared, his consciousness had already sensed and scouted his entire environment.

He had not managed to find anything suspicious.

But right now, there was suddenly an icy cold voice of a girl that sounded out in the ears of everyone.

Inexplicable!

What was even more inexplicable, was that a bizarre change happened in the air the instant the voice sounded.

Boom!

A hundred metre tall scarlet red flame bear, appeared without any signs above the head of Lu Zhaoge.

This huge bear was burning with the black flame of hell all around him, and had a somewhat bloated figure. The moment it appeared, it



unleashed a roar of rage, its voice spreading out like a huge cannon throughout the air. A type of darkness, despair, death, and fear aura began madly spreading.

But what was extremely peculiar, was that the appearance of this huge bear was not sinister, but conversely a little bit cute.

All of a sudden, this unforeseen event had exceeded everyone's imagination.

It also exceeded the reaction of everyone.

Including Lu Zhaoge.

Just what kind of strength did this god of the Youyan army possess. The [Emotionless Heart Sutra] had already been cultivated to the fourth word. Just by opening his mouth, it was enough to destroy the space time sky demon spirit of Yan Buhui. He was like a heavenly person, but even with his cultivation he could not react at the first moment.

Therefore this swollen huge flame bear that was bellowing rage, was sitting atop his head right now.

Boom!

A scarlet red flame exploded.

An invisible mysterious energy began surging and throbbing.

The invisible energy that blocked all attacks ten metres away from Lu Zhaoge, finally seemed not able to block the appearance of the huge flame bear.

And what was even more frightening, was that after Lu Zhaoge had withstood the first wave of attack of the mysterious explosion of the flaming bear, it was like he had been fossilized. He stood dumbly within the air, not able to perform any effective reaction or counterattack.

And the Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen who were not far from him, were also evidently affected by a similar strike. They were also as if they were fossilized.

"Hahahaahah....." Yan Buhui cackled madly, his figure transforming

into a ray of light that instantly appeared before Lu Zhaoge.

He had evidently prepared beforehand. A bizarre jade bone dagger floated above his palm like the fang from a wolf. When he activated it, a strange cold glimmer flashed by, its sharp aura even caused this world to shiver.

At the same time.

A dainty tiny figure, appeared ten metres before Lu Zhaoge.

It was as if she was a spirit. There was no one who saw just how she had appeared.

A fire red dress, somewhat large for her, short sleeve, exposing her white mutton fat like little arms. Her fingers very delicate, extremely elegant. A black flame that was moving like a little spirit was held in her dainty jade like little hands. Her fire red battle boots were burning with a flame and she had pretty red hair, the colour of fresh blood, that nearly fell to the bottom of her feet which moved freely amongst the flames.....

It was as if she was a little fairy that had been born from the flame.

She had peerless delicate facial features. And under the dim red shine of the flames, her white and perfect skin had a charm that caused ones heart to beat quicker. Especially her pair of strange and large eyes, there was the innocence and pureness of the eyes of a fairy in the legends. Her pupils were a peculiar dim red, further adding to her nobleness and mysterious aura.

There was a terrifying black flame burning all around her.

But her expression, had a coldness that caused one to shiver in ones bones.

This was an iciness that came from her very bone marrow. Indifferent to everything. She did not fear any gods, she was not afraid of any devils. There was not any trace of any emotions within her. In her calm and cold expression there was a shred of loathing, as if she loathed everything in the entire world. It was as if she only needed one glance, and she could freeze ones soul.

A powerful and violent power of the flames of darkness enveloped her dainty little body.

This power and aura, was even far stronger than the aura Yan Buhui had shown when he had brought out the [Sky Demon sutra: Space time sky demon Spirit].

It was really hard to believe, that such an unbelievable power was held within such a dainty body.

She lifted her hand.

In her palm that was as dainty as jade, a dim red flame suddenly transformed into a huge fire dragon that struck out, heading crushingly towards the Lu Zhaoge who was still in a fossilized state.

The other hand faintly moved.

The huge flaming bear in the air, as if it was a puppet being controlled by strings, followed along with her will, attacking and bellowing.

She, was the controller of the huge flame bear.

Have you seen my little bear?

Right now, everyone saw her little bear.

Everything happened in a spark of a flint.

This move completely exceeded the limits of reactions of all the top experts.

Apart from the Yan Buhui who had long made his preparations, and this mysterious fire spirit little girl.

They instantly exploded out with the strongest and most terrifying force, in the first instant striking on the body of the god of Youyan Army, Lu Zhaoge.....

Fresh blood, jetted out from the body of Lu Zhaoge.

These flames, were like maggots wriggling into the bones that headed through the mouth, nose, apertures, the wounds on his body, frantically entering into his body.

Yan Buhui was madly laughing.

The white bone dagger in his hands was completely dyed in fresh blood.

He could be sure, that this time he had truly heavily injured Lu Zhaoge.

He was even more sure, that the power of darkness that came from the Unmoving City of Darkness would definitely strike a fatal blow to Lu Zhaoge.

Only after approximately one breath later, did the Lu Zhaoge who remained in a fossilised state, react.

The God of the Youyan army that was as strong as a Heavenly god, let out a bellow of rage. A vast and immense power suddenly exploded from him. Even though all his senses were enveloped by the flames of darkness, but he still made the most accurate counterattack. A palm striking out, it hit squarely against the abdomen of the huge flame bear.....

Boom!

This massive flame bear instantly exploded into pieces, fire scattering everywhere in the skies.

This fearful flame bear, exploded directly by this one strike..

“The bloodline of darkness? This is the power of the Unmoving City of Darkness.....” There was a slight surprise in Lu Zhaoge’s words, but he did not seem to be all that panicked or that angry. Burning within the flames of darkness, he asked loudly: “Just what venerable expert of the Unmoving City of Darkness has descended? Why have you interfered in the battle between the demon race and the human race?”

No one replied.

The little girl that was like a spirit from darkness and flames, only frowned a little, beckoning with her hands slightly in the air.

The shattered flames of darkness were like swallows returning to their nest, coming back to her hands. With a bang, and a flicker of the flames, it transformed into a cute little white toy bear. The little girl intimately

stroke the little bear, her cheek rubbing against it. In the instant that she hugged the little bear toy, there was a shred of warmth that flashed by in her pure icy eyes that seemed as if it loathed the entire world.

It was as if this white little toy bear, was her closest family.

Opposite.

“Fate comes, fate scatters, fate is water.....scatter!”

The fourth word of the seven true words of Lu Zhaoge.

It was as if the word was law.

When these words were said, all the flames of darkness on his body entirely disappeared.

His figure could once again be seen.

The coarse robe on his body was somewhat blackened, and there was the dense smell of smoke and fire. His hair and beard was somewhat burnt, but from top to bottom, he did not seem to be a person who had been burnt by the true flames of darkness. Even his eyes were exceedingly relaxed. There was a wound on his waist, and there was a red light on his face that constantly flickered that could barely be seen. Tens of breaths later, it slowly disappeared.....

Evidently there was a strange power within his body that he had forcibly suppressed.

It was only until then, that the people apart from the three great experts reacted.

Apart from the Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen that gradually recovered from their fossilized state ——these two did not even know just what had happened in that single instant.

.....

On the ground.

The instant upon hearing that voice, his body began fiercely quivering and shaking.

It was far too familiar.

This voice, had become far more icy and cold. But he could still be sure, that it was the voice of the little loli, Song Xiaojun.

But, when the huge flame bear had appeared, when it had sat upon the head of Lu Zhaoge, the excitement from Ye Qingyu's heart was as if it had been doused with a bucket of ice water. It caused his entire body to go icy cold.

The worst possible event, had occurred.

Why had the Unmoving City of Darkness joined forces with Yan Buhui?

Ye Qingyu could not think this through no matter what.

But he knew, the problem was great.

With the God of the Youyan army standing by, no one can escape from Youyan Pass. Even Yan Buhui could not do so. The little loli being in such a situation, was no different from going to her death.

In that instant, countless thoughts flickered in Ye Qingyu's consciousness.

He was thinking about what he should do.

But when the figure of the little loli finally and ultimately appeared within the skies, Ye Qingyu's heart suddenly settled down.

He was extremely clear on one matter,

No matter what had happened, he would definitely protect her.

Even if he had to bear the accusations from the entire world and the acquire title of traitor to the Empire, he had to protect her.

Lifting his face towards the skies, staring silently towards the little girl that was enveloped in the powerful and violent flames of darkness, Ye Qingyu could already be sure that Song Xiaojun had already accepted the power of the bloodline of darkness. She had utterly turned into a different person.

She wore a scarlet red dress and battle boots, having a strange costume

and appearance. She seemed a little larger than the little loli in the past, becoming more and more beautiful. She seemed extremely like the girl in the past, but also at the same time, she was completely different.

The little loli that was clumsy and loud, right now was as silent and as cold as a blossoming flame on an ice mountain.

“The her right now, should have already forgotten all her previous memories. She had forgotten the time spent in White Deer academy, she had forgotten me.....” Ye Qingyu sighed in his heart.“

Without knowing why, the moment he saw Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu’s heart was unprecedentedly calm.

# Chapter 198: A drop of fresh blood

Ye Qingyu laid on the ground, lifting his head to stare at the skies.

What Song Xiaojun was holding, was namely the little toy bear he had gifted her in their last parting meeting.

When Song Xiaojun had performed her ability, Ye Qingyu had saw the explosion of the flame bear. But it was only until the flame bear was struck into pieces by the palm strike of Lu Zhaoge, did he understand, that the flame bear that could instantly suppress Lu Zhaoge, Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen, these three great experts, was the little toy bear he had gifted to Song Xiaojun.

“It seems like Xiaojun has really completely assimilated with the legendary bloodline of darkness. Wang Jianru was right. Once she has completely assimilated with the bloodline of darkness, Xiaojun’s strength will grow explosively. She will grasp many unbelievable divine abilities. Spirit spring stage, Bitter Sea stage, Immortal stage.....these stages that martial artists need to bitterly cultivate and need fate for them to enter these martial realms, for Song Xiaojun, these are only the issue of time. She can easily break into these realms.....”

There was a faint smile that appeared on the corner of Ye Qingyu’s lips.

The little loli that liked to follow behind him in the past like a tail that could not be shaken off, right now was more beautiful and noble. She was already a top expert with a strength that far exceeded his.

“Who would have thought, that I would fall behind on the path of martial cultivation.”

Ye Qingyu originally thought, that the growth in his strength was already a miracle after encountering such a chain of fortuitous events. But the growth of Song Xiaojun’s strength, was even more universally shocking than his. It was most likely to have surpassed all others before and since.

The power of the inherited bloodline, was really terrifying.



“It seems like I will have to work even harder. Otherwise, how can I make Xiaojun recover her memories?”

A shred of responsibility was involuntarily invoked in Ye Qingyu's heart, his spirit being violently aroused.

.....

In the air.

Lu Zhaoge suppressed the bizarre energy within his body. His gaze fell on the dainty and lithe figure of the little girl, the spirit of darkness and flames.

After the god of Youyan Pass had evaluated his opponent, a trace of surprise flashed by between his eyebrows. He seemed to have thought of something “It was rumoured that half a year ago, there was a young girl that appeared with the bloodline of darkness running in her body in the White Deer academy of the Deer mountain range. She was chased and hunted by all parties, but was saved by a mysterious female sword immortal.....I did not think that the rumoured girl, would appear in front of me today.....”

Song Xiaojun stood crisply in the air.

Both her arms were hugging the little toy bear. Her eyes were indifferent and cold, her gaze not even lingering in the least on the body of the god of Youyan army, whose might shook the entire Empire.

Yan Buhui's figure gradually floated beside Song Xiaojun. His gaze had with it mockery and contempt as he looked at Lu Zhaoge. The bone dagger in his hands was dripping with blood, blood trapped in the rivulet. The red liquid inside was automatically flowing, as if it had its own consciousness, wanting to escape from the white bone dagger. But it was firmly restrained upon the white bone dagger.

“It seems like the rumours are wrong. For you to have grown to such a stage in the time of half a year, this is not the normal bloodline of darkness. It is evidently the bloodline of the King of Darkness.....” Lu Zhaoge's eyebrows moved, nodding his head: “I have been careless. I did

not think you would grow up so quickly. Even more, I did not imagine the Unmoving City of Darkness, who would not interfere in mortal affairs, would stand on the side of the Demon race, fighting for the demon race.”

“It is only a transaction.” Song Xiaojun finally opened her mouth.

But it was five simple words.

She evidently did not like to speak.

In her voice, there was an iciness that seeped into one's bones.

Just by hearing the voice, one could sense her stance that wanted to distance herself from them by ten thousand miles.

“Mm, so it was like this.” Lu Zhaoge nodded his head “What sort of transaction? Could it be that the Unmoving City of Darkness has a request for the Demon race.”

Song Xiaojun hugged her little toy bear: “I don't want to say.”

Lu Zhaoge fell silent.

The little girl in front of him, gave off an extremely strange sensation.

This strange sensation did not come from her icy attitude. It was just that, Lu Zhaoge sensed there was a conflicting aura on the body of the little girl. She seemed to be a demonic girl possessing the power of darkness that caused countless experts to shiver in fear. But she was also like a pure and innocent spirit without the slightest plan or machination.

Lu Zhaoge had once seen experts who had assimilated with the bloodline of darkness, the experts of the Unmoving City of Darkness. He had also experienced the power of flames of darkness.

But the sensation the young girl in front of him gave off, seemed as if she had not completely assimilated truly with the bloodline of darkness. There seemed to be something extra.

“Old man Lu, why are you still so curious when you are at your death's bed. Haha, do you have any last words?” Yan Buhui chuckled loudly.

On his face, there was wildness, arrogance and glee. This villain that

normally was incomparably calm and indifferent, when facing Lu Zhaoge, seemed to always be in an abnormal state of agitation.

“We still do not know who is dying.” On the face of Lu Zhaoge, there was another round of red light flickering, seeming extraordinarily bizarre.“

“Hahah, old thing, let’s see just how long you can suppress it for. The curse of the [Killing God dagger] as well as the burn of the true flames of darkness, is right now completely inside your body. Let me see just how long you can endure. Wahahahaah.....” Yan Buhui began laughing loudly, lightly waving his hand. “Bye, this time next year, I will burn an incense for you, hahahah.....”

As he said these words.

His figure, suddenly became gradually paler.

The Song Xiaojun hugging the little toy bear also began growing paler.

Within the air, a great shade covered everything.

Countless people lifted their heads to gaze at the gigantic black fortress that was like a towering mountain range that was high up in the air. It was unknown just when it had appeared, but the height it was in the sky had already greatly exceeded the control of the defensive formations of Youyan Pass. This fortress was as if it was casted from black steel, the ink black colour was as if it could absorb the lights of the sun. There was an eternally slumbering metallic aura spreading throughout the air.....

It floated within the air, as if it was the residence of a Fiendgod.

Two rays of pale black light shot out from within the Black fortress. When it passed through the defensive formations in the air of Youyan pass, there was not any reaction at all. This black light shone on Yan Buhui and Song Xiaojun’s body. The originally pale figure of the two, completely disappeared in the air with a swish.....

What also disappeared were the tens of titled demon warriors.

It was as if everything was a dream that was blown away by the wind,

leaving no traces behind.

The Youyan Pass that was known as impenetrable, had let out a crowd of demon race easily.

Everything seemed to be fake.

But Lu Zhaoge did not act to stop them.

“The Unmoving City of Darkness?”

There finally was a trace of shock exposed on the always calm face of Lu Zhaoge.

His voice was somewhat hoarse, and when he opened his mouth, there were several drops of fresh blood that was spat out, heading towards all directions.....

“Great commander!”

“Brother Lu....”

Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen went completely pale upon seeing this, instantly rushing over to support Lu Zhaoge.

In these twenty years, this was the first time that the God of Youyan Pass had suffered an injury.

Lu Zhaoge’s figure wobbled, but he lightly waved his hands, indicating that he was fine.

His gaze, was still staring into space, seeing the gigantic black fortress that was gradually ascending higher and disappearing.....

The Unmoving city of Darkness.

There was nothing great to be surprised about Song Xiaojun’s background, and that she came from the Unmoving City of Darkness. Seeing an expert of the Unmoving city of Darkness appear was not that great an event. In these years, there were constantly experts that descended upon this world with the bloodline of darkness running in their veins. But legend had it, the Unmoving City of Darkness that existed in the abyss of darkness, the home of all the experts of darkness had never

appeared.

There were countless legends regarding the Unmoving City of Darkness circulating in this world.

But the Unmoving City of Darkness had only appeared in this world several times.

According to the legends, only until the King of Darkness was born, could the demonic city situated in the abyss of darkness be controlled. Every time the Unmoving city of Darkness appeared, it represented the advent of a great disaster. The last time Lu Zhaoge had seen the Unmoving city of Darkness, was before he had gotten famous. At that time, the Snow Empire had not yet been founded, and the Heaven Wasteland domain had just been newly excavated and the rules and order were not yet set. The Unmoving City of Darkness had once brought this young domain, a period of time where they were enveloped in darkness and ruled over, a fearful era.....

It was only until later, that the Devil Monarch of the Unmoving City of Darkness was killed by the experts not from Heaven Wasteland domain. Only until then did the era of darkness end.

The Unmoving city of Darkness once again returned to the dark, hiding within the abyss of darkness, waiting for an opportunity for them to come back once again.

This was also one of the reasons why all the lifeforms in the Heaven Wasteland domain would do their utmost to kill everyone from Unmoving City of Darkness – there was no one willing to return to the era where they were ruled by darkness and enveloped by death.

In the long passing of time, there were constantly leftover forces from the Unmoving city of Darkness appearing, but this would not affect the overall situation.

But today, for the true Unmoving City of Darkness to appear. The meaning behind this caused one to shake with a cold chill.

Did this represent that the new devil monarch of darkness, had already

been born?

Could it be that young girl?

Lu Zhaoge once again spat out blood from his lips. There was an unprecedented tiredness that enveloped his body. Yan Buhui was not wrong; in the body of the god of Youyan army, there were two frightening powers that were currently madly destroying and harming him.....

He stretched out his hand, sucking all the fresh blood that was falling to the ground in the air.

The mysterious power contained within the blood was different from normal people.

But this movement, seemed to have agitated the injuries in his body. There was another mouthful of fresh blood that spat out from Lu Zhaoge's mouth.

He flicked his sleeve, once again sucking all the fresh blood he had spat out. His entire person transformed into a ray of light, heading towards the direction of the Pass Lord's residence like wind or lightning. Liu Siufeng and Peng Yizhen next to him dared not tarry, following after him with serious expressions.

They also realised, the importance of the situation.

It was just that no one noticed, that within the air, there was still a droplet of fresh blood that had not been sucked back. It fell from high up in the sky, heading towards the ground.....

According to the legends, a drop of fresh blood from the extreme experts could kill top level experts.

Within the sky, the great army of Youyan slowly dispersed.

The formation airships left ship after ship.

On the ground.

Without that frightening pressure, Ye Qingyu could finally sit up.

Seeing the direction that Song Xiaojun had disappeared in, his

expression finally settled down.

This time, Ye Qingyu did not rush in the air to shout the name of Song Xiaojun. He did not attempt to awaken Song Xiaojun's memories, because he knew that would not cause the slightest amount of change to the results today. Conversely, it would most likely make things worse.....

There were some things that he must do, but at the opportune time and place.

Ye Qingyu stood up, patting away the soil on his back and buttocks, preparing to return.

But at this time, he seemed to have sense something.

He lifted his hand, stretching it out.

Plop.

A drop of fresh blood, landed on the centre of his palm.

# Chapter 199: A familiar face

From the moment the fresh blood touched his hand, Ye Qingyu felt a scorching burning intent that stabbed into his bones from the centre of his palm.

This drop of fresh blood was like it was boiling. It constantly changed between a myriad of weird and wonderful forms, as if there was an incomparably frightful thing that was about to jump out from this drop of fresh blood. There were a ray of white light, a dim scorching red heat and a strange scarlet red power within this drop of fresh blood, as if they were three forces fighting for dominance, violently battling against each other.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head.

Just who did this drop of fresh blood belong to?

The next instant, Ye Qingyu felt as if his own palm had completely dissolved. This acute and fierce pain, along with a shred of numbness constantly came from his palm. This type of numbness, very quickly began travelling through his entire body, causing him to be like a stone statue, not able to move in the slightest.

“Ai? Shit.....just what is this?” Ye Qingyu was frightened by these turn of events. “I only lay on the floor to spectate a fight, why has the fire at the city gates affected the fish in the pond? The people who were fighting have ran away, who would have thought I would be killed by this inexplicable drop of blood?”

In only a few breaths time, Ye Qingyu felt that his entire person was about to be dissolved.

Just what should he do?

Ye Qingyu's scalp, was also beginning to go numb.

If he was killed by a drop of blood, then it was far too tragic.

This was really a disaster that came out of the blue.



He could only rely on the [Supreme Ice flame].

Ye Qingyu focused his energies, using his full power to activate the [Supreme Ice Flame] floating within his dantian. It transformed into a surging flow that instantly arrived at his palm, and completely wrapped the around the fresh blood that had immersed into his palm.

The [Supreme ice flame] was known as the coldest flame. It could not only kill opponents, it could also destroy all materials in this world including the strange power of the cold poison.

Previously, Ye Qingyu had used the [Supreme ice flame] to solve the poison of the Snow White demon lizard.

As expected, once this chilling sensation travelled to his palm, he gradually recovered his senses.

Ye Qingyu moved his body about and could not help but feel apprehension after the event.

Just who did this drop of blood belong to?

Why was it so terrifying?

Ye Qingyu looked at his own palm.

He was able to sense that after the [Supreme ice flame] had wrapped the droplet of blood, this droplet had different kinds of strange powers contained within. It did not dissolve like he had imagined, but instead was forced into the centre of his palm, turning into a round birthmark. What was even more strange, was that this perfectly round birthmark was neatly and tidily split into three equal parts – a scarlet red, a snow white and a dim red.

Three kinds of power.

There were three different kinds of power within the blood.

Ye Qingyu frowned.

He did not think that the [Supreme ice flame] was unable to disintegrate the drop of blood at the first instant, but instead it forced the drop of blood into the centre of palm. It seemed to not be able to destroy

it directly and planned to fight a war of attrition.

Ye Qingyu crisply divided half of the [Supreme ice flame] burning within his palm, completely trapping and confining this mark.

“I can only expend this blood little by little. I can only grind it down little by little to dissolve this drop of blood.....just what is this, a drop of blood fell from the sky that nearly killed me.....this is really unfortunate.”

At the same time, there were formation airships travelling through the sky.

These were not the battle flying airships, but it was the patrolling airships for treatment and aid. Everywhere a thousand metres away from the [Breeze and Drizzle building] had already turned into a swathe of rubble. There were countless buildings that had fallen apart, and the death and injuries of the normal citizens were hard to quantify at this moment. This was the first time since Youyan Pass was created, the first time that the demon race had invaded in such large scale and caused such great destruction.....

Thankfully the [Breeze and Drizzle building] was near the great camp of the Vanguard, so the response of the army was very rapid. With the counterstrike of the experts of the army, on some level they had prevented this catastrophe from becoming any larger than it already was.....

Youyan Pass was not like any other city of the Empire. The Great army of Youyan had ran here for tens of years, and the internal functions was known as a steel board. Their effectiveness of doing things were extremely high. After the battle had ended, all sorts of aid and recovery programs began rapidly.

Two rays of light descended beside Ye Qingyu.

It was Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan.

“Brother Ye, why are you here, are you okay?” Liu Zongyuan looked at Ye Qingyu, asking in concern.

“Good people do not live long, but villains live for thousands of years. How can this little bastard die, your worries are needless.” Wen Wan said

while rubbing his nose.

Ye Qingyu looked at Wen Wan, sighing and shaking his head. "In truth, I really envy you."

"Eh? Why is that?" Wen Wan's eyes brightened.

Ye Qingyu gritted his teeth, saying word by word. "I really envy you that you were once my teacher in the past. Since you were my teacher, I have to give you face. Otherwise, I would long have broken your jaw because your words are so aggravating."

Wen Wan instantly froze from shock.

Liu Zongyuan could not suppress his chuckle.

"Let's first leave then speak. Today the matter was grave, the battle just now....." When Liu Zongyuan spoke the next words, he suppressed his voice: "The Pass Lord seems to have been injured and his injuries are not light."

As he spoke of this key point, the atmosphere solidified.

This was definitely a grave matter that could affect the situation of the entire battlefield.

If the God of the Youyan army, Lu Zhaoge was really injured, then for the Youyan army that regarded him as a deity, would definitely suffer a huge blow in terms of morale.

Originally, they had injured Yan Buhui. This could be counted as dealing a heavy strike on the [Southern Incline legion]. But they had not imagined that the power and forces of the Unmoving city of Darkness would interfere in this battle. The reemergence of the Unmoving City of Darkness, the ancient power of the dark abyss was enough to break past the heavy defences and formations of Youyan Pass. Without any warning, they were able to smuggle experts of the demon race into the city, as well as take them away.....

This made the Youyan Pass, instantly into a utterly disadvantageous situation in terms of overall battle strategy.

The situation of the forces in this instant, completely flipped around.

This time, tens of titled warriors of the demon race had appeared. If the next time, the Unmoving City of Darkness directly transfer the great army of the [Southern Incline legion] of the demon race to the city, just what sort of disastrous scene would this be?

The three conversed for a while, then Liu Zongyuan received a military order, heading back to the Vanguard.

Wen Wan also received a military order.

But he slightly delayed for a while. Waiting until Liu Zongyuan had left, he used his shoulder to nudge Ye Qingyu, his eyebrows lifting and his eyes winking. "Hey, that little girl that placed a bear's bum on the head of Pass Lord Lu, why do I feel that she's slightly familiar?"

Ye Qingyu gave him a glare: "I know what you mean, you want to use this to make a run on me isn't that right? I am only her classmate, but mad tiger Wen, don't forget that you were also once her teacher. You've taught her martial arts before, if we were to bear responsibility, you as a past teacher will also hold part of the blame."

"Look at you, we were just conversing, why are you so cynical?" Wen Wan said righteously. "Do you think I am that kind of person?"

"Haha....." Ye Qingyu laughed. "Of course you are."

Wen Wan was enraged like thunder. "Ye Qingyu, you, I am only concerned about you. Song Xiaojun is a piece of your heart. That girl is really crazy, to dare use a bear and press it against the Pass Lord's face, and to use fire to burn the Pass Lord. I feel that her days will be very splendid after this. At the very least, the experts in Youyan pass will absolutely not let this girl go. Could it be that you are not worried?"

"Worried about what?" Ye Qingyu smiled in satisfaction. "You've seen what she did to the Pass Lord. Do you feel that there is anyone that can threaten her? I feel like who I should be worried about, are the experts in Youyan army, they must not encounter her."

Wen Wan halted for a bit. "That's right.....Hey, just what did that little

girl eat growing up? Why has her strength grown so fast?"

"You know yet you still ask." Ye Qingyu cursed at him.

Wen Wan chuckled.

After all the information from various channels of the army had been gathered and organised, what they received information was that there was a female student appearing half a year ago, a White Deer academy student with the bloodline of the Unmoving City of darkness inside her. Wen Wan had also heard this news, but he did not imagine that the girl would have been Song Xiaojun.

The power of an inherited bloodline, was really terrifying.

As they spoke, there were suddenly a serious of radiance light flickering, like shooting stars, that brightened the ash grey sky of Youyan Pass. A powerful yuan qi fluctuation began to be spread out.....

This ray of light landed on the ground.

Several thousand metres away.

"Eh? There's an expert arriving?" Ye Qingyu was somewhat surprised.

It was the qi of another top level expert. And to so arrogantly fly through the air above Youyan Pass, it was likely that he possessed a great background.

Wen Wan pressed his lips together: "It doesn't look like the experts from the military, there's no such person within the army. Looking at the type of qi, it seems to be someone from the sects.....interesting, a true expert of the Sect has arrived."

A person from the sects?

Ye Qingyu subconsciously thought back to the Crepe Myrtle students.

After the previous interaction, he felt extremely disappointment towards the people of the sect. Especially the Crepe Myrtle Sect that was known as one of the six greatest sects. The students like Wei Tianming and the others were only a crowd of rabble. As for the middle age shishu Liang Qun, he seemed exceedingly average. This caused Ye Qingyu's

evaluation of the sect to not be high.

But the ray of light just now.....

It was a truly powerful expert.

It seemed like the power of the sects could not be underestimated.

After all, they were mysterious existences that had existed for countless years. The history of the sects were such that some were even present before the Snow Empire was founded.

“I’m leaving.” Wen Wan turned around and said his farewell. “Right now, you can already be counted as someone of the Vanguard. Quickly find a time to report as soon as possible, Commander Liu regards you with great importance. The situation within the city is still somewhat chaotic; there are many matters that you need to attend to in the city.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. ” I know.”

Wen Wan transformed into a stream of light, disappearing in the sky far off.

Ye Qingyu stood where he was.

There was continuously sounds of cries from the rubble near him. The survivors, when they saw their families lying there covered in blood, could not hold back their tears. Their homes had been ruined, their houses destroyed. The bitterness of life had descended in an instant, the happy little lives of those poor normal citizens had been destroyed in an instant.

Ye Qingyu was able to see a young girl tens of age, hugging the corpse of her mother as she cried. There was also a white haired old man, that had the now cold body of his son in his embrace, tears dripping down his face. He was able to see.....tragedies, one after another.

There were many more citizens that had turned into the food inside the demon race’s belly.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat lost at this moment.

The world was vast. There were some things that you had no way of controlling nor any way of changing.

Ye Qingyu could not be sure, whether there was a day he would also cry without restraint just like this.

In this instant, his desire for strength, rose to an unsatiable need.

Only with true strength, could he change everything.

He stood silently where he was.

Until someone lightly tapped him on his shoulder.

Turning round.

He saw a familiar face.

# Chapter 200: Saving people

“Young master?” Li Shizen wore the medical green robe of the Vanguard. He stood with a look of surprise behind Ye Qingyu.

He was one of the people who were sent to rapidly assist with the situation. Out of the people in this area, there were many people injured.

“Doctor Li?” Ye Qingyu began smiled. “Originally I wanted to head towards the Vanguard to visit you, but who would have guessed that such a thing would happen and interrupt my plan.....A planned visit cannot beat a coincidental meeting. What did you come here for?”

“There are not enough people in the medical centre nearby, so I came over to help.” Li Shizen patted the black cowskin medicine box at his waist.

After spending half a year of time in the army, and the Youyan Pass being a place of bitter cold, Li Shizen was evidently much darker, somewhat lean, and looked ever older. But his vitality was still obviously good, Ye Qingyu could sense the surging life force in the old doctor’s blood. It was even better than what is used to be.

“Ah, that’s right, these are the letters that Qingqing told me give to you.” Ye Qingyu took out a stack of letters from his interdimensional pouch, there were tens of them.

Li Shizen was part of the commoners enlisted to Youyan Pass. When he left, his position had not yet been confirmed therefore there was not a way for the address to be written on the letter. Furthermore, Youyan Pass belonged to one of the heavily guarded military frontiers. Ordinary letters must go through strict inspections. Li Shizen once he had reached Youyan Pass, had already sent out several letters. But for an unknown reason, these letters had not yet arrived in the hands of her granddaughter Qingqing.

But for Ye Qingyu, he was a military officer with position, this was something that one could be sure of before he had departed from Deer city. Therefore sending and receiving letters was an ordinary matter for



him. Afterwards, Qingqing crisply decided to send the letters to Ye Qingyu. It was only that in this period of time, Ye Qingyu did not have the time to pay a visit to the Vanguard. There was also an conflict with Zhang San ongoing, a huge figure within the army so he did not contact the old doctor to prevent him from being affected in the conflict.

“Thank you young master.” LI Shizen held the bundle of letters, his emotions somewhat moved.

“Don’t be so courteous, this is something I should have done.” A person that he knew in the past, and was also his elder, Ye Qingyu’s tone was evidently respectful.

As he said this, there was someone from far away shouting Li Shizen’s name. It was another military doctor. One could see several soldiers of the Vanguard, levering a collapsed stone wall away, and beneath it there were still several surviving citizens. But they had been injured. There was too much for one military doctor to do, so he quickly summoned Li Shizen over to help.

“Young master, I’ll first go make myself busy.” Li Shizen smiled, turning and running to give aid.

Ye Qingyu originally still want to ask just what was the ancient pill formula he had left himself when Li Shizen departed from Deer city. But it seemed like there was not a chance to question him this time around anymore, he could only wait till next time.

Today heading towards the Vanguard, he had originally wanted to pay a long visit to Li Shizen then go pay his respects towards the commander of the Vanguard Liu Siufeng. But since such a grave matter had occurred today, that even the War God of Youyan Pass Lu Zhaoge was suspected to be injured, it was most likely that Liu Siufeng would not have the time to see him.

Ye Qingyu thought it over. Since he did not have any pressing matters, why don’t he stay here and give his aid to save people.

As he thought to here, he began to take action.

Only Li Shizen knew Ye Qingyu's identity. To prevent any restraints, as well as exposing the relationship between himself and Li Shizen in front of so many people due to Zhang San, and causing Li Shizen unneeded trouble, Ye Qingyu did not go over to Li Shizen's area to give aid. Instead, he went to another place where people was giving out aid one or two miles away.

Within the air, there was still the faint trace of demon qi drifting in the air.

The remnants of battle still remained.

There were the sorrowful cries from far away, as well as the panicked calls in search of their family.

Apart from the organised aid by the military, there were many survivors that were citizens as well as people from outside the disaster areas that rushed to give aid. The unity of Youyan Pass was demonstrated. Lu Zhaoge and the military's painstaking cultivation all over these years demonstrated its effect.

Ye Qingyu had a white robe, half his robe was covered with the bloodstains of the blood flame demon bear. His appearance seemed somewhat horrific, as if he was one of the lucky survivors.

"Are you a survivor? Your body is covered in blood, little brother are you okay? Are the injuries severe?" The person responsible for giving out aid in this area was a minor military officer of the Vanguard. Seeing Ye Qingyu completely covered in blood, he was instantly shocked, quickly asking him.

"It's fine. I came over to help." Ye Qingyu replied with a smile. "This is someone elses blood....."

Perhaps he was influenced by Ye Qingyu's positive outlook and smile despite the fact that he was covered in blood. The minor military officer patted Ye Qingyu on the shoulder, saying: "Good man. Not bad, you are a hard man. If it is like this, then go over there to help....." The minor military officer pointed to a group of people nearby, arranging for Ye Qingyu to be allocated to a ten man squad to give aid, responsible for

lifting stretchers and moving things about.

Eh....

Ye Qingyu originally wanted to say that his strength was very great, he could do more to help.

But that minor military officer was completely swamped with work, he could not manage to get a word in. He turned around instantly and began allocating other duties.

Ye Qingyu could only shake his head, and run off, following a middle aged man with a strap tainted with blood around his forehead. He began lifting the stretches, carrying those injured people who were unconscious delivering them to a tent that the army had constructed at the first instant. There were specialist medical doctors that came to treat them, the entire procedure neat and orderly. The quality and the efficiency of the Youyan army could be seen.

“Little brother, are you okay, your body is covered in fresh blood.....” The middle aged man with a strap dyed with blood asked in concern. “Where’s your family?”

Ye Qingyu waved his arms and legs, saying: “It’s fine, these are the blood of other people. Uncle, your head.....”

The middle aged uncle with a head strap dyed with blood spat, saying: “Shit, I was really unlucky. I was sleeping in my room, when my house suddenly fell down. One of the beams fell on my head, nearly breaking it open.....”

Youyan Pass was famed for its martial prowess. Even a normal citizen knew a few martial moves, so ordinary illness and injuries could not be counted as anything.

As Ye Qingyu carried the stretchers, there was the constant blabbering of the middle aged uncle.

This kind of feeling was not bad.

“Quick, quick, quick, there is a person heavily injured over there. You

two, quickly go over.....” A far off military officer urged for them to hurry.

Ye Qingyu and the middle aged uncle quickly ran over.

In such bustle, fifteen minutes had passed in the blink of an eye.

“There’s still people beneath.....my mother is still below. I beg you guys, save her, she must still be alive....” There was suddenly a howl that came from far off, it was a young man that had just awakened from being unconsciousness. Avoiding the obstruction and persuasion of the doctors, he madly ran out, going to his own collapsed house. He pointed at the collapsed stone on the floor, begging woefully for aid from the soldiers.

It attracted many people’s attention.

The minor military officer who had arranged duties for Ye Qingyu, also came to have a look.

He carefully tapped on the stone wall, his palm placed flat against the collapsed stone wall rubble. Yuan qi emitted, and after detecting for a while, he shook his head slightly with a sigh. Speaking to the young man: “There are no longer any signs of life under. Your mother is perhaps.....Ai, brother, restrain your grief and accept fate.”

“No, no, no, it’s not like that. I saw with my own eyes, my mother being forced underneath the stone wall. Do you know, there’s a well under this rubble, I saw my mother escaping into the well.....she must be alive, she must.....my mother won’t die.....Lord, I beg you.....” The young man frantically explained. As he moved abruptly, the injuries on his back began dripping with fresh blood again.

“Little brother, first don’t panic. Take care of your wound, I will do my best to think of a method.” The young minor officer did his best to placate him.

Ye Qingyu instantly gave this young military officer several glances more.

He seemed to be around twentyish years of age, conspicuously refined with a clear and defined face. There was a slight scholarly air about him, not too similar from the rough and harsh quality of a normal soldier.

Although he was very busy, but he was exceedingly patient, with a calm and undiscriminating expression on his face.

Very quickly, there was once again someone from the army helping to once again bandage the wounds of the young man.

There were several soldiers that came along, with the young officers and attempted to lift the collapsed stone wall on the ground.

There were several people that exploded with their strongest power, but they could not lift this stone wall at all. And because they worried about what the young man had said, that in the well below, the old woman still had a chance of survival. Therefore they could not break the stone wall apart. They were somewhat lost for the moment.

Ye Qingyu observed the situation .

The stone wall was a metre thick, and the collapsed portion on the floor were the lengths of tens of metres. It had fallen from a stand of the military building, and should have been when the demon qi hurricane swept through the skies, and finally landing here. From a rough estimate, it was at least tens of thousands of pounds in weight.

The minor officer and the soldiers, were only at the Ordinary Martial stage. For them to lift it was really difficult.

“Let me try.” Ye Qingyu stood out of his own initiative.

The somewhat scholarly minor officer glanced at Ye Qingyu, and said with a questioning voice: “You....are you able?”

Everyone else looked at Ye Qingyu with a questioning expression.

After all this white robed youth covered with blood, although his body was somewhat muscular, but his age still seemed to be very young.

Ye Qingyu gave off a slight smile. “I’ll give it a try.”

As he said this, both his hands held the edges of the wall. Exerting his strength slightly, the muscles in his arms suddenly bulged. With a low grunt, the ground quaked a little, then instantly the stone wall was lifted. Immediately, both his arms exploded with power and sent this stone wall

directly flying out.

With Ye Qingyu's strength, to lift up a stone wall like this only needed a passing thought by him.

But today he did not want to reveal his identity, so he pretended it took more effort than it really did. The others looking at this scene thought Ye Qingyu had already exerted his maximum strength, but it still shocked everyone to silence for a moment. When the rubble and the dust from the wall landed, there was a period of praises and congratulations.

Underneath the stone wall, there really was a well exposed.

There was a weak sound from beneath.

"Someone's still alive.....they are really alive."

As for the scholarly young military officer, he recovered from his stunned shock. Without saying anything, he directly jumped within the dried up well. After a while, when he jumped out, there was an aged old woman with snowy white hair on his back. The old woman had a broken wound on her head and was currently moaning in pain.

"Mother.....mother.....mother!" The previous young man charged madly towards her.

This scholarly military officer placed the old woman on the floor, loudly shouting. "Doctor Xu, quickly come and have a look, this old woman's injuries are slightly serious. Quickly send someone to save her....."

The doctor surnamed Xu was also a young man. Carrying a medicinal box, he inspected slightly. "Her injuries are serious. This old woman's body is weak, we need to quickly transport her to the tent to treat her...."

Before he'd finished.

A sharp and piercing voice suddenly came from the side: "Doctor? Just where has the doctor died to? Quickly scam over and have a look, my senior brother is injured, quickly come over and treat him....."

# Chapter 201: Do you have the requirements?

Everywhere looked towards the voice.

They could see a young man wearing a brocaded robe around twenty years of age, holding his nose with one hand with irritation amidst all the dust. His other hand was constantly patting at some dirt on his sleeve, and was currently screaming for the doctors to attend to him.

This young man had purple coloured silk robe, eagle nose, and his eyebrows were like blades. There was a scarlet red long sword held at his waist, and there was the pattern of the Great Dipper on the hilt of the sword. Every star was the colour of faint purple, and there was an indistinct peculiarness about it. There was a thick sense of self importance in the tone of his words.

A person from the sects?

Ye Qingyu faintly frowned.

From the appearance of this hook nosed young man, he was evidently someone from the sects. This type of attitude where he thought he was better than anyone else, was exceedingly similar to the people of the Jianghu he had met today at the [Breeze and Drizzle building]. They were evidently the same kind of people.

“Your senior brother is?” The scholarly minor military officer turned his head to look at the hook nose young man. Giving off a gesture, he directed the military doctor to give emergency treatment to the old woman.

“Violet Seven stars sect, [Heartbroken Palm], Qi Yong, is my senior brother.” The hook nosed man had a face of pride and braggery, saying: “What about it? Do you know right now.....whatever, talking to a tiny little officer like you is like playing a harp to a cow. Where is the doctor, quickly follow me.....”

Violet Seven stars sect?

Everyone let out a breath of shock together.

The Violet Seven stars sect was one of the six greatest sects within Snow Empire, similar to the Crepe Myrtle sect. It could also be counted as one of the top secret martial grounds within the borders of Snow empire. If one was comparing history and background, then the Violet Seven stars sect had an even longer history than the Crepe Myrtle sect. It was an extremely ancient sect.

The scholarly young officer looked at the rather serious injury of the young man and his old mother that had already fell unconscious. There was a face of conflict on him as he said: "Little brother, we only have one doctor here right now. There are also several injured people in the tent that needs treatment. If the injury of your senior brother is not particularly serious, then please wait for a short moment, or perhaps bring him towards the tent for treatment. How about this?"

Such a method, could be counted as solving matters in a fair manner.

Ye Qingyu once again gave a second glance towards this scholarly military officer.

Youyan's army lower ranking officers had really been trained well, one could not help but praise them. Comparatively, the soldiers of the camps that were the main participants of battle, their quality were higher many times over than the soldiers of the supply department. This made Ye Qingyu's impression of the Youyan Army rise significantly.

But—

"Who is your little brother? Are you fit to call me as brother? Also, what did you just say? Did you just dare to deny me?"

This hook nosed violet disciple instantly began inexplicably shouting.

In his eyes, there were both shock and rage. Pointing his finger at the nose of the minor military officer, he scolded loudly: "You are only a tiny low ranking officer. In my eyes, you are not even a fart. I give face to the Youyan Army by asking you, but you really think you are someone special, to dare deny me? Are you looking to die? Speak, what is your name?"



Ye Qingyu nearly spurted out.

Just what kind of illness did he have?

Was he not just discussing matters with you?

Just when did he reject your request?

Was there a problem with the brain of this seven stars sect disciple?

The scholarly young man was taken back. Evidently he was also somewhat nonplussed by the fierce reaction of the hook nosed disciple.

But his temperament was extremely well. He patiently waited until the hook nosed young man had finished scolding him and pointing at his nose, covering his entire face with spit, then said: "I am discussing this with you right now. There is only one military doctor, and there are many injured people over there, therefore....."

"Saying so many things to me, I don't even care. Just say it. Will you fucking allow the military doctor to follow me over?" The hook nosed seven stars disciple was like a rabid dog.

There were expressions of rage on the surrounding soldiers.

Although he was a disciple of a great sect, but this was far too arrogant.

The minor officer's expression was calm as it ever was. Taking a step back, he avoided the finger of the hook nosed man from stabbing into his eyes. With a smile: "Then can you bring your senior disciple here, so it will be more convenient....."

Before he had finished, the hook nosed violet seven stars sect disciple left in a rage.

"You wait."

He left his parting words.

Everyone looked at each other.

Just what was this?

He completely did not listen to reason at all.

Ye Qingyu had a faint feeling in his heart, that from the current performance of this violet seven stars sect disciple, the matter would not end as easily as this. He had already personally experienced the arrogance and overbearingness of the people from the sects

“Fine, everything’s good, everyone quickly get on with their business.” The minor officer acted as if nothing had happened, clapping his hands and continuing to direct people in aiding the injured people.

Doctor Xu was extremely well practiced as he took care of the wounds, bandaging it. Thankfully, he was well experienced and there was not a lack of medicines and the like. The injuries of the young man and his mother very quickly stabilised, with no current threat to their lives.

Seeing that the old woman had stopped moaning and her breathing stabilised, the young man was extremely grateful.

He did not pay attention to his own wounds, rushing to kneel in front of the officer as well as the military doctor to express his thanks. Then he came to in front of Ye Qingyu, respectfully paying his thanks: “Thank you my benefactors, Thank you. I, Wang Xiao’er will forever engrave this great kindness you have done for me.... if not for you guys, my mother would have definitely died. My lowly life, will forever belong to you my lords.....”

“Little brother, quickly get up. Saving someone is something that we should be doing anyway.” The scholarly young military officer quickly assisted Wang Xiao’er up.

The time right now was already somewhat late.

The others quickly utilised the time to give aid, completely searching through the collapsed structures carefully.

With Ye Qingyu’s aid, a person with herculean strength, the process of giving aid underwent smoothly without problems. Before the sun had set, the area the minor officer was in charge of was basically completely clean and finished. Every survivor was safely extracted, and was currently undergoing treatment. Ye Qingyu slapped his hands. The dirt all around his body as well as the bloodstains leftover from the battle but his mood

was extremely good.

He had originally come from a common background. When he was small, he grew up playing in the commoner's area. Today, he once again interacted with the citizens of Youyan Pass. It made him faintly feel that he had once again returned to the feeling that he possessed when he was small. It made him feel even more satisfied than cultivating for the entire day. For Ye Qingyu, this was a relaxation of his mind and spirit.

"Little brother, thank you for today. You've done us a great help." The minor officer patted Ye Qingyu on the shoulder, continuously expressing his thanks. He said again: "With such a natural divine strength, you are definitely a good material for practicing martial arts. It's a pity.....you're age is slightly too old to start. But you will still be in time if you start now. How about this, are you interested to join the Vanguard? There are several martial instructors within the Vanguard, it will allow you to fully utilise your heavens sent divine strength."

This military officer was not able to recognise Ye Qingyu's real identity.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile: "I will consider it well. Officer.....there are still matters that I have to attend to at home, farewell."

Saying this, he turned and left.

"Eh? What's your name? The contributions you have made today, I will return and report it to my officer, and mark it down. There will also be a monetary reward sent to your house....." the scholarly officer shouted loudly.

Ye Qingyu smiled, waving his hand, indicating it was fine. He turned and disappeared in a street far off.

"This little kid, is definitely good material . I wonder why he has not entered the military." The scholarly officer said such words calmly, a slightly smile on his face.

The surrounding people also smiled.

Ye Qingyu's performance had left a very good impression with everyone.

At this time, cold laughter came from the side.

“Haha, Li Xiu, is this the minor officer that you mentioned?” Another young man wearing decadent purple robes came from the side, his complexion white and clean. He seemed to not even be twenty years of age, with a nobility and a bossiness about him. The clothing he was wearing was the attire of the disciples of the violet seven stars sect.

Behind him were five or six other violet seven stars sect disciples, their atmosphere unfriendly.

One of them, was namely the madly furious hook nosed man that came to find a military doctor.

“That’s right junior disciple Lin. This minor military officer is utterly arrogant, he completely did not give face to the violet seven stars sect.” The hook nosed man embellished and exaggerated the story as he retold the tale. The gaze that he looked at the officer with was filled with sinisterness and glee.

“You are the disciples of the violet seven stars sect? I wonder if the senior disciple, [Heartbreaking Palm] Qi Yong has arrived?” The complexion of the minor officer did not change, clasping his hands. “The military doctor will be free in a moment, he can inspect the injuries of your senior brother.....”

“hahah.....” the hook nosed man began laughing madly, pointing at the nose of the scholarly man. Loudly shouting: “Brutish dog, are you afraid right now? I peh, do you regret your actions beforehand? Your military doctor is free right now, but my senior brother Qi is not free now.....to play games with me, I’ll make your dog eyes blind.”

The minor officer still did not get angry, patiently explaining: “Everything is first come first served. Furthermore, the situation was.....”

“I don’t want to hear your many explanations.” The person called junior disciple Lin impatiently waved his hand: “What’s your name? Say it, and come personally to apologise in front of senior brother Qi. If you do so, I will not pursue this matter any further.”

As these words were said, the surrounding civilians and soldiers were enraged.

These disciples of the sects, were perhaps far too arrogant and despotic. One could not even see their shadow when others were giving aid, but right now they came to cause a disturbance and insult others. This really was taking it too far.

This scholarly military officer frowned: "I still have matters to attend to, I can't leave. How about this, after I finish allocating the injured members, then I'll come over and apologise personally to your senior brother Qi."

His temperament was unexpectedly good.

But this noble young man would not give him any leeway at all: "Right now, come and apologise this instant. If you delay any longer, I'll break your legs and drag you like dragging a dead dog."

At this time, the soldiers beside him could not bear it any longer, angrily shouting: "You people of the sects, is taking it too far, pressing us everytime. Just where do you think this is? This is Youyan Pass, the great headquarters of the Youyan army. A crowd of Jianghu people to dare point and direct an officer of the Empire?"

The hook nosed man and the others hearing this, fell silent for a while. Then there was great laughter coming from them.

"Hahahaha....."

"The officers of the Empire? I'm so afraid."

"Junior brother Lin, it seems like these brutes still do not know our identity."

"Hey hey, quickly tell them junior brother Lin's identity, otherwise these military brutes will not admit defeat."

The young violet seven stars sect disciples mocked them, looking at the soldiers like they were looking at clowns.

The lips of junior brother Lin also curled in a mocking and faint curve.

The Hook nosed man standing next to junior brother Lin, cleared his throat and said in a gleeful manner: “Listen well, my junior brother Lin, is the grandnephew of the Right minister. Inheriting riches and honour, he is a fourth class Imperial Marquis. He is someone from a true family with the pure blood of the nobility of the Empire running through him..... Haha, how about it. With junior brother Lin’s status, to teach a tiny little officer like you a lesson, does he have the requirements?”

# Chapter 202: Who else do you have in your family?

This young man with a noble air, was he really a member of the nobility of the Empire?

The expressions of the surrounding people, instantly turned fearful.

The laws of the Empire were strict. Nobility and commoner, commoners and peasants, peasants and slaves, there were a chasm and division that could not be overlooked. For a commoner to conflict with a noble, was death penalty. If they suddenly fought, and the noble killed the commoner, at the most they would be punished by forcing to give out monetary compensation for their death. They would not be forced to die, especially the noble that came from the powerful great families of the empire, they had an exceptional and unique power and status.

“What about it? Does junior brother Lin have the right to teach you brutes that don’t know death a lesson.” The hooked nosed man laughed in glee, then pointed at the soldiers who were speaking just now. “Do you still want to argue? You still want to be the bird that sticks its neck out. Then come along with your minor officer, lets just see how hard your mouth can be.”

The complexions of this soldiers instantly changed.

These violet seven stars sect disciples were so overbearing. Everyone knew, that if they were really dragged off, it would be catastrophic.

The scholarly military officer took a step forward: “It’s not a great matter, I can go alone.”

His expression, remained as calm as it ever was. It was as if nothing, was able to invoke and incite his anger at all.

Junior brother Lin laughed coldly: “Just who are you, that you are allowed to speak. Two of you, bring him away.”

The violet seven stars sect disciples next to him, began laughing

immediately, pressing closer step by step, about to act.

“This is taking things too far.” The other soldiers were also furious, unsheathing the weapons at their waist and surrounding the young military officer and that soldier, protecting them in the middle.

These soldiers strength were not high, but after all they were warriors of the Vanguard. They had experienced life and death on the battlefield, seeing countless scenes of blood and gore. They were warriors who had danced on the tip of the blade before. Although they were fearful of the opposing party's identity, but they absolutely would not make a choice to abandon their comrades.

The violet seven stars sect disciples, did not imagine the matter would develop like this. There was a slight hesitation.

If they really caused the matters to grow larger, then it was very likely that the Youyan army would investigate things further.

Junior brother Lin coldly snorted, not caring about this in the slightest. “No need to afraid. If they really dare obstruct us, then kill them. I'll bear the consequences. These military brutes that are like ants, wanting to act brave? Even their military warfare officer, will have to lower his head to me if they see me.”

After this, the situation completely reversed for the violet seven stars sect disciples.

Especially for the hook nosed man, he walked to the very front with a sinister smile: “Let me have a look at who dares block me.....”

Before he'd finished.

Pak !

A clear voice sounded.

There was an exceedingly clear imprint of a palm on the face of the hook nosed man.

The surrounding people were dumbfounded. Then he was sent directly flying five or six metres through the air. White and red came out of his



mouth as he flew, it seemed like a row of his teeth had been knocked clean, then fresh blood came spurting out.

What had happened?

No one reacted.

No one had seen clearly who it was that had acted.

The next instant--

Pak!Pak!Pak!Pak!

On the faces of the four or five violet seven stars sect disciples, there were also clear palmprints.

This bunch of people acted as if they had seen a ghost. Spurting out blood, they were sent directly away through the air towards the distance. Like gourds rolling on the floor, everyone of them moaned and grunted, not able to crawl back up for a while.

There was still no one who was able to discern who had acted.

The scholarly military officer as well as the soldiers all stared at each other.

They had evidently not been able to make clear, just what had happened. But to speak the truth, to see those arrogant and conceited violet seven stars sect disciples twitching on the floor like dead dogs, was really like eating iced watermelon chilled for three days. They felt especially great.

Junior brother Lin stared dumbly at his surroundings, roaring in fear and rage "Who? Who dares launch a sneak attack, come out....."

At this time, a cold voice came.

"You idle and useless thing, even if the right minister himself came, even he won't dare to use the status of the sects to pressure the soldiers of Yuyan. You are only a tiny little grandnephew, not thinking of repaying the empire, but dare to come here to pretend to be as fierce as a tiger when you are just a fox.....Scram, don't come here to embarrass yourself!"

Before he'd finished.

Pak !

A clear palm print appeared.

Junior brother Lin was struck flying like a dead dog, half way through the air, all his teeth had fallen out. His face was swollen like a completely ripe peach that had fallen to the ground.

Out of all the violet seven stars sect disciples, he and the hook nosed man were the worse off.

“This time I'll leave you alive, and give you a lesson. In Youyan Pass, you have to act wisely and accordingly. If I encounter you doing such scum like acts next time, then be careful of your lives.”

The mysterious and ice voice sounded for the last time.

There was a chilling killing intent held within the words.

Junior brother Lin and the others were like they had seen a ghost, everyone of them scared witless.

They were not even able to see clearly who the enemy was before being beaten to the semblance of a pig's head. The difference in strength between them were like the distance between heaven and earth. And evidently, the opposing party utterly did not give any face to the Right minister. In his words, it exposed that he was a person of exceedingly high status, and was absolutely not someone they could act against.

The crowd that came with malicious intentions, ultimately ran in fear like a pack of wild dogs.

There was a trace of question on the face of the scholarly military officer.

He faintly felt that the voice was slightly familiar, but in such a rapid situation, he could not recall just where he had heard this voice before.

The surrounding soldiers and civilians could not help but began cheering.

This really was a completely reverse of the situation. Especially when they saw those arrogant and conceited violet seven stars sect disciples flee for their lives like dogs, their moods were unprecedentedly excited. This feeling was really too good.

“haha, to think that those fellows would be so arrogant.”

“Just who was it that hiddenly acted in the background?”

“It must be the expert of our Youyan Pass.....perhaps it is an expert at the level of commander.”

“Hahaha, this has really vented our anger.”

.....

.....

Far off.

In the darkness.

The Ye Qingyu that was situated on a short collapsed wall, a smile appeared on his face.

He had not really left at the start.

When the hooked nose man had left the words “You wait”, Ye Qingyu knew that the matter would not end so easily. The other party would definitely come here for payback. But after waiting till the sky turned dark, and the enemy still had not arrived, Ye Qingyu thought it over then said his departures and waited silently far off protecting.

The result was that the disciples of the violet seven stars sect really came for vengeance.

But he had not expected that the nobility of the Empire, would enter into the sects and become the disciples of the sects.

These disciples of the violet seven stars sect strength were even worse than Wei Tianming and the others from the Crepe Myrtle Sect. For Ye Qingyu, disposing of them was only a little appetiser.

But when that noble surnamed Lin had appeared, it made Ye Qingyu

realise something else.

Ye Qingyu had always thought before, that the Empire was the Empire, Nobility was the Nobility and the Sects were the sects. There should not have been too many relationships between them, but with the appearances of junior brother Lin, it made Ye Qingyu realise that his previous way of thinking was absolutely wrong.

So the great noble families of the Empire, would also send their family members into the sects to learn.

Thinking of it right now, it seemed obvious and natural.

The laws of the empire had never restricted the noble families from joining into the sects. No matter for the sects or the noble families, the two joining together was absolutely a beneficial matter. The benefits and relationships were deeply intertwined. The sects had strong top level experts, while the noble families had status within the Empire and power. Exchanging these powers, meant that both parties could benefit and gain even more.

Ye Qingyu realised, that the matters of the upper echelons of the Empire, were far more complicated than he had imagined.

This time the Empire had summoned the people of the sects to aid the Youyan army to launch their spring offence. The reason behind this, may be countless times more complicated than what he, Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan had first thought.

Only until seeing that the far off scholarly military officer was fine, could Ye Qingyu rest assured. This time he left for real.

The reason that he had not appeared, was that Ye Qingyu understood that he had an attribute to harvest animosity. According to the personality of the head of the supply department Zhang San, that would pay back all that he suffered, everyone that had a relationship with him would receive his vengeance. Therefore before he had solved the great trouble of Zhang San, Ye Qingyu could not be too close to anyone within Youyan Pass, to prevent him from bringing them calamity.

Of course, apart from Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan.

On the way back Ye Qingyu had already been called over for inspection several times by the patrolling soldiers.

After the demon race had come during the day, the restrictions and curfew of the night became even stricter. For normal soldiers and civilians, without a military order they were forbidden from walking on the streets. If they travelled in the streets during these times, they would instantly be arrested and interrogated. Thankfully Ye Qingyu right now could be counted as the nobility of the empire, and was not restrained by the nighttime curfew. After inspection and interrogation, the soldiers respectfully let him go.

Within the streets of darkness, there was an air of tragedy and hatred emanating.

Ye Qingyu knew very clearly, that after experiencing what had happened during the day, no matter whether it was the Youyan army or the civilians of the city, the hatred towards the demon race had risen to an entirely new level. There was a fire lit which added on the hatred between the demon and human race. The spring time offensive of the Empire, unquestionably would receive even greater support by the citizens.

But the greatest problem was not here.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, turned in the direction of the Pass Lord's residence far off.

The injuries of the battle god of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaohe, just how was it?

This was the greatest factor that decided the battle power of Youyan army as well as their efficiency.

But such a matter, even with Ye Qingyu's status and identity today, he could not enter.

On the way, Ye Qingyu could not but help think about Song Xiaojun yet again.

Once this name leapt out from his mind, Ye Qingyu's lips would subconsciously curl in an easy smile that even he would not notice. His mood rapidly turned for the better.

He had finally seen the little loli again, and knew how she was doing. Although he had not spoken to her, but as long as he had a clue, everything could be worked on.

The most pressing matter, was to rapidly raise his own strength.

The cooperation of the little loli with the demon race, held no difference to plotting to take the skin of the tiger. The reappearance of the City of Darkness, would ultimately decide the fact that she would suffer countless dangers and assassinations. For this, Ye Qingyu must make sure, that the next time she appeared in front of him, he must have enough strength to protect her.

As his thoughts were running in circles, he very quickly arrived back to Youyan Pass.

Bai Yuanxing had already returned early, but he still had not yet slept and was painstakingly training the sword. Hearing that Ye Qingyu had returned, he quickly came out to pay his greetings. Ye Qingyu smiled and looked at him, giving him some pointers on the problems he had encountered on his cultivation and telling him to return to training and not care about him.

Very quickly, Mother Wu brought a midnight meal up.

Ye Qingyu's stomach began gurgling. After being busy for the entire day, he was really hungry.

"It's been hard on you Mother Wu." Ye Qingyu looked at the exquisite dishes in front of him, and could not help but devour it in large bites.

Mother Wu was somewhat shocked by the compliment, rushing to say: "This is something your servant should do."

Ye Qingyu smiled, asking again: "The injuries of your husband....."

"It's quickly getting better, it's quickly getting better. Thank you for

your kindness my lord, I've already asked a doctor to treat him, and the best medicine were used. My man's life is lowly, it is not so valuable, so he is recovering rapidly. He can already walk around....." As she spoke of this, Mother Wu was moved to tears.

She did not know, that Ye Qingyu had treated her family so generous, was because he had a reason.

That day, in the midst of despair, for Mother Wu to shoulder the blame alone, such bravery made Ye Qingyu open his eyes wide. Subconsciously, he had already treated her as one of his people.

"Just who else do you have in your family?" Ye Qingyu causally asked.

Mother Wu quickly replied. "Apart from my man, there is still a seventy year old grandmother. A boy and a girl, both half grown children that are working as helpers in the shops in the city....Ever since I came to the White Horse tower, the life of our family has gotten much better. When the others learnt that I work in White Horse tower, they are very envious. The enemies that used to make things hard on me, right now does not dare to do so anymore."

As she spoke of this, Mother Wu's grinned delightedly.

She suddenly felt, that her life was really great.

# Chapter 203: Refining the Origin Crystal

Ye Qingyu had only casually conversed with Mother Wu, but Mother Wu was already deeply grateful. She felt that her impulsive decision to look for work in the market was really too correct.

Thinking back, that day she did not know just what kind of urge took her. After she finished her midday meal, she went to the marketplace to find something to do. This was her first time going to the marketplace, so she was somewhat nervous. She waited in a cranny somewhere, not daring to bawl and shout to advertise herself like other people. She was just about to return with a dejected face when she met Master Ye. At that time, she felt Master Ye was still somewhat too young and not reliable. Who would have guessed.....

This had really made their family hold their heads up high.

In these days, she and her man had nearly been beaten alive by the supply department over the soldiers pay incident and was wrongly accused. However, because of this incident, nearly the majority of Youyan Pass knew that Marquis Ye would protect and aid them, not even caring about offending the leaders of the Supply Department. With such a powerful and glorious Marquis protecting them, who would dare bully them anymore?

Mother Wu knew, that to extend such good times, she must think of a way to remain within White Horse tower.

Marquis Ye liked the food she made.

To make the marquis even more satisfied, apart from cleaning and tidying the White Horse tower these days, Mother Wu would go and polish her repertoire of dishes.

She even went to the nearby restaurants to secretly learn. Afterwards, when she was recognised, and they knew that she was one of the people of the Marquis Ye that was in the current spotlight, they did not dare to do anything to her. There were even several owners of the restaurants that passed on the order for them to allow Mother Wu to learn from the



kitchens. Of course, they hoped that they could be able to connect to Ye Qingyu, the new noble of Youyan Pass through the link of Mother Wu.

After a while, the culinary skills of Mother Wu really became greater and greater.

Today Ye Qingyu had casually asked her a few questions. This already made Mother Wu feel that she had received a great reward for the sacrifices she had made in these days.

After Ye Qingyu had finished, she carefully stowed away the dishes and left, shutting the door after her. She did not dare to disturb him any further.

In the room.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, thinking that he had really hired the right person.

At least until right now, Mother Wu's performance had exceeded his initial expectations. Under the management of Mother Wu, everything was neat and orderly in White Horse tower. It was numerous times better compared to when Bai Yuanxing was managing and tidying it. Furthermore, Bai Yuanxing could spend even more time cultivating. Although he had average talent, but his status was still the White Horse sword slave. He needed a certain level of martial strength to support this, so he needed to put even more efforts in training.

After finishing his evening meal and having a wash, his entire body felt comfortable.

Ye Qingyu went to the quiet room on the fourth floor, beginning to cultivate.

After the experiences today, Ye Qingyu felt particularly relaxed in terms of his spirit and mentality.

He very quickly entered into a blank state of mind, practicing in the nameless heart sutra his father had passed on, and entering into a state of blankness like an old monk. Moonlight shone from the window, causing his white robes to be like jade, his face like frost. It was as if everything

was within a painting.

This nameless breathing heart sutra had a crucial part to play on Ye Qingyu's martial path.

Ninety nine percent of Ye Qingyu's yuan qi cultivation was established on the foundation of this mysterious breathing technique.

In the cemetery of the Snow dragons, the mysterious illusive figure that had slumbered for millions of years had spoken about the secrets behind this technique. This heart sutra seemed as if it had been created for Ye Qingyu – apart from him, it was suitable for no one to cultivate in. Apart from making Ye Qingyu greatly shocked, it also raised his evaluation and expectation of the nameless heart sutra to a whole new level. The same as before, he would spend even more time cultivating in the nameless heart sutra.

The effect of a inner yuan heart sutra was to increase the yuan qi of the martial artist.

This was the origin of the yuan qi of a martial artist. For people under the Bitter Sea stage, fundamentally one relied on absorbing the spirit qi within heaven and earth into one body, refining it for your own use. The profoundness of a martial heart sutra, determined the speed and quality at which a martial artist absorbed spirit qi. On some perspective, the nameless heart sutra was definitely a divine class cultivation technique. At least from Ye Qingyu's perspective, there was a type of power where it simplified the great Dao into something easily grasped.

After long years of cultivating in the nameless heart sutra, it had already become instinct for Ye Qingyu's body. Breathing in and out, became as natural as drinking water or sleeping. His entire person entered into a blank state of mind where he forgot himself. His body was like an intricate formation array that functioned automatically.

The three and six billion pores on his body all completely opened, absorbing yuan qi of heaven and earth.

Miniscule little yuan qi vortexes that only top class experts could sense constantly began appearing on the surface layer of Ye Qingyu's body like

scales on a dragon's body. These miniscule vortexes gathered, ultimately completely surrounding Ye Qingyu's body, forming an invisible forcefield vortex. Air began distorting visibly around Ye Qingyu's figure.

Also encircling around his body at the same time, were twenty illusive figures of the snow dragons.

Ever since Ye Qingyu had absorbed the aura of the Snow Dragon King and grasped how to control ice yuan qi, there would be silver illusive figures of snow dragons appearing, bringing with it a faint draconic pressure. Before even exchanging blows with opponents far below his strength, this ice qi and dragon race pressure was already enough to make his enemy crumble.

These twenty illusive snow dragon illusions, through Ye Qingyu's training, became more and more solid and lifelike. It was as if there really were divine dragons protecting his body, traversing through his body, through his limbs and bones, through his meridians.

Gradually, Ye qingyu's entire body was covered by silver and ice qi.

Every time each snow dragon projection travelled throughout his body, this was a cycle.

Once the twenty snow dragon illussions had all travelled throughout his body, this was a great cycle.

This was a process that refined and transformed yuan qi from heaven and earth into his own personal yuan qi for his own use. This was also a process where it changed the foundation of a body. Every time a martial artist broke through a realm, their longevity would also increase similarly. It was through such a long and arduous process of refining one's physical body that ultimately caused a qualitative change in one's body.

Time passed minute by second.

Two hours later.

Ye Qingyu gradually opened his eyes.

He felt his entire person was refreshed and clear.

His time to practice his heart sutra had already ended.

Sensing the increased yuan qi in his body, Ye Qingyu lightly nodded his head.

Perhaps it was due to his mood being entirely free from worry, the effects of training was even greater than usual. At this time, the yuan qi in his body was like a roiling great river, already reaching the peak of the twenty Spirit springs. As long as he took a little step forward, this was the realm of the twenty one Spirit springs.

But such a rate of progress could no longer make Ye Qingyu satisfied.

He knew that his cultivation speed was already universally astonishing. He also knew that the martial path needed to be slowly built from the ground up, and one could not hasten things. That would often lead to twice the effort for half the result, and could also lead to a state of qi disruption, causing all his efforts to be wasted. But today, seeing the strength of Song Xiaojun, as well as the battle between Yan Buhui, Lu Zhaoge, he had really been stimulated.

The battle that occurred between true top level experts, were like a scenery of a painting of a fight between a conflict between Fiendgods. The aura as if they could rule overall caused Ye Qingyu heart to yearn towards this.

This was the realm and power that martial artists truly yearned towards.

The Ye Qingyu right now could be said to be able to fight against ten thousand people, flying through the skies and burrowing through the earth. But the distance between his and the realms of Yan Buhui and the others were still too far.

Not able to possess the strength of a top level expert, it would be difficult for one to truly control one's own fates.

The things that happened during the day had caused too great a stimulation to Ye Qingyu.

He thought it over, making his decision.

Ye Qingyu took a white crystal that was the size of a fist from the [Cloud top cauldron] immersed within a Spirit spring within his dantian world. Its surface was like jade, pure and without imperfections, without the slightest impurity. In his hands, under the light of the quiet room, it emitted a faint radiance.

Origin crystal.

A true cultivation treasure of a martial artist.

Martial artists under the Bitter Sea stage could rely on absorbing the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth through their heart sutras. But once they were above the Bitter Sea stage, to want to absorb the spirit qi in Heaven and Earth and turn it into yuan qi into their body, this was somewhat hard to fulfill their needs to increase their cultivation level.

Because every little stage of the Bitter Sea stage needed a vast quantity of heaven and earth spirit qi. Only relying on the heart sutra to absorb this would expend far too great a length of time. The length of time needed was so long that even if you expended the large majority of your life, it was possible that you may not be able to absorb enough natural yuan qi for the need to level up.

Under such preexisting conditions, to want to go against Heaven and succeed, one needed to change their methods.

In this world, there were many problems, but there were even more ways of solving problem.

From ancient times, there were just how many people of the human race with intellect far surpassing and shocking their peers. Through luck and hardship, they finally managed to discover the path of cultivation. They opened a path of light step by step for the later generation amidst the thorny darkness. To want to solve the issue of cultivation after the Bitter Sea stage, there were largely four typical methods.

One of them was to borrow an external force. In this world, there was not a lack of the natural treasures of the world, holding the essence of

heaven and earth, of the sun and moon, with great energy contained within. Those who was able to possess these treasures, could take a further step in their path of cultivation. The second method was to create and use a formation array to gather and collect yuan qi of heaven and earth at its heart. The third was to find some places of fortune, that there were a naturally formed formation that caused the gathering of yuan qi, this would cause twice the results with half the effort. The fourth was to use the medicinal pill arts, harnessing the essences of spirit herbs for your own use.....

Apart from these fourth standard righteous methods, there were many other sinister methods. Stealing the yuan qi of someone, blood sacrifice, borrowing force etc. However these methods were not righteous after all, and shunned by the martial world.

And right now the Origin crystal held in Ye Qingyu's hands was namely one of the treasure of heaven and earth.

The so called origin crystal was a strange material made from solidified natural yuan qi. Under some sort of special natural law and energy, they were formed, the same as many natural minerals, and extracted by intelligent life forms. They had extremely beneficial effects in terms of cultivation. The origin crystal was originally the cumulation of natural yuan qi, only only needed to refine and absorb it, and one could transform it into yuan qi in their own body.

This type of treasure was extremely rare and was therefore an extremely precious cultivation resource.

Normally speaking, the origin crystal mines were occupied and monopolised by countries, sects and other great forces.

In the past, even Chen Moyun, with his status as the [Azure Phoenix pill king], had only managed to collect several pounds of origin crystal after spending his entire life. In the process to refine Ye Qingyu, everything was used up, but it conversely caused Ye Qingyu's strength to exponentially increase. And right now, the origin crystal Ye Qingyu held, was one of the rewards of the Empire when he was bestowed with the

title of Marquis.

“This is a consumable item, it will be gone after using it. I originally wanted to save it for a crucial moment, but right now....”

Ye Qingyu thought it over, and then determinedly activated his yuan qi, refining the yuan qi in this piece and absorbing the energy within.

Under the activation of his inner yuan, this origin crystal that size of a fist, was like an incense that had been lit, emitting strand after strand of pure mist. Ye Qingyu utilised his nameless heart sutra, absorbing strand after strand of mist and absorbing into the body.

# Chapter 204: The three levels to the Pill Mantra

The mist entered into his body along with his breathing, transforming into pure energy that followed the twenty illusive snow dragons as they traversed a cycle throughout his body and bones. After every great cycle, it would turn into Ye Qingyu's inner yuan power, like the rivers returning to the ocean, entering into the desert world of his dantian.

This type of growth in his inner yuan, far, far exceeded the effect of any of his previous trainings.

As he breathed in and out, his inner yuan grew stronger every minute and second.

The origin crystal also gradually floated, hanging half a metre away from his face.

Countless clustered strands of silver mist like the tentacles of a octopus unendingly emitted and diverged from the origin crystal. With Ye Qingyu's breathing, they entered into his body. Very quickly, this origin crystal began constantly shrinking at a visible speed, as if it was a piece of ice under the scorching sun, being melted drop by drop.

In a time just under fifteen minutes.

Boom!

An invisible energy fluctuation came from Ye Qingyu's body.

Twenty one snow dragon figures, slowly apperared around Ye Qingyu.

There was the faint roars of dragons.

Twenty one Spirit springs.

When the twenty first snow dragon illusions first appeared, it was somewhat pale and unreal. But as Ye Qingyu breathed in and out, and the power of the origin crystal constantly entered into his body, this snow dragon became more and more solid and translucent. It became more and more nimble and lifelike, as if it had gained life and also began to emit a



faint draconic pressure.

Another fifteen minutes passed.

The twenty second snow dragon figure appeared.

Another fifteen minutes.

Twenty third....

After another two hours...

The snow dragon illusions around Ye Qingyu, had already grown to twenty five.

Every snow dragon illusion was like a true dragon. Dancing, flying and coiling, they protected Ye Qingyu within. They entered through his apertures, nose, mouth, eyes, cycling around his body, their speed like the flow of light. When they had reached its extreme speeds, it turned into a silver ring of light that emitted a true draconic pressure, protecting Ye Qingyu within.

At this time, there was an evident red that appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

The origin crystal floating in front of him, was only a quarter of its original size.

Slowly breathing out a mouthful of murky air, Ye Qingyu stopped practicing the nameless heart sutra, opening his eyes.

This origin crystal landed on his hands.

Ye Qingyu was in deep thought.

“No wonder it is the special material for the cultivation of Bitter Sea experts. In such a small piece of Origin crystal, there is such a vast amount of energy within. It has only been a couple of hours, but it also already allowed me to excavate five Spirit springs, comparable months of bitter training. My normal cultivation speed is already extremely rapid, if it were normal martial artist, this little piece of Origin crystal is equivalent to one or two years of their cultivation.”

In truth, for his cultivation to grow at such a rapid pace, made Ye Qingyu also feel somewhat shocked.

Ever since practicing martial arts, his greatest increase in strength came after the [Azure Pill king] Chen Moyun had captured him and stuffed him in the [Cloud top cauldron] to refine him into a human pill. As a consequence, he had absorbed the hundred grass divine liquid, realising the exponential breathing in his strength and ultimately killed Chen Moyun.

The piece of origin crystal just now, was about double the size of the origin crystal that Chen Moyun had placed within the [Cloud top cauldron].

“Even though the origin crystal is great, I cannot not absorb it without limit. My strength can absolutely be counted as number one among the martial artist at the same realm as me. But after continuously absorbing the power of the Origin crystal for several hours, with the energy passing through my meridians, I can already feel that the meridians are unbearably swollen. Evidently the increase in energy, has exceeded the limits what I can normally bear. I need to slowly adjust, before I can begin absorbing for the second time!”

Ye Qingyu understood in his heart.

The reason as to why he had halted his cultivation was that after the power of the origin crystal had unendingly entered into his body, his meridians already felt somewhat bruised and swollen ever since opening the twenty fifth Spirit spring. It was like someone’s stomach bursting at the seams after eating too much. If he continued cultivating in such a way, it would danger the meridians in his body, becoming imperfect.

“No wonder the origin crystal is the culmination of the yuan qi of heaven and earth. For Bitter Sea experts to fight over this, it really is a great treasure.”

Ye Qingyu was exceedingly satisfied towards the results of his cultivation today.

Stowing away the little Origin crystal piece into the [Cloud top

cauldron] for preservation, Ye Qingyu was somewhat anxious.

“If I had the support of enough Origin crystal, I can absolutely enter into the Bitter Sea stage within two of three years, leaping into the realm of top level experts in one go. At that time, I will have the status and power to aid Xiaojun, and can also preemptively think of a method to enter into the altar of the imperial family of Snow empire, and solve the mystery my father left before he died.”

Ye Qingyu was incomparably expectant.

But the problem was, the origin crystal treasure was really far too rare.

For the entire Snow Empire, this was a strategical class resource of the Empire. The origin crystal mines had already been divided cleanly between all the major forces in Snow Empire. The large majority was held by the Empire, with only the imperial family of the Empire able to use it. Ye Qingyu was bestowed with the title of Marquis but he was only given an unprecedented tiny piece. Even if it was a great figure like the [War God of Youyan] Lu Zhaoge, he would not be supplied with an unlimited supply, not to mention Ye Qingyu.

Just what should he do?

The Ye Qingyu who had experienced the sweet taste of the Origin crystal, wanted even more of it.

But no matter how he thought, there were not any methods for him to obtain a suitable amount of Origin crystal.

If he was not able to obtain Origin crystal, then could he not consider obtaining some sort of substitute? Just what kind of material could replicate the cultivation effects of the Origin crystal? Even if the effects were a little worse, it was still passable?

Wait a moment?

Substitute?

Ye Qingyu's eyes suddenly brightened, thinking of the pill formula the old doctor Li Shizen had left behind.

The contents of the pill formula, had already firmly engraved within Ye Qingyu's consciousness. The contents of this pill formula, was it not namely a pill that could aid a martial artist in increasing his inner yuan?

Damn it.

Arriving in Youyan Pass for so long, he had been kept busy by various matters, not stopping to think and consider at all. Ye Qingyu had nearly completely forgotten this matter.

He carefully recalled the contents of the pill formula.

"That characters of this pill formula, is unquestionably the characters of the God and Devil age. The names of the ingredients, some I have heard before, but there is some that I have never ever encountered the name....." Ye Qingyu thought over it carefully. He had some sort of knowledge towards refining pills and the like, because he had carefully paid attention when he was within White Deer academy and research. But compared to true pill masters, the distance was far, far too great. He could only be said to have taken in knowledge without even understanding half of it."

But this could not obstruct the determination for Ye Qingyu to refine and produce this pill.

Instead of relying on the heavens, on the earth, on other people, he should rely on himself.

Ye Qingyu thought it over, then took out the [Pill mantra] he had found on the corpse of Chen Moyun. there were marginal notes of the [Azure Pill king] Chen Moyun held within. It could absolutely be counted as the dictionary of the Pill path that many normal pill masters dreamt about. Ye Qingyu decided to use this [Pill mantra] as his foundation, and slowly begin to experiment and practice.

Opening the first page of the [Pill mantra], there were columns of cinnabar red character written on it.

"There are three main classes of the Dao of the Pill. The first is the Medicine Pill, the second is the Spirit Pill and the third is the Dao Pill.

The Medicine Pill is the foundation; such pills must have medicinal attributes. This is the most common pill; for such an ordinary pill, ingesting it can cure hundreds of poisons and illnesses, formed from the essences of herbs and plants. For the Spirit Pill, the Pill has a soul and spirit, and it is not a simple Pill. There are many profoundness with such a pill, with the ability to transform the lives of lifeforms. And as for the Dao Pill, is known as the greatest among Pills. It could transform the nature of Heaven and Earth, from the high Nine Heavens, to the yellow springs below. It is the function of the great Dao, it is between the sun and the moon, within the stars in the sky. It is immortal and everlasting!”

This was the opening paragraph of the Pill mantra.

Ye Qingyu mulled it over, comprehending the meaning held within.

In other words, according to the division of classes, pills could be split into Medicine Pills, Spirit Pills and Dao Pills. The medicine pills could be used to treat illnesses, Spirit Pills could be used to treat life threatening issues. And the Dao Pill was the incarnation of the laws of Heaven and Earth, with endless profoundness, containing the understanding of Heaven and Earth within.

He continued to read on.

What continued on was a very extensive explanation of all sorts of pills and medicines. Starting from the very basic and most foundational medicinal properties, this was the section for the Medicine Pills.

The first obstacle of this Pill section was to memories the list of herbs, and familiarise yourself with the medicinal properties, attributes and effects of all sorts of Spirit herbs and medicines. There were tens of thousands of voluminous words, along with clear and simple instruction. Within, there were also the notes of Chen Moyun, so it could be easily understood.

Ye Qingyu had an eidetic memory. As long as he read it over once or twice, he would firmly recall it.

Reaching this pil section, there was a explanation and reflection left behind Chen Moyun, containing all sorts of information.

But the large meaning behind this explanation was that he had bitterly researching this [Pill mantra] for countless years. He thought that he had an extremely deep knowledge about refining pills and could be ranked in the top three of the Azure Phoenix region. But even he could only refine Medicine Pills. After countless tries and effort, he could only manage to refine Spirit Pills at an incomplete state, and this was by pure coincidence and luck. After thinking it over, he could not make head or tails of this himself. As for the legendary Dao Pills, it was something he would not even dare to think about.

“So Chen Moyun could only refine Medicine Pills.....”

Ye Qingyu as slightly shocked, and obtained an even greater understanding of the classifications between the pills.

He continued to read on.

The next sections regarding the Spirit Pills as well as the Dao Pills were extremely simple and basic. It just roughly described what were Spirit Pills, what were Dao Pills, nearly repeating the opening paragraph of the [Pill mantra]. They it also roughly sketched out and gave examples of those legendary Spirit Pills and Dao Pills, but these were extremely rare instances. There were no value to knowing it.

Apart from feeling slightly disappointed, Ye Qingyu also felt that this was within the bounds of reason.

If in this [Pill mantra] there were clear instructions regarding the method to refine spirit pills and dao pills, then the skill of the [Azure Pill king] Chen Moyun, would not only stop at the stage of able to make Medicine Pills. He would also not make an transaction with Liu Yuancheng with such an important manual.

“Then I wonder, the pill formula the old man Li Shizen gave me, is it a pill formula for a medicine pill? Or is it the pill formula for a spirit pill?”

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He continued to carefully read over three or four times the [Pill mantra]. Confirming that he had firmly fixated the contents within into his mind,

after a slight thought, a surge of ice energy surged out from between his fingers. Then his hand clenched, crushing the pill book into miniscule powder, scattering through the air.

This pill mantra, was after all something belonging to Chen Moyun.

Right now, the death of Chen Moyun should have already become a mystery. If the Azure Phoenix academy pursued the whereabouts of the killer of Chen Moyun, and it was discovered he had a pill mantra on his body, it would most likely draw unnecessary trouble.

After arranging everything, there was already the faint white of dawn on the boundaries of the horizon.

One night had passed just like that.

Ye Qingyu rose, stretching his waist and yawning. he was about to lie down and rest, when suddenly the centre of his right palm began burning with an acute pain.

# Chapter 205: Within the Pass Lord's Residence

Pass Lord residence.

As one of the greatest buildings in Youyan Pass, this residence was not only intricately beautiful, but the walls were also the sturdiest. Although the lighting around there was not the most resplendent, but it was the most sacred place that countless people of Youyan Pass worshipped.

Because this place, was that person's home.

Ever since twenty years ago, when Lu Zhaoge had arrived in Youyan Pass and settled within this residence, he had never departed from this place – apart from when setting out to do battle.

To the tens of thousands of humans in Youyan Pass, the worlds strongest city walls, the most perfect formation arrays, the most powerful army, the sense of security these things brought could not even be compared to the emotions they felt when the figure of this person had appeared before them.

Lu Zhaoge, the War God of Youyan Pass.

The protection deity of Youyan Pass.

His power, had never even been questioned by anyone.

But the battle on that day, had caused a haze to cover many peoples hearts.

Yan Buhui's arrogant and exaggerated laughter, as well as that girl of flames that was said to come from the Unmoving city of Darkness. The words they left behind when they departed, made the entire army feel worry and anxiousness.

Perhaps this was a mistaken sensation, but when everyone regarded the Pass Lord's residence, they felt that compared to in the past, the security was even tighter and stricter.

And before the breaking of dawn, the figures leaving and departing from



the Pass Lord's residence were tens of times greater.

But because of the nightly curfew, the large majority of people were not aware of this fact.

There was a bamboo fenced courtyard in the rear courtyard of the Pass Lord's residence.

In this courtyard, there were five or six yellow wooden houses side by side.

The strategists of the military council pavilion, would appear before the wooden houses with grave expressions. They would converse and discuss in small voices, but they dared not raise their voices.

And in the platform of the largest wooden house at the centre, there were four middle aged men with coarse robes and roughly woven shoes. They all had brown short hair, the hair so stiff that it was like steel needles emitting a black light. Their facial expressions were as if it was carved with a blade, extremely firm and upright. Only the higher ups of the Youyan army were aware, that these were the strongest guards beside Lu Zhaoge, with unfathomable strength. If they were in the army, they had the martial strength to assume the role of a commander.

It was said that these four people were once the geniuses of the sects, but were recruited by Lu Zhaoge, bringing them at his side.

These four people had already not fought or acted for a very long time. And they would not speak with other people, as if they were natural born mutes. It was rumoured that these four, were completely immersed into the martial path, not wishing to be disturbed by outside matters, so they therefore closed off their senses to cultivate. Even the higher ups of the army, when facing these four people, would feel a pressure that was hard to describe using words.

Normally, these four people appeared very rarely, hiding within the Pass Lord's residence. Even if Lu Zhaoge set off for war, he would not bring them.

But today, for the four people to appear and protect the wooden house,

made the originally tense atmosphere even more unsettling for the other people.

Creak!

The little door of the wooden house opened.

Liu Yuqing walked out from within, his expression calm, standing on the platform.

Looking at the neat and orderly gazes cast at him, he let out a cough. "Commander Lu is fine, please, everyone return. The most pressing matter right now is for every department and section to maintain the functions of Youyan Pass. Commander Lu told me to tell everyone that he thanks everyone for their care. Three days later, Commander Lu will attend personally the first meeting for the planning of the Spring time offence. At that time, he hopes there will not be any oversights."

The people below, hearing such words, their expressions gradually settled.

"If it is like this, then we will first return."

"That's right, Commander Lu is fine, this is the fortune of the heavens....."

"Brother Liu is right. My comrades, there must not be any oversights. This is the greatest support we can give to commander Lu."

The surrounding people said these words with suppressed voices, then all gradually turned to leave.

There were some people still with questions in their heart. Liu Yuqing's position in the military council pavilion, was only a person who would evaluate and pass on the scrolls. This was not important position. In many of the strategies, he did not even play an evident role. Why was it this time, after Commander Lu had suffered a little injury, someone who would normally not be seen, would suddenly stand out?

At this time, many of the experienced people in the Pass Lord's residence, discovered with shock, that they had underestimated this

[Painting saint].

After seeing everyone leave, there was a trace of weariness that flashed by Liu Yuqing's face.

He turned to head back into the wooden house.

There were not any spatial formations within the house, and the furniture was somewhat sparse and tidy. Simple chairs, table, bed, and through the years of use had become somewhat yellow. In this sparse painting, there was a natural scent that floated through the air, causing one's spirit to feel at ease.

On the grass woven mat in the wooden house, Lu Zhaoge was currently sitting in a meditative position. His ten fingers formed seals, three blossom of invisible yuan qi flowers floated up and down. There was a pale smoke that constantly emitted from his body.

On his normally ordinary face, there was a strange red colour that constantly flickered, sometimes able to be seen but sometimes not.

If one stood at the door to look, it seemed as if this wooden house was incomparably calm.

But Liu Yuqing knew, that this was only an illusion.

If one approached one metre of Lu Zhaoge's body, there would be instantly a destructive energy that surged out. Even if it was an expert of the Bitter Sea stage, if they were hit by such energy fluctuations, they would instantly be heavily injured.

The Lu Zhaoge at this time, had already completely and fully activated his yuan power that was like that of a deity.

"Ever since the battle that year, I have never seen Lord Lu suffer such a serious injury." Liu Yuqing was somewhat worried in his head, silently waiting while sitting on a wooden chair.

Time passed minute by second.

One hour passed by.

The three yuan qi flowers near the head of Lu Zhaoge gradually sunk

down, entering into his temple. The white mist surrounding him, also slowly dispersed. The strange objects that could be seen in the clear illumination of the sunlight, also gradually sank on the grass woven mat on the floor.

The Youyan war god, slowly opened his eyes.

He lightly breathed out.

“Lord, how is it? There was happiness on Liu Yuqing’s face as he asked impatiently.

Lu Zhaoge lightly shook his head. He was about to say something, when he opened his mouth.--

“Pok!”

A jet of blood was spat out.

“Lord.....” Liu Yuqing was greatly shocked.

Lu Zhaoge waved his hands. “It doesn’t matter. The power of the curse of the demon race within the bone dagger of Yan Buhui cannot be erased so easily and quickly. And within the flames of the girl of darkness, there is the power of darkness. Through a moment’s lapse, these two types of powers have invaded inside my body. To want to get rid of it, I need to spend a great deal of effort....Haha, this time, Yan Buhui has really nearly succeeded.”

As he said this, his palm faintly extended and drew back in the air.

The blood that he had just spat out, suddenly behaved as if it was alive. Drop by drop, it moved automatically, gathering from the floor, the woven mat, and the wooden table and chairs, finally rising in the air and forming a scarlet red ball of light like a pearl. Dripping and flowing, it once again returned to the palm of Lu Zhaoge.

The impurities tainted in the blood, were instantly forced out.

This globe of blood was translucent like a crystal, exceedingly pure, and emitted a shred of strange radiance.

But if one observed in detail, one would observe line after line of strange

white patterns, that were coiled around it like poisonous cobras. There were also blotches of blackness that could faintly be seen.

“A terrifying curse like power. It should be an item that came from the royal court of the snow ground demon king.” Lu Zhaoge carefully observed the two strange powers within the blood, then let out a minute smile. “The curse of the snow ground demon court, is rumoured to have a terrible power that even deities fear. It’s rumours does indeed do it justice.”

The Liu Yuqing by the side did not know what to say.

Rumour does indeed do it justice?

The matter was already so grave. This Lord Lu really had a magnanimous attitude, with still such a mood to say such things. It was as if the person suffering from the curse was not himself but someone else.

“For two types of bizarre power to enter into my body, there is a certain degree of difficulty in getting rid of it. I need to spend a certain length of time.” Lu Zhaoge opened his mouth, swallowing the globe of blood.

The blood, flesh, bone and marrow of top level experts, were similar to the natural treasures of heaven and earth. They contained powerful energy within. If they lost skin and flesh, this would also damage their yuan power. Furthermore, this type of blood would not decay for a hundred years, and it contained the power of the curse as well as the flames of darkness. It could easily cause destruction, harming other living forms if it were left rampant.

“If I am ultimately unable to get rid of these two demonic powers in my body, then I’m afraid that.....” Lu Zhaoge thought it over. “I fear I will delay the Spring time offence of the army. If I cannot do this in time, I think there will be a need for a new commander for the Youyan army.”

Liu Yuqing hearing this, was utterly shocked. He stood up in an instant, his mouth wide open. He did not know what to say.

With Lu Zhaoge’s ability, to say such words, one could tell that he had

no confidence this time of really passing this trial .The power of the curse as well as the flames of darkness, was it really terrifying to this degree?

“How could this be, great commander you...” Liu Yuqing did not know what he could say.

Lu Zhaoge smiled slightly, suppressing the strange power in his body. “Don’t worry for me. This time that demon race has formed an alliance with the Unmoving City of Darkness, it was greatly disadvantageous for us. On that day, I wanted to find out more, but it is a pity the new king of the Unmoving City of Darkness was not willing to speak. But she said the words ‘transaction’ – I hope that means the demon race and the Unmoving City of Darkness has not really allied together. They should not have a reason to join forces.”

As he spoke to here, he said again: “If the item that I need, the Imperial family can bring it in time, then perhaps I can solve the problem of my body before the Spring time offence. Otherwise.....”

Liu Yuqing hearing this, had a flicker of rage in his face “Could it be those fellows, would not care about the greater picture at all? They would dare make difficulties on this matter for commander Lu, you? Are they crazy?”

Lu Zhaoge smiled slightly “For those who dream about dismantling the Youyan army, is this not a great opportunity? I think they will not have such an easier chance ever again.”

Remaining silent for a moment, he then said: “That’s right, I’ve heard the six great sects have already sent their experts to within the Pass?”

# Chapter 206: Chaotic signs

Liu Yuqing nodded his head. "The [Dragon Whip] Jing Qiming of the Violet Seven Stars sect, the Li Qiushui of the Crepe Myrtle sect, the Quan Zhendong of the Setting Sun and Great River sect, the Wang Yifeng of the Deer Cauldron sect already came to Youyan Pass last night. Zhao Shanhe of the Dragon Tiger sect, the Qin Zhishui of the Matchless Blade city should arrive approximately of this afternoon. These are the top level expert of the new generation in the top six sects. Their arrival, will signify that Youyan Pass is about to be busy."

Lu Zhaoge nodded his head. "The people of the sects, think of themselves highly. Their strength and talent is exceptional, but the more this is so, the more that they will not be so obedient when they arrive here. If there are none in the army that can suppress them, there will be many troubles..... Siufeng and the others cannot disregard their status to suppress them.... If we cannot make do, then I will have to trouble the person beside you."

"You mean..... fine, it seems from the current situation, we can only do this." Liu Yuqing nodded his head.

"After so many years, we still cannot produce a young genius in the Youyan army. Could it be that only the sects can produce a young top level expert?" Lu Zhaoge sighed for a while. "In the past, they could not even accommodate Yan Buhui, leading to such a painful consequence today..... Yuqing, do you think I still have a chance to make things right for the things that happened in the past?"

Liu Yuqing did not say anything.

The Lu Zhaoge today, was different from other days. The him that cultivated in the emotionless heart sutra, should not have such regrets and worries.

The matters in the past, many people were able to guess as to just what has happened. Yan Buhui was originally fated to die, but ultimately was able to live on. The reverse occurred instead of destroying him root and

branch. This originally was the greatest humiliation ever since the Youyan army was founded, but very many people knew, that this humiliation should not be borne by the Youyan army. In the sure kill plan, just how was Yan Buhui able to live on, became the greatest mystery of the core forces that had participated in this matter in the past.

But hearing the words of Yan Buhui and Lu Zhaoge today, it was very likely that some people could already find the answer.

Even though Liu Yuqing did not know why Lu Zhaoge said such words, but with Lu Zhaoge's wisdom, there must be a very deep meaning contained within.

As to why they Youyan army still could not produce true young top level experts, and still relied on these old people to support the Pass, this matter was far too complicated. Lu Zhaoge may not know the true reason behind this, so he only just sighed. There were some matters that even if you know the truth behind it, it was still very hard to change.....

However, it was untrue that there was not a true genius that had appeared.

Liu Yuqing suddenly thought of a name.

He was about to speak, when he heard Lu Zhaoge continue on "Oh, that's right, that Ye Qingyu.....how do you feel about him?"

Liu Yuqing let out a faint smile, he was just about to mention this name. He instantly nodded his head: "Great potential."

"Great potential?" Lu Zhaoge glanced at Liu Yuqing, saying with a smile "Mister Liu rarely gives such a straightforward evaluation of a person. It seems like this Ye Qingyu suits your appetite really well. At the beginning, the military department let out a direct order for this youth to come to the army, without any input from the Youyan army to assume the role of the patrolling sword envoy. I originally thought, this matter would be very complicated, but I did not think....."

"That's right, I originally also assumed that was so. But after the investigation of the experts of the [Shadow Camp], I've found out that his



background is completely clean. There is also the news, that this order, came directly from within the Imperial palace.....” Liu Yuqing said “Perhaps it is us that turned a simple matter into something complicated. This youth possesses a heroic military badge, he originally is someone that deserves trust.”

Lu Zhaoge nodded his head “Your words are right, I feel that he is an excellent talent. It is only his temperament that is somewhat rash and straightforward. His strength and temperament somewhat does not match. I originally wanted to give him great responsibility, but I fear that his personality is too forceful, and will provoke too many people. This will conversely be bad for him, and cause his path to end early and cause harm to him instead. The example of Yan Buhui, is evident.”

Liu Yuqing did not say anything.

Lu Zhaoge’s evaluation was reasonable. The way Ye Qingyu did things did not allow for any bend in it. Even facing Zhang San, this huge figure, he chose to fight hard with hard. Although the end result was something that was outside of everyone’s expectations, but the way he did things, made Liu Yuqing sweat for this young hero.

“If his strength can take a step forward, then right now he can assume more responsibility.” Lu Zhaoge smiled. “In truth, my expectations for him is still high. This little fellow, is a sharp sword, as long as we grind and polish it, his future will arrive soon.”

“But the time given to us, is becoming less and less. A pity. If Ye Qingyu appeared ten years before..... no, five years, or even three, he can bear even more.....time does not wait for us.” Liu Yuqing sighed.

Lu Zhaoge nodded his head, and was about to say something when he let out a shocked exclamation.

The colour of his face changed, turning to look at the window outside.

“What is it?” Liu Yuqing’s expression was perplexed.

“Somewhat interesting.” There was a trace of curiosity on Lu Zhaoge’s face. “On the battle that day, I lost a drop of blood. Afterwards I sensed

carefully, and discovered it was lost. I can faintly sense it's existence, but if I examine in detail there are no traces at all. This is really too curious."

"There's such a thing?" Liu Yuqing was utterly shaken.

With Lu Zhaoge's strength, even if a strand of his hair fell, he could be able to find it from hundreds of miles his way. His consciousness and senses were so strong that if he used his full strength, the entire Youyan Pass was an area within his control. Within his blood, there was his power and spirit held within. Even if it was taken by someone, he would be able to sense it. To think such a strange matter would occur?

"This is even more interesting. Just now, I can faintly sense, that the power of the curse and the flames of darkness in that droplet of blood, has been extinguished by a little." There was a strange colour on Lu Zhaoge's face. "Someone has obtained that drop of blood, and even resolved the cursed power within the blood. This matter, is really too perplexing."

Liu Yuqing hearing this, fell into deep thought. "If we are able to find this person, if this person is someone of the human race, then does this not mean.... the injuries of great commander, can be fully healed?"

Lu Zhaoge nodded his head, then shook his head. "The problem is, this person is too hard to find. My senses unexpectedly cannot determine the position of his body. There is a mysterious power that has shrouded his aura from me. I can be sure that he is in the North East direction..... Yuqing, it seems we have made an oversight. That there is such an expert within Youyan Pass, but we were not able to discover him."

Liu Yuqing's expression had a graveness in his shock. Nodding his head, he said "I will go investigate."

.....

.....

White Horse tower.

The sweat on Ye Qingyu's face, fell drop by drop.

He looked at his own palm.

That bizarre droplet of blood, once again settled down.

Approximately an hour ago, when there was an acute pain in his palm, Ye Qingyu discovered that there was a bizarre energy fluctuation in the strange blood that had merged and immersed within his palm. It was as if there were poisonous vines growing everywhere, that was growing from within the blood and was madly invading into his own body.

Thankfully Ye Qingyu activated the Supreme ice flame at the first instant. Only by doing this, could he suppress this bizarre energy down.

There really was something strange with that droplet of blood.

“Thankfully a quarter of this strange power has already been extinguished by my [Supreme Ice flame]. The remainder has also become honest.....” Ye Qingyu looked at his palm, feeling somewhat depressed. Just what was this, if this blood suddenly acted up at a crucial moment, it was definitely life threatening.

But the problem was, when it was not acting up, Ye Qingyu had no way of utilising the Supreme Ice flame to extinguish and eradicate it.

“In this blood, there are in total three types of energy. One is the original power of the blood, it is comparatively pure and calm. The other is that with demonic power, and there is another scarlet scorching energy. The latter two energies are not too friendly, with an extremely destructive power.....”

Ye Qingyu carefully recalled the sensations just now.

He faintly felt, that he had seen that dim red scorching power before.

“I must be careful in the future, and must quickly get rid of this drop of blood. Otherwise, there will be a great problem.” Ye Qingyu had trepidation in his heart.

.....

.....

In the next few days after this, the activities to scout out and kill the

demon race within Youyan Pass became more and more intense.

The demon race had out of the blue invaded Youyan Pass. It was as if this incident had lit a flame that could not be controlled.

This flame began madly burning and raging throughout the entire Youyan Pass. The experts of the army searched for the demon race everywhere. Those citizens who had lost their families because of the demon race, as well as the Jinaghu people who became motivated by the monetary rewards, also participated in this mad operation to search and hunt the demon race out.

Those people who had lived for tens of years, felt that there was nothing they could do.

Because when they awoke, they would suddenly receive the notice, that their own neighbour, the people that they know, the people they had conversations with..... the people that were once very familiar with them, were demons in disguise.

There were many people that did not dare believe this. To think that the Pass that had been cultivated painstakingly by the Youyan army ,that there were so many spies of the demon race hidden within.

Everyday, there would be spies of the demon race that would be discovered. They would be placed on the beheading demon platforms to be killed, and the bloody head and corpse would be held in the steel cages as an example.

This blood smell, permeated throughout Youyan Pass.

If at the start, this operation was controlled normally within its area, then as time passed on, as the bloody smell spread throughout everywhere, with some people with particular motives began fanning the flames, this situation became madder and madder. It was as if everyone's eyes were covered and smothered by fresh blood, there was only killing in their eyes.....

There were even some signs of robbery during a fire.

Within Youyan Pass, there was an unprecedented chaotic situation that

appeared.

Although the army had arrested some people that were taking advantage of the situation, but the chaoticness of the Pass did not stop because of this.

Some of the Jianghu people, also began swaggering in the large roads. They had unfriendly expressions as they stared at the people passing by. Once they discovered something suspicious, they would instantly rush to interrogate them, as if they were a pack of rabid dogs. There were all sorts of posters and formation tools in their hands, with a scorching light burning in their eyes.

...

# Chapter 207: Gilded Invitation

Youyan Pass became unprecedentedly agitated.

Very many people felt a trepidation that came just before the arrival of a disaster. This was especially so as more and more Jianghu people arrived to the Pass. There were even times, that the army and the Jianghu people would have conflict with each other, and with fights breaking out within the city. Even the internal structure of the Jianghu people were not absolutely united. Different sects had different motives and schemes. There were some sects that originally had enmities between them and they brought these grudges along with them to Youyan Pass.

Using the light of blades and the shadow of swords to describe this period of time in Youyan Pass was absolutely perfect.

The disciplines and rigid rules that the Youyan army had taken so long to establish, seemed as if it was about to be broken by something.

In these days, Ye Qingyu spent the large majority of his time within the White Horse tower. Apart from trying to erase that strange drop of blood in his palm earlier, he spent the rest of his time understanding and investigating the contents of the [Pill mantra]. He was also accustoming himself to the increase in energy within his body. Ye Qingyu was not in a hurry to refine the little piece of Origin crystal that was left down.

Of course, Ye Qingyu was also concerned with the developments in the city.

There were even two or three times, that there were people with blind eyes that came to incite trouble at the White Horse tower. Bai Yuanxing scolded and chased them away, holding Ye Qingyu's military seal. As the saying goes, the fame of a person is like the shadow of a tree. Ye Qingyu was after all a Marquis that had been titled by the Empire through his contributions. He only exhibited his claws and fangs, and this bunch of Jianghu people did not dare provoke him anymore.

But the problem was, even the White Horse tower experienced such confrontations. One could imagine, just how chaotic the other places of

the city were.

In these days, when Mother Wu went to purchase food, she would also tremble and quiver slightly.

Ye Qingyu thought it over for a while, then told Mother Wu to just bring her entire family to stay within White Horse tower so she could look after them. After all, apart from the four levels of the White Horse tower, there were also some courtyards and space that were completely empty. If there were some people inhabiting here, it would be better than the lonely state right now. The Ye Qingyu who had come from a poor district, preferred the huster and buster of the streets and alleys.

Mother Wu's family naturally thanked him for his grace, quickly rushing to move in overnight.

Ye Qingyu originally still wanted to head towards the Vanguard to find the little brother of the armoured sentry. But it was a pity that Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan were completely busy these days, with rarely any free time available. Without the aid of mad tiger Wen, if Ye Qingyu went by himself in search for him, he would not find him anytime soon. Therefore, he could only wait patiently for a couple more days.

From the news coming from all channels, the piece of information that made the mood of everyone grave, was that the Youyan War God Lu Zhaoge did not appear in the first great meeting of the Spring time offence of the Youyan army. The people that were originally worried about his injuries, became even more and more anxious.

In these tens of years, this was the first time that the War God of Youyan Pass had not attended such an important military discussion.

From all sorts of signs, the injuries that Lu Zhaoge suffered, was most likely not as light as the most optimistic estimates were. Furthermore, there were constantly strange rumours that travelled out. The surface of these waves were already crashing within Youyan Pass, but the hidden currents were even more terrifying. There were higher ups of the army who tried to suppress this, but the effect was no longer as evident as before.

Apart from this, it was rumoured that the leaders of the younger generation of the top three sects and top three factions within the Empire had already appeared within Youyan Pass. It instantly caused a large swathe of discussion. There were many Jianghu people, and even normal citizens, who had long heard of the feats of these young people of the sects, that wanted to catch a glimpse of their true appearance.

There were rumours that the Li Qiushui of the Crepe Myrtle sect had already sent out invitations. He invited all the heroes within the sects in Youyan Pass, to gather a month later. He wanted to host a Murim meeting that belonged to the people of the sects and Jianghu. They wanted to elect a Murim leader, to rule over the forces of the Jianghu in Youyan pass, so that they could cooperate more easily with the army.

“This is completely ridiculous.” When Ye Qingyu heard this news, he was between laughter and tears. “When the Empire sent out the summons, the terms were already extremely clear. If the Jianghu people listened to the enlistment, and came to serve in Youyan Pass, the rules set from the beginning was that the sects would obey military orders and the Youyan army will lead. And now these people want to create a Jianghu leader, to negotiate with the army, could it be that their brains are not working? A bunch of retards that does not know anything about military warfare, to want to wrest leadership from the military, could they be even more impervious to reason than this?”

Ten days later.

Being confined for so long in the White Horse tower, and his cultivation had temporarily entered into a plateau, Ye Qingyu decided to relax his mood by visiting various parts of the city. As well as doing this, he could seek the supplies of the ingredients he needed for his pills. He was already preparing to create a Pill.

Spring time arrived.

The accumulated snow in Youyan Pass began to melt. Within the vision of everyone, they were able to see blotches of green.

The sun above their heads also became warm, but there was still a



shivering cold in the air.

Ye Qingyu came out alone.

But after exiting a hundred metres from the White Horse tower, he was slightly taken aback.

Nan Hua with a body hugging purple robe, had a large smile as she walked out from the tea restaurant, heading towards Ye Qingyu.

“Marquis Ye, we meet again.” Nan Hua came to in front of Ye Qingyu, greeting him as if they were old friends. This tight fitting dress, completely complemented her perfect figure. As a woman, she had an extreme figure, with long legs, a slim waist. She was slightly higher than the average woman, her skin white like jade, with well distributed proportions. The parts that were convex were convex and the parts that were concave were concave. Her hair was like a black waterfall. And because she had constantly practiced martial arts ever since she was small, there was a heroic spirit that one could hardly see on a normal girl. This easily roused a man’s desire to conquer her.

In the illumination of the morning sun, it was as if every strand of Nan Hua’s hair was flickering with a golden light.

She believed that she was very beautiful at this moment.

Because she was able to sense, that there was a sense of shock in Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

But the next words Ye Qingyu asked, made her feel rage and defeat at the same time.

“You are?” Ye Qingyu frowned as he asked.

To have forgotten me?

He really did not manage to remember me?

Nan Hua grinded her teeth, then said with a faint smile “Nan Hua, a Crepe Myrtle sect disciple. Marquis Ye, we have already met a few times before in the Breeze and Drizzle building.”

“Oh.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head, then directly asked: “What do you

want me for?”

Nan Hua pursed her lips together, then gave off a wronged smile: “Can I not find you if I have nothing to do?”

“You have nothing to do, but I do.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head: “Then....Bye.”

Saying this, he completely stepped past Nan Hua, striding away.

With such a young and beautiful girl flirting with him, Ye Qingyu naturally would not reject since the vanity in his heart had received the greatest satisfaction. But without knowing exactly why, Ye Qingyu had an instinctive adverse reaction towards this girl called Nan Hua of the Crepe Myrtle sect. The he who had a photographic memory, of course remembered just who this Nan Hua was. Previously when he had pretended not to remember her, was because he did not want to have any relations with her.

Nan Hua was stunned.

She was really angered. She was used to men chasing after her, just when had she suffered such a sight?

This Ye Qingyu, just what did he mean?

Could it be that he did not like women?

Or was it.... she had to loosen the reins, in order to control him better?

Fiercely stomping on the ground, the smile on her face retreated. Nan Hua turned around, her hand flicking and a ray of golden light flew out towards the back of Ye Qingyu. “One month later, in the Youyan restaurant, the Li Qiushui of the Crepe Myrtle sect as well as everyone of the Jianghu, waits for the arrival of Marquis Ye.”

Saying this, she left in a fit of rage.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, catching this ray of golden light.

It was a gilded invitation.

Opening the invitation to have a look, the name Li Qiushui was at the

very forefront. This was an invitation inviting Ye Qingyu to attend a Muriam Jianghu meeting. Apart from the name of Li Qiushui, there were also numerous names written on it. They should be the famous characters of the sects within the Empire.

“This is really strange. I am not someone of the sects, why must they give me an invitation?”

Ye Qingyu was somewhat nonplussed.

He stowed away the invitation, not able to determine the meaning behind these people of the sects.

As to whether he would attend, he would decide later.

.....

Hundred herb hall.

As one of the four largest medicinal ingredients provider in the Empire, this was a store that was well known. Different branches of it were stationed in each of the major regions of the Empire. When Youyan Pass was just created, in the first few years, a branch of the Hundred herb hall was already established and opened within the Pass. Through painstaking cultivation, as well as the long established cooperating attitude between the Hundred herb hall and the Empire, the business within Youyan Pass became more and more busy. It was rumoured that of the herbs used by the Youyan army, a quarter of it was provided by this branch of the Hundred herb hall.

Therefore, the status of the Hundred herb hall was not small at all within Youyan Pass.

Before it had reached noon, Ye Qingyu appeared in the main hall of the first floor of the Hundred herb hall.

A clean and neat little worker, was currently passionately receiving Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu went to the edges of the hall to have a look.

The great hall of the first floor exceeded ten acres, with the space being

extremely large. It was split into different areas. There were normal medicinal herbs and Spirit herbs that were sold, as well as an area where doctors were responsible for treatment and the dispensal of medicine. Large copper coloured medicine boxes were positioned according to the eight trigrams, situated in different locations. The little workers were like bees in a hive, they nimbly shuttled and travelled between these boxes.

In the dense fragrance of the herbs, an ancient classic fragrance could be smelled from the outside.

“Marquis, you came to collect some herbs?” The little worker came to beside Ye Qingyu, his smile filled with satisfaction and pride “I am not bragging, but within Youyan Pass, only our Hundred herb hall has the best complete collection. The quality of the herbs is also the best, we can guarantee that they are of the correct age and suitable medicinal strength.....”

Ye Qingyu smiled and nodded and was about to say something.

“You go to the other side and help. I will personally serve this Marquis.” A lean old yellow man wearing a pale yellow robe with a goatee panted as he ran over. He lightly patted the shoulder of this littler worker, saying these words.

The little worker turned to have a look, shock in his heart. “Shopkeeper Sui? Fine, fine. ” Turning to pay his respects to Ye Qingyu, he quickly left.

“Marquis, I am the manager of the great hall of the first floor. I wonder what kind of herbs you want to obtain?” The goateed old man laughed, saying respectfully.

This lean goateed old man, was known as Sui Yiwen. Within Youyan Pass, he was known as the [Medicine man] and constantly interacted with herbs. He was familiar with tens of thousands of the medicinal properties of the herbs. His clear and discerning eyes could see the validity of each herb, and he had extremely high skills in terms of medicine and treatment. He had learnt the pill arts, and was extremely skilled in harvesting herbs. He was an authority in the terms of herbs in the Pass.

Ye Qingyu looked at this person: “You recognise me?”

## Chapter 208: Thirty percent off

“I was fortunate enough to receive the invitation to the Pass Lord’s residence. I was able to see the face of Marquis Ye at the bestowal ceremony when you were presented with your title.” The shopkeeper replied with a smile. “Marquis Ye is a young genius, you have always been in the spotlight in these recent days in the entire Youyan Pass. Those people with status and identity, if they do not recognise Marquis Ye, they really have eyes but no pupils.”

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, but did not say anything in response.

This shopper was a person extremely skilled with his words. At the very least, the words he said just now, apart from complimenting him, was evidently indicating that he was a very important figure within Youyan Pass. He was able to come and go from the Pass Lord’s residence, this could not help but make people raise their estimation of him.

“I wonder what the Marquis wants?” The shopkeeper enthusiastically grinned at him. “If you really have a need, you don’t need to come personally. As long as you send someone to give me a notice, I will definitely deliver what you want at the first instant. For those who have contributed greatly towards the army, they can receive a twenty percent off in the Hundred herb hall.”

“Oh? There is such a rule?” Ye Qingyu was slightly surprised.

“This is how it is. The Hundred herb hall was founded when the Empire was founded. It was once the specified merchant companies for the procurement of herbs for the Empire. The earliest president of the business once said, that Hundred herb hall was only able to reach the state it is today, by relying on the support of the Empire. In these years, the Hundred herb hall has always cooperated with the Empire, with ten percent off given to people from the army. Those who have greatly contributed to the armies of the Empire, can get twenty percent off.” The shopkeeper seriously explained. “For Marquis Ye being so exceptional and talented, and having such great contributions, becoming the youngest

Marquis of the Empire, can be counted as a miracle. Your name, has long appeared in the list of the most noble guests of the Empire of Hundred herb hall. If you want to procure any herbs or medicine, then it will be thirty percent off.”

Ye Qingyu hearing this, his heart was shaken yet again.

Thirty percent off?

This really was outside of his expectations.

If it was a large sect that came to procure supplies, thirty percent off was really a great amount of wealth they could save.

This Hundred herb hall, had really given greatly this time.

Since it was like so, then of course he had to accept.

Demon King Ye was not a pedantic version.

Far off.

The little worker that had previously received Ye Qingyu, seeing this scene, was incomparably stunned in his heart. He licked his lips, somewhat curious.

This white robed young man, just who was he?

For the shopkeeper to receive him personally – Normally, even if it was those glorious military warfare officers that arrived, the manager would not be so enthusiastic. Just where had this great character popped up from?

Thinking back, that he had just chatted with such a great character, the mood of this little worker, apart from feeling a little bit of fear, felt largely excited.

It seems like these great figures were not as hard to deal with as what his senior brothers had said.

It was as if there was a ray of sunlight that had entered into the heart of the little worker; there was a type of warm feeling.

The other side.

Hearing the shopkeeper constantly introducing the glorious history of the hundred herb hall, Ye Qingyu halted in front of one of the copper medicinal boxes. Turning back with a smile: "Then thank you very much, shopkeeper Sui, I want to purchase some iron seven coloured herb, do you have it in stock?"

The iron seven coloured herb was namely one of the ingredients of the pill formula.

Shopkeeper Sui smiled as he heard this: "Marquis you have come to the right place today. Iron herbs are typically made of five colours, and six colours are rarely able to see. Seven coloured herbs are extremely uncommon, there are very little people who have ever seen one before. If you went somewhere else, they would think you were having a joke with them. But within the hundred herb hall, there really is such a herb."

Ye Qingyu was delighted in his heart.

There were a total of eighteen different kinds of ingredients on the pill formula. There were eight ingredients that Ye Qingyu had heard of before but ten were completely unknown to him. In these days within White Horse tower, he had researched the attributes of these different herbs, He understood very well that the iron seven coloured herb was really rare, he had not imagined that the hundred herb hall would really have it in stock.

But his expression did not show any change, asking again: "Do you have the mysterious voice three ringed wood?"

As shopkeeper Sui heard this, he let out a faint smile: "So marquis Ye was a person with great knowledge and understanding of herbs. The two herbs you just mentioned is extremely rare, but not only have I heard of them before, coincidentally the hundred herb hall also has it in stock.

He had it in stock too?

Ye Qingyu's heart could not help but be overjoyed.

He once again spat out tens of names of the other different herbs.

Shopkeeper Sui attentively verified every name said by Ye Qingyu, his

expression becoming more and more serious. After pondering for a while, he said: "All these herbs, are extremely rare. In a normal herbal store, it is very unlikely that you will be able to find such herbs. Some of the names, are what they are known by at the upper age, far ancient age and even the God and devil age. By today, their names have long changed. A normal herbal expert would most likely not even have heard of these names before. I did not think that Marquis Ye would have such in depth knowledge towards these herbs and medicines."

"How about it?" Ye Qingyu asked.

All the herbs and ingredients in the pill formula had been read out by him. If it were herbs in the God and Devil age, then they most likely have gone extinct by now. Who would have thought this [Medicine man] really had such ability, to be able to discern the names and what they were known by in the ancient ages. It seems like he had really found the right person today.

Ye Qingyu was not afraid that this Shopkeeper Sui would be able to figure out anything from these ingredients. Different kinds of ingredients had different quantities, sequence and composition. Only by doing a process in a certain way, could a pill be refined. Refining a pill was an extremely complicated process that took a long amount of time. The amount of heat, control etc had to be precise. It was not something that one was able to figure out just from the ingredients.

"We have all these ingredients, in hundred herb hall." Shopkeeper Sui let out an affirmative reply.

Ye Qingyu let out a breath of relief.

"But....." Shopkeeper Sui hesitated for a bit, observing the expression on Ye Qingyu's face: "Of the lion worm heart powder, the flying cloud vine and the violet jade gold radish, we do not have it in the stock in the branch within Youyan Pass. We need to request they allocate it to us. If there is a hurry for these ingredients, we can approximately obtain it within six days. "

Six days?



Ye Qingyu let out a sigh of relief.

He could easily wait for six days.

In reality, before setting out today, he had already set his expectations that he could not obtain all the ingredients, or perhaps that he could not even obtain even one ingredient. After all, this was a very ancient pill formula. After the long years had passed, there was absolutely the possibility that some of the Spirit herbs and medicines had gone extinct. Compared to this, this was already an extremely great news.

“Of these herbs, I wonder what quantities Marquis Ye needs it in?” Shopkeeper Sui brought Ye Qingyu to the noble guest area of the great hall in the first floor. There was a female servant who presented him with tea as he carefully asked his question.

Ye Qingyu glanced over the list of prices, his heart faintly shocked. The prices were far higher than he had imagined. If he procured all the ingredients available, it could roughly only sustain him refining this pill ten times over.

But this pill had too great a significance for him. Ye Qingyu thought it over, biting his teeth, then stated the quantities he needed it in.

Then the matter afterwards, became much simpler.

According to the discount of thirty percent off, he gave a deposit over. Signing a formation contract, this transaction officially became effective.

“Six days later, I will personally deliver the herbs to your residence. For Marquis Ye to come and procure herbs from our hundred herb hall, this has really brought us too great a glory. I thank you for your trust. If you have any need at all, then please direct me as you will . We will give you the best and quickest service.”

Shopkeeper Sui said very happily.

For the hundred herb jhal, it did not matter too much just how much money they made.

The branches of the hundred herb hall were spread throughout snow

empire. The profit and loss they sustained everyday was something a normal person could not even imagined. And for every shopkeeper of every region, profit was one of the criterias were they would compete against each other on. But the great harvest for Shopkeeper Sui today, was that he was able to network with Ye Qingyu, this was the most important matter.

One must know that in the most recent scroll of the hundred herb hall passed down internally, it had an extremely high evaluation of this Ye Qingyu. The elders of the hall all agreed that if there was enough time, this new noble of the army would perhaps become one of the representative of the Youyan army. To keep a positive relation with such a character, was much more valuable than making money from a single transaction.

As for Ye Qingyu, he also greatly admired the way hundred herb hall handled matters.

This was a transaction that made both parties satisfied.

And when Ye Qingyu prepared to turn and leave, there was suddenly a clamour that came from outside the great hall. What followed after was a flurry of footsteps, with the faint hints of shouts, as if some kind of conflict had occurred.

What had happened?

The colour of shopkeeper Sui faintly changed, smiling slightly: "This is a small matter. Recently, there has been many Jianghu people in the city..."

Ye Qingyu smiled, indicating that he understood.

But after a while, this clamour did not end, but rather became louder and louder. If one strained, one could hear the distressed cries of a woman, and someone cursing loudly.

A little worker rushed in, in a panicked state, saying something beside the ear of Shopkeeper Sui

There was a trace of rage that appeared on Shopkeeper Sui's face. Standing up and clasping his hands, he quickly said: "Marquis, excuse me.

I'll go and have a look, I'm afraid I have to interrupt our conversation....”

Ye Qingyu also stood up. “I'll also accompany Shopkeeper Sui to have a look.”

Shopkeeper Sui was somewhat surprised: “Exactly what I was looking for.”

Under the lead of two of the workers, they came to the front of the great hall of the first floor. They saw a crowd of people pointing at someplace and discussing. Splitting part the crowd, they saw a crowd of Jianghu people wearing purple robes standing like wolves or tigers at the entrance to the hall. They blocked everyone inside, emitting a killing intent. There was a delicate face yellow dressed young married woman as well as a child four or five years old, that was under steel shackles. They were about to be dragged away.....

“Shopkeeper Sui, you've finally arrived....”

“This bunch of people wants to take away senior sister Huang and Ling'er!”

“Shopkeeper Sui, quickly save them.”

Once shopkeeper Sui appeared, all the workers of the store quickly rushed over with panic in their face.

“What is happening?” There was a hint of rage between the tightly locked brows of Shopkeeper Sui.

This young married woman in a yellow dress that was held in steel shackles, her name was Huang Zhen. She was one of the herbal masters of hundred herb hall, and had profound medical skills. Shopkeeper Sui admired her knowledge in terms of herbs and medicines. Her husband was a military warfare officer within Youyan Pass, and had misfortunately perished two years ago in two battle. Huang Zhen had endured the pain, and raised her son Ling'er alone. She possessed an extremely stubborn personality. She received much respect and protection from the workers of the store.

The people of the Jianghu, dared to cause trouble and come to the

hundred herb hall to capture someone?

The fires of rage of Shopkeeper Sui was currently burning.

“Who are you people? Why have you come to capture people of my hundred herb hall?”

# Chapter 209: You deserved to be hit

“What? What’s so great about the Hundred herb hall?” Of the crowd of Jianghu people, there was a young person with purple robes that abruptly turned back. He coldly evaluated shopkeeper Sui with a glance, contempt in his face.

“There is nothing so great about Hundred herb hall.” Shopkeeper Sui harshly replied. “But if you want to capture my herbal masters within Hundred Herb hall, then you will have to think about this twice.”

“Hm, really?” The purple robed young man laughed.

The surrounding Jianghu people also began chuckling.

Ye Qingyu gave these people a glance, recognising them as the disciples of the Violet Seven stars sect. Within, there were the people who were taken care of by him previously – including the junior brother Lin. His swollen face had already returned to normal, and the teeth that were knocked out, had been replaced. There did not seem to be too much difference from his usual appearance. It was only that in his expression, there seemed to be an evil fire hiding within, a poisonous gaze flickering within his eyes.

“We’ve long heard that the Hundred herb hall could not be provoked. However.....” Saying this, the young man that just spoke coldly sneered. “But we did not imagine, that the Hundred herb hall would shelter the demon race.”

As these words were said, the expression of everyone’s faces changed.

Sheltering the demon race?

Hundred herb hall?

This was a truly grave matter.

In that instant, everyone looked towards shopkeeper Sui. If the Hundred herb hall was really proven to have some sort of relationship with the demon race, then it was not just a simple matter of a herbal master being dragged away. Most likely, even the entire Hundred herb hall would not

be able to bear this crime. One must know, that the demon race had become the topic of conversation that caused people's faces to pale whenever they discussed this issue within Youyan Pass.

Shopkeeper Sui was taken aback, then chuckled coldly. "Whether I have or have not sheltered the demon race, is not something that could be determined without proof by someone like you. Don't try to spread lies and rumours here. If you really have suspicions, then you should let the Youyan army investigate. You are only someone without status of the Jianghu, you dare smear the name of the Hundred herb hall? Do you not want to live anymore?"

These words powerfully resonated throughout the room.

Hundred herb hall had never lacked for status; after all these years of cooperating with the army, how was it possible for them to be threatened by these Jianghu people.

"Haha, Hundred herb hall is really too glorious." The young person of the Violet Seven stars sect began chuckling, taking out an oval shaped seal and waving it about. "We are under orders from the military supply department, to capture the demonic creatures within the city, what about it? Can this be counted as the judgement of the Youyan army? Does your Hundred herb hall, accept this?"

Shopkeeper Sui gave a glance at this, his heart dropping.

This oval shaped seal, was really the military seal of the supply department.

Why would there be a military seal of the supply department on the body of these Jianghu people?

The matter became hard to handle.

Hundred herb hall had always maintained an excellent relationship with the army, but it did have some small conflict with the head of the military supply department Zhang San. The relationship between them was not that good. The primary reason for this was that the personality of Zhang San was far too greedy; he began taxing more and more of the

herbs that Hundred herb hall provided to the army. This had already exceeded the warning limits of the Hundred herb hall. For the whole Hundred herb hall, it was not too great a problem if they gave some herbs and money to Zhang San. But the true problem was, that if they gifted Zhang San with too many things, this would break the laws of the Empire. This was truly the matter they needed to be careful of.

But Zhang San did not share this perspective.

This was the reason they were in a somewhat conflicted situation in the recent year or two.

Could it be that this was Zhang San's directions behind the scene?

"Mama, mam, I'm hurta...." The little boy that was held in steel shackles was shivering, the barbed steel shackles had torn apart his skin, nearly touching his bones. His face was ghastly as he twitched, obviously scared out of his wits. He tightly hugged his own mother; at this time, only the most important person in his life could give him a sense of security.

"Ling'er don't cry...." Huang Zhen tightly clutched onto her own son, her hand latching onto those piercing steel chains, to prevent it entering any deeper into her son's body. But both her hands, were already completely broken and dripping with blood. The steel barbs had completely pierced through her dainty hands, her hair falling down around her face like the clouds. She lifted her head. "I did not collude with the demon race."

"You did not collude with the demon race?" The purple robed young man coldly sneered, taking out a trigram shaped jade piece from the people behind him. Afterwards, he directed it onto the head of the little boy. On the white jade piece, one could suddenly see a pale red light flickering on it.

"Seeking demon jade piece. If they are of the demon race, once they near this jade piece, it will show a red colour. Humans can lie, but the formation on this jade piece will not." The purple robed young person cruelly tugged the steel chains in his hand, coldly saying. "The son is someone of the demon race, what about his mother? Haha, having affairs

with the demon race? Or perhaps she is originally someone of the demon race? The Hundred herb hall have hidden these evildoers, I fear even you guys will not be able to evade responsibility.”

As the steel shackles moved, the boy screamed tragically with pain.

The colour of shopkeeper Sui's face became hard to look upon.

“No, it's not like this. Ling'er was a premature birth, so he had a weak constitution since birth. To treat this, I've given him a drop of the blood flame demon bear to ingest every day, this can help his Yang Qi. Therefore this Seeking demon jade piece would have a reaction.....” Huang Zhen explained loudly, tightly protecting her son.

“I can stand as witness.” Shopkeeper Sui exclaimed loudly. “There has been some misunderstanding.”

But the Jianghu people facing them, all began laughing.

“What misunderstanding, it's not something you can talk your way out of. We have to bring them back to investigate.” The purple robed young man said sinisterly. “And as you people say, within this boy's body, there is the blood of the blood flame demon bear. Who knows, will he do something similar to Yan Buhui in the future, betraying the human race. We would rather kill someone wrongly than let someone go. He must not remain alive.”

“You.....” Shopkeeper Sui was completely frozen with rage.

The little boy tightly hugged his mother. Looking at Huang Zhen's hand which has been pierced through, his little hands rubbed away the tears on his deathly pale white face. Crying, he said. “Mama, Ling'er doesn't hurt. Release the shackles, your hand is dripping with blood.....”

Huang Zhen's heart hurt like blades were stabbing into it.

At this moment, this stubborn female herbal master felt despair.

Thinking back to her husband who had perished during battle with the demon race, looking at her young and weak child, her heart was about to be crushed.



“Haha, why are we still hesitating. Bring the slut woman who had an affair with the demon race as well as her demonic child away.” A muscular man whose figure exceeded two metres appeared; previously he had only regarded this scene with a cold smile. But right now he felt somewhat impatient. This person lifted his palms that were far larger than the normal person. There was a faint darkness around his fingers and palm, evidently he was skilled in palm martial arts.

Once this person spoke up, the purple robed young man instantly tugged at the steel shackles, as if he was about to drag Huang Zhen and Ling'er back forcefully.

Huang Zhen's begging gaze turned towards shopkeeper Sui.

She looked towards shopkeeper Sui's figure quivering with rage. But in the depth of his pupils, there was hesitation and conflict. At this instant, Huang Zhen finally understood. She finally fell into despair....

But at this instant, another voice sounded out.

“Wait a minute.”

Ye Qingyu walked out from behind shopkeeper Sui.

In no time at all, everyone's gaze once again focused on Ye Qingyu's body.

“Who are you?” The purple robed young man was taken aback, then immediately sneered. “Since I don't know you, don't interfere in business that has nothing to do with you. Otherwise, the consequences are not something you can bear.”

It was as if Ye Qingyu did not hear him at all.

He kneeled down, his palm lightly patting the head of the little boy called Ling'er and smiled at him. “Little fellow, is the blood of the blood flame demon bear tasty?”

The little fellow stared somewhat guardedly at Ye Qingyu, but was affected by Ye Qingyu's smile. He instinctively shook his head: “It's not good to drink bitter, somewhat scalding..... But mama said, only by

drinking it can I grow stronger. I need to get stronger to head towards the battlefield and kill the demons, to take revenge for my father.....”

“Obedient. Where’s your father?” Ye Qingyu’s palm was placed on Linger’s head.

“Mummy said that father is sleeping at the demon field battleground, he can’t come back anymore..... When I’ve grown older, I’ll go find him.....” Ling’ers head was lowered, his little fist tightly clenching.

Huang Zhen had a questioning look on her face as she stared at Ye Qingyu.

She did not know the history of this young man with white robes like jade, nor did she know his motives for asking these question. But the light of hope after falling into despair made her quiver.

Ye Qingyu smiled, lifting his head to look at shopkeeper Sui. “The father of this child was one of the heroes who died in battle?”

Shopkeeper Sui quickly rushed to reply. “That’s right, Ling’ers father is the military warfare officer of the Vanguard. In the Battle of the Explosive Snow Glacier, he misfortunately perished.....”

“Fine, fine, what’s the point of saying such useless words. Just who do you think you are, quickly scam away.” The purple robed young man glared unfriendly at Ye Qingyu. “You are so concerned about this slut and her little brat, could it be that you are also their comrade?”

Ye Qingyu still did not pay the slightest attention to him.

He nodded. “This is right, this little child has the smell of the blood flame demon bear. But I can observe that there is not any of the bloodline of the demon race within his body. As for the reason the Seeking demon jade piece reacted, it should be the fact that he has ingested the demonic blood.....” As he spoke to here, his final verdict was: “This child has nothing to do with the demon race.”

Shopkeeper Sui let out a breath of relief.

The other workers of the Hundred herb hall could also relax.

But this purple robed young man began roaring in rage. “Just who do you think you fucking are, coming out and saying such words. Haha, you think your words are the law, you.....”

Before he'd finished.

Ye Qingyu stood up, his hand slapping out.

Pak !

The purple robed young man had not finished speaking when he flew out horizontally, blood jetting out crazily from his mouth.

“No manners, interrupting someone's words. You deserved to be hit.” Ye Qingyu lightly clasped his hands, and in the countless tongue tied gazes, he slowly released Huang Zhen and Ling'er from the shackles on their body. Patting Ling'er on the head, he said with a smile. “All is well now..... The son of a perished soldier, is someone of the demon race. To use such a reason to act, is really completely ridiculous.”

“Thank you, uncle.” Ling'er said in a weak voice. Pain caused his entire body to convulse, but he expressed his thanks in the first instant.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback and said in a somewhat annoyed tone. “What uncle? Just how old do you think I am? Call me brother.”

Everyone around them began laughing.

The atmosphere evidently relaxed slightly.

But seeing the exploding rage and killing intent from the faces of the Violet Seven stars sect disciples around them, everyone immediately understood the matter had not ended. A truly horrifying thing was about to happen.

# Chapter 210: Spread these words

“I really did not imagine there would be someone unafraid to die, to stand out here and spout such nonsense. Little brat, what is your name.” The muscular violet seven stars sect disciple’s facial expression emitted an ominous aura, pushing apart the crowd and striding out. He evaluated Ye Qingyu up and down, then said, “Someone from the sects? Or someone within the army?”

Ye Qingyu let out a faint smile. “What if I’m of the sects? What if I’m of the army?”

“If you are someone from within the sects, then I will cripple your yuan qi cultivation, and notify your masters to come collect you. If you are someone from within the army, then I will cripple your yuan qi cultivation, and notify your superiors to come collect you.” This muscular violet seven stars sect disciple had an attitude as if he was giving judgement, as if the right to decide life and death was within his hands. In a matter of fact tone: “Collaborating with the demon race, death must be the punishment. No matter what, you cannot bear the consequences of your action today.”

“What if I can bear the consequences?” Ye Qingyu seemingly grinned at everyone around him. “Your name was Qi Yong of the Violet Seven Stars sect?”

This Violet Seven stars sect was slightly taken aback “You know of my name?”

Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulder nonchalantly while saying, “I guessed it. In these days, I heard there was a trash called the [Breaking Intestines Palm] that was injured by the demon race. So that trash was you?”

“You’re looking for your own death.” Qi Yong’s rage shot to the heavens. “Do you dare say it again?”

“Say it again? Haha, this is really rare, there’s someone who want to be insulted a second time.” Ye Qingyu smiled slightly. “But I am very happy to fulfill your wishes. That’s right, you want me repeat my entire words

right now, or do you just want me to repeat the part saying ‘so that trash was you’?”

Puchi!

There was someone who could not help but spurt with laughter from the side.

These bunch of Jianghu people, entered with a unfriendly and vicious attitude. They had the entire mindset of not paying any heed to anyone. There were many people who could not bear to watch this, rage arising in their hearts. But they did not dare say anything against them. Adding to this, the Jianghu strangers has caused chaos and turbulence within Youyan Pass, breaking apart the orderly lifestyle of the citizens of Youyan Pass. There were many people already dissatisfied with these outsiders.

Although many people did not know Ye Qingyu’s identity, but seeing him ridicule this bunch of Jianghu people, they felt their resentment being vented by these words.

But for the people of the Violet Seven stars sect, Ye Qingyu’s words were a provocation that they could not endure no matter what.

“You want to die? I’ll help you make your wishes come true.” Qi Yong grounded his teeth in anger, a flash of killing intent flashed across his eyes. He took a step forward, his figure like the movements of a ghost. Coming before Ye Qingyu in an instant, a moving black radiance appeared in his massive hands that headed like lightning towards ye Qingyu’s chest.

An acute bloody and poisonous odour began emanating from this strange palm.

This was a killing move that he struck out with.

He wanted to kill for sure.

“Ahhhhh.....” There was someone so shocked they sharply screeched.

There were also people shutting their eyes.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands.

His palm met that massive palm of Qi Yong

Pang!

There was a sound of an explosion within the air.ο

There was a faint bizarre smile on Qi Yong's face while he said, "Using your palm to meet my Breaking Intestines directly?" I really don't know if you are mentally retarded or brave. The Breaking Intestine poison has already been injected to you through your palm. In less than two hours, your palm will turn into pus.....Little brat, do you realise the consequences of not minding your own business now?"

"Retard." Ye Qingyu shook his head.

"You....." Qi Yong viciously smiled. he was about to say something, when he felt that something was not right. Examining closely, a white layer of frost was encroaching up his arms. In the blink of an eye, it had already completely covered his right arm. The chilling coldness flashed by, then he could not feel the existence of his right arm anymore.

Ye Qingyu stared at him calmly.

"Ah, this .....you....." The vicious smile on Qi Yong's face turned into a fearful screech.

The Violet Seven Stars sect disciples near him, also felt a chill and fear they could hardly disguise.

Qi Yong's fear and screech made them completely stunned. Especially that junior brother Lin; in the instant Ye Qingyu appeared, he seemed to have realised something, not speaking out of his own initiative. At this time, he was taking step by step backwards.

"You like to cripple's someone yuan qi cultivation? You like to break off someone's arm?" Ye Qingyu suddenly stretched out his finger, lighting tapping against the frozen right arm of Qi Yong. A metallic clang was heard, as if this arm was no longer flesh and blood.

There was a look of desperation and fear on Qi Yong's face.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu's face instantly turned cold, his fingers

flicking out.

Kacha! Kacha!

Qi Yong's entire right arm, began to shatter apart.

His flesh and blood was like a shattered ice sculpture, turning into countless pieces of ice that fell to the floor with a clatter. Even the open wound at his right shoulder did not drip with a drop of blood; the wound had already been sealed with ice.

In that moment, there were only cold exclamations in the entire great hall.

Ye Qingyu spread his hands open with a smile "The last time in the efforts to help the affected survivors, you directed someone to capture the military doctor. At that time, I already felt you were someone of a dubious nature. Today you came to cause a ruckus. You dare touch the wife and son of a martyred soldier? Since you so like to break someone's arm, then you can have a taste of it yourself today."

Qi Yong's expression was dumbfounded, as if he could not believe in the scene he was witnessing.

Seeing his right arm falling apart bit by bit in front of him, yet he could not feel any pain whatsoever. This type of sensation was even more frightening than if he could feel the pain. A deathly fright and a humongous rage was wrapping around his heart.....

The disciples around him also began screaming in fear.

"Just who are you?" Qi Yong roared with age. "You dare to act against me? Do you even know what you are doing. I am under orders from the head of the military supply department Zhang San to arrest this slut.....do you dare to state your name? Do you dare? And the Hundred herb hall, to shelter the demon race, you are all finished....."

Really foolish.

"Is Zhang San really that great?" Ye Qingyu was about to say something, but he lifted his head and saw that Junior brother Lin

retreating constantly. It seemed as if he had already discerned his identity. Thinking that this person came from the nobility, and should have already heard something, he pointed at Junior brother Lin with a smile: “You, that’s right you. Stop hiding, come out.”

Junior brother Lin seeing that the person Ye Qingyu pointed towards was himself, his face turned deathly white.

He was clear in his heart, just how terrifying this calm white robed youth was. The information that came from his family, repeated time and time again, that there were several characters he could not provoke of his own initiative. Within, there was Ye Qingyu. When he arrived at Youyan pass and heard the countless rumours regarding this person. Junior brother Lin realised that this Ye Qingyu was a madman that he could not mess with.

His legs was somewhat frozen, shuffling several steps forward but could not say anything.

“The nobility of the ancients families of the Empire, are they all as spineless as you?” Ye Qingyu regarded with disdain those people who came out with a silver spoon, that had never experienced bloody wind and rain, those spineless with people. This Junior brother Lin, was evidently that kind of person. Looking at Junior brother Lin, “Tell your senior brothers, who I am.”

Everyone’s gaze, at this instant focused on junior brother Lin.

This junior brother Lin that normally had an exceptional status within the sects; at this time became incomparably not at ease.. Biting his teeth, “He is Ye Qingyu.....”

When these words were not even finished, Qi Yong began barking and howling like a mad male dog. “Ye Qingyu? Just what kind of dog fart is Ye Qingyu. You are dead for sure, you wait.....” In his knowledge, there was not such a person called ye Qingyu in the upper echelons of Youyan Pass.ο

But when he reached halfway through his sentence, his words suddenly halted.



After anger had enveloped his head, a flash of clear headedness came to Qi Yong. He suddenly recalled something.

Everyone felt as if they had seen a ghost, their mouth opened wide. They could not say another word anymore.

“The fourth class heroic Marquis of the Empire. The youngest marquis in history that has gained this title through his contributions. The patrolling sword envoy of Youan Pass.” Junior brother Lin finished his introductions.

After this, there was no one who spoke anymore.

If after this words, these people still did not know the who this white robed youth was with such fierce methods, then they had completely lived their lives in this way. In these recent times, apart from the discussions regarding the injuries of the War God of Youyan pass Lu Zhaoge, all the discussions were concerned with the youngest Marquis in the history of the Empire.

For the entire people of Youyan Pass, the meaning behind the name Ye Qingyu, was already something they could not ignore.

Especially the battle between Ye Qingyu and Zhang San had already completely spread out. At this time, the entire Youyan Pass already understood; the wings of this patrolling sword envoy had already fully grown and had begun to spread. He was definitely one of the fierce characters of the Pass.

“Today, you did not use your noble status to scare people. It seemed like the slap on that day has made you remember.” Ye Qingyu looked at junior brother Lin, with really a expression of admiration, nodding his head.

“The army is different from the Imperial court. Don’t keep using your identity to press down others, otherwise people will treat you are a spear, being used with you none the wise. Return now, don’t be the cause of any more trouble. If you enter any deeper into these troubled waters, it will be too late if you want to leave again.”

Junior brother Lin lowered his head without saying anything.

Ye Qingyu did not speak anymore.

His head swiveled around to look at Qi Yong. "Then for the me right now, am I able to bear the consequences of my own actions?"

The Violet Seven Stars sect disciple that was known as the [Breaking Intestine palm] shivered, not daring to utter a word.

"In these days, you so called Jianghu people has caused complete chaos in Youyan Pass, making everyone shiver with trepidation and fear. Have you really come to give assistance?" Ye Qingyu's expression turned serious as he regarded these disciples of the sect. "If I do not recall wrongly, the summons of the Imperial family and the military department, is for you to enlist within the army, to give assistance to the Springtime Offensive of the Youyan army. It is not to come here and to pretend to be someone great."

The disciples of the sects lowered their heads, not daring to look upon Ye Qingyu.

Their strength was not as great, their status was not higher, and their fame was even less. Apart from lowering their heads, what else could they do? This opponent, even a huge character like Zhang San within the army did not dare provoke directly. How could they do it themselves?

It was rumoured that this newly promoted military Marquis was a martial lunatic. When he went crazy, he dared to kill anyone. If disciples of the sects like them really provoked such a lunatic, then they most likely would die in vain.

"The commanders of the Youyan army is currently busy on official business, without spare time to manage you guys. You really imagine, that the sects can do whatever they want?" Ye Qingyu's gaze became severe, smiling: "Since the other people of the army are busy, then let me manage you people.....today, you guys can help me spread these words to your Jianghu comrades."

# Chapter 211: The first person recruited into White Horse tower

He pointed at the disciples of the violet seven stars sect, saying seriously, "Today I won't kill you, I'll leave you with your lives. When you return, spread the words that I, Ye Qingyu, are about to say. First of all, from today onwards, no matter what the sect, no matter who they are, you bunch of Jianghu people, be a little more honest. Don't cause trouble and chaos. The Youyan army will naturally capture the demons ourselves. We don't need your interference. Secondly, the grudges of the Jianghu can't be brought into Youyan Pass. If you want to fight against each other, then scram outside of Youyan Pass to solve it. Just sit quietly with your tails lowered and await the orders of the military orders of the army. Thirdly, working for a military pass, everything is decided by the military orders. If you want to achieve something, then you should expend your efforts on things that are worth expending your energy on. Otherwise.....I don't mind personally finding you to have a talk."

Once there words were said, it was as if there was the clang of blade and spears in the air.

A hard to describe powerful aura emanated from Ye Qingyu's figure.

"Fine, you guys scram." Ye Qingyu waved his hand. "Go back and tell Zhang San, not to rest his laurels on his past contributions. There are somethings you can do, but there are somethings you can't do. If you walk many times in night roads, you will meet a ghost sooner or later. If he continues like this, there will be a day that even Commander Lu will abandon him."

Qi Yong bit his teeth, looking at his shattered arm. Coldly, "I will return and tell lord Zhang about this."

Ye Qingyu grinned slightly while he said, "From your tone, it seems you still do not accept. Let me remind you, don't pretend to be hard in front of me. For me, killing you has no difference from putting down a rabid dog that bites people on the street. No matter whether it is the heroic

Marquis title, or the patrolling sword envoy, either position has the power to first kill then report all soldiers under that of military warfare officer. This further more applies to vagabonds like you that don't even have roots within the army."

A faint ice mist slowly appeared on Ye Qingyu's palm.

Qi Yong could feel a sharp killing intent. He originally wanted to leave a scathing retort, but he instantly sealed his lips, turning and departing without saying anything. Ye Qingyu's palm drew through the air, and the steel shackles on the floor came to his hands. He threw it out again, "Take this thing and bring it away with you."

This steel shackles flew through the air like a snake. It landed just on the body of the purple robed young man, his skin lacerating open.

This young man cried painfully. He did not dare turn back, increasing his speed to run even faster.

"Things you cannot bear yourself, but you like to use on other people....." Ye Qingyu felt increasingly certain, that the people of the sects were completely running a con when they came to participate in the battles of the army.

Looking at the people of the violet seven stars sect fleeing in such a sorry state, the atmosphere of the great hall relaxed a lot.

There were some people letting out low shouts of praise, and there were also people clapping.

The surrounding people that came to observe seemed not to want to leave. There were even signs that more and more people were arriving. Many people had heard of the battle hero Ye Qingyu greatly advertised by the Youyan army and wanted to have a look. There were some people that were shocked to discover that this white robed youth Ye Qingyu was someone they recognised. Was that not the white clothed man with great strength that helped to give aid the previous days?

"I recognise that Ye Qingyu; I even lifted stretchers along with him," A middle aged man with a large scar on his head said in a disbelieving

voice.”

“That’s right, you lifted stretchers with Marquis Ye. Zhang Laosan, you really know how to lie.”

“You don’t believe, if you don’t believe me I can prove it to you....” The middle aged uncle turned red, pushing forward and beckoned with his arms. Shouting, “Little brother, it’s me, do you still remember me.....eh, no, it’s Marquis Ye, hehe.....”

After he said these words, he suddenly realised that this person was a true Marquis. Would he even pay attention to him?

This was somewhat too embarrassing.

But who would have guessed, that before the sound had fallen, the Ye Qingyu in the midst of the crowd, heard this and turned his head. Seeing the middle aged man, he immediately grinned: “Uncle What are you doing here? You came to buy medicine?” Ye Qingyu came over, rubbing that scar on the middle aged man’s head. He said with a chuckle, “The wound has healed, but it’s a pity a scar has been left behind.”

Ye Qingyu’s smile instantly made this middle aged uncle feel that he could shoot through the nine heavens. He said in a somewhat embarrassed voice, “Us men of Youyan Pass, it is normal for us to have some scars. Hehe.....Little brother, no, Marquis Ye, I did not imagine that person that day would be you.....”

“Just call me little brother. It sounds more comfortable that way,” Ye Qingyu replied smilingly. “How is it? How is Little Yang his and mother? Is everyone still okay?”

“Little Yang can already work again. Mother Yang is largely without any issues. Everyone is still great. Thankfully you were able to help that day, without delayed at all. The people that were injured could receive aid at the quickest time.....” The middle aged man explained.

Conversing for a bit, Ye Qingyu saw that the people surrounding them had increased even more. Saying his goodbyes, he invited the middle aged man to come visit the White Horse tower when he had time.

Only until Ye Qingyu and Shopkeeper Sui entered into the VIP area of the Hundred herb hall, did the surrounding crowd surround the middle aged man with a clamour.

“Really awesome. Zhang Laosan, you really did know Marquis Ye?”

“Hehe, that’s right, I just said, it’s just that you didn’t believe me....”

“Haha, your Zhao family really has green smoke on the ancestral graves of your family. To know such a great character, it seems like Marquis Ye treats you very well too.....”

“Say whatever you want. I Zhang Laosan really knows many people.....” There was an unprecedented pride in the middle aged man’s heart, his back straight and his chest sticking out. The people beside him that had helped with the recovery and aid efforts, all gathered and began discussing the events of that date. Just like this, one spread to ten, and then spread to a hundred. Extremely quickly, many people realised that Marquis Ye was such an interesting person, that he had also aided in helping those that had suffered from the disaster.

Within the crowd, there were also some people of the Breeze and Drizzle building that also began retelling their tales. They told of how Ye Qingyu had slaughtered the blood flame demon bear as well as snow white lizard, causing many people’s’ blood to boil with excitement.

Many stories relating to Ye Qingyu began to spread out just like this.

The people saw a more comprehensive and real person than the image the army had advertised. Coming out from the mouth of these common citizens, it made people more easily believe in the stories, because it made many people feel that this young Marquis really stood on their side.

.....

.....

“Uncle, you are amazing.” Ling’er was staring at Ye Qingyu.

VIP area.ο

Shopkeeper Sui sincerely received Ye Qingyu. Because of the incident

that had just occurred, the relationship between the two got even closer. Hundred Herb Hall could be said to acknowledge the debt they had to Ye Qingyu. If not for Ye Qingyu forcefully obstructing them, and these violet seven stars sect people really dragged Huang Zhen off, there would have been nothing Shopkeeper Sui could have done. Even if he went through the relationships that he had within the Pass to save the mother and child pair, but by that time they would most likely be nearly half dead, with tragic consequences.

Huang Zhen's gratitude was endless.

Today she had basically given up all hope.

At a crucial time, Ye Qingyu had appeared. It allowed this stubborn and lonely female herbal master to protect her son.

"What uncle, call me brother. I'm not that old." Ye Qingyu intentionally had a dark face, teasing this cute little fellow.

"Okay, uncle." Little Ling'er giggled. He was still injured, but his original lively personality was already back in full effect. He lifted his head to look at Ye Qingyu, his voice filled with deep longing, "Uncle, you're so awesome. Can you please teach me?"

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, he did not imagine this little child would say such words.

He turned to look at Huang Zhen.

The female herbalist instantly misunderstood, dragging her son back, and scolding him, "Ling'er don't say rubbish. Just what kind of identity is Marquis Ye, he is busy with military affairs. He doesn't have time to teach you. Saving you today, is already a great debt, don't take things too far....."

Pok!

Ye Qingyu nearly spurted out with a snort.

Busy with military affairs?

After he had arrived in Youyan Pass, apart from undertaking in a

mission deep within the Explosive snow glacier, he had always remained confined within White horse tower. He really could not bear the description 'busy with military affairs.'

However.....

Ye Qingyu thought it over, lifting his head to look at Huang Zhen, "What is the surname of Ling'er's father?"

The female herbal master did not understand, quickly replying, "His family name is Jin, Jin Wuxiang. He's one of the nominated hundred military warfare officers of the Vanguard.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, looking at the little fellow in front of him. "You are called Jin Ling'er? You little fellow is somewhat interesting, do you really wish to follow me and learn the martial way?"

"En, Ling'er wants to go to the battle field of the demon race to find my father.....Uncle, can you please teach Ling'er? Is it like the others have said, if I want to learn martial arts, I have to be your disciple?" As Ling'er said this, he was about to kneel down. "My master, please accept the bow of your disciple."

Ye Qingyu instantly felt black lines appearing on his forehead.

This little fellow was really cunning.

Quickly lifting him up, Ye Qingyu shook his head. "My martial way has not yet come to its fruition, and I am far too young. I cannot accept any disciples. But you can come to the White Horse tower, I will give you advice on your martial cultivation. Perhaps this may prove to be of benefit to you."

Huang Zhen, hearing this, was instantly overjoyed with happiness.

She hadn't even imagined in her dreams, that Marquis Ye would accept her son and give him advice on his martial cultivation.

Even though she did not pay particular attention normally to the ranking of the experts within the Pass, but she had heard that Marquis Ye with his Spirit Spring level cultivation was able to fight directly against



the head of the military supply department Zhang San. Today she had even seen with her own eyes Ye Qingyu's power when he faced off against the people of the violet seven stars sect. If her son was able to receive the advice of this little grandmaster of the martial path, he really ascended to the heavens in one step.

"Thank you Marquis. I will thank you on behalf of my deceased husband for this debt of gratitude." Huang Zhen was so moved she did not know to say, crisply bowing to the floor and lowering her head to the floor.

Ye Qingyu was shocked, quickly assisting her up. "Officer Jin is a martyr, he is a hero of the Youyan army. Everyone should realise his contributions. The reason I am willing to give advice on Ling'er on his martial cultivation, apart from this, is because Ling'er is exceptional, with spirit qi around him. Although his body is slightly weak, but he is a good talent for cultivation. If he works hard, he will definitely achieve something great in the future."

Ling'er received praise, and instantly exclaimed and cheered.

"From today onwards, come to the White Horse tower." Ye Qingyu rubbed the head of this little fellow, saying, "From today onwards, you can be counted as a member of the White Horse tower. Once you enter the horse tower, you will wear the white armour for the rest of your life, following the rules of the army. This is just like entering a sect, you cannot abandon it. Are you willing to do this?"

## Chapter 212: We meet again

Amidst the myriad of thanks from Jin Ling'er and his mother, Ye Qingyu rose and said his departures before leaving from Hundred Herb Hall.

According to their agreement, this female herbal master would send her son to the White Horse tower the next day. Everything had been arranged accordingly. Ye Qingyu already possessed the power to recruit soldiers, and Jin Ling'er, who was four years old, could be counted as the first soldier this heroic Marquis had recruited.

Recruiting Jin Ling'er was not a momentary impulse by Ye Qingyu.

Jin Ling'er's background easily made Ye Qingyu relate to his own history. He was able to sympathise with the sensation of losing one's own father, and Jin Ling'er's actions in protecting his mother even when facing disaster made Ye Qingyu's heart moved. Furthermore, this little child really did possess a surge of Spirit qi around him; Ye Qingyu's premonition told him that this little child would definitely have success in the future.

As for his naturally weak constitution, apart from ingesting demonic blood, there were many other methods of solving this; it was not a problem.

After coming out of the hundred herb hall, Ye Qingyu again went to several other stores.

Apart from ingredients for the refining of the pill, he also required other tools and minerals. However, these were more common, it was not something the pill formula required, but was something required in the process to refine the pill. They were still difficult to find though, and Ye Qingyu spent roughly two hours of time before completely acquiring these items.

The time was about noon.

Ye Qingyu thought it over, and then decided to eat before he returned to save himself from troubling Mother Wu.

There was a little restaurant on the way back, extremely busy, with many people coming and going. Seeing this bustling atmosphere, Ye Qingyu was instantly delighted, and entered. Since Ye Qingyu came from a common background, he liked these kinds of places very much. Passionate and bustling, there was none of the nonsense of etiquette and such. One could experience the true lifestyles of the citizens.

Snow Empire had been founded for near a hundred years, with a stable border and rule. It caused the economy to become prosperous and people paid much more attention to what they eat. Some people had once estimated that the dishes within the borders of the Empire could be split into ten different styles, with special attributes to each style. But for a roadside restaurant like this, there was not such care paid to what they eat. The most popular cuisine was meat and alcohol.

Ye Qingyu ordered roasted lamb and rye alcohol, sitting down on a seat beside the window.

There were unrestrained and rough sounds of alcoholic drinking games, and an acute smell of strong alcohol pierced through the nose; there was an unrestrained and complex atmosphere. The female proprietor, whose figure was like a bucket, was shouting as she greeted her customers and the bartender, who was wearing a dirty outfit as he carried a black wooden tray, traversed between the crowded tables.

In such an environment, Ye Qingyu was unprecedentedly content.

These were familiar scenes to him from his childhood.◦

Seeing these rough faces, in reality these were the most primitive and truest facest of people.

-Kadong!-

The coarse jar of alcohol and a small dish heavily thudded before Ye Qingyu. Before the waiter had even finished saying 'enjoy yourself', his figure had already turned and placed the contents of the black wooden tray onto another customer's table.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He suddenly remembered, in his most desperate years, when he could not bear his hunger, he had stood outside the little restaurants in the poor areas of Deer City. Seeing the tall and unrestrained adults slamming silver with a crash on the table and shouting for the waiter to bring their best alcohol and meat here.....

Then him at that time, while dripping with saliva, also longed for the day that he could sit in restaurants like this, ordering what he wanted. Drinking good alcohol and eating good meat for the entire day, completely devouring what he wanted.....

That was the greatest thing that could happen in one's life.

Then right now, could he himself already be counted as very fortunate?

Ye Qingyu quickly forgot about all other thoughts, two hands grabbing the roasted lamb leg, and began devouring it in large mouthfuls. He directly grabbed the coarse earthen jar, gulping down a mouthful of strong alcohol.....

In such a restaurant, in such an environment, it was as if Ye Qingyu had found a state where he could do whatever he wanted.

Only after finishing the third jar of strong alcohol did Ye Qingyu feel slightly tipsy.

There were already people with shocked gazes that looked towards this youth. Ye Qingyu's tolerance for alcohol was greater by far compared to other people.

"Perhaps previously, my heart did not feel great because there were far too many things that I was too cautious of. Therefore I always felt something uncomfortable?" Ye Qingyu leaned by the window side, abruptly falling into deep thought.

Thinking back of the matters that had occurred these days in Youyan Pass, there were times that he was afraid of the slightest thing. Such as the times where he was going against the supply department, and the times where he was dealing with those people of the sects. Slapping them and giving them a warning, could it really make them change? Could it

really change everything?

It seemed like this was not possible.

In this world, where the strong preyed on the weak, only sword and blade could really make these people think twice.

As the patrolling sword officer, he had the power to kill and then report. If there were people breaking the discipline of the army or performing destructive actions, he could kill as he pleased. Compared to this, he had used the gentlest method possible? Was it that he wished to avoid a conflict?

But if he did not kill, could he really intimidate the others?

This time he let Qi Yong and the others return alive to let them spread the word, so the other Jianghu people would know restraint. But at the time, just how many would show restraint?

What if, at that time, those Jianghu people who did not know how tall the heavens were or how deep the earth was, would still continue as they please?

Ye Qingyu leaned against the table, seriously mulling it over. He knew what he should do now.

If his actions were right, then there was no need to be afraid of the slightest thing.

Ye Qingyu's martial heart was the Asura killing martial will. During the testing of the White Deer academy, the examinations had already made this abundantly clear. As he thought of this crucial point, his thinking instantly aligned with his martial heart, and he suddenly felt his entire body becoming unprecedentedly comfortable. The yuan qi in his body flowed with no imperfections, surging and rolling, as if it would never end. When he activated, it flowed more in line with his intentions.

Could this be the so called enlightenment?

Ye Qingyu sensed the yuan qi flowing within his body and blood, greatly surprised.

This was an unexpected harvest.

He could not help laughing loudly.

On the other table, there were men that were large and rough, wearing coarse woven shoes and clothes. They were currently drinking but seeing this scene, one of them came over carrying a large jar of strong alcohol, inviting Ye Qingyu to drink along with them. Ye Qingyu did not hesitate at all, accepting crisply. Going over, he placed one of his foot on the chair, rolled up his sleeves, and began playing drinking games with this group of men. The noise and bustle was like boiling oil, causing the atmosphere to be extremely lively of this little restaurant.

The people passing by outside could not help but be attracted to such atmosphere, turning their heads to look.

And at that time, two dainty little figure appeared in the entrance of the little entrance, having a look inside then went to find a seat. Sitting down, they called over the waiter to order.....

It was two young girls.

They seemed like master and servant.

The master was approximately fourteen or fifteen years old, with an exquisite figure. She was wearing a dim red long dress, her hair like the clouds. On her face there was an intricate mask made from golden strands, seemingly extremely noble. Her exposed little hand and skin was incomparably white, like that of white mutton fat. It was as if it was radiating with a strange silver brilliance, with a type of mysterious sensation emanating from her.

The servant was also a girl, around the age of twelve to thirteen. She had two little ponytails, a small delicate mouth and nose, and large eyes. Her appearance seemed extremely intricate and there was a short dagger by her face. She had the appearance of a miniature adult, emitting with radiance, extremely cute.

The entrance of these two girls instantly attracted countless glances.

Both their outfits were extremely decadent and exquisite, from one

glance they seemed like a young lady from a noble family and her servant coming out for a walk. According to normal reason they should not appear in such a chaotic little store, but the two appeared contrary to this. They seemed not to have any sense of surprise at anything, as if everything was extremely normal and common to them.

“Heh, those two girls are really pretty.”

“Really pale, what noble family is this young lady from?”

“What kind of noble young lady would come to such a place?”

“Perhaps she sneaked out to have fun. Heh heh, in those legendary tales, is there not a noble young lady who sneaked out, eventually falling in love with a poor boy before eloping with him? Haha.....”

“You’ve drank too much. If you have the balls, then go and try and hit on them, let’s see if they will speak to you.....”

There was a series of whispered conversation everywhere around them. Everyone in the restaurant was extremely curious towards these two girls who were like fairies that had abruptly appeared.

Such an environment, with the encouragement of the people around them and the alcohol, easily caused many people to do daring things. A while later, there really was someone that went over to strike up a conversation with a smile. But without knowing why, after being glanced at by the young girl wearing the mask with golden strands, this man was instantly defeated. It was as if he did not dare to regard that icy and calm pair of eyes, coming back ashenly.....

“Sister, why must we come to such a place. It stinks.....” the little girl with ponytails pinched her nose together. Evidently the room that was packed with the smell of alcohol, body odour, and sweat made her very uncomfortable.

The young girl wearing the golden mask did not say anything. She poured the strong alcohol in the earthen jar onto her little cup and then gulped it down.

The expression on her face remained as icy and as calm as it ever was.

Beneath the mask, her eyes had the slightest trace of surprise, evaluating her surroundings, as if she was searching for someone.

Seeing this masked young girl gulping down cup after cup of strong alcohol, the surrounding people were completely stunned.

They had never imagined such a petite and dainty young girl would be able to drink so much.

The atmosphere of the restaurant instantly became somewhat perplexed.

This strange atmosphere was only broken when a youth with oil and alcohol stains on the sleeves of his white robe sat with a laugh opposite the masked girl without asking the permission of these two girls. It was as if they knew each other. He poured himself a cup of strong alcohol and lifted his cup to the masked young girl opposite him.

Everyone waited for this white robed youth to be turned away.

“It’s you?” The little girl with pony tail’s gaze fell on the face of the white robed youth, surprise on her face. There was instantly a trace of cautiousness appearing on her face: “You bastard, why are you here?”

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly: “For me, coming here is very normal. It is just that you, little fellow, really dared to remain within the city. You really made me surprised.

As he said this, his gaze already impatiently fell on the face of the masked girl. Somewhat emotionally moved, somewhat shocked, somewhat worried, and somewhat excited. Complicated emotions constantly conflicted each other . A while passed before he calmly stated: ” We meet again. I did not imagine that you would appear here.”



# Chapter 213: Can we be friends?

No one would have thought that Ye Qingyu would go over and greet the two young girls of his own initiative.

But the words he just spoke seemed so reasonable that the entire restaurant also felt that the appearance of this white clothed youth was somewhat strange. Compared to the coarse and rough men, Ye Qingyu had a clean and fair face, his tall and muscular figure had a natural heroic quality that seemed like it should not appear in such a restaurant.

The previous white clothed youth had rolled up his sleeves and stood on the chair, playing drinking games with the men that spat saliva everywhere. It had made the others overlook such a point.

In the hearts of everyone, if there was anyone that would be able to successfully strike up a conversation, then it must be this white clothed youth.

Perhaps the scene where a poor boy picks up a beautiful, kind, and noble young lady before returning home with her was happening in front of them?

Everyone in the restaurant pretended to drink or play drinking games, but in reality they were all paying attention to the matters undergoing there.

Opposite the table.

“Who are you?” The young girl with the golden patterned mask asked calmly.

Her voice was so cold that it seemed like the astral wind blowing above a ten thousand tall icy mountain. It was as if it could cause someone’s soul to instantly shatter into ice shards in a moment time.

“He’s a baddie. Sister, this person is terrible.” The ponytailed girl glared, staring ferociously at Ye Qingyu, while about to draw the little dagger by her waist.

Ye Qingyu stuck out his tongue at her.

Then he turned, looking at the golden masked girl with a smile and said, "We've met before, in White Deer academy. I once helped you alter your clothes, do you still remember me?"

"Hmph, I knew from one glance you were a perverted fellow. To want to strike a conversation with my sister like that, bastard." The ponytailed girl's eyes widened, coldly laughing, "My sister has never went to that dog fart White Deer academy. Your method of picking up girls is really stupid."

"You little girl scammer, you really speak too much." Ye Qingyu was infuriated.

The young girl with the golden fretwork mask had an icy and empty gaze that halted slightly on Ye Qingyu's face. There was not the slightest of emotions within in her pupils. She said disinterestedly, "I don't remember."

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, then asked, "Fine, then do you recognise a girl called Song Xiaojun?"

"I don't recognise that name." The tone of this golden masked girl was still so cold that it completely caused one to distance themselves from her.

Ye Qingyu had been constantly paying attention to her expressions, but he did not discover the slightest change whatsoever.

He was just about to change the subject when the ponytailed girl finally could not bear it longer. She used the toy like dagger to fiercely rap Ye Qingyu's forehead, angrily saying, "Stinky little brat, who are you pervertedly string at? To dare stare at my young lady, I'll dig your eyes out.....Hmph!"

Ye Qingyu covered his head as he grinned.

This little girl was really too violent.

No wonder she was so daring beforehand, using the skin of a Crepe Myrtle sect disciple to appear at the Breeze and Drizzle building and claim she came from the Unmoving city of Darkness. It was a pity at that

time she left too quickly before Ye Qingyu could ask her anything.

But right now, there was no longer a need to ask.

Because the Song Xiaojun that Ye Qingyu thought constantly about, regardless of whether or not he was awake or asleep, had already appeared.

This first time she had appeared was when she had ambushed Lu Zhaoge.

The second time she appeared was before his very eyes.

In the moment these two girls had entered into the small restaurant, Ye Qingyu could already recognise them. This young girl wearing the golden fretwork mask, her aura had greatly changed. The her after assimilating with the bloodline of darkness had seemed to turn into a completely different person entirely. But Ye Qingyu was far too familiar with Song Xiaojun, even if he closed his eyes he would be able to sense her presence.

As for this ponytailed little girl, she called Song Xiaojun her sister. She should be a member of the Unmoving City of Darkness, and seemed to be a maidservant of Song Xiaojun.

These two people, using some kind of method, concealed their aura of darkness. From their outer appearances, they seemed to be no different from an ordinary person, and one could not even sense any fluctuation of energy on them. No one would have been able to guess that such a pretty, cute, and mysterious noble girl would be one of the main perpetrators who had attempted to assassinate the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge.

Ye Qingyu's teeth clattered as he was smacked on the head by the dagger of the little girl.

Everyone began laughing within the restaurant.

Seeing Ye Qingyu being turned away again and again, the men and the female owner of the store let out well-intentioned laughter.

"You scammer, you are too rough....." Ye Qingyu angrily lifted his head

and with a clang, flicked his finger on the forehead of the pony tailed girl. Infuriatingly he spat, "I'm speaking with your master, can you not be so ill-mannered, and stop interrupting."

"Ai, you dare hit me....." this pony tailed girl seemed to be about to go berserk.

The golden masked young girl gave her a glance.

The rage of the little loli retreated and said resentfully, "But sister, this bastard hit me....

The masked girl did not say anything.

Ye Qingyu provoked this ponytailed girl with a funny face, causing her little teeth to bare out, but she could only sit by a side helplessly and resentfully.

"I'm called Ye Qingyu.....can we be friends?" Ye Qingyu extended his hand.

After the two probing questions, Ye Qingyu realised that Song Xiaojun had already forgotten everything. And Wang Jiangru seemed not to have told her or reminded her of anything, and did not even mention at all the matters of Song Xiaojun at White Deer academy. Perhaps this was out of consideration for Song Xiaojun's safety. Since she had already changed her identity, why not let her forget everything.

The Song Xiaojun wearing a golden mask finally stared seriously at Ye Qingyu, her pure and perfect eyes without the slightest of emotions. She looked at the hand extended by Ye Qingyu, then shook her head, "We cannot."

Everyone began laughing uproariously again in the little restaurant.

There were even people whistling, and someone was banging on tables, mocking without mercy that this white clothed youth had once again failed in his attempt to pick up a girl.

The pony tailed little loli also made faces in a huff, with a provocative expression saying, "you deserve it."

Ye Qingyu was still about to say something, but he suddenly saw that in the eyes under the mask of Song Xiaojun, there was already a faint shred of impatience concealed within. He abruptly realised that their exchange was about to end.

After all, this newly born Song Xiaojun was no longer the little loli who liked to stick close to him. She was a top level expert with a strength enough to injure Lu Zhaoge. She possesses an icy personality, on that day, she did not even care about the questions of an expert like Lu Zhaoge. Today answering three of his questions was already something unprecedented and was her limit.

If he continued to struggle on like this, he would only leave a bad impression behind. To come into contact with her in the future would only become more difficult.

“Fine, I won’t bother you any longer.” Ye Qingyu had a disappointed smile, turning to leave. After walking several steps, he turned back, adding another sentence: “These days the Pass is somewhat chaotic. You two must be more careful and don’t go running everywhere.”

Saying this, he returned to his original seat.

What he received was the merciless mocking laughter of the group of men that he was drinking with. After all, they had also failed to strike up a conversation, so they would therefore not give mercy to the white clothed youth who was similarly defeated. There was someone that fiercely punched Ye Qingyu on the shoulder, throwing over a large jar filled with strong alcohol.....

“You bunch of people.....” Ye Qingyu smiled bitterly at them, shaking his head before slapping the table, shouting, “Come, let us drink! Who dares to compete with me?”

Instantly there were several men who stood up, not wanting to show any weakness.

The entire liquor place began to become rowdy.

The female owner with a bucket like figure was so happy that her lips

could not be loosened.

The business today was completely explosive. Just alcohol money alone was enough to compare with tens of days of profit. It was all thanks to this white cloth youthed that seemed neat and orderly. One originally thought he was someone inexperienced, who would have guessed that his capacity for alcohol was stunning. And, he did not distance himself at all, being familiar with everyone while drinking like an ox.....

“If this handsome white clothed youth could come every day, that would be great.”

The female proprietor stood there, wishfully thinking, while the waiter constantly carried alcohol to them.

Without knowing when, Song Xiaojun and the pony tailed girl had already turned and left.

Ye Qingyu did not follow.

He and the group of men showed off their tolerances, drinking till the skies were dim.

Two hours later, when Ye Qingyu left this establishment known as the [Common Liquor House] carrying an earthen jar the thickness of his chest, behind him there were already seven or eight burly men that lay on the floor completely drunk. There was someone who had vomited on a table, with a strange smell wafting through the air.....

The waiter did not find this strange at all and was currently happily tidying the mess beside.。

“Handsome brother come often.....I’ll give you twenty percent off!” Behind the tables, the female proprietor was also similarly happy. She was currently busy biting a tael of silver to verify its authenticity, this was the alcohol money Ye Qingyu had left behind. He had said that he would devour and eat as he pleased, to enjoy this fortunate feeling. When he finished the alcohol, naturally it was him that had paid. The entire bill of the establishment, this tael of silver was enough to pay for it all.

For the Marquis Ye that was of a noble status with wealth, he naturally

did not mind this kind of money.

Because of his profound martial cultivation, he had a powerful body, such that even after gulping down tens of jars of strong alcohol into his stomach, Ye Qingyu still remained clear headed. He was not drunk in the slightest, but he had the odour of alcohol all around him. He hugged the jar of wine, a satisfied smile on his face, heading towards towards the direction of White Horse tower.....

it was time to go back.

Her could occasionally do as he pleased but bitterly training his yuan qi cultivation was still the most important part of his life.

It was very unexpected that Song Xiaojun still remained in the Pass.

Ye Qingyu originally imagined that she had left along with Yan Buhui and the others, but who would have imagined that she had remained behind.

Perhaps the most dangerous place was the safest?

The guts of this little loli were really ridiculously large. It was false if Ye Qingyu said he was not worried for her safety at all. But, Ye Qingyu knew very clearly that his worry would not change anything. On that day, when the Unmoving City of Darkness descended, Song Xiaojun and Yan Buhui had come and go as they pleased from the heavily defended Youyan Pass. This meant that she had methods to keep herself hidden.....

But, just what did the little loli remain within the city for?

Ye Qingyu could not understand.

However, seeing her today and speaking three phrases to her had already caused him to feel extremely satisfied.

Since Xiaojun was within the city, perhaps they would have a chance to meet again.

If he intentionally chased after their whereabouts, or continued to bother them, perhaps this would achieve the opposite effect.

Before the night fell, Ye Qingyu returned to the White Horse tower.

# Chapter 214: Did you went to have a secret love affair?

“Woof, master, why are you smiling like that.....” the silly little dog was lying on the prayer mat napping. Seeing that Ye Qingyu returned, he asked in a strange tone, “Hmm, how do you describe it.....it seems, it seems like as if you have just returned from a secret love affair.

Pak !

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand and gave him a flick on the head.

Love affair?

Did this damn dog really knew what love affair meant?

He had completely learnt the wrong things.

Ye Qingyu was infuriated in his heart. This stupid dog was becoming less and less cute recently. When he could not speak, although he was silly, but at least he was very cute and adorable. But right now when he could speak, but what came out of his mouth were things of a completely dubious nature. His adorable face seemed to have transformed into a mocking expression, no matter how you looked at him, you wanted to beat him up.

“Woof, woof, it hurts. Little silver, quickly spit at him.” The silly little dog Little Nine teared up, barking with tears in his eyes.

The little silver dragon floated in the air, turning to look at Little Nine, then turned to look at Ye Qingyu. He let out an low excited and lively cry, flashing to the side of Ye Qingyu. He used his little horns to lightly rub against Ye Qingyu’s head, nimbly twisting his tail and acting coquettishly. He completely ignored Little Nine.

“Woof, traitor.....” The silly dog Little Nine was dumbfounded, struck deeply. ” You said you would listen to whatever I said? From now on, I won’t bring you out to eat delicious things.”

Delicious things?



As he mentioned this, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of something.

He lifted his head to give the silly dog another flick on his forehead, angrily saying, "Be honest, where have you ran to in these days? Why has the people of the Breeze and Drizzle building say that a white dog carrying a silver snake that can fly was stealing stuff from the restaurant? Could it be that you are bring Little Silver to do bad things?"

"Errr.....woof, woof, bad things? How can this be possible.....Oh, that's right, Master, I suddenly thought that I have something to do. You should first slowly discuss this with Little Silver, I'll come back in a while....." Little Nine instantly diverted the subject left and right, his manner panicked. Like a bolt of lighting, he shot towards the window.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, arching his finger.

Pang!

The originally open window, was without knowing when, suddenly sealed by a layer of ice. Little Nine struck on this layer of thin ice, and was rebounded backwards, golden stars appearing in his vision. He stumbled and spun, as if he was drunk.

Ye Qingyu lifted him up by the neck, and said in both a laughing and angry manner: "Speak truthfully, did you really go steal things? Did you bring back any stolen items, and stored it here?"

"Woof, woof, how could I? Master, I'm so cute, saying things like this, is insulting the honour of a dog. I would definitely not go steal things....." Little Nine righteously refuted this accusation, four of his little paws scrabbling about in the air, struggling but also trying to please Ye Qingyu with a smile at the same time.

Before he finished.

Xiu!

Little Silver waved his tail, shooting through the air, indicating that Ye Qingyu should follow him.

"Woof?" Little Nine had a bad premonition.

Then Little Silver really lead Ye Qingyu along the way. Ye Qingyu followed him to one of the storage rooms behind the quiet area of the fourth floor.

The originally completely empty room, without knowing when, had already been completely filled with all sorts of assorted items. Most of them were food or alcohol. There was a strange smell that came over one when the door was opened. There were also some faint and indistinct rare herbs as well as some glimmering metals.....

“Fuck.....” Ye Qingyu’s face was completely dark, already without the energy to swear.

There was no need to ask anymore.

These items, must have been stolen by the glutton Little Nine.

This is completely going against the heavens. Stealing so many items, and secretly storing them here, if the owners of these lost items came to find him, then it was completely like yellow soil smeared on Ye Qingyu’s trousers; even if it was not shit, it would be called shit. He could not completely explain what had happened. At this time, he could only butcher this glutton as reparation for those lost owners.

Little Silver produly cried about his achievement of revealing this crime. His tail pointed at the items, then pointed at Little Nine, completely pointing at the original perpetrator

“You little fellow, you want to change as an eyewitness.”

Ye Qingyu remembered, that the shopkeeper of the Breeze and Drizzle building had once mentioned, that it was a white little dog carrying a little silver snake that can fly. The so called little silver snake that can fly, must be Little Silver.

After Little Silver was glared at by Ye Qingyu, it obediently flew to his head, burying himself into his head. It pretended it was a silver coloured hairpin, not daring to move in the slightest.

The silly dog Little Nine was so infuriated that he was gnashing his teeth. “Woof, woof. Little Silver, today I will say these words; our

friendship is finished, completely and utterly finished.”

Little Silver pretended to be dead in Ye Qingyu’s hair, not even emitting a sound.

Ye Qingyu could not even laugh or cry.

All the pets that he raised were complete lunatics.

“I’ll give you fifteen minutes to completely clear out the items here. From now on you’re not allowed to bring these things back. If you are captured by someone, then you can just wait to be skinned for dog meat for the pot.” Ye Qingyu threw Little Nine in to the heap of miscellaneous items, turning and leaving.

.....

.....

Deep into the night, it was quit.

In a normal and common little inn.

“Sister, why are you so well mannered towards that bastard today?” Under the light of the dim old lamp, the ponytailed little girl said grumpily.

The Song Xiaojun who had her mask taken off, was wearing a short dress with bare feet. She was hugging the little toy white bear, silently sitting on the bed, seeming to be in a daze thinking of something. Hearing the words of the ponytailed girl, she had a face of confusion as she lifted her head, “Ah?”

“Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa.” The pigtailed little girl pulled at her own braid letting out a quiet sharp scream. Then she said helplessly, “Sister, what’s up with you today? Ever since you came from the Common Liquor House, you’ve been in a completely daze, as if you have lost your soul. Hey, are you still thinking about that bad person?”

“What bad person?” Song Xiaojun lazily laid back on the bed.

The pony tailed girl jumped up and said secretively, “That little person that came over to try and strike a conversation. You must not be fooled by

him, I've seen that person's cruel and vicious methods. In the Breeze and Drizzle building, I saw with my own eyes him poisonously killing blood flame and white lizard. He's a butcher, a mad killer."

"Oh, him....." Song Xiaojun kneaded the little bear in her embrace, stretching her delicate little legs straight. This emitted a snow white glow in the light, placing her feet under the duvet. "That person, he's strange."

"Strange? Ai, this is finished. You would think such things, curiosity is the most obvious and first signs that a woman is about to fall....." The ponytailed girl sighed tragically, a complete picture of grief and inconsolable sadness.

"What foolish things are you saying?" Song Xiaojun used the little toy bear to hit the ponytailed girl.

"Ouch, ouch, ouch....." The ponytailed girl evaded these strikes with a smile, saying with a laugh, "I was joking. But sister, why did you say so many things with him. You spoke to him three times. Do you know, you have never ever spoken more than two times with any male before....."

Song Xiaojun sat by the side, leaning against the pillow, her face against the little toy bear, while she said, "That person, is somewhat strange?"

"Strange? Just where is he strange?" The ponytailed girl was taken aback.

"En, on his body, there is the aura of the power of darkness." Song Xiaojun said thoughtfully.

"Eh? How is this possible?" the ponytailed girl sharply screeched. "Could it be that bad person, is someone of our Unmoving City of Darkness?"

"I don't know." Song Xiaojun comfortably stretched her back. "Therefore I thought, if he really is someone of the Unmoving City of Darkness, then he should recognise me. But the Song Xiaojun he mentioned....Xiaoxian, have you heard of the name Song Xiaojun before?"

The name of this ponytailed girl was called Xiaoxian. "I haven't, this fellow must be spouting nonsense.

Song Xiaojun did not say anything more.

She did not know why, but when she looked at this white clothed youth, there was an extremely peculiar sensation. It was a sensation she had never experienced before, as if she had once met such a person before at someplace. It was hard to say just what it was. When she saw a stranger, she would instinctively put them at arms left. But when she looked at him, there was an inexplicable closeness.....

Why was this white robed outh special?

She was not sure.

Looking at the little bear in her embrace, she once again thought of the mystery that had plagued her.

Just where had this little toy bear come from. Why was it that she did not have the slightest of memory of it. But in her subconsciousness, she felt that it was incomparably important, as if it was the second part of her life. Every time she felt agitated, as long as she held this little bear and slept, she would have a sweet dream.

She felt that she had overlooked something.

Or as if she had forgotten something.

But the ancient memories that came from the bloodline in her body, that she had not lost anything, or abandoned anything. She was the King of the Unmoving City of Darkness, a ruler that controlled the darkness of the Past, the Present, and the Future. She awaited the day that the glory of the past would once again be recovered.

She was called Darkness

The ruler of the power of darkness.

Who was Song Xiaojun?

.....

.....

The morning of the second day.

Huang Zhen really brought Jin Ling'er to White Horse tower.

Bai Yuanxing did not know why his master would recruit an immature and young little fellow as the first person recruited by the White Horse tower. However he still very passionately received Jin Ling'er. After all, in the days following Ye Qingyu, he had seen too many strange things, Bai Yuanxing had already gotten somewhat used to it.

After introducing the rules of the White Horse tower in detail to Jin Ling'er, Bai Yuanxing said with a smile, "Little brother, Jin, after coming to the White Horse tower, all the things you say and do must first consider the face of our Marquis. You cannot be as free as you were before. There are three days of holidays in a month, you can return and visit your family. The large majority of the time, you have to stay here and cultivate...."

As he was saying these things, Ye Qingyu came down from upstairs.=

"Uncle, I've come." Jin Ling'er came over excitedly."

Ye Qingyu felt black lines on his forehead. "Call me brother, I'm only sixteen."

"Okay, Uncle." Jin Ling'er obediently answered.

This little brat.。

After a conversation, Huang Zhen expressed her thanks to Ye Qingyu once again. Only then could she rest assured and leave. As one of the most popular herbal masters of Hundred herb hall, she needed to quickly return and handle business.

# Chapter 215: Could it be he was Marquis Ye?

“Yuanxing, you bring Ling’er to the Vanguard to test his martial heart, meridians and talent. Come back and report back to me.” For Ye Qingyu to teach this little brat, he first needed to investigate clearly the talent and foundations of Ling’er. There were no testing implements or formations within the White Horse tower, so he needed to borrow the power of the Vanguard.

Ye Qingyu directed.

Right now Ye Qingyu could already be counted as someone belonging to the Vanguard. Bai Yuanxing had went many times to the Vanguard, so he was extremely familiar with the people in the Vanguard.

Bai Yuanxing prepared a little, then brought Jin Ling’er out.

After Ye Qingyu had finished the breakfast Mother Wu prepared and finished his cultivation training in the early morning, he changed into a fresh set of clothes. He also departed.

He did not have any particular aim, two hands behind his back, strolling on the streets and merging with the flow of people.

.....

.....

Four hours later.

Noon.

Common Liquor house.

Ye Qingyu, while laughing, pushed open the short door. A hot and bustling atmosphere came surging out.

“You little kid, you dare to come again?” A large man seeing Ye Qingyu, instantly slapped the table and stood up, shouting. “Brother, come out. This little brat has come again, yesterday matters were far too shameful.

How is that so many people would have fallen to this little kid, today we must not lose..... Little kid, let's compete in drinking alcohol, do you dare?"

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously. "Come, come, come. Whoever doesn't dare is a grandson."

Everyone chuckled greatly within the Liquor House.

The female proprietor with the figure of a bucket rushed over as she heard the news. When she saw Ye Qingyu, her smile and eyes was so great that they formed narrow cracks.

Very quickly, the loud sounds of drinking games began exploding madly within this little Liquor house. With Ye Qingyu at its centre, a group of large and burly men surrounded him with red faces, their fists madly moving, spit and saliva flying anywhere. Ye Qingyu did not reject anyone, lifting one of his legs on the table, unrolling his sleeves and sticking out his chest, yelling loudly as he played.....

There was clamorous laughter everywhere within the liquor store.

"Hey, have you heard, on the Yong'an Street, there has been someone who died. There were several that were beaten alive by the people of the sects."

"I've heard about it already. I heard that the scum of the sects used the excuse to capture demons to obstruct the way of a young lady. They wanted to search her body no matter what, and the mother of this girl wanted to halt them, but both her legs were broken. This was just so tragic; they do this without regard for laws and heavens. The end result was that there were experts of the army who could not bear to watch this and wanted to punish these six scums of the sects. These scum were beaten alive on the streets....."

Within the liquor house, there were people loudly discussing.

Noon was namely the time of lunch. There were more and more people entering into the liquor house, and all sorts of assorted information from various channels passed through the mouths of the customers to this



place.

The people who came after, familiarly and easily immersed themselves into such discussion.

“It is not only the Yong’an Street. On the main West Road, there were tens of experts from the sects that were also beaten to death..... It was said that it was because tens of these fellows accused the [Zhen Pavilion] store of hiding demon race within. They forced entry to search, breaking many things, and furthermore wanted to steal the treasures of that store. The consequence was that there was a bystander nearby that killed them all, punch by punch.....”

“That ferocious? Why is the city so chaotic these days?”

“Do you still not know? Even the patriarch of the Xuan school was killed by someone. It was said that his entire body was sealed in ice, turning into an ice sculpture. Then, under the harsh glare of the sun, his body melted along with the ice, turning into a puddle of water.....”

“I’ve heard that, there were someone that began greatly killing in the morning, targeting those fellows of the sects that acted out of line.”

“You guys still do not know? It’s the heroic martial Marquis Ye Qingyu cleaning up the trash.....” There was someone who mysteriously said this phrase.

The people by the side, instantly became interested.

“Marquis Ye? You mean the Marquis Ye that directly fought against the Zhang San at White Horse tower previously?”

“If not him, then who else? Do you guys not even know this? That day in Hundred Herb Hall, Marquis Ye saw the people of the Violet Seven Stars sect making things difficult for the family of a fallen warrior of Youyan army. Under his rage, he told them to spread the word to all the sect in Youyan Pass, telling to be a little more honest. If they cause any more trouble, then he would show no mercy. It’s said that all the small and large sects that came to the city have been enraged by his words.....”

The previous young man who spoke, acted like if he was telling a story.

He recounted the matters that had occurred in the Hundred Herb Hall all over again.

In these days, the military citizens of Youyan Pass had experienced the hardship caused by the sects. Hearing the young man saying such words, there was instantly people cheering around him.

The people of the liquor house, were slowly attracted by this topic of discussion, everyone conversing. The Ye Qingyu that was competing in drinking alcohol with the burly men was slowly overlooked.

The young man seeing that more and more people surrounded him, became more and more excited.

He drank a cup of tea, then continued on. "Marquis Ye under his rage, spoke his words of warnings to all the large sects. But everyone knows, this crowd of Jianghu people are cucumbers, everyone of them needing a slap. Hearing the warning of Marquis Ye, they felt their dignity was challenged, and they had been insulted. There were some people that jumped out, deliberately going against Marquis Ye. This morning, there were some people of the sects that does not fear death that caused chaos intentionally, challenging Marquis Ye's line....."

"This bunch of trash that deserves to die!"

"These people of the sects really are a laughing stock. Every one of them are known as experts, but they do not fight with the demon race. These years if not for the Youyan army defending the borders, it is most likely that more than half the region of the Empire would fall into the hands of the demon race. But these fellows still think they are so great, looking down on the warriors and soldiers of the Youyan army....."

"That's right. In these days, they caused trouble within the Pass, not doing anything right."

The people around them involuntarily began cursing.

There was someone who asked impatiently. "Don't interrupt. Continue to speak, did Marquis Ye act?"

The young man leisurely drank a mouthful of tea, taking a deliberate

pause. Only then did he continue. "Of course, he acted. You guys already said previously. Yong'an Street, the main West road, as well as the incident in the Zhen pavilion. It was said that it was Marquis Ye who had taken action. Hehe, this Marquis Ye could be counted as ferocious, doing as he says. From this morning onwards, he spared no mercy at all. A punch after another, he killed the people of the sects who caused needless trouble ....."

Si!Si!

There were cold inhalations of shock all around.

"How do you know it is Marquis Ye who did this?" Someone said suspiciously. "Could it not be someone else who had acted?"

The young man looked at this person in disdain. "This matter, has already spread out greatly outside. There are many people who personally witnessed Marquis Ye acting. You guys should not be aware that the entire Youyan Pass is boiling right now....."

Everyone was mute and speechless.

Half a moment later, there was someone that asked a question in a low voice. "What do you guys think, just what does Marquis Ye looks like? He really did something that greatly pleases the heart of everyone. Previously, when the military had publicised the actions of Marquis Ye, I did not particularly believe it. But right now, I believe it entirely. I feel that we need more hard men like Marquis Ye in the army of Youyan Pass that will stand and speak out at the crucial time."

"Does that even need to be said. For a hero like Marquis Ye, he must be eight feet tall, wearing golden armour, like a bronze giant....."

"Nonsense, I've heard that Marquis Ye is still very young."

"Even if he was any younger, he must be around thirty five years old. For his strength to be so great, he needs time to train and cultivate. But for an expert of that realm, he really can be counted as really young."

The crowd began discussing excitedly.

The other side.

Ye Qingyu once again obtained victory in competing to drink alcohol.

The seven or eight burly men that came from an armed escort company, once again fell on the table, completely drunk.

“Just who is this little brat, he can drink so much.”

“He has a special constitution?”

“He really cannot be drunk even after a thousand cups.”

The gazes of the people, once again returned to this side.

At this moment—

Kadong.

The short door of the liquor house was heavily pushed open.

There were people charging in.

Tens of people, wearing white coloured morning garments and apparel rushed in. There was someone who held a mourning staff draped in white<sup>[1]</sup> held at a funeral to show filial piety. The person as the lead, had a muscular body, bristle like beard. He had a ferocious expression, eyes completely red, like a small giant. He came thudding over, killing intent emanating from him that instantly terrified people around him.

The other tens of people following him, also had vicious and furious expressions, their gazes as if they wanted to eat someone.

When these tens of people entered, the originally bustling atmosphere of the common liquor house was frozen. There was an icy atmosphere in the air, and the smiles on everyone's face froze. It was as if there was a cold and chilling blade pressed against their throat.

“Those who are not related, scram outside.” The muscular man with a bristly beard ferociously shouted these words.

Everyone looked at each other, not knowing what this fellow meant.

“Who are you?” There was someone who did not accept his command, slapping his table and sneering. “What do you mean?”

Xiu!

A blade shot through the air onto that person's table, constantly quivering.

"The Xuan school is seeking revenge. Those that has nothing to do with this, retreat. When we fight later, swords and spears have no eyes. If we kill anyone by mistake, don't blame us." Behind the burly man, a tall and slim person wearing coarse mourning garments roared in rage.

Xuan school?

The faces of everyone in the liquor house changed.

A person from the sects?

"What are you looking at. All scam out. I'll count to three, if you don't scam, I'll slaughter you bunch of trash." Another disciple of the Xuan school unsheathed the blade at his waist, killing intent boiling. He directly kicked a table nearby, sending a customer flying out.

There was instantly the sound of shock and curses in the room.

"Marquis Ye, Marquis Ye. Today you must give us your explanation. Why have you killed our master?" The muscular man at the lead, looked at the centre of the room.

Marquis Ye?

All the screams and curses halted abruptly.

Everyone followed the gazes of the muscular man, seeing a crowd of seven or eight men completely dazed on the floor drunk.

What did he mean?

Marquis Ye was one of the drunk men?

Hey, that's not right. There was someone that was not drunk.

The white clothed youth with a shocking tolerance for alcohol.

He was sitting at the table with a calm expression, holding his chin as he coldly regarded this crowd of Xuan school people.

Could it be.....this white robed youth.....

He was.....Ye Qingyu?

# Chapter 216: Drinking some alcohol and killing some people

Countless gazes gathered on Ye Qingyu's figure.

The female proprietor that had a figure like a bucket exchanged a glance with her worker, completely not daring to believe in their guess.

The entire liquor house was in a state where they could not form a single thought.

This was apart from the mess of drunken men that had caused a complete mess by their vomiting. They were currently sweetly sleeping and snoring.

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth to let out a burp, a hand on the coarse jar of alcohol. "Just who are you people. First report your names, let me see, if I have killed your people. This morning, I've killed far too many, I can't remember..... Hm, you're asking for the reason I killed? Normally, there is only one, and that is that they should die."

"Ridiculous!"

"Impudence!"

"You're looking to die!"

The disciples of the Xuan sect, began roaring in rage.

"The person surnamed Ye, if you do not give us a satisfactory answer today, then the entire Xuan sect, even if we all die in battle, we will fight for justice," The man with the needle like beard shouted in anger and then continued ranting, "I don't care what kind of Marquis you are. A life for a life. Matters in Jianghu are decided by the blade and the sword."

"Xuan sect? Your master? Oh, the shameless person that wanted to rob the treasure of the Zhen pavilion?" Ye Qingyu lightly tapped on the coarse jar of alcohol, and said while laughing, "I killed him. You want to take revenge for him?"

"Nonsense. Our master is someone with status, how could he do that

sort of thing. It must be you, you deliberately framed him.....” The man with beard angrily contradicted this.

“There are too many people with status. Who says that people with status cannot do bad things? Just what kind of nonsensical logic is this.....” Ye Qingyu lifted his hands to break apart their words, his tone becoming firm. “I’m too lazy to tell you much. So I’ll give you two choices; one is to scram out of Youyan Pass, and not to cause trouble here anymore. I won’t pursue things any further. The other is to continue misinterpreting the truth, making a deer out of a horse. I’ll make you and your master reunite if so.”

Ye Qingyu began a killing spree this morning. He wanted to use the force of thunder and lightning to suppress the people of the Jianghu.

Youyan Pass could not become chaotic.

This was the most important objective.

When he left in the morning, Ye Qingyu went to find the painting saint, Mr. Liu, at the Pass Lord’s residence.

Partly it was to find out some news about the current status of Lu Zhaoge. But he did not manage to obtain anything useful. The other part was to completely scout out the information of the sects that had entered into Youyan Pass. He believed that the military council pavilion would have investigations and information to do with this. For this point, Mr. Liu did not disappoint him. Very quickly, a jade scroll with the details of the large and small sects, the list of experts, as well as other information. It was exceedingly clear and extensive.

The machine of the army was far more powerful in this aspect than the imagination of the people of the sects.

Amidst the chaos, everything was tightly observed.

Within this jade piece, the background information on the Xuan sect was also mentioned.

The sect master, Tian Xuanzi, was an expert at the fifty springs. He was a false gentleman, and had done a fair number of atrocious deeds. This



time, his personality had not changed. Casually finding an excuse, he went to the Zhen pavilion to rob them of the treasure of the store. Threatening and forcing them, he also injured two or three of the workers. Ye Qingyu encountered him, and he directly activated the Limitless Divine way, his battle power doubling and acted to kill him.

This Xuan sect, was originally founded by an expert of the older generation. It could be counted as a famous and righteous sect with decent strength. Although it was not part of the three schools and three sects, it could be counted as somewhat famous. It was a pity that the position of leader of the sect was passed onto the wrong person, and it gradually aided and abetted the wicked.

For this type of sect, it was reasonable for them to want to take advantage of a crisis.

From Ye Qingyu's perspective, to remove the poisonous tumour, it was better off to just destroy such sects.

Therefore, when he had acted, he did not show the slightest hint of mercy.

As for the disciples of the Xuan sect in front of him, Ye Qingyu had prepared to let them go.

But the opposing party would not take his favour.

"Go, lets fight with this trash..... There's no need to concern ourselves over the honour of the Jianghu when fighting with this killing demon. Let's act together, and slaughter him up." A Xuan sect disciple madly rushed up, his long sword waving about, his sword qi like frost. His strength was not weak, around twenty spirit springs. When he acted, he completely did not care about endangering the lives of the other customers.

The female proprietor with the figure like a bucket sharply screeched, worrying about her furniture, but she did not dare block.....

As for the other Xuan sect disciples, they also activated their yuan cultivation, blades and swords unsheathed. Kicking tables and breaking

chairs, they advanced from all four sides.

Ye Qingyu let out a sigh.

“This is your own choice.”

Before he had finished.

The roar of dragons sounded out.

The twenty snow dragons mirage within his body shot out. The pressure of the dragons emanated, while his cold qi was surging. The temperature of the large hall sharply descended, and the ice crystal snow blossom exploded with Ye Qingyu at the centre. It was as if there was a snowstorm that had suddenly appeared, rushing towards those Xuan sect disciples. Their eyes could not even be opened, and they were halted in their tracks by the fierce winds, finding it hard to even take a step forward.....

Ye Qingyu's figure was as if lightning flashed by his original position. In an instant, he appeared above the head of the needle bearded man, his palm striking out.

“To want to kill me, haha. Your strength is only at the twenty Spirit springs. To ambush and launch a sneak attack on my master, I will avenge him today..... The burning heaven fist of the Xuan —kill!” The needle bearded muscle man laughed ferociously with rage and sinisterness. The long blade in his hand shot out. The accumulated force, in an instant, was like an avalanche.

Ye Qingyu's palm, slapped on the back of the blade. His figure was like a flying crane, returning to his original seat.

“Hahaha, little thief Ye, come here and do battle again.” The bearded man seeing his strike had succeeded, his impulsiveness shot up greatly.

In the instant Ye Qingyu returned to his original seat, the ice crystal storm all around retreated. Like a whale sucking in water, it all flew back, the snow in the air instantly entering into his body. It was as if nothing had occurred whatsoever.

He sat before the table. Lifting the coarse jar of alcohol, he poured

himself a bowl of alcohol on the pottery.

“Fight again?” Ye Qingyu lifted the bowl of alcohol, his sword shaped eyebrows lifting up into his hair. With a faint smile, he finished the alcohol in his bowl.

Opposite.

The needle bearded muscle man suddenly let out a gasp of shock, as if he had encountered something incomprehensible.

On the back of his long blade, a frost imprint of a palm could clearly be seen. Ray after ray of cold ice patterns, with this palm print at the centre, constantly spreading out throughout all directions. In the blink of an eye, this huge shaped cutting blade was enveloped by ice. Even the hands of the burly man were frozen. By the time he had let out a gasp, this cold ice had already crept up to his shoulder and arms.....

“What is happening....demonic technique..... you.....” The muscle man let out a sharp scream as if he had saw a ghost.

At this time, he discovered, without knowing when, the bodies of his brothers had already been covered by a thick layer of snow and ice. Every one of them maintained their stances of charging forward with swords held, as if they had been fossilised. They were frozen where they were, as if every single one of them was a snowman, and they had long lost any signs of life.....

The explosive snow storm just now..... so it was that terrifying.

A frightening killing technique.

In a moment, it completely enveloped everything.

Why was this??

This Ye Qingyu, was it not said that he was at the twenty Spirit springs level of cultivation?

Was it not that old man Xuanzi was ambushed by him?

But.....

He had fallen for it, he should not have believed in those fellows.

He was used by someone like a spear?

Too cruel.

Countless thoughts and desires flashed by the heart of the muscular man in an instant. The next instant, cold qi completely froze his heart, transforming him into an ice sculpture that sealed him where he was. His life was completely gone.

Silence was all around.

Ye Qingyu placed the bowl of alcohol back onto the table. With a flick of his finger, a snow dragon mirage roared out. Like lightning, it soared past the ice sculptures of the tens of people in the hall. With a rumble, these ice sculptures were directly shattered into minute smithereens, collapsing to the floor. Very quickly, they began to melt, turning into a faint red water.....

Drinking alcohol.

Killing enemies.

When the dragon roared out, there was not even a corpse remaining.

This entire process, was like an illusion or shadow. In but two or three breaths time, before anyone could react, the tens of experts of the Xuan sect including the forty Spirit spring bearded man, disappeared from the world.

The white robed figure, was graceful like jade.

He killed people as he faintly smiled.

Everyone could not believe what they had just witnessed.

This cold as ice water, fierce and ferocious Marquis Ye, was he really the white robed youth that had rolled up his sleeves standing on the table along with those rough men from the armed escort company five minutes ago?

The differing images of Ye Qingyu, constantly struck against each other

in everyone's mind.

The female proprietor was completely tongue tied. She felt that the world seemed to be not quite right.

Originally she had thought this battle was unavoidable. Her little liquor house was most likely going to be collateral damage. As long as some broken furniture remained, this was already going to be a good outcome. Who would have thought that this battle came and left so quickly. These experts of the sects that were like wolves and tigers. They were so strong that they could not be struck back by normal people. But in front of this handsome young man, they were like clay chickens and porcelain dogs; they could not even withstand a strike.

The losses of the liquor house, was only the several tables and chairs broken apart by the kicks.

“If I spread that the Marquis Ye came here to kill, perhaps the business of the liquor house would instantly explode to be ten times greater.....”

The female owner began to dream.

Ye Qingyu smiled lightly, knowing that he could no longer continue here. Standing up to clasp his hand, he acted as if nothing had occurred. “Everyone, I had great fun drinking today. The matters just now have disturbed everyone. I will still come here to compete in drinking alcohol later, I hope that everyone will not have any reservations and at that time, there will still be people willing to compete with me..... I'll say my partings.”

As he finished, he threw the female owner a piece of silver, turning to leave from the Common Liquor house.

A short while later, there was the large shout of the female owner from behind him, “Marquis Ye, come back here often.”

The originally deathly quiet liquor house, exploded with noise. Everyone began madly exclaiming and discussing. They would not even imagine in their dreams, the youth that had continuously came to the liquor house these two days, really was the deity like Ye Qingyu from out of legends.

Those who bragged and had drunk with Ye Qingyu beforehand, their faces were completely red.

This short period of time was determined to become a legend.

It would become a memory that many people could recount and form a fantastic tale.

Of course, for some other people, this was only the beginning of the story.

And when Ye Qingyu had not left long from the common Liquor house, two young men wearing long robes walked out from a tea house opposite. Looking at each other with a smile, there was the satisfaction of a plan working.

# Chapter 217: It's time for them to be tidied up

“He really is a brash person. It seems like the worries of Gongzi[1] and the others, really were needless.” The young man with a fan in his hand said. He wore a scholarly long robe and seemed to be around twenty four or five years old. His facial features seemed righteous, but there was a maliciousness concealed between his eyebrows. He looked at Ye Qingyu's retreating figure, exposing a faint smile.

The other young man wore a brocaded robe, with gold fabric tying back his hair. He possessed a forehead that was like white jade. Both his hands were clasped behind his back, his fingers long and slender, as if he was a girl. There was powder dusted on his complexion, making his face seemed extremely pale and wan, as if he was a person coming back from the grave.

This person let out a sinister smile. “Your Gongzi to have come to do great things in Youyan Pass. Only by muddying the waters will there be an opportunity for him to do so. Originally, there was already someone aiding from behind the scenes within the Youyan army, but there has not been any places to break through. Haha, this Ye Qingyu really does not understand the importance of the situation. Jumping out so ferociously, he has fallen perfectly into the plans of our gongzi.....this can be counted as his misfortune.”

The young man holding a fan smiled and nodded his friend. “The retards of the Xuan sect, to really run to their deaths after a few words of encouragement. For these types of trash, them dying in greater numbers will cause our mission to be completed quicker and quicker.....The next few days, I'll find more cannon fodder for Ye Qingyu that stupid dog to happily kill. Our aim will have been achieved by then.”

The white faced young man nodded his head in agreement, then grinned in satisfaction. “They are after all military brutes. Their brains are as simple as their muscles. To want to compete in manipulation and

strategy with the people of the Jianghu, they are lacking by far. Our gongzi is known as 'Planner without flaws'. To make a fools of these fellows, is this not something that is achievable just by a wave of his hands. This Ye Qingyu has been exaggerated as unique in Heaven and Earth, but from the current situation, this is just a great joke.”

Both the grins on the two persons face was extremely self satisfied, their arrogance extremely evident.

It was only that the two did not see, in the teahouse behind them, there was a young girl wearing a golden laced mask behind them. Her cold and indifferent gaze fell on the two. The words just now fell into her ears without fail. But the two experts of the Jianghu failed to detect her presence at all.

“Sister, these two fellows are mumbling so much. I think they are not good people at all, why don't we just go and kill them?” The ponytailed girl came to her side and said in a light voice, the little intricate dagger in her hand constantly being swung around.

Song Xiaojun turned her head to give the ponytailed Xian'er a glance, but did not say anything; her gaze once again returning to the table. Her expression quickly recovered to her lazy and mindless state.

“Ah, ah, ah.....sister you are doing it again.” Xian'er sighed in exasperation. “These days why are your thoughts so uncollected, you are disinterested in everything. Why are we still remaining within this city, why don't we return. Those old fellows are always waiting to pluck the thorn at their sides at every moment.”

Song Xiaojun did not say anything in response.

The two of them sat in the tea house, silently sitting without saying anything.

The two young men outside left at some unknown time.

.....

.....



Four miles away from the military supply department.

In the rear courtyard of a guest house.

Ten days before, this guest house had been completely booked by a mysterious and wealthy hand.

Apart from the cooks and the female servant, everyone else such as the guests and the owners had left. The mysterious guest had booked ten guesthouses just like this. Therefore the owner happily and joyfully brought his entire family to live in a rented place faraway from this place.

Twenty Jianghu experts entered into the guesthouse.

The person in the lead was a scholar with a facial complexion like jade. The large majority of the time he was tasting tea under the plum blossom tree. There were four beautiful female servants next to him, dancing, playing the flute or zither. He had a complete disposition of a wealthy noble son coming here to revel and play around, a bored and lazy attitude evident in his actions.

But the experts of the Jianghu people beside him had extremely fearsome appearances. The large majority of them had an ferocious aura, with an odour of blood around their blades. From one glance, one could discern they were killers with blood stained swords.

Noon passed.

The noble gongzi lay under the tree reclining on the chair, contentedly dozing off. The four pretty servants helped him knead and massage his legs and feet. The entire scene was extremely peaceful, unhurried and leisurely.

The sound of footsteps came.

“Gongzi, [Painting Fan] and [Golden Jade], the two of them have returned. They have something to report to Gongzi you,” There was someone that carefully notified the young master of their arrival from far away.

The noble young master eye’s faintly squinted, waving his hand. “Allow

them to enter.”

Before long.

The fan wielding young man as well as the person with a white face like jade that had appeared at the Common Liquor house respectfully entered. They halted their steps three metres away from the chair, then paid their respects. “Gongzi, we have returned.”

“How is the situation?”

The voice of this noble young master was dainty, as if it was a stretched out steel wire. There was a strange feeling to it that was very hard to describe.

The young man holding the fan that was known as the [Painting fan] respectfully replied: “Reporting back to Gongzi, everything is as you age calculated. Ye Qingyu really is a person who only knows how to be brash and ferocious. This morning, he really acted to kill sixty or more of the experts of the Jianghu. His methods were extremely vicious.....According to your instructions, we have also hiddenly lit a significant number of flames for him. I believe that in the coming days, Ye Qingyu will be overwhelmingly attacked by many Jianghu experts. At that point, perhaps we can implicate more higher ups of the Youyan army. The situation will become more and more chaotic.”

“No matter whether the army wants to protect Ye Qingyu or sacrifice him to quell the rage of the sects, this is a huge strike against the Yoyan army. Then our actions will become much more convenient.” The person known as the [Golden jade] lowered his head respectfully and said, “Gongzi has missed nothing in his plans. The manipulative power of the Jianghu, is not something the brutes of the army can guess at.....Young master, your strategy really is profound.”

The lip of the noble young master reclining back curled back.

“This is still not enough. The muddier the waters the better, the more chaotic the situation, the better.” His hand moved, and a piece of white paper floated before the two people. “Bring some people to take action against the experts of the sects on this list. Especially the little sects

known to be righteous sects. I hear that they are preparing to follow Ye Qingyu's rules. Haha, if their disciples were killed by Ye Qingyu, would those stubborn old fellows still act so obediently?"

[Painting fan] received the piece of paper. Looking at the names of the people of several sects as well as some solitary experts, he was faintly shocked.

Young master wanted to take action against some of these people?

Although they were not people of the three sects and three schools, the top six sects, but they were still a significant force.....It seems like young master was really going to act without restraint. However they were not directly confronting with these people. If they took action in secret, the problem was not great.

The [Golden jade], listening, seemed to have suddenly thought of something. He could not help but open his mouth, "Reporting back to Gongzi, the females disciples of the immortal voice valley has already arrived to Youyan Pass. Haha, these pure virgin and conceited female experts can sell for a high price on the black market. It is unknown just how many people wants to take their virginity, and unknown how many people admire and want to pursue them. If they were sullied, and there are traces of Ye Qingyu left at the scene of the crime, this little Marquis would not be able to talk his way out of this no matter how many mouths he has....."

On the chair.

The eyes of the noble young master opened wide, a flash of bright light flitting past.

[Golden Jade] was shocked by this.

But there was a faint smile on the face of the noble young master. Nodding his head he spoke, "Very good, this proposal is very good..... that's right, love, just how perfect it is. I hear it can make people do ridiculous actions.....go and do it, it is also good if the immortal voice valley is destroyed. Hahaha!"

The two person hearing this were instantly overjoyed.

To take action against the immortal voice valley was definitely a mission they could benefit from. Thinking of the beauty of the female experts of the immortal voice valley, and that they could play with them as they please.....the bones of the two were about to go soft.

A gust of wind blew past.

The plum pink blossoms on the tree of the courtyard fell and scattered on the ground.

The [Painting fan] instinctively reached out to grabbed at a swathe of plum blossoms. But the moment it entered into his hand, there was a chill in his hands. Then these plum blossoms disappeared without any signs from his palm.

“These are not plum blossoms? It is.....snowflakes?”

His heart was faintly shocked.

There were zero clouds in the skies. The season had already passed, why would there still be snow?

At this time, the noble young master lazily reclining on the chair, his complexion abruptly changed. He immediately stood up, swiping his long sleeve through the air. A burst of strong wind surged, blowing away the pink and white flowers out. The originally lazy atmosphere completely disappeared, his entire person becoming sharp. His eyes like blades, he coldly said: “There is an expert.....Just what venerable expert has arrived, why have you not notified me in advance so I can properly receive you?”

The hearts of the [Painting fan] and [Golden jade] fiercely thumped.

There was an expert that had arrived.

For them not to have sense the slightest trace of his presence.

They could only hear a voice sound out within the courtyard.

“A bunch of flies that plots and scheme, staying here to plan how to act against other. Shameless.....Haha, receive my arrival? Are you fit to do so?”

As they followed along to the voice's origin

[Painting fan] and [Golden jade] had a look, and instantly were indescribably shocked.

They could see someone sitting above the roof of the guesthouse. There was a jar of coarse alcohol in front of him. Properly, he slapped away the mud used to seal the jar, opening the lid and drank a gulp of alcohol. Like an emperor attending the morning court, he looked down from an high position at everyone on the rear courtyard.

Ye Qingyu?

For it to be Ye Qingyu!

Both the [Painting fan] as well as the [Golden jade] could not believe in their eyes?!

This.....how could he be here?

How did he discover this place?

The hearts of the two instantly went icy cold.

"You are....Marquis Ye?" After the noble young master was slightly shocked, a smile appeared on his face. "Marquis Ye's great name, is like thunder piercing the ears. I had never imagined I would experience your prescence toda, the rumours indeed do your justice. I am the [Five Poison Gongzi] of the Five poison school, I pay my respects to Marquis Ye. The wind is chilly on the top of the building, how about Marquis Ye comes down and meets with me?"

"Is there meaning in saying such fart like words?" Ye Qingyu said mockingly. "Furthermore, you type of maggots that live in the dark and gloom, just what right do you have to have a meeting with me? I think that the five poison sect doesn't want to exist anymore. A dog fart like third class school, to dare interfere with the great business of the Empire, not knowing your own strength. I really wonder where does your pitiful strength comes from? A group of ants really dare of plot and subvert matters of the Empire. It seems the sects of the Empire has really been left with nothing to do for far too long. It's time for them to be tidied up.

For such a poisonous weed like you, it should be plucked out as soon as possible!”

—

[1] a son of privilege; an old-fashioned term for the son of a wealthy person, a polite expression when referring to someone’s else’s son.

# Chapter 218: Ice tombstone

The complexion of the Five poisons gongzi rapidly changed.

He did not imagine that Ye Qingyu would be too lazy to even feign the slightest bit of civility. The moment he opened his mouth, he exhibited the most naked killing intent.

He suddenly felt that his judgement and evaluation of Ye Qingyu was somewhat not right.

“Marquis Ye why force things into a corner. We just came here to add our strength to the great plan to fight back against the demons.....” The Five poison gongzi smiled faintly. He was about to say something more and delay things a little longer.

But—

“So many useless words. Your death will be the greatest way in which you can contribute to the plan to resist against the demons.”

Ye Qingyu’s hand suddenly moved like lightning, striking at the coarse jar of alcohol in front of him.

The wine jar spun and flew out, shooting directly towards the Five poison gongzi.

“Gongzi, lets attack him.”

“What are we afraid of him for?”

[Painting fan] and [Golden jade] roared with rage as they charged forward. [Painting fan] used the fan in his hands while the other blocked in front of the Five poison Gongzi, wanting to repel the incoming jar of wine backwards.

But—

Boom!

As the hands of the two contacted this jar of wine, with a boom, this jar of wine suddenly exploded.

Within the strong alcohol, there was the extreme cold yuan qi contained within. The alcohol was instantly frozen within the air, transforming into sharp ice protrusions that flew like steel blades or razor sharp swords that flew in a deadly fashion throughout the air. With sounds like the release of arrows, it was as if there were millions of arrows that formed a rainstorm shooting down at the rear courtyard. This sharp whistling sound, unendingly sounded in one's ears.

Both [Painting fan] and [Golden jade] had not estimated that such a thing would occur.

Due to their unpreparedness, both of them was instantly stabbed and pierced through, transforming into two gigantic ice crystal hedgehogs.....

“Ahhh.....”

Both of them tragically screamed.

“Die!”

The complexion of the Five poison Gongzi fiercely changed.

He quickly retreated, using the cloak at his back to block the incoming projectiles. His yuan power was activated to the extreme, and it surged fully into the cloak. In this panicked activation, the cloak was like a black steel shield that blocked in front of him. There was the continuous sounds of clang after clang as there were constantly sharp ice crystal swords that struck on the cloak. This humongous power, made the arm of the Five poison gongzi go numb, forced to take step after step backwards and leaving clear and distinct footprints on the ground.....

“How is this possible?”

The heart of the Five poison Gongzi was fiercely shaken.

Just how was it possible for Ye Qingyu's strength to be so terrifying.

Was it not said that his strength, even at its very greatest – according to the battle with the head of the Supply department Zhang San, was it not only at the forty Spirit springs? He with the fifty Spirit springs of



cultivation was fiercely suppressed by him, and he was showing signs that he could not withstand this fierce onslaught anymore.

Ding!Ding!Ding!

The four beautiful female servants behind him had a very quick reaction speed. All of them unsheathed the swords at their waist, their swords dancing in the air to block the ice crystal projectiles.

The strength of these four girls, was not at all any weaker than the [Painting fan] and the [Golden jade]. The majority of the ice crystals made from alcohol were sent flying back. But there were a minority that passed through their sword screen, slicing apart their skin. On their white dresses, fresh blood seeped out.....

Ye Qingyu's explosive attack had a frightening penetrative attacking power.

“Go, kill him.”

Five poison Gongzi waved his hand.

The four injured female servants madly activated their yuan power, rushing towards Ye Qingyu situated at the roof of the building.

“Hahaha.....not even knowing your own strength. [Banner of Heaven and Earth]!”

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly, a silver spear suddenly appearing in his hands. With a swipe and a flash, it disappeared from his hands, and at the same time, another silver spear appeared. His wrist flicked out, the light of the spear like a torrential rainstorm. With a leap, his figure leapt out like a ferocious dragon, like a bolt of lightning, directly descending rapidly towards the courtyard.

“Fierce dragon pierce!”

The two spears attracted each other, and Ye Qingyu directly flew through the air and struck the bodies of the four female servants.

It was as if a mountain had struck a grass plain.

“Ai.....”

“Ai.....”

The four servant girls were struck flying, the swords in their hand shattering into inch sized pieces. Fresh blood jetted out from their mouths, falling to the ground and fainting.

At this time, Five poison gongzi felt a chill. His body involuntarily leant to one side, and nearly at the same time, the silver spear that had left Ye Qingyu's hands, descended from the skies, like divine punishment from a deity. It embedded next to him, and the chilling cold pierced into their bones, causing half of his body to go numb.....

Ye Qingyu's atmosphere was like a Fiendgod descending. After knocking the four servant girls away, he went directly towards him and was already before him.

This entire process, was like lightning flashing. It was so fast one could not react.

The four consecutive moves of the golden armoured king.

Today, when these four moves were performed in Ye Qingyu's hands, it was many many times more powerful than in the past. Once the air fluctuation was formed, it was like the surge of a long river, was like the destruction of the stars. It utterly did not give anyone any time to breath.

The power of the five poison gongzi was not low, and his battle experience was also extremely rich. But at this moment, his spirit was fiercely shaken, he could not raise any will to resist. It was as if his soul had been destroyed by this strike. Rapidly using a secret escaping technique, he wanted to depart from here. The next instant, he appeared twenty metres away from his original location.

He wanted to widen the distance, and use his poison arts.

However, Ye Qingyu would not give him the time at all.

“Heaven rends and Earth destroys!”

Ye Qingyu shouted, his figure suddenly rising. In a flash, he had already reached hundreds of metres in the air, then his figure quivered. Shooting

down like a bolt of lightning, he was like a falling meteor. Sparks were occurring around his body and the glow of fire encircling around him. His qi had locked onto the five poison gongzi, striking at him.

“What is.....this battle technique?”

The Five poison Gongzi suddenly felt the storm like winds blowing at him, as if a mountain was pressing him down. His body was locked down by qi, as if his body was immobilised by a curse. He could not move at all. And before he could react, with a boom, like lightning crashing onto the ground, the earth violently shook and screamed. Dust rose to the skies, and the earth was broken apart, layer after layer cracking upwards. It was as if even the underground lava, was about to explode.

This guesthouse, instantly transformed into rubble.

A crater tens of metres large, instantly appeared.

The terrifying yuan qi air fluctuations that was like a gale was fluctuating, forming a nearly sealed killing space.

“Pok.....” A jet of blood spurted from the mouth of the Five poison Gongzi.

This strike made him feel as if all the organs in his chest had turned into meat mince. A hard to describe fear completely filled his heart.

Just what kind of move was this?

Just what sort of battle technique was this?

This was not a power that should belong to a human.

This Ye Qingyu was completely like a battle beast.

Escape!

In an instant, his will to fight was broken. He performed his escaping technique, wanting to leave.

But the surrounding yuan qi air currents, knocked him back.

Not only the terrain had changed, he was also imprisoned by energy.

“Die!”

Ye Qingyu's voice, sounded in the Five poison Gongzi's ears.

In his hand, the light of the sword appear again.

The silver spear that he had casually taken from the martial stores of the White Horse tower had long broken apart, not able to withstand the power of the last strike of the four moves of the golden armoured king. The Little Shang sword appeared at the centre of his hand, his yuan power activating. His inner yuan flowed according to a strange rhythm, the sword held in both hands, fluctuating with white light. The Little Shang sword fiercely pierced towards the ground.

Judgement!

The last move of the Unmatched peerless warrior.

A gigantic silver sword, as if it was summoned by Ye Qingyu, appeared from the heavens.

This terrifying sword light destroyed all in its path. Bringing with it an aura of a deity giving final judgement to all lifeform, a holy and pure sword qi emanated throughout the air. Before the Five poison Gongzi could react, this sword light tens of metres long entered into his temple, piercing into his body and striking onto the Earth!

A short period of silence.

This mysterious energy was still fluctuating, then the air fiercely constricted.

The instant it constructed, there was a humongous bang. A silver light circle, with the sword of light at the centre, began spreading towards all directions. Dust shooting to the air, even the walls of the other architecture of the inn was transformed into powder.....

Ye Qingyu's black hair fluted in the air, his white robes flapping. Holding the Little Shang sword, he stood alone.

This terrifying force annihilated everything between heaven and Earth. The dust danced, like flowing fire, as if it was sighing at the loss of life. Opposite.

The five poison Ghongzi used yuan power to silently stand, terror and despair on his face.

On his entire body, there was only blood at the corner of his mouth, without any injuries at all. It seemed as if he was entire unharmed.

But a gust of wind came over.

Pok!

As if it was extinguishing a fire, his figure, suddenly shattered with a explosion. It transformed into countless tiny dust and ashes, floating into the surrounding earth.

The surroundings were already a mess.

The terrifying destructive power of the [Heaven rends and Earth destroys] as well as the judgment of the sword, had completely transformed the guesthouse that occupied ten acres of land, into a wasteland.

But the land outside the guesthouse as well as the other architectures, was not harmed in the slightest..

Within the rear courtyard, there was a peach tree that was still growing in this wasteland. It was not affected by by the destructive power of this battle.

This was Ye Qingyu's intention.

He came to under this peach tree. Thinking for a bit, ice cold qi came from his palm, ice crystal forming in an instant. A half a metre wide, five or six metre tall ice pillar was born in three or four breaths time. It was like a ice crystal tombstone had formed to stand beside this peach tree.

The Little Shang sword in Ye Qingyu's left hand was like a pen. With scratching sounds, he left characters etched onto the ice crystal tombstone.

"The punishment is death for disturbing Youyan! Thus Ye Qingyu has killed the Five poison Gongzi here."

After finishing inscribing these words, Ye Qingyu smiled lightly.

Stowing away the autumn water like sword, he turned and left.

Away from the guesthouse.

The female and male that seemed like cooks, were shivering within the wasteland. Terror caused them to feel unrest.

If they had not received the prior notification of the white robed youth, and escaped from the guesthouse, they would have long transformed into meat paste within the wasteland of this inn. Heavens, just what level of experts had done battle, this was far too terrifying.

.....

Twenty breaths later.

Numerous figures, broke through the air. Rushing from far away, they came outside the guesthouse.

What followed after was the surrounding patrols of the Youyan army.

“What has occurred?”

The people surrounding from far away, looked curiously at this destructive rubble.

After such a fierce battle, the attention of all sorts of forces had been attracted.

There were experts from the top sects, the officers from the army. These people had all been shaken by the bizarre and powerful fluctuations from this battle. They came here to investigate. For such a large scale battle, it was the first time this had occurred within Youyan Pass. The scraps of yuan qi still remaining in the air, was still enough to make one feel fear.

“Could it be that there is someone from the Jianghu still inciting trouble?”

“Someone has been killed, who is it ?”

“Quickly look, there is an ice tombstone here.”

Several figures appeared at the center of the wasteland. A five or six

metre tall ice tombstone, stood alone.

On the tombstone, characters could clearly be seen. Like a mighty dragon dancing. A ominous killing intent, was as if it was about to escape from this tombstone.

Seeing this, the complexion of everyone changed.

# Chapter 219: This is Youyan Pass

On the ice tombstone, there were words, that was like as if it was etched using a steel hook. Every stroke of the characters had an ominous killing intent that shot out.

The experts of the military that had rushed here had relaxed expressions after being taken aback at reading the characters on the ice tombstone.

They originally thought it was the people of the sects causing trouble here and that it would be troublesome for them to maintain order. But they had not thought it was the Marquis Ye that was all the rage who had acted. After connecting this incident with all the information this morning, it seemed like that Ye Qingyu really wanted to act against the people of the sects with the force of thunder.

Although the experts of the army had never heard of the Five poison gongzi before, but to have been targeted by Marquis Ye , it was most likely that he was not a good person anyway. He most likely deserved his death.

These days there were many people that had arrived from the sects. They said that had came to provide aid, but had caused the entire Youyan Pass to fall into chaos. There were many military officers who could not bear to watch this, but as a result of the strict military order ,they had no way of retaliating.

After hearing about the actions of Marquis Ye today, and how he had slaughtered the people of the Jianghu in rage, countless soldiers and officers had jumped up with excitement.

Everyone felt, that the way Marquis Ye did things was thunderous and great. No wonder he came from the military.

This was the true style of a soldier.

Disregarding whether he was right or wrong in this matter, the large majority of the army stood on the side of Marquis Ye. From the



perspective of their emotions, they entirely supported Ye Qingyu.

But the complexions of the experts of the sects that came here after hearing the news completely changed after seeing this tombstone.

“What Five poison gongzi has died?”

“Even the five poison gongzi has been killed?”“

“This.....according to the rumours, does the Five poison Gongzi not have a significant background, and is someone of the Empire? How could.....how could he be killed by Ye Qingyu.

“In this half a day, Ye Qingyu has already killed near a hundred people from the sects. He is completely a killing demon....this is too exaggerated....in these days, the five poison gongzi has not done anything in Youyan Pass. Why has even he suffered under the cruel hands of Ye Qingyu?”

“Quickly return and report this back to senior brother Qiushui.....”

The people that had first arrived were the experts of the sects. Their strengths were not low, and they could be counted as significant people. After their shock, they felt wave after wave of anger. As the saying goes, where they were seated determined what their attitude would be. Today, near a hundred Jianghu people had died. As someone belonging to this group, they naturally felt distress.

“The military will have to give an accounting for this matter.” An elder that came from the Deer cauldron sect said furiously. In front of all the officers, he pointed at the ice tombstone. “This murderous demon Ye Qingyu, in just half a day, have slaughtered near a hundred people of the Jianghu. His cruel methods, utterly causes one to shiver. The military will have to give an explanation for his actions.”

“That’s right. This cannot go on any longer. Will he only give up once have killed everyone from Jianghu?”

“For such a butcher, just what merits does he have that he is able to gain such a heroic military position?”

“For such a butcher to rise to the position of Marquis, is this a joke of the army?”

The experts of the sects, all began adding to the resentment.

On the side of the military, the complexion of everyone changed.

The person with the highest military rank was a middle aged military warfare officer. Hearing these words, he gave a glance and a cold smile to the people of the JIanghu. “This is Youyan Pass. This is the frontier that the Empire has constructed one tile and one brick at the time on the icy mountains. This is not the mountains of your sects. In this place, the Youyan army only has answer and account themselves to the Empire. To give an accounting to you people? Everyone, I think you may have overestimated yourselves. Even if your patriarch themselves came, even they do not have the requirements to make the Youyan army give an accounting of themselves!”

“You.....”

The elder of the Deer cauldron sect was frozen wit rage.

The other experts of the sects were also burning with anger.

No one thought that the stance of the army would be so hard.

The middle aged officer had disdain and contempt on his face.

“As for the matter of Marquis Ye’s title, this is the bestowalment that came from the imperial court as well as the military department. For you to dare question this is a great crime. Not knowing how high the heavens are or how deep the earth is, you came here to speak nonsense. Marquis Ye has the position of the patrolling sword envoy of the Youyan Pass with a special authority. Even if he killed the officers of the Empire, this is within his remit. Only through the permission of the Pass Lord’s residence can he be punished in any way. You bunch of people, to come here and ask for an explanation, and to even call Marquis Ye a murderous demon? In light that this is your first offence, I will not hold you accountable. But if you continue, we will arrest you, and send you to the military prisons and make your patriarchs personally come and collect you

people.”

This speech, was final as steel. His position was as hard and as resolute as could be.

The anger of the experts of the sects was like a raging thunderstorm, but there was nothing they could say.

The face of the elder of the Deer cauldron sect was like a pig’s liver, but he did not dare say anything.

Apart from feeling rage, these people could not help but feel trepidation. Who would have thought that the position of Ye Qingyu in the army would be so much greater than their imagination. Further, what made them both fearful and angry, was once the stance of the army turned hard, for the people of the sects that had always thought they were above other people, they possessed no way of retaliating against their opponent.

“Everyone, remember my words today. I don’t want to repeat it a second time.” After the middle aged officer had finished, he spoke to the comrades next to him. “Let’s go. Accompany the chefs and servers of the inn for medical aid and for them to report this case. Disperse the crowds outside. Right now the issue that the Youyan army is most concerned with is the Springtime offence, and fighting back against the demon race. We cannot make a big deal out of nothing.”

“Yes, superior.”

“That’s right, our time is so valuable. How can we waste our time on such tiny matters.....”

“Hahahaha.....”

The military officers replied, all laughing. They deliberately said such words to anger the people of the sects who were not providing assistance in any way at all.

These people directly left. The soldiers in patrol at the outside to protect the scene, also left as soon as possible.

The five or six experts of the sects left behind, was so angry that they nearly ascended to the heavens. Flames nearly began spitting out from their noses.

Especially the elder of the Deer cauldron sect. His status was high and noble, and he was always respected when he travelled through the JIanghu. He had been accustomed to being high up and respected. To think that he would be scolded by a military officer he did not regard as important at all. He was about to be driven crazy with fury!

“Hmph, this bunch of damn military brutes.” With a wave of his hand, a surge of yuan qi exploded against the ground, causing rocks and boulders to crumble. Looking at the backs of the crowd of military people, he snarled fiercely: “I will remember this bunch of people that don’t know death. To dare mock the people of the sects like so, don’t let me find an opportunity. Otherwise, I will definitely make them taste my methods.”

Before had finished.

“Elder Yan, calm yourself and watch what you say.”

A calm and authoritative voice suddenly sounded.

Everyone only felt a blur across a vision, when a young man with bronze skin appeared ten metres away. This young man had a yellow coloured short hair, approximately two fingers long. He wore tight fitting clothes, nearly two metres high, muscles bulging. It was as if he was smelted from metal, the frightening strength in his body, made everyone feel a dreadful power.

“Holy child!”

The elder of the Deer cauldron sect was shocked, then quickly rushed to pay his respects.

The complexion of the other people of the sects, also turned respectful.

This young man with muscles like that of a raging dragon, was the holy child, Wang Yifeng, of the Deer cauldron sect.

The Deer cauldron sect was one of the top six sects in the Snow Empire,.

They had deep foundations, and were exceptional powerful. Their history had already existed for thousands of years, even longer than the Snow Empire. There had once been extreme experts that had come out from this sect. In these hundred of years, they had acted in a concealed manner but their strength could not be disregarded at all. This young man called Wang Yifeng, ever since appearing ten years ago, was known as a little martial lunatic. He had challenged over a thousand experts of the small and large sects in the Snow Empire, and had never suffered a defeat. He was publicly acknowledged as one of the ten hidden dragons in Heaven Wasteland domain. He was recognised by the elders of the martial world as one of the people with the possibility of becoming an extreme level expert.

Elder Yan was the elder of the Deer cauldron sect, possessing a certain level of power. But facing a genius that had been recognized internally as the future patriarch of the Deer cauldron sect, he did not dare show the slightest of disrespect. He had the attitude of a complete subordinate, his manner exceedingly respectful.

“Who would have thought holy child you would come personally. It’s a pity that the Five poison gongzi is already dead, and the murderer Ye Qingyu has also left.”

Elder Yan said with regret.

The holy child of the Deer Cauldron waved his hand, not saying anything. Coming before the ice tomb, he extended his hand to lightly touch the ice tombstone, as if sensing something. Coming to the centre of the previous battle, he crouched down, pressing his palm against the ground with his eyes faintly closed, sensing something.....

“A direct and explosive battle style!”

There was a trace of surprise on the face of the holy child. He rose and walked several more steps surveying the traces from the battle in the surroundings.

His expression was relaxed at the start.

But as he observed more and more, he began to grow more and more

surprised.

Then his expression turned more and more serious.

The heart of the Elder Yan seeing this scene was shocked.

A short while later.

The holy child waves his hands, his gaze sweeping across the figures of Elder Ya and the others. “This Ye Qingyu is not simple. The battle techniques he used has the might of the Fiendgods contained within. It is not martial arts belonging to humans. Powerful and strange.....En, what is the strength of the Five poison Gongzi?”

“The cultivation strength of the Five poison Gongzi is roughly at the fifty spirit springs level. He can be counted as a powerful expert. But his most fearsome attribute, is that he knows how to use poison. His poison arts could be counted as divine, one cannot defend against it. Even experts at the sixty or seventy Spiritsprings level have been affected by his poison before. This person is not easy to handle. ” A person of the sects explained about the Five poison Gongzi in detail, respectfully answering the question.

“Poison arts belong to the minor way. But it is comparatively hard to handle. In this battle, he did not have any chance to use his poison arts from start to finish. He was directly killed.....Haha, a direct battle. To make a person famous for his poison arts to not even have the chance to use poison.....this Ye Qingyu.” The holy child thought for a while, saying “Elder Yan, you people are not the opponent of this person. In the future, do not confront him directly.

“But according to the rumours, the power of this Ye Qingyu is only at the forty Spirit springs. I.....” Elder Yan said subconsciously.

The holy child of the Deer cauldron sect gave him a glance.

Elder Yan instantly realised he had misspoken, his heart beginning to thump. Rushing to lower his head and give his apologies, “Thank you for the reminder. Your subordinate I will definitely remember this.”

# Chapter 220: Flowing Shadow Kill

“The holy child of the Deer cauldron sect?”

There was a meaningful expression on Ye Qingyu's face.

In an inn several miles away, through the images provided by the [Sentry guard], he could clearly observe everything that occurred within the rubble of the inn. This was due to after he had killed Five Poison Gongzi, he had not only left an ice tombstone behind but he had also taken out a [Sentry guard] from the [Titled Fiendgod chart]. This was used to observe everything that would occur afterwards on the wasteland.

Today he had killed near a hundred people from the Jianghu. This was partly to force those martial artists who did bad deeds as they pleased into line. The other reason, was that he did this to scout ahead.

This was only the beginning.

Ye Qingyu wanted to figure out the reactions of all the different forces.

This morning, Mister Liu had handed a jade scroll to him. Ye Qingyu realised that the Pass Lord's residence was supporting him, because the day before he had already said he wanted information regarding all the sects. It was abundantly clear what he wanted and what he was going to do. The fact that Mister Liu was willing to give him such information, demonstrated that he was not against Ye Qingyu's actions.

There were many times, that the Pass Lord's residence would not openly demonstrate their support. They would use some hidden actions, that clever people would very naturally understand.

Ye Qingyu unquestionably was that kind of clever person.

But as to whether this kind of support had gone through Lu Zhaoge's approval was unclear to Ye Qingyu right now.

The reason he had left a [Sentry guard] behind in the destroyed guesthouse, was because Ye Qingyu knew after Five Poison Gongzi had died, it would definitely alarm the true experts of the sects leading them to investigate. Although the five poison sect was not within the three

sects and three schools, it was still exceedingly famous. It was much stronger than the Xuan sect that he had casually destroyed.

Ye Qingyu wanted to see, just what kind of people would care about this matter.

Furthermore, according to some information Mister Liu had provided, he could vaguely conclude that the Five Poison sect was related to the official with the greatest power in the Empire, the Right Minister. The Right Minister was surnamed Lin, and so was the Five Poison Gongzi. The relationship between them was even more intricate. Once Five Poison Gongzi was killed, the reaction of the sects would turn even more acute.

From the current situation, Ye Qingyu's guess was right.

The Deer Cauldron sect was one of the top six sects. And the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect was one of the famous geniuses within these top sects. He was one of the strongest of the newest generation, and was not weaker in the least when compared to Li Qiushui of the Crepe Myrtle sect. His appearance, already indicated too many problems.

This was the first time Ye Qingyu had seen a top genius of the three sects and three schools.

“Very strong.”

Ye Qingyu quickly made an evaluation in his heart.

Even if it was through the [Sentry guard], and there were several kilometres between him and the holy child, Ye Qingyu still felt a pressure from the images in his consciousness. After a slight comparison, Ye Qingyu knew, that the he today, was not the opponent of this person. Even though he had many hidden cards up his sleeve, but as the holy child of a top level sect, there were definitely more hidden cards up the sleeve of Wang Yifeng. One must never underestimate the resources a top level sect possessed.

“It seems like there is still a considerable difference between me and the super geniuses of the true top sects.”

Ye Qingyu's heart became wary.



.....

.....

“En?”

There was suddenly a puzzled expression on the face of the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect.

The elder Yan and the others were nonplussed. They did not know what had occurred, and did not dare voice their questions out loud.

“Do you sense, that we seem to under the surveillance of something?” The gaze of the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect was like lightning. He swept inch by inch over his surroundings, his expression becoming increasingly strange. “There is some item that is observing our every move and action.”

“Ah?” Elder Yan was shocked, then quickly replied. “This...is not possible. This piece of broken land has already been checked over by me. There are no the traces of any formations left behind, could it be that there is an expert hiding and observing us?”

“No, no it’s not.” The holy child sensed for another period of time, becoming increasingly sure on his judgement. “This is not a surveillance formation, it is some other item.....It should be Ye Qingyu who has left it behind. The Leaf of Youyan is somewhat capable. However.....”

As he spoke to here, both his eyes opened. Suddenly his hand lifted, a little cauldron struck out along with his fist.

Boom!

There was a swathe of land ten metres away that was already in a wasteland like state. Through this strike, a gigantic crater was explosively created.

But apart from the crushed rocks and ground, there was nothing else that had appeared.

But the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect continued to use his senses.

“This is right, that type of sensation has disappeared!”

The holy child said thoughtfully, his figure flashing. He disappeared from where he was.

Elder Yan and the others, stayed where they were with shock on their faces. They stared at each other, speechless.

.....

.....

“I’ve been discovered?”

The scenes in his consciousness disappeared, turning black.

Ye Qingyu was shocked.

The last scene was of the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect punching out.

The place where he struck, was namely the location where Ye Qingyu had left behind the [Sentry guard].

The [Sentry guard] was one of the bizarre abilities of the ancient bronze book. It was incomparably mysterious, and after it was put into place, it would maintain a peculiar invisible state. Apart from Ye Qingyu, there was no one who could detect its existence. This was well tested, but this time, not only could the holy child detect the presence of the [Sentry guard], he could also detect its approximate location. He even used strong yuan qi, to directly destroy it.....

Very frightening senses.

“It seems like I cannot underestimate this group of Jianghu people.

Ye Qingyu’s heart shivered slightly.

To want to suppress the people of the Jianghu, was absolutely not a simple matter.

He instantly realised, the great meeting between the sects of the Jianghu a month later, would become the true focal point.

There was still a month of time for Ye Qingyu to train.

To really want to suppress these arrogant and daring Jianghu people, and to control the situation, he would need to show himself on the true battlefield – the meeting of the sects. Only through this stage, could a decisive change be made. As long as he trampled the so called geniuses of the sects that were so high up beneath his feet, only then could he truly suppress the spirit of the Jianghu people.

With Ye Qingyu's bloody methods right now, it could only at the most make those fellows lower their heads.

For the genius of the Crepe Myrtle sect, Li Qiushui, to give him an invitation was namely a good opportunity. At first Ye Qingyu was somewhat hesitant, but from the situation right now, he must go.

If he did not attend, then the situation and aura he had painstakingly crafted would most likely instantly collapse. The threat that he was to those Jianghu people, would disperse like smoke and clouds, everything wasted. Even the Youyan army would most likely withdraw their support of Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu knew very clearly that he was walking on a steel wire.

Only by maintaining his dominant position onwards, could he truly pierce the situation with his sword.

“Damn, I wasted so much time and effort and took so many inhuman risks. And in the end, I did it for the Youyan army and the Empire. Do you think I have an illness, to place myself in such a dangerous situation.”

Ye Qingyu cursed at himself in his heart.

But the reason he did this, was to give himself more pressure.

A martial expert, could only rapidly increase in power through huge external pressure. Only by obtaining a greater strength, and a deeper cultivation, could he truly provide aid to Song Xiaojun. Only through this could he obtain the chance to enter the Sacrificial altar of the Empire, and uncover the mystery his father had left behind before dying.

.....

Returning to White Horse tower.

Bai Yuanxing had already brought Jin Ling'er back, finishing their affairs in the military camp.

As for the evaluation of the little fellow's talent and potential, the results were already out.

After Ye Qingyu had seen the scroll of evaluation from the Vanguard, he was slightly taken aback.

“Upper class foundation, Asura martial killing heart, innate shadow talent? Recommended to raise as a kamikaze warrior....” Ye Qingyu carefully read over and over again this evaluation scroll. He could not help but turn his head to glance at this little child, feeling extremely surprised. Who would have thought that this little child, would have such a rare attribute as his talent.”

This world had the five elements as its foundation. Apart from the five elements, other elements were all rare attributes.

Normally speaking, the five elements formed over eighty percent of the energies of this world. Therefore the energies highest in concentration in this world were the five elements. As a result, the fact that lifeforms in this world would possess attributes of the five elements was something very commonly seen. Even the ice attribute of Ye Qingyu, in reality belonged to a mutation of the Water element.

But for attributes like lightning, space, light and shadow, they belonged to the truly rare attributes outside of the five elements.

Of course, this was not testament to the fact of how powerful they were. It could only prove that they were rare.

No matter what the power, as long as one cultivated to the extreme, one could nearly become like a god.

“Out of the rare martial attributes, shadow is even more uncommon. It must be one out of a million. Who would have thought, Jin Ling'er would be this type of attribute.” Ye Qingyu could not help but give several more glances at Jin Ling'er.

However people possessing rare attributes were not easily raised, because cultivation techniques for these sorts of attributes were far too few.

Normally, the military would not spend too great an effort in raising and nourishing these types of martial experts. The first reason was because their effectiveness was hard to determine, and they would perhaps be useless in direct battle. Of course, apart from the special troops, there were some rare and mysterious sects, that specially cultivated such experts. But right now, Jin Ling'er possessed nothing. If he wanted to obtain the teachings of these sects, it was near an impossible matter. However.....

Ye Qingyu's heart suddenly thought of something.

He thought of several days before, when he broken through the twenty five spirit springs and what he had obtained. After the repayment of the ancient bronze book, there were new pages that could be read. Within the [Titled Fiendgod chart], he had seen another cultivation technique.

This was a cultivation technique specially for people with Shadow attributes, called the [Flowing Shadow Kill]. This was suitable for Jin Ling'er to cultivation in.

Originally when Ye Qingyu had saw this cultivation technique, he was slightly disappointed.原

Because this was purely a cultivation technique for an assassin. The contents of this technique were strange and twisted. Some of the methods used in training, were no different from the evil ways. It was not the righteous martial path after all. This type of cultivation technique had a shocking killing power, but it was hard to truly reach the pinnacle with it.

Therefore Ye Qingyu had memorised this cultivation technique, and would occasionally mull it over, but he did not specially train in it.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu was not of the Shadow attribute. He had never thought to use this cultivation technique, as his main cultivation method.

Who would have thought, several days later, there would be someone

with the Shadow attribute appearing before him.

According to theory, Jin Ling'er should be the most suited person to train in the [Flowing Shadow Kill].

“Shadow attribute, upper class talent, and he is also of the Asura Killing Heart. The evaluation of the Vanguard is not wrong. For such a talent, he should be raised as a kamikaze warrior. But I do not need a kamikaze warrior by my side. If I raise Jin Ling'er as an assassin, perhaps this would not be too bad of a choice. But the cultivation technique [Floating Shadow kill], is somewhat evil.....”

Ye Qingyu was somewhat hesitant as he looked at the little fellow who was still four or five years old.

Even when Bai Yuanxing brought the little fellow to the rear courtyard to perform basic training exercises for the body, Ye Qingyu could not make his final decision.

He first must observe Jin Ling'er for a period of time, then go and find Ling'er's mother Huang Zhen to discuss this. Only then could he make his decision.

After all this decision, would very likely affect the martial path of Ling'er for the rest of his life.

As for Bai Yuanxing.....

Looking at the back of Bai Yuanxing, Ye Qingyu fell into deep thought.

For such a stubbornly loyal young man, Ye Qingyu wanted to raise him well. But, the problem was, Bai Yuanxing's martial talent was not as great as his ancestor and on the contrary was somewhat average. It was even somewhat below a normal person, making his cultivation speed slow. This meant that the achievements of his future would be limited.

This placed Ye Qingyu in a somewhat difficult position.

Until now, apart from the four moves of the unmatched warrior, the four moves of the golden armoured king, the Limitless Divine Way, Flowing Shadow Kill, and Heavenly Plants, there was not any other cultivation

technique that had appeared. And these cultivation techniques were not suitable for Bai Yuangxing at all. At this moment, Ye Qingyu did not know how to raise this White Horse sword slave.

“I think I can only wait. I can only hope, that there will be a martial manual that is able to change someone’s potential that will appear in the [Titled Fiendgod chart].”

Ye Qingyu let out a sigh.

He returned to the quiet room of the fourth floor, continuing to cultivate.

But he had only just sat down, when there was once again acute pain appearing in his left palm.

That mysterious drop of blood, acted up once again.

# Chapter 221: Forcefully refining the blood

Ye Qingyu knew, that within this strange blood, there were different kinds of energy that were 'fighting' once again.

In this period of time, this drop of blood would act up every day. The strange white power inside, the flame of darkness and another vast power would fight between the three of them constantly. All of them wanted to swallow and devour the other two. Every time they fought, they would cause great destruction to Ye Qingyu's palm.

If not for the divine [Supreme Ice flame] suppressing these powers, Ye Qingyu would have long been completely annihilated by these three terrifying forces.

By relying on the [Supreme Ice Flame], Ye Qingyu constantly grinded these three forces down, wanting to drive them outside his body.

And after his painstaking efforts these days, the three powers contained within that droplet of blood were constantly weakened. Compared to what it once was, it was now slightly weaker.

At the same time, Ye Qingyu deepened his understanding of the [Supreme Ice flame].

Right now, he was already many times more familiar with controlling the [Supreme Ice Flame].

With a will of his heart, a spark of silver coloured fire appeared above the palm of his hand, encircling and burning around that droplet of blood.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position, deep in thought.

"In these days, this droplet of blood is acting up more and more frequently. And it seems like every time, it is that vast energy that first instigates the battle....." Ye Qingyu had already begun to notice some patterns in these days.

This huge vast power, should be the original power of this drop of blood.



And the strange white power as well as the flames of darkness, were external powers that had arrived.

Right now, Ye Qingyu had already managed to guess at something.

In the battle that day, there were not many people who possessed such a level of power. After some thought, he could nearly confirm who the owner of this drop of blood was.

If Ye Qingyu's guess was not wrong, this drop of blood should have come from the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge.

Only in the blood of Lu Zhaoge, would there be such a vast and powerful martial energy held within.

That day, he had fallen into the trap of Yan Buhui and Song Xiaojun. He was first injured with the white bone dagger of Yan Buhui, then he was burnt by the flames of darkness of Song Xiaojun. It was very possible that his body would contain the power of that bone dagger as well as the power of the flames of darkness. That was exactly three types of power.

From the circumstantial information, this seems to fully confirm his guesses.

Although that drop of blood had left the body of Lu Zhaoge, but it still contained his martial cultivation and power. Therefore, it should possess some connection with Lu Zhaoge's body. The reason that this drop of blood was acting more and more frequently and acutely these days, should be because that Lu Zhaoge was attempting to use his own power to erase the external energies within his body.

But through Ye Qingyu's observation of this droplet of blood, it seemed that the process of Lu Zhaoge's recovery was not going so well.

"The reason Lu Zhaoge is rushing to treat his wounds is because of the springtime offensive of the Youyan army is like a drawn back arrow. It must be let loose. The time is nearer and nearer till the offensive. If his injuries do not heal by then, then the plan of the Youyan army will be destroyed by half. There will be no way for the springtime offensive to have its intended effect..."

Ye Qingyu stared outside through the window.

The direction of the Pass Lord's residence was covered by a swathe of darkness.

After the battle that day, Lu Zhaoge had never appeared again.

The military had deliberately suppressed the rumours, but all sorts of rumours regarding Lu Zhaoge's injuries had already begun to spread.

If this continued on, this would be a heavy strike on the morale of the soldiers of the Youyan army.

In these years, Lu Zhaoge was a deity that was worshipped by the Youyan army. His words were like the law. It was namely that fact that there was a deity like instance, that the Youyan army could function in such unity and efficiency, like a steel plate. This was the power of his charisma and respect. But on some perspective, this was a double edged sword.

The previous Lu Zhaoge had a power that was near invincible. Therefore this double edged sword only hurt opponents and not himself.

But this time, Lu Zhaoge suffered an injury unexpectedly. And the other side of the double edged sword, finally showed itself.

Without exaggerating in the slightest, once Lu Zhaoge fell, the power of the Youyan army would fall by half at least.

The moonlight like water, shone from outside the window.

Ye Qingyu's concentrated, sitting on top of the prayer mat. The moonlight shone on his body, making it as if he was covered by a layer of white fabric.

He began to focus his entire attention on activating his yuan qi, activating the [Supreme Ice Flame] to once again forcefully use the Supreme Ice Flame to burn the strange powers contained within the drop of blood. Ye Qingyu wanted to do an experiment. If he was able to exterminate the strange powers in that drop of blood, then perhaps he had a method to help Lu Zhaoge recover from his injuries—at the very

least, he could provide a second opinion on what to do.

Lu Zhaoge was the Battle God that stood and guarded the Northern borders of the Empire.

If he really fell, then the [Southern Incline legion] of the Snow ground demon court could really do what they had wished to do for generations. They would leave their dwellings towards the south, claiming the lands of the Snow Empire. At that time, there would be countless citizens that would fall into an Asura hell.

Time passed minute by second.

The silver [Supreme Ice Flame] began to crazily jump up and down on Ye Qingyu's palm.

Even its colour began to change. From a pale silver, it completely began to emit a dense radiance, as if it was a surging ball of quicksilver, releasing a dazzling splendour. It completely surrounded his palm.

And that strange droplet of blood, was agitated by the power of the [Supreme Ice Flame]. It formed into a three coloured ball of light, that also rose from Ye Qingyu's palm, beginning to rotate.

This did not represent, that this droplet of blood had been ejected from his body.

Previously when this apparition had appeared, Ye Qingyu also thought he had succeeded. But the instant he extinguished the [Supreme Ice Flame], this droplet of blood would once again enter back into Ye Qingyu's palm with no way of blocking its passage.

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth, concentrating the entirety of the [Supreme Ice Flame] into the centre of his left palm.

A radiance like quicksilver, countless rays of white light were like mad tentacles. It gave off a sensation of extreme evil and madness.

These white light were many and clustered, like an ominous dragon that was pushed to the brink. It spread out towards the surroundings, as if it wanted to grab hold of something, or perhaps it wanted to destroy

something. Every strand of light was as if it had a life, emitting sinisterness, poison, decay, rotten, putrid aura and smell. One look was enough to cause one to have feelings of despair.....

“This should be the white coloured power. Extremely evil.”

Ye Qingyu looked at it with his eyes, activating the [Supreme Ice Flame] to burn these white strands of light.

There were constantly white strands of light being burned, but there were more and more white strands of light that that split from that drop of blood. It was as if there would never be an end.....

Activating the [Supreme Ice Flame], expended a lot of inner yuan.

Every time, Ye Qingyu would be in a state where he had completely expended all his inner yuan, and could not help but abandon taking things further.

But this time, Ye Qingyu used his full efforts.

From the [Cloud Pop cauldron] immersed within his Spirit Springs in his dantian, he took out a jade bottle. Opening it, he took a gulp, a drop of blue liquid falling into his mouth. The instant it entered into his throat, it turned into a vast yuan qi that entered throughout his body. It quickly replenished the expended inner yuan in Ye Qingyu's body.◦

This was the blood of the [Yuan Qi Giant].

This was one of the treasures that Ye Qingyu had obtained when he was still at White Deer academy in the [Boundary Canyon Battlefield].

The [Yuan Qi Giant] was a lifeform that had been born from the gathering of the yuan qi in the boundary canyon battlefield. Its blood was the purest form of liquid yuan qi in the world. Once he drank a drop, it could unendingly replenish him with the purest inner yuan. Right now, Ye Qingyu was at the twenty five Spirit Springs cultivation level. He only needed one drop, to instantly transform his body deprived of yuan qi into a body filled and stuff with yuan qi.

Yuan qi once again surged and flowed through Ye Qingyu's body.

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth, once again activating the [Supreme Ice Flame] to extinguish these strands of silver light.

There were three terrifying powers within that mysterious drop of blood.

These three types of energy devoured and fought each other , not allowing coexistence.

This time Ye Qingyu abandoned the idea of restraining the other two types of power, focusing solely on the strange white power. The [Supreme Ice Flame] was activated to its fullest, so much so that even Ye Qingyu could feel a coldness that seeped into his bones. But he bit his teeth, bitterly enduring it.

His inner yuan was madly being expended.

In but fifteen minutes time, his inner yuan was once again nearly expended.

Ye Qingyu did not hesitate in the slightest, drinking another drop of the [Yuan Qi Giant] blood.

His inner yuan was once again replenished.

This continued on like so.

Cycle after cycle.

Time passed minute by second.

The [Supreme Ice Flame] constantly extinguished those white strands, and there would constantly be new strands of white light born.

This was a very long and arduous fight.

Within the jade bottle, there was already very little blood of the [Yuan Qi Giant] left inside.

Ye Qingyu was also just about to reach his limits. He was able to sense an extreme fatigue, a sensation that he was about to faint. His temples ached, and his spirit was showing signs of breaking. To have continuously activated his inner yuan like so, expended a great deal of his

concentration. His meridians and pressure points around his body were also somewhat swollen and painful. This long process of powerful surging inner yuan caused very evident after effects.

After ingesting the last drop of blue blood in the jade bottle inside him, Ye Qingyu made the final attempt.

It was also at this time, when suddenly an unexpected change occurred.

The white coloured light that came from the droplet of blood suddenly disappeared.

The originally multitude of white strands that were expanding endlessly disappeared in this instant. A white colour point of light was forced out from the droplet of blood, flickering with a bizarre radiance. And as for all those negative emotions, despair, decay, and putridness, these auras had completely disappeared. The white coloured light flickered with a dream like pureness and brilliance.

“En? What has happened?”

This was a change completely out of Ye Qingyu’s expectations.

The droplet of blood turned from three colours into two.

The white had already disappeared.

But the white ball of light that had been forced out, just what was it?

If the strange white coloured power had been completely smothered, then should it not have disappeared entirely? Why was its aura and radiance completely different from before?

The aura of this white colour light was pure and holy, as if it was the purest unclaimed energy.

But Ye Qingyu did not dare to really absorb it.

Because previously the white coloured power had demonstrated that it was far too vicious and cunning.

Thinking for a bit, Ye Qingyu finally used the [Supreme Ice Flame] to envelop this ball of light.

This time he did not encounter the slightest shred of resistance. This ball of light completely immersed into the [Supreme Ice Flame].

Boom!

A silver flame, began exploding from Ye Qingyu's left palm.

# Chapter 222: Six days of time

There was a display of fire and silver sparks.

A resplendent blossoming silver flower, appeared on the centre of Ye Qingyu's palm.

This was the strange apparition of the [Supreme Ice Flame].

"How is it.....so strong?"

Ye Qingyu's heart was utterly stunned.

Even when he had previously fully activated the [Supreme Ice Flame], it would at the most form a globe of silver light in his palm or perhaps it would form a paper thin light screen in front of him. But the [Supreme Ice Flame] right now, after it had immersed with that white ball of light, instantly expanded explosively. The concentration surged several times over. When he activated it, it was as if there was a gigantic firework exploding on top his palm, displaying lights that blinded himself.

The next instant, another change occurred.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense, an extremely powerful energy growing within his limbs.。

It seemed to be the purest form of yuan qi energy. Like a mountain's landslide, it appeared without any warning, and was even greater than the energy he had absorbed from the Origin crystal several days ago.

"This is.....an utterly powerful energy.....why is it.....within my body?"

Ye Qingyu was somewhat stunned.

"It seems to be.....an energy coming from the [Supreme Ice Flame]? What is happening?"

Ye Qingyu quickly discerned some of the reasons behind this.

But he no longer had the time to give thought to these matters.

Because this vast energy had already completely surged throughout his body. Ye Qingyu felt the meridians in his body, were like the bed of a



river. In an instant, it had been completely drowned by river water greater than it could contain. There was wave after wave of sensations of tearing and swollenness. From his body, there were faint and light sounds of his body breaking apart.

Ye Qingyu felt that he was about to explode from the sudden influx of energy.

The power of this energy, had already far exceeded the limits of what his body could withstand.

Thankfully, to erase that strange white coloured power, Ye Qingyu had already activated the [Supreme Ice Flame] at a very taxing level and he had already used the energy of the [Yuan Qi Giant] to constantly replenish the yuan qi in his body. The limits his body could withstand, had already expanded to a very high level. He was able to bear this great increase in energy.

Therefore Ye Qingyu did not explode from this powerful surge of power straight away.

His thoughts like lightning, Ye Qingyu quickly thought of a method to solve his predicament.

Right now what he needed to do, was to forget about everything else. He had to direct and absorb this energy.

And the best method to solve this surge of energy, was unquestionably to direct it to the desert world in his dantian, excavating new yuan qi Spirit Springs.

This was the same as last time when he used the Origin crystal to raise his own strength.

Using the nameless heart sutra, he placed the [Supreme Ice Flame] within the skies of his dantian world. Ye Qingyu directed this surge of energy that had suddenly came, into his dantian world through all the meridians throughout his body. Like the rivers returning to the sea, he attempted to excavate the eye of the Spring.

For Ye Qingyu, this was a perfect opportunity.

It was not worse in any way than once again absorbing the energy of a large piece of Origin crystal.

He closed his eyes, sitting in a meditative position on the prayer mat. There were two rays of white yuan qi, that when he breathed, would enter and constrict into his nose and mouth like a silver dragon. A powerful energy fluctuation encircled his entire body, as well as the twenty five yuan qi dragons. Snowflakes and ice crystals danced like spirits, forming a silver cold light barrier that protected him within.

For top level experts, when they cultivated, they did not need to set up any protective formations. Because the yuan qi in their body, would form a self-defense that rejected external forces.

Ye Qingyu was taking step after step towards becoming a top level expert.

Through the directions of his nameless heart sutra, this surge of pure and strong yuan, slowly became more and more obedient.

In the desert dantian world, there were yuan qi Springs that surged into the skies one after another like dragons. There was a thick concentration of yuan qi in the skies, and the gigantic yuan qi vortex constantly rotated, as if it was the signs a hurricane would descend. In an instant there were gale like winds and a torrent of rain, a storm madly descending. It passed by this desert world devoid of life. There were Spirit qi held within the raindrops, that slowly changed this death like world.

Ye Qingyu entered into a state where he forgot himself.

.....

In that entire day, Ye Qingyu did not leave that quiet room.

In the morning Mother Wu had prepared breakfast, but she only brought it outside of the quiet room. She did not knock and disturb Ye Qingyu.

When Mother Wu went back during the midday, the breakfast she had left at the door was completely cold.

And when she came during the evening, both meals were completely untouched. The cold aura emitting from the quiet room, had caused it to freeze solid.

The quiet room at the fourth floor of the White Horse tower were protected by defensive formations. For the cold qi to seep out to such an extent, one could discern that Ye Qingyu's cultivation was about to breakthrough and reach the next level.

The next morning, Bai Yuanxing also followed hesitantly along with Mother Wu to the room.

He stood at the door and stared for a while, somewhat hesitant. Then he directed that no one was to disturb Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu had not yet come out by the afternoon of the second day.

Bai Yuanxing and Jin Ling'er came to the door yet again, but they did not see the appearance of Ye Qingyu. However they still did not knock, worried that they might disturb Ye Qingyu's cultivation at a crucial moment, and ruin his efforts.

But the problem was that Ye Qingyu had never remained in isolated training for such a long period of time. Adding to this, he had kill and targeted various people of the sects in these days. It could not help but cause Bai Yuanxing to be slightly worried, that those battles had caused Ye Qingyu to be injured. But after thinking carefully of the reaction of Ye Qingyu in those days, he did not seem like he was injured.

Bai Yuanxing was somewhat flustered.

This type of isolated training, continued until the fourth day.

Outside the quiet room on the fourth floor was already completely covered by a thick layer of ice. One could sense a terrifying chill on the stairs to the fourth floor, as if it could completely freeze one into pieces in an instant.

At this time, Bai Yuanxing and Mother Wu and the others, no longer dared to ascend to the fourth floor.

Bai Yuanxing had even went to the Vanguard to search for Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan.

After the two had heard of this, they both came rushing over and were also shocked when they arrived at White Horse tower. After a period of observation, their worries were laid to rest and they told Bai Yuanxing and the others not to fret. Ye Qingyu's condition was very normal for someone about to breakthrough.

But this entire process, continued on for six days.

On the evening of the sixth day.

"Kacha!"

The doors to the quiet room, slowly opened.

Ye Qingyu finally stopped training.

He pushed opened the door of the quiet room, walking out.

There was a bizarre energy fluctuation, as if something slumbering had awakened.

The fourth floor of the White Horse tower that was originally covered in a thick layer of ice. But the instant Ye Qingyu walked out of the room, the chill disappeared. The silver snow and ice was like it was alive, moving, and finally gathering by Ye Qingyu's side and completely disappeared. It was as if it was absorbed by Ye Qingyu's body.

Thirty yuan qi silver dragons encircled around him, that slowly disappeared from the outline of his body.

Ye Qingyu sensed this powerful surging feeling in his body. An involuntary smile appeared on his face.

"I really did not imagine, that there would be such a degree of energy contained within that droplet of blood. This really is benefiting from a disaster. After that surge of white light was immersed into the [Supreme Ice Flame], it not only caused the [Supreme Ice Flame] to become more resplendent, but it was also like an Origin crystal. It allowed my yuan qi to explosively grow, opening five Spirit Springs in one go!"

Ye Qingyu still could hardly believe what had occurred.

That strange white power was originally incomparably evil and gruesome. It contained an aura that made one despair and suffocate. But after it was completely refined, it was the purest energy if the world, holding benefits that were indescribable for a cultivator. Its effect, even far surpassed an Origin crystal.

This time in his isolated training, he was able to increase his cultivation by five Spirit Springs.

This really was travelling far and wide to look for something, only to find it easily.

Right now, it could be said that he had completely absorbed the energy within that globe of white light.

From the twenty fifth Spirit Spring stage, he had leapt into the thirtieth Spirit Spring stage.

This type of extreme cultivation, had far exceeded Ye Qingyu's most positive estimate.

He extended his palm out, looking at the droplet of blood that was still like a birthmark on his palm.

After the strange white power had been erased, the originally tri coloured drop of blood turned into black and red. It seemed to be as dazzling as a pearl, hidden within Ye Qingyu's skin. Shining faintly with light, it looked somewhat strange.

"Within the strange drop of blood, one of the three energies has already been erased and absorbed by me. If the other two kinds of energies is like that strange white power, then this is far too incredible. As long as I gradually absorb these two types of energy, it perhaps could help my strength to have an exponential growth."

Ye Qingyu grinned widely.

This drop of blood that came from the body of the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge, was really like a priceless treasure. It was even better

than an Origin crystal, comparable to the divine pills in legends.

In six days of time, he had reached the thirtieth Spirit Springs stage.

With the rise in Ye Qingyu's strength, he had even more confidence towards the meeting of the sects happening in twenty days.

Previously in the quiet room, the repayment of the ancient bronze book had already begun and finished.

Ye Qingyu had browsed over the new contents. But it was largely information relating to [Titled strange objects], and not cultivation techniques or other treasures. Instead it was a part of a manual used to create weapons and tools called the [Heaven's creation]. The large majority of this manual was describing how to smelt and create Spirit weapons.

But for the Ye Qingyu right now, it did not pose much use.

This ancient bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart] was like an encyclopedia of the martial world that could do everything. The contents of it seemed to have inherited the wealth and power of the mysterious eras gone by. More and more, Ye Qingyu discovered just how precious and rare it was. But the problem was, there were far too great a wealth of information contained within. Every time Ye Qingyu's strength broke through to a new stage, there would be new pages that would appear but the contents would be random. Not everything that appeared, was useful to the Ye Qingyu as of this current moment.

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu arrived at the rear courtyard of the White Horse tower.

Jin Ling'er who was training his body was right now laughing, letting out an excited scream as he saw Ye Qingyu. And the two children nearby imitating his training, also copied him, screaming in excitement.....

The two children, were the son and daughter of Mother Wu.

In the previous days, when Mother Wu had relocated her dwelling to the White Horse tower, these two child had already became familiar with this place. they had also gotten to know Ye Qignyu.

“Master, you.....you’ve finally came out.”

Bai Yuanxing rushed over as soon as he heard the news, overjoyed.

Mother Wu had a smile on her face. After inquiring about Marquis Ye, she donned her apron and joyfully rushed towards the kitchen to prepare food.

Bai Yuanxing stayed behind, reporting all the matters that had undergone in the city in these days.

“What? Wait a moment, you mean to say, I was in isolated training for six days?” After Ye Qingyu discovered how much time had passed, even he himself was shocked. He originally thought that only one day had passed. He did not imagine six days would have gone by without him noticing.

Bai Yuanxing quickly replied: “That’s right Master, six days have already passed.”

Ye Qingyu was somewhat dumbfounded. He instantly realised, in these six days of time, there could have been many matters that had happened in the city.

He had suppressed the people of the Jianghu with force for only one day. His intended effect had not yet truly been achieved. In his original plan, the death of Five Poison Gongzi was only a start. But he had disappeared for an entire six days. It was most likely that those frightened and trembling Jianghu people, were once again causing trouble yet again.

“In these days, the city is somewhat calmer.” Bai Yuanxing dutifully recited all that had occurred. “After Five Poison Gongzi was killed by you, the Jianghu people became slightly more obedient, apart from a small minority of experts.....oh that’s right, the Spirit herbs and medicines you ordered from the Hundred Herb Hall have already arrived. Shopkeeper Sui sent someone to deliver them to us in its entirety.”

## Chapter 223: Meeting again

“Oh ” That’s quite punctual.” Ye Qingyu’s eyebrows rose, nodding his head.

All the ingredients had been gathered; now he could finally begin attempting to refine the pill.

According to the pill formula Li Shizen gave him, the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] was an extremely special pill. Its only use was to increase the yuan qi within a martial expert, replenishing their yuan qi. Its effect was similar to an Origin crystal. But compared to the Origin crystal, an item naturally born from this world, it had slightly worser effects. However, it was more easily obtained compared to the Origin crystal.

After his first attempt at the Hundred Herb Hall, Ye Qingyu knew that the ingredients to create the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] were easily procured. And compared to the value of this Mysterious Heaven pellet, the price of these ingredients were not expensive at all.

Bai Yuanxing brought the ingredients from the Hundred Herb Hall over. It was enough to fill two large boxes that were sealed very well. This was a seal specially used by the Hundred Herb Hall, and on the silver wood material there were formations inscribed. It could help further maintain the medicinal properties of these herbs and preserve them.

Once the box was opened, there was a fragrance of herbs that leaked out.

Ye Qingyu inspected carefully for a while. After confirming that there were not any difference to the spirit herbs on the Pill formula, he resealed the boxes. He told Bai Yuanxing to bring these two large boxes to the quiet room of the fourth floor.

Mother Wu very quickly carried a hearty and large dinner to Ye Qingyu.

As the tempting smell of food attacked his nose, Ye Qingyu’s appetite could not help but be aroused. He came over to enjoy the food.

With his current cultivation, he would not be affected too greatly even if



he did not eat for an entire month. But eating was a practice deeply ingrained in a human's soul. Even top level, extreme level experts would not abstain from eating for a long time; they would also partake in mortal food. This was even more so for Ye Qingyu who possessed a glutton for his battle pet.

The intricate dishes and bowls completely filled the table.

Mother's Wu prowess in cooking, also grew rapidly. It could nearly be compared to the growth of Ye Qingyu's cultivation.

Jin Ling'er and the other two children stood looking at the delicious food on the table, their eyes opened wide and saliva dripping.

"You two little things, quickly shoo. Don't stay here and make me embarrassed. Have you finished your chores?" Mother Wu quickly gave a signal to her own children, telling them to depart quickly, fearing these children would cause Ye Qingyu to feel annoyed.

As for Jin Ling'er, he was an officially recruited person of the White Horse tower. She naturally did not dare order him about.

The two little children were somewhat hurt, but they knew what to do. They turned and prepared to leave.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He could see through Mother Wu's intention.

"Don't go, come and eat together. " Ye Qingyu pointed at the seats next to the table with a smile. "A person eating alone cannot enjoy themselves. Only when eating together can food become delicious. Don't make me seem like a lonely person. Little Ying, Little Qi, come sit over there. Also Ling'er....."

Mother Wu's two children, the boy was called Li Ying, eight years old while the girl was called Li Qi, six years old.

"How can this do....." Mother Wu was shocked.

Ye Qingyu replied with a smile: "Of course this can do. I only made Little Ying and Little Qi accompany me to have dinner, could it be that

Mother Wu doesn't want to part with her children?"

"No, I....." Mother Wu rushed to explain, then gave a glare to her own children. "This is really something too good for you two little brats, quickly go over!"

"Hehe....." The two little children jumped over excitedly.

Mother Wu brought out extra bowls and chopsticks, placing them on the table. On the surface she had a dark face while she was looking at her children, but inwardly she was overjoyed.

Ye Qingyu right now had a significant status and fame within Youyan Pass. Just through the number of people wanting to see him but in the end were sent running away by her broomstick, one could see how important Ye Qingyu was.

Those who had power and status in Youyan Pass, would never ever even give a direct glance to commoners like her. But who was it that had the right to eat together with Marquis Ye? It was them, and not those people who racked their brains to book seats in large restaurants in Youyan Pass awaiting Marquis Ye's arrival.

Hehe, but right now, her children are able to sit in White Horse tower next to Marquis Ye.

If this was spread out, then those so called important people, would die of envy.

"Little Ying and Little Qi are still helping out at the store?" Ye Qingyu casually asked.

"Yes, thankfully they're able to earn a little something so that I and their father can live at ease a little more. Thanks to Marquis Ye's care, our family conditions is much better. My mother in law's body is still not that good....." Mother Wu quickly replied, chattering away, her face holding a disguised excitement as she was able to speak so casually to Ye Qingyu.

For a little housewife like her without much worldly experience, her life had completely turned over in this half a year. She was already utterly

satisfied.

She even did not have too many expectations for her daughter. She only hoped to save enough money, and marry her off proudly and find a wife for his son. Her life would be perfect if she managed to obtain some property.

Ye Qingyu looked at Jin Ling'er, then looked at Li Qi and Li Ying, a thought occurring to him: "How about this. From now on Little Ying and Little Qi don't need to do those assorted tasks, they can't learn anything from it. Why don't you allow them to learn martial arts along with Ling'er, at least they can act as companions for Ling'er. Practicing martial arts is originally a boring and dull process. Their ages are similar, they can help and assist each other.

As these words were said, Mother Wu was frozen.

Kacha!

The bowl in her hand fell to the floor, shattering.

The clear crisp noise, caused her to recover her senses.

The next instant, Mother Wu fell to the floor bowing her head repeatedly. "Thank you for your benevolence, thank you for your benevolence.....you two little brats, what are you doing there frozen. Quickly bow down, do you not understand just what sort of favour this is? I will never forget Marquis's great debt for the rest of my life...."

As she said this, she was so moved she began crying.

She would never even have imagined in her dreams, that Marquis Ye would allow her commoner children to learn martial arts.

In Youyan Pass, although there were not much etiquette and nobility systems, but for children coming out of a family like hers, wanting to learn martial arts was an excessive expectation. They could train in the most simplest of moves, but this was not the true yuan qi martial way. For them to really begin learning, there must be a teacher who could instruct and direct them. There were military schools in Youyan Pass, but for a family like them, the fees were far too expensive. It was not even

something they dared to consider.

Mother Wu was after all a housewife. But even she knew, just how powerful the Marquis Ye was today.

That day when she went to buy ingredients as well as learning to cook, she heard many scholars that discussed Marquis Ye's actions loudly and animatedly in the restaurant. From the mouths of these scholars, she realised that Marquis Ye was an absolute expert only inferior to the War God Lu Zhaoge. For such a legendary figure to offer to teach her children?

Mother Wu was so overjoyed she was about to faint.

She knew, that the fates of her children, had completely changed at this moment.

Therefore when Ye Qingyu had finished her words, she did not even pretend to reject or decline. She knelt down and expressed her thanks in the first instant. For her children, she was willing to endure any suffering, even if she incited the dislike of Marquis Ye. She was also willing to pay that price.

“Thank you Marquis.”

“Thank you uncle Ye.”

The two little children knelt next to her mother and said rapidly.

Ye Qingyu did not know whether to laugh or cry, quickly assisting the three of them up. Then he turned around and specially instructed the Little Li Qi who was six years old: “Remember, call me brother Ye, don't call me uncle.....”

.....

That night, Ye Qingyu did not leave.

After finishing his dinner, he stayed in the quiet room on the fourth floor. He began to make his preparations for refining the {Mysterious Heaven pellet]

Ye Qingyu himself did not possess any systematic knowledge of refining pills. All he knew came from the [Pill mantra], therefore he did not dare

take too many risks. That entire night, he did not really begin refining the pill but instead carefully checked over his memories and studied the [Pill mantra]. He split the ingredients of the pill into fifty equal portions, and sorted and arranged it neatly according to the medicinal properties, the age and colour. He did this to confirm there would not be any problems that would appear.

This took him an entire eight hours.

By the time he walked out of the quiet room, it was already the dawn of the seventh day.

Ye Qingyu walked out of the White Horse tower, stretching his waist. He decided to have a walk around the city.

The atmosphere on the streets was slightly more tense and strict than previously. There were armoured patrols of soldiers walking about and some often seen street stands had disappeared. There were still many Jianghu people of the sects carrying swords at their waist walking about. However, they seemed more withdrawn, no longer as arrogant as they once were.

And as for the capturing demon operation, it was still madly continuing on.

There would often be discoveries of the demon race, then they would be arrested to the Beheading demon platforms to be executed. Their heads were hung in steel cages.

Ye Qingyu felt that it was strange, that after the painstaking cultivation of the Youyan army, how could there be so many demon race that had smuggled into the city? This demon capturing operation had continued on for one or two month, and there was most likely near ten thousand demon races that had been captured and killed. Even if the [Southern Incline legion] had organised a significant number of spies, but they should have long be exterminated. However there were constant discoveries, just what was happening?

Could it be that Youyan Pass, had long turned into a nest of the demon race?

This matter was peculiar.

On the way, Ye Qingyu saw with his own eyes, tens of heated crowds, screaming that they would kill and slaughter all the demons. They swept the streets like a roiling river, their mad expressions causing one to shiver in fear.

“This demon extermination operation, seemed to have already left its intended aim.”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

As he walked casually on the streets and alleys, Ye Qingyu could clearly feel, that a bizarre change was currently occurring and brewing in Youyan Pass.

This change, was not that good.

Without knowing when, Ye Qingyu lifted his head and saw a liquor house that was familiar to him. The characters inscripted on the wood was particularly eye catching – Common Liquor house. It was namely the liquor house that he had encountered Song Xiaojun a few days before.

It was nearly reaching noon.

It was not that busy in the liquor house, with not even half the seats occupied.

“For me to have returned back here.....”

Ye Qingyu did not think that he would subconsciously end back here.

He pushed open the wooden door of the liquor house entering. His gaze casually swept across, and rapidly focused on a familiar person near the window. It was a young girl wearing a crimson red dress and wearing a golden patterned mask. She sat quietly there.

# Chapter 224: Bad drunk!

The female proprietor with a figure like a water bucket was the first one to see Ye Qingyu enter.

The instant she saw Ye Qingyu, the gaze of the female owner was like a tiger that had been starved for tens of days finally seeing a high class pork tenderloin. There was a shine to her gaze, and she was nearly so excited she leapt up.

She was about to shout something, but Ye Qingyu lightly shook his head at her with a smile

The female proprietor smartly closed her mouth, ordering the server to prepare good alcohol for Ye Qingyu – of course, the best alcohol in the store, was only Sorghum alcohol in a slender jar. Even in slightly higher class liquor houses and restaurants, there would be no one who would drink such a beverage.

Ever since Ye Qingyu had slaughtered the bunch of Xuan sect people here, the business for the Common Liquor house shot up. It was nearly completely occupied for several days, causing the female owner to smile even in her sleep.

But good things did not last long. After Ye Qingyu did not appear for the next few days, there were some Jianghu guests who came one after another to this place, investigating something. What followed after was an armed escort company opposite was found out to have relations to the demon race. The old head of the armed escort company and his entire family was captured, as well as many of the guards.

Since the armed escort company had closed down, there were no guards who came here to drink and eat. Naturally, revenue had dropped significantly.

A couple of days before, there were even some people who were arrested while they were drinking here. It caused the explosive business of the Common Liquor house abruptly nose dive.

Adding to this, was the fact that Youyan Pass was somewhat chaotic in these days. It was not only the Common Liquor house, but there were many restaurants and liquor houses that had also been affected. There were stores on the streets that were in complete depression. It was said that for some stores, business was so bad, that the owners had shut it down.

Therefore, although it was noon, and business should be at its highest peak, there were not many guests in the liquor house at all.

Seeing Ye Qingyu's reappearance, it was as if the female owner has seen a life saving herb.

Ye Qingyu's gaze swept across the store, discovering that there was no other familiar people.

Song Xiaojun sat on the seat next to the window, her white jade like fingers lightly supporting her chin. It was unknown what she was thinking, her gaze somewhat blank. Her little toy bear was on the table, and the little girl Xiaoxian had disappeared somewhere unknown.

Ye Qingyu took a deep breath, trying to act as calm and collected as possible.

He walked lightly over, standing next to the the table. Pointing at the empty seat opposite Song Xiaojun, with the most sincere expression, he smiled: "Please, can I sit there?"

Song Xiaojun's thoughts were interrupted. She subconsciously frowned, lifting her head to see who it was. In her beautiful pupils, there was a trace of perplexity, her full lips opening and closing, but she ultimately said nothing.

Since she had not declined, this should mean she had accepted.

Ye Qingyu knew, with the personality of Song Xiaojun today, this kind of attitude was already hard to come by.

He lightly sat opposite her.

But the moment he sat down, he saw there was a silver flash next to the



little toy bear. Investigating closely, he was abruptly stunned.

It was Little Silver.

For the little silver dragon to be here.

“Yiya Yiya.....nice drink, good alcohol.....” This fellow mumbled something, his words not clear at all.

A faint smell of alcohol could be found on the breath of this fellow. Half of his body was bathed in the porcelain alcohol bowl, his beautiful and intricately perfect body waving about in the strong alcohol. Closing his eyes as if he was in sweet sleep, there would occasionally be light snoring noises emitted. His dainty dragon’s tassels would casually move, seeming to be in a sincerely drunken state.

He was drunk?

Why was the little silver dragon drunk here?

Why was he bathing in the bowl of alcohol?

Heavens, what was this little bastard doing here?

Ye Qingyu covered his face, restraining the impulse to grab the little silver dragon from the bowl and throw him into the gutters.

There was constantly a faint chill emitting from the body of the little silver dragon, that nearly completely froze the alcohol. Instantly the little loli Song Xiaojun would place her white fingertips and lightly tap it on the bowl, a faint power of flames releasing. The alcohol that was about to be frozen would melt. Evidently the little silver dragon was very used to this change, he was still currently sweetly sleeping.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised, that he was far too lenient on his battle pets.

This dragon and dog had been left idle in Youyan Pass for far too long, doing too many ridiculous matters.

Oh....that’s right, where was that glutton like dog?

Ye Qingyu subconsciously looked at his surroundings.

This Little Silver dragon and that dumb little dog Little Nine had always been partners in crime. Why was it today that he had seen the silver dragon but not Little Nine?

Just where had that glutton gone to fill his belly this time!

Ye Qingyu was somewhat afraid of that stupid dog.

“You’re called Ye Qingyu?” At this time, the Song Xiaojun who did not speak, suddenly opened her mouth. Her gaze was calm, still with a coldness that did not allow anyone to close. There was no other information that could be discerned from her beautiful and dainty face.

Ye Qingyu quickly nodded his head.

She remembered his name?

That was a good sign.

At least this represented, he was not just a passerby in the heart of the Little Loli.

But very quickly, Song Xiaojun returned to the state of not speaking.

After she said these words, she looked to the window outside. Her aura was calm like a jade beauty, evidently not having any plans to have any further conversation with Ye Qingyu.

There was a light wind coming from outside the window.

A faint fragrance entered into Ye Qingyu’s nostrils.

This was the body fragrance of a girl.

The Song Xiaojun whose memory had been devoured by the bloodline of darkness, had gifted her with a powerful strength. It changed her life. But on the body of the little body, there were still far too many signs of her past life. Such as this faint fragrance, he had once smelled it when she was the little loli that followed happily behind Ye Qingyu like a little tail.

Ye Qingyu’s gaze carefully swept over the face of the Little loli.

Perhaps it was a mistaken impression, but that instant, he could clearly see, deep within the pure pupils of Song Xiaojun, there was a slight ill at

ease feeling that swept by.

Even though she had a frightening power, and a cold, ice like personality, but she was still a girl.

Ye Qingyu smiled. For a topic of conversation, he decided to sacrifice his battle bet. Using two fingers to pick up the little silver dragon in the bowl of alcohol, he said: "I raised this little fellow.....it seems like he has drank a lot of alcohol."

"En." Song Xiaojun nodded her head slightly."

She had already sat there for half the day dumbly in this little liquor house.

In reality, these days she would always spend some time to sit in this somewhat chaotic little liquor house. She did not like the atmosphere here, but even she did not know, why she would always come here. It was as if it was an instinct of her body, as if she was waiting for something. As long as she sat here for a while, her mood would turn for the better.

What was even more strange, was that many people's aura caused her to have an adverse reaction in her heart. But the person in front of her called Ye Qingyu, he did not have a smile any different to other people, so why did he feel so familiar to her?

If it was someone else that sat in front of her and said such things with a smile, they would have long turned into a pile of ashes under the flames of darkness.

"Who would have thought this little fellow, is an alcoholic." Ye Qingyu sighed, his left hand lightly tapping on the horns of the little dragon.

The slumbering Little Silver dragon, suddenly went berserk.

"Who? Who? Who is it that hit me?" The Little Silver dragon madly moved, twisting his body, roaring in rage. "Yiya Yiya.....to dare hit the almighty Little Silver dragon, you are dead for sure. There is no one in the world that can save you now.....I want to fight one on one with you! Come, lets fight!"

A ray of silver light, spat out from his mouth.

It landed on the face of Ye Qingyu who was not prepared in the slightest.

Kacha!

There was the sound of ice freezing.

Layer after layer of ice appeared on Ye Qingyu's body, causing him to be frozen like an ice sculpture. His stunned expression was also frozen.

Song Xiaojun looked at the Little Silver dragon in surprise, then looked at the ice sculpture.

Only then did the Little Silver dragon finally open his eyes.

His pupils swirled around, evaluating his surroundings. Finally his gaze landed on that somewhat familiar ice sculpture. Instantly, his pupils constricted into a little black dot. His extremely madly confused expression, was like a mouse spotting a cat.

He finally saw what he had drunkenly done.

"Ao....." The Little Silver dragon let out a cry of fear, his two claws holding his face. Then with a crash, he buried himself in the bowl of alcohol, the entire dragon submerged into the alcohol. Like a water snake hiding in ambush, he lay there not even moving in the slightest like he was dead.

After a short while, his head popped out and looked at Song Xiaojun. "Little Silver was drunk just now, I don't know anything....."

Then with a gurgle, he drank another large gulp, returning to pretend to be dead in the alcohol.

A smile that was quickly wiped away, flashed by in the ice cold and clear eyes of Song Xiaojun.

Her mood suddenly unprecedentedly turned for the better.

At this time, there the voice of the ponytailed little girl Xiaoxian coming from the outside. "Sister, I've returned. This little white dog demon was

not wrong, the [Lotus Fire of the Black Moon] really is not there. We've guessed wrong.....”

“Woof woof, I never lie to anyone.” Little Nine's proud voice barked out.

One could see Xian'er bringing the big headed dog, coming from the outside.

The two came to beside the table, and Xian'er discovered that there was some change compared to when she had left. She abruptly stared at the ice sculpture opposite her in astonishment, curiously asking. “Eh, what is this? Sister, you were bored so you started playing with a snowman? Where did such an ugly snowman came from.....eh it's slightly familiar.”

“Hmm, it looks somewhat like my very treacherous and sinister master.” The big headed dumb dog jumped onto the table, shaking his head as he said these words. Then he looked at his surroundings, curiously asking. “Eh? Where's little silver? Where has he gone?”

The white little finger of Song Xiaojun pointed at the bowl of wine.

“He's drunk?” The big headed dog was shocked. “This little fellow cannot drink at all, and his actions after drinking is so poor. Everytime he gets drunk, he wants to get into a fight with me, nearly killing me. Today he's drunk again? Woof, that damn little, I should never have let him drank.....eh, that's not right, this fellow didn't go into a drunken frenzy this time, why is he lying in the bowl pretending to be dead? What's happening?”

There was a light swirling in Song Xiaojun's eyes, as her white little finger pointed at the ice sculpture opposite her.

Little Nine was perplexed, then he looked carefully at the ice sculpture, finding it somewhat familiar. Leaping right in front of it, he stared at it for a while, suddenly realising something. Looking at the Little Silver pretending to be dead in the bowl of wine, he immediately understood. His body could not help but let out an involuntary tremble, shooting three feet high with one jump in fright.

“Ao.....”

His throat let out a gasping sound, and like his bottom was on fire, he jumped into a large jar of wine nearby, turning into a sunken corpse himself.

## Chapter 224 (2): Killer weapon against the female species

Song Xiaojun's eyebrows curved up, her eyes forming crescent moons.

Xian'er stood next to her, with her eyes wide open in disbelief.

In her memory, this was the first time ever since sister Xiaojun had controlled the Unmoving city of Darkness, that she had showed such a happy expression. Even when she sat on the throne of darkness of the Unmoving City of Darkness, there would be no emotions on her face at all. Her expression would remain calm and icy.

Kacha! Kacha!

The sounds of the ice cracking could be heard.

As piece after piece of ice fell to the floor, Ye Qingyu's body finally pierced through the layer of ice. He stood there gasping for breath.

If not for the fact that his body had the [Supreme ice flame] that countered the ice power of Little Silver, then Marquis Ye really would be frozen alive like Wen Wan within the ice. At that time, he could only patiently wait for Little Silver to save him.

"Where's Little Silver?" Ye Qingyu grinded his teeth.

Xian'er grinned as she pointed: "In the bowl."

Ye Qingyu instantly realised, that Little Silver was seriously pretending to be dead. He had even used his ice power to freeze himself stiff, sinking to the bottom of the bowl, not moving in the slightest. Originally Ye Qingyu was not that angry, and after seeing this scene, he could only shake his head ruefully.

He extended his hand to pincer this fellow up, and after rubbing away the alcohol on his body, he then placed Little Silver in his hair like a hairpin.

Little Silver did not move, obediently becoming Ye Qingyu's ornament.

“Wa, this little snake can be used like this. It’s such a beautiful silver dragon hairpin. How can I not have this idea earlier?” Xian’er shouted in an exaggerated fashion, her eyes brightening up as she stared at the little silver dragon eagerly.

Ye Qingyu pretended as if he did not see this.

Opposite, Song Xiaojun’s face became much more expressive.

It was the first time she did not have a chilling expression that rejected all those who got near. There was even a faint shadow of the Song Xiaojun when she was at the White Deer academy. Such a small change could not be detected by other people, but Ye Qingyu was easily able to discern this.

He was overjoyed in his heart.

This already was a very good sign.

There was countless topics of conversation flitting through Ye Qingyu’s mind, but when he opened his mouth, for some reason the words he said were: “It’s about lunch, have you.....eaten?”

Instantly, Xian’er glared at him with disdain.

To want to flirt with my sister, please could you not use such useless words.

Who would have guessed that Song Xiaojun would give a serious reply, although it was only a single simple reply. “We haven’t.”

Ye Qingyu was about to ask whether he could invite them for lunch, when Song Xiaojun directly stood up. Without saying anything, she brought her toy bear outside, evidently wanting to depart. Xian’er happily made a face at Ye Qingyu, sticking her tongue out, then quickly followed behind Song Xiaojun, the pair of girls leaving just like that.

They’ve left?

Ye Qingyu was slightly disappointed.

“At least I.....said hello.” Ye Qingyu shook his head, but his mood was still good.



After this simple meeting, all the negative emotions in Ye Qingyu's heart was swept away, becoming excited once again.

He lifted his hand, grabbing the silly dog Little Nine from the jar of wine and threw him on the table. "Hey, stop pretending to be dead. You just said I was treacherous and sinister, then I'll be treacherous and sinister like you said."

The dog whose limbs were frozen instantly leapt up, a expression of trying to please Ye Qingyu on his face. "Woof, woof, I just said that casually to con those two girls....." As he said this, he instantly smiled like a thief, his eyebrows moving up and down. Suppressing his voice, "Master, why do I feel that little girl wearing the golden mask, seems like someone."

"Eh?" Ye Qingyu casually said. "Who are they like?"

"Woof!" Little Nine let out a bark, saying: "Master could you be a little more serious, I am being serious here. That little girl is really like the Song Xiaojun of the White Deer academy, that little girl who liked to follow behind you all them time. Could you have forgotten about her already?"

"It's none of your business." Ye Qingyu naturally would not admit it.

This stupid dog was not only a glutton, but he was also famous for his big mouth. He would spread and talk about everything. If he knew the truth, it was hard to say whether he would spread it about. At that time, the safety of Song Xiaojun, would be placed under threat.

The silly dog Little Nine barked in dissatisfaction. "Hmph, for you master, I sacrificed my body, and was pinched at by that pony tailed girl. For me to only get so little information, hmph. Since Master doesn't want to know about that matter, then I'll keep my mouth shut."

Bastard!

Hearing these words, Ye Qingyu's eyes brightened, instantly his attitude turning soft. "Speak."

The silly dog Little Nine wagged his tail, licking his lips and began

laughing.

“I’ll tell mother Wu to make you Roast dog for you to eat.” Ye Qingyu threw out his bribe.“

Little Nine originally wanted to say, I don’t want to eat dog meat. But he instantly recalled, the bowl of dog stew that mother Wu made that day, the flavour really was.....good, and was really enticing. Whatever, let’s not care whether it was dog or not, after all , he wasn’t really a true dog.

Without any integrity at all, he nodded his head. “It’s a deal.”

Then he mysteriously flicked his head looking at the surroundings, jumping like a thief to Ye Qingyu’s shoulders. Coming close to Ye Qingyu’s ears, he said. “Master, the background of these two girls is really suspicious. I suspect they are the spies of the demon race, they have always been targeting the Pass Lords residence. I hear they are searching for something called the [Lotus Fire of the Black Moon]. Just now, I sneakily accompanied that ponytailed girl to the Pass Lord’s residence.....”

[Lotus Fire of the Black Moon]?

What was that ?

Ye Qingyu rubbed his temples. In truth, when Little Silver had frozen him solid, he was still able to hear sounds from the outside. Xian’er had mentioned the [Lotus Fire of the Black Moon] but at that time, Ye Qingyu did not pay too much attention.

Right now, he finally understood somewhat.

The reason that Song Xiaojun was still risking it by staying in Youyan Pass for so long, was because she was searching for the so called [Lotus Fire of the Black Moon]. For this she was willing to be in such great danger, this meant that this must be something very important to her.

Wait a moment, the silly dog brought her inside the Pass Lord’s residence?”

Ye Qingyu turned his head to regard him, suddenly realising something. “What did you just say? You accompanied Xian’er to sneakily enter the

Pass Lord's residence? Are you very familiar with the Pass Lord's residence? Why is it that she needed you to accompany her?"

"Woof....." Little Nine's words instantly stuttered, then wagged his tail and barked. "Don't concern yourself over the unimportant little details. The important thing is these two girls are suspicious. Should we notify madman Wen of the Vanguard, and to capture these two and interrogate them?"

"I think the person who should be interrogated is you." Ye Qingyu stared at Little Nine with a sinister smile. Grabbing his neck, he brought him up to his eyes, and said in a dark voice. "Speak truthfully, what have you done? Did you enter the Pass Lord's residence?"

Little Nine seeing he could not conceal any longer, instantly his body becoming listless. Four of his paws fell down powerlessly. "I went, I went many times....since it was so tightly guarded, I thought there would be many delicious things to eat. Who would have thought that I completely searched every corner of the Pass Lord's residence, but I couldn't even find any treasure. This really makes woof too disappointed?"

"You trespassed on the Pass Lord's residence?" Ye Qingyu was extremely shaken. "You searched every corner? You must be exaggerating?"

If there was a place in Youyan pass where the security was comparable to the Imperial palace, then it was absolutely the Pass Lord's residence. Even with Ye Qingyu's current strength, he did not have the confidence to sneakily enter into the Residence and take a walk around. But this silly dog said he had completely searched every corner of the Pass Lord's residence.

Seeing Ye Qingyu's expression, Little Nine bared his little teeth, saying in disdain. "What's so great about that. In this Youyan Pass, there is nowhere I cannot enter."

Seeing the expression of the silly dog, he did not seem to be lying.

Could it really have such an ability?

He could enter any place undetected?

Even the Pass Lord's residence, where the War God of Youyan Pass could not detect him at all?

Did that mean....this silly dog was finally showing some value?

Ye Qingyu felt, that in these days, he really had been far too focused on his cultivation, and had neglected to interact with his two battle pets. In such a long period of time, it was completely unknown just what kind of ability they had or what they did.....

En.....

Ye Qingyu thoughtfully nodded his head.

It seems like he had to find a time to develop the abilities of the two.

"Then did you know the two girls before?" Ye Qingyu lightly placed Little Nine on the table, and began scratching his belly as a reward while asking questions.

Little Nine saw his masters expression, and knew the storm had already past. The dog instantly became much more relaxed.

Moaning comfortably, he lay on his back, exposing his furry belly for Ye Qingyu to scratch. Panting excitedly. "One day, me and Little Silver came to gander ....I mean, patrol around. Then we saw these two girls acting suspiciously, so we came to have a look. Hehe, master, you should know that I am so beautiful and cute, and is completely a killer weapon against any female species. As expected, when the ponytailed girl saw me, her eyes brightened and said I was a cute little dog demon. Using a little plan, I made her spit out her objective in being here, woof, woof, hehe....."

Ye Qingyu had black lines running across his head.

The ditzy Xian'er and this unreliable white dog....

One could not help but admit, such personalities could easily fit together well.

As they were speaking, there was a ruckus coming from outside the Liquor house. What followed after was a swathe of hurried footsteps, as if someone was madly rushing to escape, but was caught up by the people

behind. They were directly struck down to the floor, then captured with steel shackles and brought far away, with sounds of curses and cries floating over.....

On the counter.

The female owner who was eating pumpkin seeds in boredom, the colour of her face changed.

She quickly ran to close the doors of the store. But before she could run to it, the wooden door was kicked open with a crash. Several soldiers wearing armour from the supply department, rushed in like wolves or tigers.

“You want to close the doors? Could it be that you are guilty of something?” The soldier in the lead armour was in disarray, and his face was ferocious. There was a sword scar on his face like that of a centipede. He sneered coldly at the female owner.

“I don’t dare, I don’t dare. Sir, I only operate a small business here. In these days, you have come tens of time. Our little Liquor house nearly cannot withstand it any longer, please stop, show some mercy.....” The female owner was about to cry--“

# Chapter 225: Tears and a faint smile

Suijin .. where is everyone else?

Aran: Time to recruit some more editors I guess. All the work has landed on you

“Show some mercy?” The military officer with a sword scar kicked away the nearby table. “For a commoner such as you, do you deserve my mercy? Why don’t you tell me, just how many spies of the demon race have been captured in your liquor house in these days? Why is it that there are so many demons hiding here, could it be that this is the next gathering spot of the demon race?”

“This is a mistake, how would I dare.” The female owner bent her back with a placating smile. “Please have a seat military officers. Order what you want to eat and drink, I’ll immediately have them prepared.”

“Peh, just what kind of good food would you have in this dog’s den?” Another military officer sat with his legs wide apart on a table, his gaze sweeping around at the timidly cowering customers. With a sneer. “Don’t think you can placate me with such things. Speak, are there any more suspicious people today?”

The female owner forced a smile, quickly replying. “Officer, there is not a single suspicious person today. All those who came are regulars who have been here tens of years, they are definitely innocent....”

“Hehe, whether they are innocent or not, is not something such a lowly mouth should determine.” The military officer with the sword scar swiped his hand across. “Soldiers, give this place a detailed search to see whether this is a den of the demon race. If you encounter anyone suspicious, do not let them go.”

The soldiers behind him, rushed in like wolves or tigers, kicking away tables and chairs. With a crash and clatter, everything was broken or flipped away. Everywhere in one’s sight, there was completely a mess.

There was a placating smile on the female proprietor’s face, but her

heart was dripping blood.

These soldiers came every day to cause chaos, causing this little liquor house's business to fall. There were some regulars that did not dare come anymore. The depression of the business made her wonder as if she had offended anyone. It seems like she should copy the stores nearby and close earlier, at least this would prevent some losses.

If this chaos continued, she would become a target at any moment.

For the Youyan army to turn into such a state.

In the blink of an eye, the normal liquor house had turned into a scene of breakage and disarray. Tables and chair lay slanted on the floor as they were kicked, and shattered dishes and bowls were everywhere on the floor. The customers were grabbed and searched, then kicked out. Because the waiter had hidden too late, he was beaten 'til his mouth was bleeding. He was pretending to be dead by one side.....

"Senior brot-.....No, Superior, I did not discover any suspicious person."

"There is also no one in the kitchen behind...."

"Everyone in this store is poor, it seems like there is nothing valuable."

The soldiers gathered, but their actions was not like a typical Youyan soldier. They seemed more like a group of bandits or shameless rogues, their statures slanted and awry, their armours loose. The words they said as well as their laughing expressions, were not like soldieres at all.

But they were evidently wearing military uniforms.

The military officer with the sword scar nodded his head, sweeping his gaze across the hall. His pupils suddenly constricted, as he saw the white robed figure next to the window far off. He imperceptibly nodded his head, then turned his head to regard the female owner with a figure like a water bucket. "What is the background of that white robed person?"

The female owner had a painful face. She originally wanted to say that was Marquis Ye, but suddenly a flash of light flickered throughout her mind. Thinking of the signal Ye Qingyu gave her when he came in, she

said without knowing why. “A regular, he comes here to drink often. He should be a neighbour nearby, I really am not too clear.....”

“Bitch!” The sword scarred military officer was enraged, kicking away the chair in front of him and striking on the sales counter. The counter made out of rough wood instantly turned into wood scraps. With a roar, the officer said. “You are not too clear? Did you not say these are all old regulars with innocent backgrounds? You dare fool me?”

“Officer, please calm down....” The female owner was trembling, kneeling on the floor for mercy.

With a wave of his hand, the sword scarred military officer ordered the soldiers around to surround the window direction.

During the search of the soldiers, they had not even noticed there was a person sitting here. This really was too bizarre. The officer faintly felt that there was something wrong, but he did not consider too carefully before he went over step by step and unsheathed the blade at his waist.

“Friend, turn around. What are you doing here?” The sword scarred officer lifted his hand, patting it on the shoulder of the white robed figure.

But at this time, the white robed figure quivered, his outline becoming blurry.

The hand of the officer swiped empty air, as if he was slapping nothing. Everyone could only feel a blur across their eyes. The white robed figure was gone.

The person sitting there, had disappeared inexplicably.

On the table, there was only a little white dog around four inches long. It was currently baring its fang at them, emitting a low growl from his throat.

“What has happened?” The sword scarred military officer was taken aback.

“Ahha, for you bunch of idiotic humans to disturb me, you are dead for



sure. I will bite you to death.....” There was suddenly human speech coming out from the mouth of the white little dog.

The soldier was suddenly shaken.

“White dog demon.....for it to speak, it must be a dog demon!” There was someone screaming.

“Woof, woof, you are the demon.....” The white little dog jumped, his body like lightning, before anyone could react, he used his little white tail to slap the soldier fiercely like a whip. The face of that soldier swelled up like a pig’s head instantly, then he fainted.

“Capture it.....”

“It really is a dog demon!”

“It really is someone of the demon race!”

The soldiers were slightly in disarray, their weapons unsheathed. They surrounded the white dog demon.

Everyone had reason to believe, that this white robed youth must be the white dog spirit who had transformed into a human. After being surrounded, it revealed its original form. No matter what, they must capture that arrogant white dog spirit. Apart from using its tail to slap someone, it did not seem to possess any ability whatsoever so it was not that dangerous.

After a panic, the white dog spirit was finally captured and stuffed into a steel cage.

“Superior, what should we do with it?” A soldier asked.

The sword scarred military officer considered. “Bring it to the Beheading demon platforms, and just take the reward then kill it.

“Woof?” The white dog demon in the cage pupil’s constricted, then it began barking madly. “You bunch of retards, to dare capture me? Do you know who my master is? He is in the city right now, when he finds me, you are all dead.....”

“En? You have a master?” After a shock, the sword scarred military

officer was delighted. "This is too great, who would have thought capturing such a small demon, would lead us to get the melon by following the vine[1]. First lets not bring this white dog demon to the Beheading demon platforms, but bring him back to base, and interrogate him. Find out who his master is!"

All the soldiers said yes.

The bunch brought the steel cage away from the Common Liquor house, heading out.

Seeing the hall of the liquor house in such a sorry state, the female owner was about to cry.

Why had Youyan Pass turned out like this?

She could not understand.

How could her originally good lifestyle, completely collapse in less than a month's time. It was so quick that even she had not understood what exactly had happened within Youyan Pass.

If she closed the liquor house, she would not have to live her life in fear every day.

But what should she do in the future?

Tears finally flowed down from the face of the female owner.

She went over to assist the injured waiter, her heart feeling desolate and sorrowful.

At this time, there was someone who patted her on the shoulder.

She turned around.

A smiling face, white clothes.

"Marquis, I....." The female owner rushed to pay her respects. After all, she knew Ye Qingyu's real identity. Facing such an important character, she did not show the slightest of disrespect.

Ye Qingyu halted her.

"I'm sorry, I did not act just now." Ye Qingyu had guilt on his face. "For

a certain reason, I have to slightly suppress my actions just now. This gold piece, will act as compensation for this store.” Saying this, he handed a gold tael to the female owner.

“This.....how can this do.” The female owner was stunned, not daring to accept and quickly refusing. “This is too much, too much. This is enough to purchase three or four liquor house like mine, Marquis, I.....”

“Take it.” Ye Qingyu patted her on the shoulder. “Everyone’s days are not going well. as someone of the Empire, I did not do my duty, I feel very remorseful about this. But I can guarantee that these days will quickly pass. Youyan Pass will very quickly return to its original state.....Take this gold piece, and shelter yourself somewhere along with the server and the cook. After I’ve taken care of some of the black sheep of the Pass, I will return here to drink your alcohol.”

As he finished, Ye Qingyu stuffed the gold tael into the female owners hands. With a smile, he turned to leave.

As he left the door broken by the kick, the sunshine outside shone on his body.

His white robe was as if it was glowing with light, his figure causing a very long and powerful shadow to fall across the ground.

The female owner stood staring dumbly at the golden tael in her hands, her blurry vision gradually clearing up.

She rubbed away the tears on her face, exposing a smile.

She was fat, and somewhat ugly.

Her liquor house had been destroyed.

But her mood suddenly turned for the better.

“Everything will be better, everyone will come here to drink again.....Marquis Ye promised me.”

.....

.....

After departing from the Common Liquor house, Ye Qingyu returned to the White Horse tower.

There was no need to further observe. He already knew what was currently occurring within Youyan Pass.

The sword scarred military officer and the others, were evidently not true soldiers. They were a bunch of fakes, but they held the uniform of the Youyan army as well as the badge of the military. This meant only one thing --something that Ye Qingyu had suspected, but had not turned into truth.

There was someone within the army, that was in collusion with the people from the Jianghu.

Ye Qingyu had discovered this the moment these people stepped into the Common Liquor house.

Therefore he had not acted.

He had intentionally allowed the silly dog Little Nine to be captured. He wanted to follow the trail and find out about the truth hidden in darkness.

This time Ye Qingyu was really enraged.

If he discovered who was it, no matter whom.....they would die!

—

[1] Get something great by following something small

# Chapter 226: Refining a pill in the quiet room

That afternoon , the silly dog Little Nine had not yet returned.

Ye Qingyu was not that worried.

After all, this little dog was even able to enter as he pleased from the Pass Lord's residence. His ability to escape was absolutely top tier in the world. Even if he was captured, he only needed to find a suitable opportunity, then he could easily escape. Furthermore, this dumb little dog really was capable. He was even able to devour a huge Snow ground dragon ape cleanly, not to mention those Jianghu people with average strength.

After finishing his cultivation training, there was an acute pain in his palm.

That drop of blood was once again acting up.

The three coloured blood had turned into two. The strange white power had already been erased completely by Ye Qingyu, and what was left was the original power of the drop of blood as well as the flames of darkness. When it acted up, it was weaker than what it used to be. As long as Ye Qingyu continued to use the [Supreme ice flame], everything was basically all under his control.

After an hour later, he could already faintly suppress the power within the blood.

“If this continues on, in two or three days, I can completely refine down this drop of blood.”

Ye Qingyu heart became more at ease.

Right now, this drop of blood no longer held such a huge threat to him. Therefore he was not in that much of a rush to extinguish it; he wanted to wear it down bit by bit. At least then he could grasp some technique or experience in erasing strange powers. If by the time he had completely

refined down the energies within the blood, and the War God of Youyan Pass Lu Zhaoge had not yet healed, Ye Qingyu felt perhaps he would be of use if he went to the Pass Lord's Residence.

It was only until deep into the night, did Ye Qingyu awaken from his trance like cultivation state.

The yuan qi in his body was surging like a great river. Ye Qingyu had already began to grasp this new vast energy, and could command it now. Furthermore, his control over the [Supreme ice flame] had risen to a new level. His battle power were three or four times greater than before.

The moonlight glow, fell on Ye Qingyu's body.

His white clothes were like jade.

His entire body shimmered with a pure, holy radiance.

"With my strength right now, even if I faced Zhang San, I don't need to activate the first limit of the [Limitless divine way], to directly fight him. If I activate the [Limitless divine way], my battle strength will double. With that, I should be able to equal Zhang San easily." On Ye Qingyu's handsome face, there was a shred of a smile.

But he instantly thought of the holy child of the Deer cauldron sect that he saw through the visions of the [Sentry guard].

After a slight comparison, Ye Qingyu shook his head: "That's not right, if I face the holy child of the Deer cauldron sect, I am still far from enough. The first limit of the [Limitless divine way] plus the [Supreme ice flame] can at the most guarantee my life. If I want to defeat the holy child of the Deer Cauldron sect, this is by far not enough."

Ye Qingyu constantly compared his battle strength with others.

"There is still around half a month's time till the meeting of the secs. I must quickly raise my strength, victory and defeat depends on this. The fame of the Deer cauldron sect is not any greater than Li Qiushiu and the people of Crepe Myrtle sect. In other words, Li Qiushiu could possibly be even stronger than the holy child. Right now, I can't even defeat the holy child of the Deer cauldron sect, to want to defeat the idols of the three

sects and three schools like Li Qiushiu is completely the dream of a madman.”

As he realised this, Ye Qingyu’s heart became more and more agitated.

But if he wanted to rapidly raise his strength, he could not do this just by meditation and cultivating by sitting there.

Only with an endless supply of energy like from an Origin crystal could he breakthrough quickly.

But Origin crystals were far too rare, Ye Qingyu had no way of obtaining one.

After deliberation, he could only begin by refining the substitute, [Mysterious Heaven pellet].

“Today I will begin refining the pill.....Since I have to do it sooner or later, let’s give it a try first.”“

Ye Qingyu made his up his mind to finally begin creating the pill.

After careful thought, he summoned Bai Yuanxing and ordered that he would be in isolation training. No matter who was it that came, he would not see them.

Bai Yuanxing received this order and left.

Ye Qingyu was still not satisfied. After some thought, he personally arranged a formation array outside the quiet room, placed a Sentry guard, as well as activating the defensive formations in the quiet room on the walls around. After shutting all the windows of the quiet room, to prevent any possible incident, he then began finally preparing the pill.

Right now, Ye Qingyu did not wish for others to know that he was able to refine pills.

Returning to the quiet room and sitting down, he placed the medicinal ingredients that he had sorted and portioned already in front of him. His memories went over the key instructions of the [Pill Mantra]. Ye Qingyu slowly entered into his state, his inner yuan fluctuating around his body in a great cycle. When his body was at its most optimal state, he used the

mantra and activated the [Cloud top cauldron] submerged within the spring of his dantian world, summoning it.

The cauldron flickered.

A strange energy fluctuation began activating.

The [Cloud top cauldron] the size of the fist swirled and rotated above Ye Qingyu's palm.

Ever since receiving this Acordance treasure, this was Ye Qingyu's first time summoning it outside.

The ancient bronze aura swirled around the outside of the cauldron. It was as if there was a light haze around it. There were intricate and lively patterns fluctuating with golden light all around the exterior. After being submerged for the large part of the year in Ye Qingyu's dantian, the [Cloud top cauldron] became like a translucent artistic piece of work. It emitted a charming radiance, a dream like colour, and brought with it the warmth of a gentle jade.

"It really is a good treasure. If not for the fact that Chen Moyun stuffed me into the cauldron, I would probably never discover the secret of this Cauldron." Ye Qingyu could not help but sigh in praise. "This [Pill King of Azure Phonenix] Chen Moyun had such a treasure mountain but he did not know. He has wasted it for tens of yers. If he went inside the interior of the cauldron to have a look, then the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron] would not have been possessed by me. It seems like to truly grasp the secret of this cauldron, all relies on fate!"

His thought moved. Ye Qingyu activated the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron'].

Buzz!Buzz!"Buzz!

The [Cloud top cauldron] shivered, expanding.

In the blink of an eye, it was the size of a water jar. The cauldron fell to the ground with a boom, all the radiance retreating. A hard to describe using language ancientness radiated from it, causing someone to be somewhat bewildered by its aura. Ye Qingyu could not help but let out a



sigh. It was as if he was looking at an saintly item that had leapt through time and space from the ancient primordial ages to come here.

Ye Qingyu focused his heart.

“To refine a pill, one needs fire. My yuan qi attribute is ice, but I can control the [Supreme ice flame]. With a treasure like the [Cloud top cauldron] it should be able to withstand the power of my [Supreme ice flame]. Ice flame is Ice fire. According to the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron ] even the most extreme ice fire can refine a pill, so I might as well use the [Supreme ice flame] to give it a try. The classification of the [Supreme ice flame] is much better than strange fires or true fire!”

Ye Qingyu hands formed seal, the heart mantra activating.

The [Supreme ice flame] formed from above his palm, forming into a silver flame that burned fiercely.

The first step of refining a pill, was warming the cauldron.

After using a gentle fire to roast the cauldron, this was then the right time to add the medicinal ingredients.

“Go!”

With a grunt, the [Supreme ice flame] shot out as if it was alive. It namely fell on the bottom of the three handled [Cloud top cauldron] and began burning, fiercely roasting it.

A strange radiance appeared on the pill cauldron.

This [Cloud top cauldron] did not make Ye Qingyu disappointed. After a brief flickering of light, it entirely accepted the power of the [Supreme ice flame] and was not harmed in the slightest.

To warm the cauldron, it needed at least a hour.

Ye Qingyu did not dare rush. After three great cycles, the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron] became more and more familiar to him.

This ancient heart sutra composed of a hundred and eight characters

that had come from the interior of the [Cloud top cauldron] was a specific mantra used to refine pills as well as control this cauldron. Ye Qingyu had only understood the first six characters but this was already more than enough to control this pill cauldron. Under this heart sutra, the control of the [Supreme ice flame] became more and more easy.

One hour, quickly passed by.

The [Cloud top cauldron] had a silver radiance flickering at the bottom.

Warming the cauldron had been completed.

“It’s time..”

There was a delighted expression flitting through Ye Qingyu’s brows, his hand seals changing.

“Open the cauldron!”

The lid of the cauldron buzzed, floating in the air by itself as it rotated silently.

Ye Qingyu beckoned with his arm, and a bunch of spirit herbs flew into the cauldron.

Pang!

There was a faint explosion in the air, then a surge of medicinal fragrance spat out from the pill.

Refining a pill was a process that cared very much about the order in which the Spirit herbs entered into the cauldron. The control of the fire of the cauldron could also not be wrong in the least. A good cauldron and good classification of fire used, could greatly increase the probability of successfully creating a pill. But the experience and skill level of the Pill Master was also very important. This entire process was like dancing on a hair – if there was any minute mistake, this would lead to serious consequences.

The least serious consequence was that the herbs were ruined, the most serious that the cauldron would explode.

There were some pill masters that because of a tiny error in the process

of refining a pill, caused the cauldron to explode and had to pay for it with their lives in the end.

Although Ye Qingyu knew very clearly that for such a treasure like the [Cloud top cauldron] the cauldron would definitely not explode in the process of refining a type of pill like the [Mysterious Heaven pellet]. But he did not dare relax in the slightest. After all, to purchase these herbs, he had nearly spent all his wealth. If he really wasted these materials, it was most likely that he would not be able to purchase a second.

Thankfully he had an unforgettable memory. In those days, he constantly practiced the process of refining a pill in his brain, it had nearly become instinct. His imagery and his actions joined together tightly, without a single error happening.

Time passed by.

Ye Qingyu constantly grabbed at herbs through the air and placed it into the [Cloud top cauldron].

The fragrance of the medicinal herbs in the quiet room, constantly changed.

A Pill Master with experience could judge just from the fragrance alone whether the creation of the pill was successful or not. But this was Ye Qingyu's first time in refining a pill, he could not do this. Thankfully from the signs from the cauldron, it seems he did not fail?

Two hours, passed by in a flash.

Tens of herbs had already been placed according to the order outlined in the pill formula.

Ye Qingyu's forehead beaded with drop after drop of sweat.

Refining pill did not only expend one's yuan qi, but also one's concentration and focus.

It was time.

# Chapter 227: The power to change his destiny

“Seal the cauldron!” In the instant a bead of sweat dripped from the corner of his eyes, Ye Qingyu let out a low command. His left palm extended forward, an ice crystal instantly forming that instantaneously transformed into a clear globe of water that was slowly placed within the [Cloud Top Cauldron] by Ye Qingyu’s yuan qi. His left palm rapidly changed and transformed into different seals, then with a bang, the cauldron lid fell and sealed the cauldron.

Phew!Phew!

He let out a breath of murky air, relaxing slightly.

From the start to the cauldron being sealed, this was an extremely important process. If there were not any accidents or incidents during this process, then it could be said that he had already half succeeded in refining the pill.

Ye Qingyu wiped away the sweat on his face, once again activating the [Sole Will of the Cauldron], continuing to refine the pill.

The steps that followed after was that one had to follow the requirements of the pill formula, constantly using fierce and gentle fires to refine the pill. Apart from there being extremely strict requirements for the control of time, there were not any other special methods needed. For Ye Qingyu, this was not too difficult.

It was only that this process was something that expended a lot of time.

His hands constantly changed into different seals, controlling the [Supreme Ice Flame] to wrap around the [Cloud Top Cauldron] causing the flames to change in strength.

Time passed minute by minute just like that.

There started to be strange changes occurring on the [Cloud Top Cauldron], the patterns on it seeming to come alive. It first started

moving like water ripples, then the scenes depicted on the cauldron that described stories of ancient times seemed to come alive, like an illusion. The cauldron began slowly floating, shrinking constantly, and was finally the size of a small pottery pot that rotated in the air.

Ye Qingyu once again felt the yuan qi within his body was being expended like the surge of an avalanche.

Refining pills was something that wasted a great quantity of inner yuan.

Therefore it was understandable just why there were so few Pill Masters in this world.

Apart from needing to memorising a vast quantity of information regarding herbs and refining pills, most Pill Masters must also be experts and be high in their cultivation. Otherwise, they had no way of using their inner yuan to control the flames while refining the pill. There were very little people who met both these two criterias. Very few people had the energy to memorize such great and complicated information regarding the medicinal properties of herbs and etc, as well as have the martial cultivation needed to control the flame.

The [Azure Phoenix Pill King] Chen Moyun yuan qi's cultivation was not as great as Ye Qingyu's today. This determined that he could only be an above average Pill master, and could only create Medicine Pills with limited future success. The fact that he was unable to take a step further was not only because he was lacking in knowledge regarding the art of pill making, but also the fact that his yuan qi cultivation was lacking.

There were also Pill Masters who did not possess enough yuan qi, but utilised the inner yuan of their followers to control the flame to refine the Pill.

Chen Moyun should largely be of that type.

Otherwise, he would not have obtained the title of the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix].

Of course, these were all Ye Qingyu's guesses.

In his first process of refining a pill, Demon King Ye was able to

understand many things. He now thoroughly understood just how strict the requirements for becoming a Pill Master was. With his understanding of Chen Moyun's strength, that person should have relied on external forces to reach such great fame. With solely his strength alone, he should not have been able to obtain the title of Pill King.

In the blink of an eye, time passed by.

During this time, Ye Qingyu did not even dare to close his eyes from start to finish.

Refining a pill was different from cultivation. Training in the Nameless Heart Sutra was a process which nourished one's spirit, so therefore Ye Qingyu could cultivate while sleeping very little, but still be at the peak of his concentration. But refining a pill was a job that expended your concentration in large amounts. In a short time, Ye Qingyu felt fatigue that originated from within his very bones, his entire person becoming dull and drowsy.

Thankfully when the first crack of dawn was exposed and the first ray of the morning sun landed on the top of the White Horse tower, the [Cloud Top Cauldron] finally stopped rotating.

It shimmered with light and radiance.

Ye Qingyu was stunned, then instantly dispersed the seal on the cauldron, removing the [Supreme Ice Flame] from the outside.

"Is it .....successful?"

Ye Qingyu was somewhat in disbelief.

Such a scene was evidently signs that the process of refining a pill had finished according to the instructions on the Pill mantra and Pill formula. For him to have succeeded in his first time refining the pill? This was somewhat unbelievable. From the start, Ye Qingyu had already expected to fail tens of times. After all, he was stumbling around blind and had no direction at all. He had entirely followed the explanations of the Pill formula and Pill mantra.....

Seeing the [Cloud Top Cauldron] that had fallen to the ground, Ye

Qingyu's heart could not help but be excited.

Had the pill succeeded or not?

Ye Qingyu deeply breathed in, uncovering the lid of the cauldron.

A faint fragrance surged to his nose.

This fragrance was deep and elegant, like the body fragrance from a maiden. The moment it entered into one's nostril, it caused one to feel relaxed and at ease.

Deeply breathing in this strange fragrance, Ye Qingyu felt that the yuan qi within his body was flowing more and more smoothly. His inner yuan even faintly showed signs of growing stronger. Such a feeling was exactly the same as when he would have a breakthrough and increase in cultivation.

Ye Qingyu's heart quivered.

At that moment, he instantly realised that he had successfully refined the pill.

Only a [Mysterious Heaven pellet] that met the requirements would have such medicinal properties. Solely by inhaling the scent, one would have a slight increase in yuan qi.

As he lowered his head to look within the cauldron, in that swathe of darkness, there were six jade green points of light that flickered in the darkness. These six glimmers of light were the origin of that fragrance.

The [Sole Will of the Cauldron] activated.

A surge of invisible energy shot out from the cauldron, a light gentle breeze that carried these six pills from within the cauldron out.

Ye Qingyu widened his eyes.

Six jade green pills the size of a longan fruit [1] landed in his hand.

"Succeeded, it really succeeded....."

Seeing the glimmer of the medicinal pill, as well as its appearance, Ye Qingyu could finally lay his worries to rest This [Mysterious Heaven

pellet] was exactly as described by the pill formula, with no difference to its appearance.

A swathe of coldness came from the six [Mysterious Heaven pellets], quivering about in the centre of his palm.

“I did not imagine, this is just my first time refining a pill.....could it be that I’m a genius Pill master? To have succeeded in one go, my luck is that good?” Ye Qingyu was still in slight disbelief. He had never heard of someone succeeding in their first try for refining a pill, and to have achieved a hundred percent success rate on top of this.

To prevent wasting the Spirit herbs ingredients, he had only prepared enough to create six pills. Who would have guessed that there would be no wastage of materials at all, and all six [Mysterious Heaven pellets] were created, fully utilising all the herbs.

This success rate was definitely terrifying.

Even a more experience Pill Master, would not dare say that he would be able to not waste a single herb and utilise these ingredients without any wastage.

Ye Qingyu was definitely shocked by himself.

This sort of thing that should only happen in theory, did he really do it?

Previously, Ye Qingyu expected that he would fail several times, and would perhaps waste a lot of time. Therefore he had announced he would go into isolation training. He originally thought that refining a pill was similar to refining down that strange white power. It would require at least four or five days, but he did not expect.....

It only took a night.

In a night, he had finished everything.

He lowered his head to look at the six jade green pills the size of a longan. Ye Qingyu had a feeling that he was still dreaming.

If refining a pill was really that simple, then even if he used all the ingredients he had left to refine it down, it should not even take ten days



of time. Furthermore, Ye Qingyu was certain that as he got more and more familiar with this process, as well as with the improvement of his control over the [Supreme Ice Flame] and the [Cloud Top Cauldron], this time would only get shorter and not lengthen.

In other words, in the future tens of days, he could create at least over a hundred Mysterious Heaven pellets.

If all these Spirit herbs were ingested by him, then it could be comparable to four times the effect of that piece of Origin crystal.

This represented that Ye Qingyu could at least increase his cultivation to the fifty Spirit Springs realm.

He constantly breathed in and out.

He needed a short while before he could calm down.

Right now the thing he most needed to do was to examine these [Mysterious Heaven pellets] and verify whether they really had such an amazing effect as described by that ancient pill formula. Therefore Ye Qingyu's action after this was.....

Swallowing it!

He needed to at least ingest one pill to test it out.

This was an extremely dangerous matter.

If there was any error in the process of refining it, then no one had any way of predicting just what consequences it had.

It was previously mentioned that an exploding cauldron was one of the main causes of death of a Pill Master. Testing Pills was the other main cause of death. One of the traditions of the Pill Master profession was that after creating a pill, it must be tested by themselves personally. If there were any errors in the creation of the pill, one could easily die. In these years, there were very few Pill Master willing to follow this tradition anymore. They would give the task of testing the pills to their disciples, or people volunteering to test the pills or perhaps some criminals.

An experienced Pill Master could definitely tell from the appearance

and smell whether the creation of the pill had been successful.

The large majority of time though, the pills created from pill formulas had been done thousands and thousands of times, and had been perfected, thus did not need to be tested. Only some experimentally created rare pills needed such a step.

Ye Qingyu look at the jade green pills in his hand. Finally, he took out one, and ingested it.

This pill was as cold as ice or snow.

It dissolved in his mouth.

A cold that pierced into his bones, began flowing within Ye Qingyu's body as it dissolved.

It was like there was thorn after thorn that madly flowed within Ye Qingyu's flesh. A swathe of acute pain nearly drowned Ye Qingyu.

"Could it be that I failed?"

Ye Qingyu's heart was shocked.

But in the next instant, all the acute pain disappeared.

A surging powerful yuan qi fluctuation appeared in the meridians throughout his body. It surged throughout the original inner yuan of Ye Qingyu's body, completing a great cycle, then returned to the desert dantian world like rivers returning to the sea.

This was a yuan qi that was equal to the yuan qi he would gain from cultivating for months.

Pure and flawless, without the slightest impurity.

Ye Qingyu breathed in deeply.

He slowly widened his arms, as he could not help but laugh to the heavens.

Because he knew, he had succeeded.

An entirely new gate opened widely for Ye Qingyu as of this moment.

With the Mysterious Heaven pellet in his hand, he could finally begin to race with time.

He could finally compete with those so called geniuses of the sects.

He could change the fates of countless people.

This, this was Ye Qingyu's capital——

——

[1] These are a little bigger than grapes typically, but a little smaller than a golf ball. They're delicious!

# Chapter 228: Impossible

When Ye Qingyu walked out with a fatigued face from the quiet room, the silly dog Little Nine had still not yet returned.

“He really is an unreliable fellow.....”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

He was not worried about safety of that silly dog, but he was worried that he would be distracted by other things when he was performing his task and gone off to play. After all, for a pure glutton, causing chaos was normal for him. If everything went smoothly, that would be abnormal. If he tarried for a few days, then perhaps it would disrupt his plans.

Downstairs.

Mother Wu had already prepared the morning meal.

Ye Qingyu wen to the rear courtyard and after inspecting the progress of Bai Yuanxing, Jin Ling'er, Li Qi and Li Ying, they ate breakfast together.

In these days, everyone had gotten used to Marquis Ye's way of acting without any pretense or sense of superiority. The conversation while they were eating, had a relaxed and at ease atmosphere. Ye Qingyu would occasionally make some jokes, as well as giving some advice to the cultivation problems of the four people.

These four did not have much martial foundations at all.

What Ye Qingyu taught them was the basic methods to train one body learnt in the White Deer academy. There were roughly the most traditional ways to train your martial foundation such as the Snake, bear, tiger stance.

Before truly entering the Spirit Spring stage, Ye Qingyu decided not to teach them the battle techniques within the ancient bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart].

For a novice martial artist, it was most important for them to walk a orthodox cultivation path. These basic martial cultivation techniques had

already undergone countless changes and alterations by a myriad of previous martial artists. This was a path that although was not ornate and complex, but was truly great. With Ye Qingyu's understanding of the martial way, this was the best choice to make for a novice to create their foundation.

Until today, Ye Qingyu had not yet decided whether to allow Jin Ling'er to cultivate in the [Flowing Shadow Kill].

After several days of cultivation, the talent of the four also became evident.

Jin Ling'er's talent was the greatest, with Li Ying and Li Qi following behind. And as for Bai Yuanxing who was the oldest, his martial talent was unquestionably the worst.

Evidently Bai Yuanxing had also noticed this point, but he did not exhibit too great a disappointment. He still trained extremely hard along with the three. From a very early period of time, he already knew very clearly, just what was his martial talent like.

Ye Qingyu admired Bai Yuanxing's personality and heart very much.

And as for the closeness of their relationships, Ye Qingyu had the greatest admiration and feelings for Bai Yuanxing who he knew the longest.

In his heart, he was wondering just how could he give aid to Bai Yuanxing.

After they had finished the morning meal, Bai Yuanxing and the others returned to train in the rear courtyard.

Ye Qingyu put on a change of casual dress, and after disguising himself for a bit, headed towards the direction of the Hundred herb hall.

There was a very important matter that he had to do in Hundred herb hall.

Compared to several days ago, there were much less people on the streets of Youyan Pass. There was a bleakness emanating in the air. The

arrival of the spring did not seem to bring much warmth like previous years to the city located within the ice and snow. Apart from two large stores that were still running on the two sides of the streets, the majority of little stores had already closed. As for the little stands on the two sides of the streets, they had long disappeared.

Ye Qingyu wore a hooded garment, when the hood fell down, it was enough to cover his face.

His appearance, made him seem somewhat strange as he walked on the streets.

There were several warriors on patrol that wanted to obstruct and interrogate him, but as they neared they would only feel a blur in the eyes, then they would lose track of Ye Qingyu. It was as if who they saw was just a shadow, making them nonpluss but helpless. They could only report this on, and become more alert.

Fifteen minutes later.

Ye Qingyu appeared within the great hall of the Hundred Herb Hall.

Even though his appearance was somewhat strange, but the servers of the store still ran up to greet him passionately.

Compared to several days ago, it seemed that the business of the Hundred herb hall had already been impacted. There were not many people in the great hall, and the majority of the customers were either soldiers of sinister Jianghu people. they were largely buying medicine and ointments for external wounds. As for those medicine used to treat the common illness, it was not all that popular anymore.

“Honoured customer, what do you want to buy?” The server enthusiastically asked.

Coincidentally.

This server that received him just now, was the same person who had received Ye Qingyu previously.

“Tell your shopkeeper Sui to come over.” There was a sound like metal

grating against each other that sounded out from the white coloured garments, causing one to shiver.

Ye Qingyu had changed his own voice.

The server was dumbfounded, goosebumps forming. He quickly ran to find the manager.

In a short period of time, Shopkeeper Sui was led here by the server.

Shopkeeper Sui evaluated Ye Qingyu hiddenly from far away.

It was unknown just how many customers he had seen that had come from the south. He thought that his ability to discern someone's background was exceptional. Normally he only needed to give someone a glance, and could evaluate as to just what their background the customer was. He had met many people like Ye Qingyu who had hidden their true appearance before.

Therefore when Shopkeeper Sui saw the white clothed figure, his heart shivered.

For people to dress like that, either they were here to scam him, or there really was a great transaction to be made.

"Honoured customer, I wonder you have come here to the Hundred herb hall for....." Shopkeeper smiled probingly.

Under the hood, there was a slight smile on Ye Qingyu's face. There was still the strange and grating noise that sounded from his throat: "Selling pills."

"Selling pills?" Shopkeeper Sui was surprised, and instantly understood as he could not help but feel shocked. "I understand. Please follow me." Saying this, he extended his hand in an inviting gesture, heading towards the second floor.

No matter what, once it concerned purchasing pills, this was an exceedingly important matter for this Herb hall.

Normal Herbal stores did not even have requirements to sell pills. As for the Hundred herb hall, they would sell pills to the outside, and they would

also have Pill Masters, but this was in very limited quantities. Only those rich and wealthy clients could obtain pills from the Hundred herb hall. Normal people could not even do this even if they had money.

Apart from this, there would also occasionally be some mysterious Pill Master s who would leave some pills to be sold on consignment.

For Hundred herb hall, this was unquestionably an extremely precious opportunity. Not only could they receive a great sum from allowing the pill to be sold through the channel of the Hundred herb hall, more importantly they could perhaps create a long term working relationship with a pill master if they served him well.

The resources of Pill Masters, was what the Hundred herb hall truly regarded as important.

If they were able to acquire enough Pill Masters, even the Empire itself would treat the Hundred herb hall differently.

Therefore Shopkeeper Sui lead Ye Qingyu to the second floor to the first instant.

Even when Ye Qingyu came with his identity as a Marquis, he was only at the VIP area on the first floor. he did not go to the second floor.

There were around twenty or so steps to the red mahogany wood, and they went through a door with a black hanging curtain. A Bitter bamboo corridor appeared in front of them, and there were two different little elegant rooms on the two side of them. Both had powerful restrictions, that caused one to unable to see the inside of the rooms clearly. The entire second floor seemed more tranquil and classical then the first floor. After heading another twenty steps upward or so,they went through another black curtained doorway. There was a faint scent of Bitter Bamboo that arose everywhere, causing one to feel refreshed.

Shopkeeper Sui brought Ye qingyu to the thid room on the left.

Very rapidly, there was a beautiful young female servant who brought refreshments in.

After the female servant had left, Shopkeeper Sui asked probingly:



“Could it be that honoured customer is a pill Master?”

“This is not important.” Ye Qingyu’s voice was extremely raspy, completely changing from his original voice. After slight thought, he said: “I am also not a pill master, I have only been tasked by someone, to sell a pill on consignment here.”

Ye Qingyu knew very clearly the rules of selling pills through the channels of large herbal stores, so he was very direct.

“Oh, I’ve asked too much, my apologies. Could I enquire as to what type of Pill you want to leave here to sell?” As Shopkeeper Sui heard the opposing party was not a Pill master he was slightly disappointed, but he did not demonstrate this at all. He still asked this question very enthusiastically.

“Mysterious Heaven pellet.” Ye Qingyu’s voice intentionally became curt.

“Mysterious Heaven pellet?” As Shopkeeper Sui heard this, he was slightly confused.

There were instantly countless information about pills that flitted through his mind. but no matter how he used his brain, he seemed to not have heard a pill called the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] before in his life. One must know that he had managed this division of the Hundred herb hall for over twenty years, he had a rich and wealthy experience. Adding to this, he was extremely interested in Pills normally. There were very little Pills that he had not heard the name of before.

“Forgive me for my ignorance, but I have never heard of this kind of pill before.” Shopkeeper Sui was not moved, and said with a smile: “Could it be that this is a new pill?”

The path of refining a pill, was a very long process that started from nothing to something, and from something to a complicated affair.

There were often Pill Master that had flashes of insight that created some new and original Pills. There were some that were proven to be rare and valued treasures, while some were proven to be useless, and some

were even more terrifying than poison.....Therefore when faced with the news of a new Pill, people did not have too believing an attitude.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Shopkeeper Sui frowned, sensing that his mysterious client seemed to not like to speak.

“Could I ask what are the effects and uses of this [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] ?” Shopkeeper Sui patiently asked on.

“Increase in one’s yuan qi cultivation.” Ye Qingyu said word by word.

It was this type of effect?

Shopkeeper Sui was slightly surprised.

This was a very practical and valued effect, and was one of the main types of pills created.

The commonly seen pills used to increase one’s cultivation today, such as the [Increase Pill], [Promotion Pill], [Seize Heaven Pill,] [Fortune Pill] etc were all extremely sought after pills. One pill was extremely valuable, and only famous Pill Masters or large sects could obtain such treasures.

But for these Pills, although it could rapidly increase one’s inner yuan cultivation, but it also bring with it some after effects and implications.

But even if so, the cost and creation process were extremely strict. Not all Pill masters could create such a pill.

“Oh, could I enquire the extent of the increase of the Pill is? And what are its after effects?” Shopkeeper casually asked.

“No after effects. One Mysterious Heaven pellet can increase a thirty Spirit Spring expert cultivation by half a year.” Ye Qingyu had his head lowered, the white hood covering his face entirely. Therefore Shopkeeper Sui could not see his expression at all, but his voice was still as rasp as ever, like it had emitted from a worn out bellow. It caused one to give out an involuntary shiver.

“What? What did you say? Say that again?” Shopkeeper Sui was like a cat that had its tail stood on, leaping up.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, not understanding why the reaction of the opposing party was so large.

But he still calmly and unaffectedly repeated himself.

Shopkeeper Sui stood up with a sound, shock and disbelief on his face.  
“Impossible, impossible.”

# Chapter 229: An opportunity

Ye Qingyu lifted his head slightly to give a look to Shopkeeper Sui.

From his impression, Shopkeeper Sui was an extremely calm and collected person, with a shrewdness about him. Right now he was loudly exclaiming, as if he had been provoked and incited by something. This was not fitting with his personality. Could it be that he had said something wrong?

“A pill that has no aftereffects and increase one’s inner yuan?” Shopkeeper Sui deeply breathed in, then said: “Friend, perhaps you have encountered some trouble and are lacking for money. The Hundred Herb Hall can provide some assistance, but don’t come here to scam us. I am not that experienced, but even I have some understanding towards pills. The pill that you just described, it is impossible for it to exist in this world.”

Saying this, his gaze was like lightning as he scrutinised Ye Qingyu’s reaction.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, not saying anything.

When Shopkeeper Sui thought he had pierced through the scam of this mysterious person, when that voice like metal grating together once again sounded: “Whether it’s real or not, one test can determine this.”

Shopkeeper Sui was taken aback.

His conviction was immediately slightly shakened.

The white robed mysterious person in front of him had an aura as deep as an abyss, and towering like a mountain peak. Evidently he had carefully concealed his yuan qi fluctuations, but Shopkeeper Sui could still sense that the strength of this person was not normal at all. He had originally thought that he was an expert trying to obtain some money, but he did not imagine that he would be so calm.....could he have wrongly accused him?

Deeply breathing in, Shopkeeper Sui confirmed once again. “Do you

mean, that the effects of your Mysterious Heaven Pellet, is that not only can it increase a thirty Spirit Spring expert cultivation by half a year, but it also does not have any after effects? Is it like so?"

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

"Do you know, just how against the heavens such a pill is? Even the pill known as number one for increasing one yuan's qi, the [Seizing Heaven Pill] that is held in secrecy in the Crepe Myrtle sect, doesn't have such a terrifying property. Although after ingesting it, your yuan qi will indeed increase, but the yuan qi is impure and muddled. One needs three months to completely get rid of all the impurities. One [Seizing Heaven Pill] is already an extremely valuable treasure....." Shopkeeper Sui continued on in disbelief.....

Ye Qingyu suddenly stood up.

"Other people cannot create it, but this does not represent that my master cannot create it." Under the hood, he said: "I don't want to waste my breath. Whether you will take it or not, give me an answer."

Shopkeeper Sui's argument abruptly halted.

He looked towards Ye Qingyu, sensing the strong confidence he had. His stubborn conviction was shaken.

"Fine....." He took a step back. "Then the pill that you mentioned.....did you bring it?"

Ye Qingyu uncovered his hand, a flicker of light flashing on his hand.

Two pills like the size of a Longan that was jade green appeared in his palm. It was the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet].

To prevent the medicinal properties from escaping, Ye Qingyu had already used the method outlined in the [Sole Will of the Cauldron] to seal the fragrance of the pills. Under a thin layer of green, there was a faint light shimmering causing the two pills to possess an aura of mysteriousness. From its appearance, it was definitely convincing.

Shopkeeper Sui's gaze once again gathered on the two [Mysterious

Heaven Pellets].

Without knowing why, the moment he saw those two jade green pills, his heart could not help but beat quickly.

“Two pills. One is for you to sell here, one is for you to test the properties of the pill.” Ye Qingyu used his inner yuan, placing the two [Mysterious Heaven Pellets] before Shopkeeper Sui. “The starting price is a hundred thousand gold, the higher the better. Hundred Herb Hall can get five percent as commission. I will leave it here for sale for three days, if there are no buyers in three days, I will go to another place.....I don’t need a deposit.”

Shopkeeper Sui instinctively stowed away the two [Mysterious Heaven Pellets], then asked: “If it is sold, how can I contact you?”

Ye Qingyu had already reached the doorway. Hearing these words, he did not turn around. “I will come back in three days.” When these words were said, his figure had already disappeared from the doorway. Shopkeeper Sui was stunned, and by the time he reached the doorway, this mysterious figure had already disappeared.

He really was a strange person.

But these two pills.....

Shopkeeper Sui inspected the pills carefully in his palm.

Only until now, did he realise, there was no medicinal fragrance at all.

“There are three types of pills. They are Medicine Pills, Spirit Pills and Dao Pills. Medicine Pills have a fragrance, but both Spirit Pills and Dao Pills are scentless. Could it be that these two [Mysterious Heaven Pellets] are those legendary Spirit Pills?”

As he thought of this, Shopkeeper Sui lost his composure and chuckled.

How could that be possible.

Spirit Pills and Dao Pills were precious, and rarely found in the world. How could it be discovered so easily by him.

As for the validity of these pills?

If it really was like that person described, it was impossible to estimate the worth of these [Mysterious Heaven Pellets]. Once news of it spread out, it was enough to cause countless people to bleed as they fought over it. Even the Imperial family of the Empire as well as the large sects, would be attracted to this. This absolutely was an opportunity for the position of the Hundred Herb Hall to ascend rapidly.....but most likely, everything was fake.

Shopkeeper Sui, was also a half trained pill enthusiast.

After thinking it over, this matter was not small at all. He could not make a decision by himself.

“It seems like I have to contact headquarters, and ask them to send a Pill Master to inspect them.” After that thought, Shopkeeper Sui decided that even if he had to take some risks, he should try. After all, if it was real, his destiny would quickly ascend to the heavens.

He carefully stowed the two [Mysterious Heaven Pellets] into the interspatial ring, then took out an arrow shaped plate sculpted from the root of an ancient tree. On the front of it, there was three large ancient characters, called the [Hundred Herb plate] and the other side was completely blank. Shopkeeper Sui used his finger tip as a brush to write some formation code that only higher ups of the Hundred Herb Hall could understand, then he used his inner yuan to activate the [Hundred Herb plate]. He sent the information that he had just obtained out.

“The Pill Master from headquarters will arrive by tomorrow evening by the latest. At that time, everything will be made clear.”

After he finished everything, he was still conflicted. He did not know whether what he did was correct or not.

With a light sigh, Shopkeeper Sui turned and left through the doorway.

.....

.....

Two hours later.

White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu awoke from his meditative state.

Even since returning from the Hundred Herb Hall an hour ago, Ye Qingyu had already finished in his Heart Sutra training. Only then did he calm his heart, and mull over the conversation between him and Shopkeeper Sui just now.

If this manager of the herbal store had not lied to him, then this represented that he had obtained an important piece of information.

The preciousness of the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] had far exceeded his initial imagination.

He had originally thought that pills used to increase a martial artists yuan qi cultivation was very commonly seen. After all, when the Pill art began, there were only two main uses – to treat illnesses and increase one's cultivation. Since ancient times, there were countless talented Pill Masters who created endless Pill formulas. However the most common pills were largely divided into these two categories.

In Ye Qingyu's estimation, the effects of the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] was decent, but it could only be counted as middle class out of all the effects of all these other Pills.

But for Shopkeeper Sui's reaction to be so frantic.....

“Could it be that I really have underestimated the value of the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet]?”

Ye Qingyu did not fully understand this.

After all, he did not have any training or teaching in Pill refining, he had relied on only himself to figure out the way. Everything he knew came from the [Pill Mantra] as well as that ancient pill formula. Apart from this, he was not too clear on the Pill Masters within the Empire as well as the effects of the various other pills commonly seen. Apart from the [Azure Phoenix Pill King] Chen Moyun who he had killed, Ye Qingyu had not interacted with any other Pill Masters.



Today, Ye Qingyu was forced to place the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] for sale at the Hundred Herb Hall.

The ingredients and spirit herbs he had previously acquired, could only at the most create approximately a hundred [Mysterious Heaven Pellets]. Furthermore, this was on the basis that he had a hundred percent success rate in pill creation. For such a number of [Mysterious Heaven Pellet], it could at the most sustain his cultivation for half a month. To want to refine and create more pills, he must acquire more ingredients and herbs. But the problem was, Ye Qingyu's entire wealth including the reward when he was made marquis, had been completely spent.

After some consideration, he could only rely on the sale of the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] to obtain more money.

If this way worked, then it could temporarily sustain Ye Qingyu's cultivation needs.

To prevent any unnecessary troubles, he did not want to expose that he was refining the pills. Therefore he had shrouded his face, and concealed his real identity.

"From ancient times, people from the poor find it hard to rise. Apart from the lack of opportunities, it is because commoners are far too poor. They cannot sustain the huge cultivation resources they require. When one is at the Ordinary martial level or the Spirit Spring stage, one may not notice this. But once a martial artist reaches above the fifty Spirit Springs, it is unknown just how many cultivation resources they need. I can be counted to be lucky, having so many fortuitous encounters. But even I am worrying over the lack of money, what about those other people with less luck than me?"

Ye Qingyu shook his head and sighed.

His position was marquis, but the amount of gold he received every month, was by far not enough.

Cultivation, was originally an act that defied the heavens. To want to succeed, wealth, companions, status and the laws were four important factors. If you even lacked one, it would be hard for you to truly succeed.

Today, Ye Qingyu had finally got to experience this for himself.

“If this [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] is really as valuable as described by Shopkeeper Sui, then it should sell really well? The price I set, a hundred thousand gold, could it be too cheap.....”

Demon King Ye was somewhat conflicted.

At that time—

Chi! Chi! Chi!

There was a strange sound of a claw scratching on the window of the quiet room.

“Master, woof, woof, open the window, I’ve returned.....”

It was the noise of the silly dog Little Nine that came from the outside.

He had finally returned.

Ye Qingyu’s shook himself, placing the matters regarding the pills to one side. He went over to dispel the defensive formations of the quiet room, and the stone window slowly rose.

One could see Little Nine sneakily climbing over the windowsill, like a thief. After the window was opened, he looked behind him, then leapt inside in one swift motion, landing on the prayer mat opposite of Ye Qingyu.

“Woof, you will not believe what I have seen.”“

The silly dog could not wait to divulge what he saw.

# Chapter 230: New recruit training camp

In the moonlit night, the cold air was chilling.

Under the desolate moonlight, the black figures of one man and one beast was secretly traversing throughout Youyan Pass.

The place they were heading to was evidently to the Northwest of Youyan Pass.

At night time, the security of Youyan Pass was the strictest. In these days, even if it were some military officers, they would not be allowed to traverse through the seats without military seals. Although Ye Qingyu was a newly appointed Marquis, but even his seal could not be of any use at this time. If he was found by the patrols, even he would be sent back to where he came from.

But Ye Qingyu's body movement technique was like lightning. Using the Limitless Divine Way, his white clothed figure was like an illusion under the moonlight. Normal people's eyesight could not even discern him from the darkness.

Xiu!

This illusive figure flitted past above the architectures on the street.

A patrol passed by could only feel a blur across their eyes, as if someone had passed by or as if nothing had happened.

"Just now.....could it be that there's something wrong with my eyes?" The leading soldier rubbed his eyes, confused and concern.

Under close observation, there was nothing under the moonlight.

Apart from them, there were no one else.

"Perhaps there really is something wrong with our eyes." The leader of the soldiers knew his own strength clearly. Although it was not at the top level, it was still impossible for someone to pass by and for them not to spot them. They therefore did not pay too much thought to this.

At the same time.

Several thousand metres away.

“Woof.....slow, slow down.....I’m dizzy.”

The silly dog Little Nine tightly clenched onto Ye Qingyu’s shoulder.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to see the glutton Little Nine grasping at his shoulder desperately, his folds of fatness turning into wrinkles through the extreme speed he was running at. But even so, it could not prevent in anyway his proud and pleased expression.

“Woof, turn left at the next intersection. After turning left, you can see it! Master, for you this time, I have entered deep into the tiger’s den, and was nearly turned into dog stew. Don’t you think you should.....”

Ye Qingyu completely ignored Little Nine’s trademark ‘glutton’ request.

Within White Horse tower, after hearing Little Nine’s description, there was a fire burning in his chest.

After advancing several miles forward.

“We’re here, it’s in this place. In this period of time, the people captured by those people, apart from those already killed, are all held in this place.” Little Nine suddenly opened his mouth and said.

In a corner, Ye Qingyu suddenly stopped, hiding his figure.

He turned to look in question at the unreliable glutton at his shoulder.

“Are you really sure that the place you’re bringing me to is this location?”

Ye Qingyu pointed in front of him. It was not the prison of the supply department that he had imagined, but was namely a new recruit training camp that Youyan Pass had just created.

On that day in the Common Liquor house, Ye Qingyu had seen very clearly that the sword scarred military officer was wearing the uniform of the military department.

He had guessed that this matter had something to do with Zhang San. However, he did not imagine, that the location Little Nine would bring

him would not be the prison of the Supply department but here instead.

At the start, Ye Qingyu had not been trained in the new recruits training camp. However he had some faint impressions and had also heard about it before, so when he saw the rough layout of it he had some faint impressions. It was only that he could not understand, why those Jianghu people, pretending to be the Youyan army, would capture and bring people here?

“Woof! You can question my personality, but you absolutely cannot question my intelligence. This Youyan Pass is about as large as my bottom, how could I get lost?”

Little Nine rarely had such confidence. Although Ye Qingyu believed him, but the confusion in his heart strengthened.

He hid his aura, hiding in the night air like a ghost that slowly advanced forwards.

This new recruit training camp, due to reasons of isolation and security, were chosen to be located in the mountains and cliffs near the west of Youyan Pass. Apart from black camps, there were towering black mountain peaks that looked like sinister black huge mountain beasts from far away. Just how much filth and darkness was hidden within was unknown.

There was an average strength formation around the outside of the new recruit training camp, which shrouded the situation inside from the outside.

From far away, there were two distracted sentries that stood guard, their uniforms in disarray. Using a numb rhythm, they moved their bodies, patrolling about and standing guard to the entrance of the training camp.

Such a scene made Ye Qingyu's brow furrow even more.

This training camp was already at the safest location in Youyan Pass, why was there still a defensive formation active?

Adding to this the two improper guards with attitudes not like real soldiers at all. There was no difference whether they wore uniform at all.

Just what had the new recruit training camp so painstakingly built turned into?

There was a suppressed rage that flickered through his eyes.

On the bodies of these new recruits, Ye Qingyu was able to sense the same aura as that sword scarred military officer.

After some consideration, he silently went to the most isolated corner of the camp. This was the place that the defensive formation was comparatively the weakest. With Ye Qingyu's strength today, after the activation of the Limitless Divine Way, his strength would multiply. He could absolutely enter into the training camp without alerting anyone.

Adding to this, the defensive formation surrounding the camp was not intricate at all.

After he had traversed through the formation, the scenes in front of him caused his face to turn shade after shade darker and darker.

Just how was this a training camp for new recruits?

This absolutely was a bustling evening party!

In front of him, on the expansive training grounds of the new recruit camp, there was not a single soldier currently training. Instead, there were four or five high towering bonfires that dyed the training grounds completely red.

There were several hundred people wearing soldier uniforms that were having fun noisily as they pleased next to the bonfires surging to the heavens. There was not a single similarity to the people of the Empire, but was instead filled with an aura of the common Jianghu people. Evidently, they were Jianghu people who had donned military uniforms.

There were beef and lamb that had originated from somewhere that was currently slowly rotating above the bonfires. The meat were already glistening with the glimmer of oil, its fragrance surging to one's nose. There were over a hundred jars of upper class wine that was being wildly drunk as if it was water that did not cost money. And some people, because of the alcohol, began fighting and swearing. When the noises all

mixed together, a proper training camp completely became a noisy, murky and chaotic place.

But, this incomparably ridiculous scene, was completely hidden away by the formation on the outside. People from the exterior had no ways of seeing such an explicable scene.

“Hmph.....”

Ye Qingyu coldly snorted, and instantly the foot of saliva dripping from the mouth of Little Nine on his shoulder was scared back.

This little glutton was still able to discern that his master was currently in an extremely poor mood. He only needed to obediently say nothing, and then claim his contribution for leading the way..

The people of the Empire summoned the Jianghu people, in order to raise the battle power of the Youyan army. But it seems like there really has been a mistake. In this period of time, Ye Qingyu had heard that some Jianghu people had chosen to enter in the army and were sent to the new recruits training camp. Originally Ye Qingyu still held some expectations, but seeing the scene before him, all his expectations were popped like a bubble.

If all the new recruit training camp were really like the scene before him, then Youyan army was completely finished.

A steel army that could shake the world, should have military discipline as strict as a mountain. But the so called new recruits, had no difference from a gang of hoodlums.

They have to rely on such people to fight against the Snow Ground Demon race in a world of ice and snow for their survival?

That was completely a dream.

The military discipline of the Youyan army, had always been strict.。

The identity of these new recruits was definitely suspicious.

But just what kind of person, would be so daring that they would change the identities of the new recruits and their training?

In the Youyan army, there were less than ten people who had the power and status to do such a thing.

There were countless thoughts flowing through Ye Qingyu's mind.

But remembering the matter Little Nine had mentioned, he knew that he could not delay any longer. Silently remembering these ridiculous scenes, he continued to advance towards the mountain walls at the back of the training camp under the direction of Little Nine.

On the way, he also carefully sensed the strength of these Jianghu people wearing military uniform.

Ye Qingyu discovered, that the person with the highest strength in this group did not exceed twenty Spirit Springs. The large majority were martial artists below ten Spirit Springs, and from their conversations, they all originated from different sects. There were some loose cultivators without sects at all, vagabond experts, all sorts of people mixed within. It completely was a rabble, and there were comparatively little disciples of true sects mixed within.

With the strength of these people, they naturally had no way of discovering Ye Qingyu's figure.

Ye Qingyu brought Little Nine, deep within the training camp.

After fifteen minutes, both man and dog had successfully infiltrated to the deepest part of the new recruit training camp, at the foot of the mountain.

"Woof, it's just in front. The inner part of the mountain has been excavated and there is a prison within. In these days, the people who have been captured and are still alive, are all within....." Little Nine said, and seeming to sense that Ye Qingyu's mood was not currently great, saying in a reminding fashion: "Don't say I didn't warn you. The smell coming from the passageway is hard to withstand, there is also some rotten corpses. And there are some people who are still alive, that are no difference from being dead....."

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.



He did not say anything.

This entire matter seemed like a mystery. He was not clear, who was behind the sword scarred military officer, and why they would capture so many tiny characters to this place

Turning his head to look.

There was a five metre wide cave on the walls of the mountain, like the gaping huge mouth of a beast wanting to devour all.

It was pitch black in the mouth of the cave, sinister wind was blowing out. One could barely discern a path deep into mountain that split into numerous little paths. One could discern that the interior of the mountain was most likely already excavated completely, and became a place where it was used to hide and cover up secrets.

Ye Qingyu took step by step closer to the entrance of the cave.

Suddenly, his footsteps halted.

# Chapter 231: Interrogation Rack

There was a defensive formation at the mouth of the cave.

In the empty space that seemed as if nothing was there, Ye Qingyu was able to sense a minute fluctuation of energy. From the little he could discern, it seemed extremely intricate. Under the colour of the night, there was four strands of light that moved erratically, hardly noticeable if one had normal vision. Normal people had no way of discovering it.

It was only at the moment where Ye Qingyu nearly stepped out that he discovered it.

Arrays, was one of the derivations of the formation martial path.

Truly strong formation arrays could rend heaven and destroy the earth in a moment. Even extreme experts had the possibility of perishing in such destructive formation arrays. It absolutely could not be underestimated.

Ye Qingyu knelt down, closely inspecting.

A short while later.

“This formation array is not simple.....from its pattern and sensitivity, it absolutely was placed by a true expert.”

After the close inspection of Ye Qingyu, he could not help but shiver in his heart.

From the profoundness of the placement of the formation, it was evidently a hidden array from all the categories.

A so called hidden array, could be understood just from its name. It was an array that was concealed, without leaking the slightest yuan qi fluctuation and could not be detected by normal sense. It was a formation array that was not easily discovered. This type of array was more powerful in terms of giving warning than defense, its main use being to alert the guards and the masters.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat hesitant.

With his strength, he could entirely forcefully break through such a level of formation array without any danger at his own life. But in the process, he would definitely alert the guards. At that time, his plan to secretly infiltrate inside would be completely destroyed, and would cause some change in his plans.

“Hmph, heh, heh.....woof, woof, in the end, my almighty master, needs to rely in the even more almighty Woof master!”

Seeing Ye Qingyu’s difficulties, the Little Nine on his shoulder instantly became smug.

It rose up on its legs, one paw placed at his waist, the other paw extended upwards with a silver claw extended out towards the sky at a forty five degrees. He completely pretended to be a saviour of the world and was annoying to the extreme.

“You have a way?”

Ye Qingyu rarely had such an expectant gaze when looking at the little glutton who was idle all day, and who only knew to sleep after eating.

“Of course! Otherwise how did you think I managed to so easily escape from inside.....no, I walked out!” Little Nine directly rolled his eyes at Ye Qingyu. But this fellow knew that it was not the right moment for him to discuss terms and conditions with his ‘vicious master’ just yet, so he very quickly exhibited an incredible technique that made Ye Qingyu completely stunned!

One could see on the originally pure as white jade body of Little Nine, there was suddenly a strange sight, as if there was some sort of strange connection with the moon in the skies. The pure and holy moonlight was absorbed by his body, then this was radiated out in a white hazy ball of light.

This hazy ball of light instantly wrapped around Little Nine and Ye Qingyu. Inside, Ye Qingyu could not even sense any Spirit qi coming from his own body, as if he had completely assimilated with the air around him.

The silly dog took a step forward with his paw in the hidden array.

There was not any change whatsoever.

Evidently this painstakingly laid out hidden array, had not detected the intrusion of this dog. Therefore naturally there would not be any warnings given off.

“Just what....sort of technique is this? You have this kind of ability? When did you learn this?” Ye Qingyu was really shocked by this.“

Assimilate into nothingness?

This technique was somewhat going against the heavens

This silly dog really had such an ability?

He had not discovered this at all before.

No wonder this silly dog dared say he could enter as he pleased in the Pass Lord's Residence, and even brought the little braided hair girl Xiaoxian into the Pass Lord's Residence.....with such an ability, it was most likely that there was not even a single place in Youyan Pass he could not enter.

Thinking back to the extremely mysterious origins of this dog, Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that everything was not so ridiculous.

Marquis Ye felt, that he had really underestimated this silly dog.

Perhaps there were many talents and secrets that this fellow possessed apart from eating that he had not yet uncovered.

His eyes had already began to carefully scan over the little cheeky dog on his shoulder. His expression was so serious that it seemed as if he wanted to place him into a dog stew.

“Woof, you, what do you want from me?” All the hairs on Little Nine's body was completely raised by this gaze of Ye Qingyu. He did not pretend to be amazing anymore, and explained: ” I don't even know my own ability. When I was escaping, I suddenly had it, how can I explain it clearly. Anyway, right now we should focus on saving the people quickly.....“

Ye Qingyu's gaze that could naturally suppress Little Nine retreated, giving him a glance that said 'when we return, I'll examine you carefully.'. Walking onwards under the silver light barrier emitted from Little Nine, they passed through the hidden formation array and entered into the cave.

This hidden array made through profound means, did not raise any alarm whatsoever. As they entered the cave, Ye Qingyu advanced rapidly under Little Nine's lead.

Little Nine also seriously observed Ye Qingyu's expression.

He discovered, after that series of jest and buffoonery, his master's expression was no longer as dark as it was before. Letting out a breath of relief, he affectionately used his head to rub against Ye Qingyu's face, and stuck out his tongue, beginning to grin happily.

Ye Qingyu's focus, was always gathered on the passage way.

He could not help but admit, that this time the glutton had really not let him down.

Previously, he had known the terrain to this place like the back of his own hand. There was not even the slightest of error as he led Ye Qingyu into the depths of the mountain.

On the way, Ye Qingyu once again passed by five hidden array formations in total, one stronger after another. But these arrays under the miraculous power of Little Nine did not pose any use whatsoever. They easily traversed past it without alerting anyone.

"This hidden array is evidently only set up recently. The person who placed it seems very confident in it, for there to be no one to stand guard....."

Ye Qingyu was able to see some intricacies.

He had discovered, that the style and method of these formation arrays, obviously came from the hands of the people from the sects. It was absolutely not the style of the Youyan army. Although he had not come for too long a time in Youyan Pass, but Ye Qingyu knew very well the way

the Youyan army did things.

He felt more and more, that this was not a new recruit training camp at all, but rather the den of a nest of bandits from Jianghu.

As these thoughts occurred to him, he memorised the terrain of this cave in his heart as well as theorising over all the clues.

The passageway of the mountain was rugged and craggy, the boulders of the wall rough and crooked, lump and bumps everywhere. It seemed to be a cave excavated from a natural fissure in the rocks, that travelled deep into the belly of the mountain in a slope. Approximately every tens of metres or so, there would be a lit torch hanging on the walls that produced sounds of cracking. The fires of the torch constantly changed directions according to the cold breeze of the passageway.

There was no one at all on the way.

Very quickly, there was a strange smell coming up ahead.

It seemed like some sort of rotten object, that brought with it an acrid blood smell.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised something.

His footsteps slowed

After tens of breath, a prison space deep within the mountain appeared before Ye Qingyu's arms.

The prison deep within the mountain, was arranged in a classic fishbone shape. There was a main passageway with numerous two metre long diversions on both sides of this main passageway. On these diversions, there were caves that had been dug out, and the steel bars on the outside had turned it into simple prisons of all sorts of shapes and sizes.

Ye Qingyu stood just outside the main passageway for a long time. After not seeing any guards whatsoever, and the fact Little Nine had told him that there were no one placing surveillance on the prisons outside, he thought it over then appeared and decisively walked through the main

passageway.

As he passed by these diversions, Ye Qingyu was able to discern the situation inside.

It was not any different from the description of Little Nine. He discovered that those who were imprisoned were those common civilians with no power to resist. There were no commoners that were even shackled, but they had no way to escape from these prisons.

As they neared the end of the main passageway, there were already some martial experts imprisoned. But the majority of the martial artists had low strength, and had evidence of beatings and injuries on their bodies. Every one of them had a candle yellow face. From the weakness of these bodies, one could determine that they had already experienced some form of torture.

These people were in a daze. They completely did not notice Ye Qingyu passing by.

“Hm? It’s them!”

Ye Qingyu was already able to see the armed escort men in these several prisons.

Several days before, these armed escorts had enjoyed alcohol happily as they pleased in the Common Liquor House. Everyone one of them were as lively as a dragon or a tiger, but right now they all sat on the cold floor of the prison listlessly, bounded by chains. There was not even a shred of hope left on their bodies.

Ye Qingyu’s fist clenched slightly, abandoning the idea to immediately rescue these people.

He must obtain even more clues and evidence to not waste this operation.

He passed through the main passageway before him, heading deeper and deeper inside.

As the passageway ended, there were spiral stairs that led deeper in,

seeming to be leading one to an even more important place. After around a few minutes, the stairs had already reached its end. There was a stone door without any lock appearing in front of him, with vague noise of clamour and the brightness of fire emitting from it.

“Those people are inside.”

This was the low suppressed voice of Little Nine.

The people that he meant, was naturally the sword scarred military officer and the others.

Ye Qingyu sighed in amazement. This was the deepest parts of the prison in the mountains, but there was not any protection whatsoever. He decisively walked to the door, and came there, peering inside.

What was below him, was even more sinister and vicious!

The vision in front of him suddenly brightened.

What Ye Qingyu first saw, was a massive circular space.

Approximately three or four acres large, the ground was flat and the tens of torches burning caused everything to be lit brightly. A surge of bloody odour surged at him towards the outside. What was most drawing to one's eyes, was the assorted torture tools in front of him. There were punishment instruments the size of a person; pliers that were used to pluck people's fingernails out, the burning red hot brand, as well as tiger seats that had been completely dyed red with blood.

This evidently was an interrogation room filled with all sorts of torturous instruments!

Ye Qingyu took another few steps inside, having a good look at the environment.

The layout of this interrogation room, also had numerous diverted passageways around it like the claws of a crab. There were similarly prisons like before on these diverted passageways, but every path was guarded carefully by experts of the sects with decent strength. It should be that people who had comparatively high status were imprisoned here.



It could not be compared to the commoners and the armed escorts at all.

And right now in the middle of the interrogation room, there were two bloodied figures that were hung on the huge black rack.

# Chapter 232: Torture

These two figures had evidently just experienced an unimaginably cruel torture.

Their arms and legs were firmly bound in piercing steel chains onto the rack, their limbs outstretched to its furthest. They had no way to move in the least. Their skins had already been peeled back and they were like two yellow fish that were hanging in the air. No, not a yellow fish, but a fish covered in blood.

Right now, apart from their faces, there already was not a single inch of intact skin left. Every part of their body could be used as teaching examples on how to interrogate – blade wounds, burns, whip scars, and the places where needles pierced into his body completely covered their entire bodies.

The flesh and blood was like a dragon spouting water, that constantly surged out from these lacerated skin. On their toes, there already was a small puddle of blood around a metre wide. This acrid bloody smell completely filled the entire room. If not for the fact that the two people were martial artist cultivators, and had strong and sturdy bodies, they would most likely long have died!

Just what kind of people were they, that they would suffer such cruel and merciless torture?

Ye Qingyu's gaze moved to the faces of the two.

This was the only place that was left intact on both of them.

But once he saw, it was like lightning had struck the fires of the earth.

Ye Qingyu stood where he was.

His body, because of a gigantic indescribable rage, caused him to faintly shiver.

For it to be .....these two!

Why had they been captured here?

Ye Qingyu recognised both of them.

The young man on the rack on the left, was completely covered with blood and wounds, but still had a clear and fair face. But Ye Qingyu had a deep impression of him. It was the person that had provided aid to the people affected after Song Xiaojun had invaded Youyan Pass, that young military officer. The person that no matter remained patient and calm, even when facing the difficulties of the Violet Seven Stars sect. He had an endurance that far exceeded a normal person.

Ye Qingyu remembered this young military officer well.

The other person hanging on the right, also possessed a very young face. Ye Qingyu also knew very well who he was. He was one of the trusted soldiers that served beside the military warfare officer Liu Zongyuan, of the Vanguard Camp. On that day, during the battle at the Breeze and Drizzle building, he had also fought. With a sword stroke, he had cut off the staff of Huang Ran. With a fierce personality and powerful strength, he was regarded extremely highly by Liu Zongyuan. Liu Zongyuan had always mentioned this young talent called Sang Fusheng in front of Ye Qingyu and praised him, calling him one of the future people who would become a military warfare officer.

Ye Qingyu had never imagined that these two people would be captured.

Why was it these two?

The young little officer had average strength so he was easily captured. But Sang Fusheng's power was extremely strong, and had an extremely cautious and alert attitude. He also possessed a wealth of battle experience. More importantly, both of them were military officers of the Youyan army. For someone to dare act against them, were they disregarding all the laws that governed this place?

From the perspective of this situation, those who had interrogated him, must possess a great enmity for these two people. They completely madly tortured these two without any mercy whatsoever, all sorts of torturous implements having been utilised on the two young boys.

Previously, after the buffoonery of Little Nine, the rage had died down a little within Ye Qingyu. But as of this instant, it once again crazily burning within Ye Qingyu's heart.

At this time, there was cold laughter coming from nearby.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look.

At the centre of the interrogation room, there was a large table completely filled with meat and alcohol.

There were tens of Jianghu people that were busy eating and drinking as they gathered around the table.

The fragrance of the alcohol and the meat, seemed exceedingly bizarre in this bloody and cruel interrogation room.

These Jianghu people were different from the people pretending to be Youyan soldiers on the outside. They did not wear military uniforms, and was exceedingly casual about what they wore. They did not conceal their identity at all. There were some people with completely bare upper arms, exposing the black hair on their bodies that was like a wild beast. There were sounds of laughter as they surrounding this table, gulping down food and alcohol. There was a completely bustling atmosphere and vibe about the place.

They had not detected Ye Qingyu's entrance at all.

There would occasionally be a glance at the bloody figures next to them, that caused their smiles to grow even more satisfied. It was as if they had just completed an amazing artistic work. The depravity had gone to the very limits!

Ye Qingyu's pupils constricted.

In this group of Jianghu people, he saw another familiar figure.

Qi Yong, of the breaking intestines palm.

The Violet Seven stars sect disciple who had one of his arm chopped off by him at that Hundred herb hall.

Who would have thought that this scum would also be here.

This represented that within this group of people, there must be other disciples of the Violet Seven stars sect.

“Hahaha, come come come, senior brother Qi Yong, I raise a cup to you!” There was a Violet Seven Stars sect disciple who rose and lifted his cup in a toast. “Haha, senior brother Qi Yong is so amazing, for him to present such a plan that was so quickly approved by the higher ups. We’ve managed to capture these two pigs so quickly, as long as they manage to make them confess, I think that we will definitely be able to cause trouble for Ye Qingyu, that dog who interferes in our plans.”

“Haha, that’s right, Qi Yong senior brother really is famed for his intelligent and wit. Hehe, we can’t act against Ye Qingyu at this time, but what about if we act on the people next to him? This Liu Zongyuan was also looking to die, to dare go against us. This time, we’ll take care of one of his most trusted helpers, the next time, we’ll finish him.” Another disciple of the sects said loudly with a smile.

En?

Why did it seemed that this matter had something to do with hm?

Ye Qingyu was bewildered.

A thought occurred to him. He did not act just yet, just retreating slightly and hid himself by the side of the stone door, continuing to listen on.

Perhaps he could obtain even more information.

At that time, one of the two on the racks on a befuddled state – that young officer suddenly moved. A mouthful of blood was spat out, and light sounds of hoarse panting could be heard from his mouth.

“Eh, one has awoken.”

A seven stars sect disciple turned his head to look, a sinister smiled on his face.

He placed his wine cup down, and walked next to the young officer amidst the unbridled calm laughter of the others.

“Haha, this little kid woke up early, this means that we have a toy yet again. Haha, when they faint like dead wood, it isn’t fun at all. Only when they resist is it interesting. This really can make us all happy, I’ll get more alcohol for everyone!”

“hahaha!”

“Good!”

“This little kid still has a hard mouth, we have to take proper care of him.....”

This crowd of Jianghu people shouted their approval and laughter, like a herd of vicious wild beasts.

“First comes the appetiser!”

Pak!

A whipping sound!

A Violet Seven stars sect took out an iron piercing whip from the torture implements rack nearby.

With a flick of his wrist, the whip filled with thorns was like a bloody streak of lighting under the control of this disciple. It viciously landed on the body of the young officer, instantly stabbing into his bloody body. When the part was lifted away, a piece of blood skin was ripped out by the whip.

Chi!

A low hiss emitted from the mouth of the officer, and vein after vein throbbed on his temple.

But this young officer had a proudness about him. Even after withstanding such huge abnormal pain, he did not even emitted a single scream of anguish.

“Hehe, you ate so much meat but youre still so motherfucking weak!” Did you not see that he has not even enjoyed himself yet?”

Qi Yong’s sinister smile became even greater after seeing the

determination of the little military officer.

The him who had lost an arm, had gone completely psychotic. His face was filled with viciousness as he loudly urged and ordered that disciple to use even more cruel methods to torture that young officer.

“Yes, yes , yes! Senior brother Qi Yong, just have a look!”

This disciple lackey nodded his head, reaching into a black coloured box and taking something out. From inside, he took out a black truncheon embedded with a blue crystal. There was a faint glimmer of fire from this blue crystal, that instantly shone a tragic blue green colour over all of the interrogation room.

“This Nether Spirit rod is the new goods that arrived today. It was created using formations, and are one of the tools and instruments from the Heavenly Works. It is said that it can directly burn one’s soul, and has pain ten thousands time greater than a typical steel rod. Hehe, today we can finally see its effects!”

Good!

Hurry the hell up!

Everyone began smiling and laughing in anticipation.

The disciples of the sects right now, were absolutely like beasts wearing human skins. Facing such torture, everyone had expressions of anticipation and longer, looking at this terrifying Nether Spirit rod as it pressed against the head of any young military officer.

SSsss!

Ahhh!!!

A terrifying burning noise could be heard.

Kadong!Kadong!

The rack the young officer was bound to began madly quivering under the struggle.◦

All the blood on the young officer’s body was sent flying everywhere as

he struggled. But even if so, he still grimly clutched his teeth, steel nearly being crushed apart in his teeth. He still did not let out a scream of pain, but there was still the rough painting of an injured wild beast coming from his mouth.

Burning his soul!

Hearing the effects of this implement was enough for one's bones and head to go numb.

But the animals in front of him really used it against a soldier from Youyan Pass.

Heaven's would not allow their actions, they deserved to die over ten thousands time.

After enduring for a short while, the young officer fainted again.

The Little Nine on Ye Qingyu's shoulder right now, could clearly hear his own teeth clicking and clacking as he grinded it against each other. If not for the fact that Ye Qingyu did not give the order, he would most likely have rushed forward to tear apart the throats of these people. But Ye Qingyu had told him to stay put....

The silly dog turned around to look at Ye Qingyu's eyes.

Crap, too terrifying!

Little Nine had seen Ye Qingyu be angry before.

But the coldness of Ye Qingyu's face was enough to make him freeze ten thousands time over. This was the first time he had laid his eyes on such an expression.

This bunch of people.....would definitely die miserably.

Little Nine let out a cold shiver.

He did not know why Ye Qingyu had still not acted at this moment, but he must have some sort of special reason.



# Chapter 233: Frost

The young officer had just awoken when fainted yet again to this horrifying torture. His entire body fell limp, the sweat and blood mixing together, his hands spasming unconsciously. He was left on his last, weak breaths.

This Nether Soul rod's power was far too frightening.

"Hahaha! Good!"

"It seems like this little kid is finally satisfied with this."

The crowd laughed uproariously.

Qi Yong had drank slightly too much.

He stood up unstably, covered with the smell of alcohol. Bringing a bowl of alcohol, he signalled for the Violet Seven stars sect to go to the side.

"Pok!"

This alcohol completely drenched the young officer who did not even have a piece of intact skin left on his body.

The acute pain that followed after completely awoke the officer yet again. Qi Yong grinned viciously, grabbing the hair of the young officer, and yanked up his already powerless body up. Consecutively slapping him twenty or thirty times loudly, he tuned the only untouched part of the young officer's body swollen and bruised.

"You trash that don't have eyes, you are only a tiny little officer, but you dare not even tell the doctor to treat your father, I. This time you have fallen in to my clutches, so I can do whatever I like to you as I pleases. Hehe, so what if you are part of the Youyan army? If I play with you to your death here, no one will know."

Qi Yong chuckled sinisterly.

After his limb had been cut off, this was equal to all his martial future being cut off.

He could evidently sense, the disdain and disinterest his senior brothers had towards him these days.

There was no one that feared him and showed him respect any more. Everyone's gaze had a hint of pity as they looked towards him. Those elders and great people of the sect that placed great importance to him previously, were evidently preparing themselves to abandon him. Qi Yong was plunged into a deep and dark despair, nearly to the boundary of his breaking point. He was like a wild beast that had gone berserk, wanting to destroy everything that he saw in his eyes.

Pak!Pak!

Qi Yong released the rage in his heart, his hand not even stopping to resting, continuing to slap.

What he wished to do the most, was to cut the Ye Qingyu who had chopped off his arms into a thousand pieces.

But he knew, this was impossible.

In front of Ye Qingyu, he was just like an ant or worm. A finger of his, was enough to kill him.

But when he was within his despair, he had suddenly heard news that there were some higher ups who wanted to act against Ye Qingyu. Joining forces with a significant number of Jianghu people, they prepared to do something in secret.

Qi Yong hence offered his services.

When the hidden forces joined together and decided to act on the people beside Ye Qingyu, and do something, Qi Yong realised his opportunity had arrived.

At the first instance, he had spoken about the existence of the young officer.

Many people did not realise there was a faint connection between the young officer and Ye Qingyu.

Qi Yong himself was not too sure.

But this did not matter too much.

Qi Yong did this, was for the people higher up to realise his value, and also for revenge. Since there would not be any loss to him whatsoever if mistakenly dragged anyone in, and this young officer was someone that Ye Qingyu knew, then it did not matter if they killed him. After all, this world was not fair for a long time, so being innocent had nothing to do with anything.

After all, right now Qi Yong needed an outlet to release his anger.

If he was able to make Ye Qingyu feel regret, if he was able to make Ye Qingyu suffer, then he would be willing to do anything.

“Haha! Did you not want to speak yesterday? Right now, I can do whatever I want to you as if you are a dead pig....”

Qi Yong chuckled sinisterly.

He grabbed the throat of the young officer. bringing the swollen face of the officer in front of him.

“Speak! What relationship do you have with Ye Qingyu! Have you secretly made any pacts with the demon race. As long as you confess and explain everything clearly, I can give you a quick death.....”

The young officer whose consciousness was already befuddled after such torture opened his eyes slightly.

He locked his brows slightly, his eyes seeming not to contain too great a rage.\

But he opened his mouth, and gave an answer to the Qi Yong currently burning with fury:

“I don’t know Marquis Ye.””

Motherfucker!

You are looking to die!

After torturing him like a dog, this little kid only said such a phrase.

Qi Yong was so angry that his eyes were about to explode.

A surge of rage shot up to his head. Qi Yong could no longer control his own anger, he directly grabbed at the Nether Soul Rod and press it again fiercely on the forehead of the young officer!

Pok!

The pain of your soul burning was completely indescribable using words.

The body of the young officer once again madly struggling, the shackles nearly being pull apart and the entire rack madly shaking.

“Senior brother Qi Yong, calm your rage. Make sure not to kill him, we still haven’t gotten any confession.”

The Violet Seven Stars sect disciple came to pursue him.

“Brother Qi, sit by one side and don’t get tired. Let me take care of the other one, I guarantee that he will confess everything.”

Qi Yong coldly snorted, only then did he sat down

At the same time, the fat sect disciple next to him, completely filled with black hair like a large bear, stood up with a malicious grin. “There’s two. After we’ve done playing with one, we can still play with the other. We can’t treat them unfairly after all, hahaha.....”

He chuckled loudly, and there was a person beside him that completely drenched the other young soldier Sang Fusheng with a bucket of cold alcohol hanging on the rack.

Ah.....Pok.....Huff, huff.....

This young soldier was abruptly awakened by this cold liquid..

A series of acute coughs sounded. At the same time, a significant volume of blood spurted out. One could tell, that his injuries were not light.

Cold alcohol entering into one’s wound, was the same as rubbing salt into the injuries. The pain was incomparable.

“Oh.....too comfortable.....haha, I opened my eyes and I see a herd of

animals yet again. You guys are still alive, this makes me too happy!"

The soldier opened his eyes, a sharp grin showing on his face.

His personality was many times fiercer than the young officer. When he awoke and saw the Violet Seven Stars sect disciples, he only coldly smiled. Every one of his words was like metal rubbing together, containing a hatred that caused one to shiver in fear.

"What, you want to take revenge? We are still fine, but it's a pity you won't live long.....haha, if you want vengeance, you can only wait till your next life."

There were completely mocking laughs on the faces of all disciples of the sects.

The young soldier Sang Fusheng only coldly sneered, not wasting his energy on words.

The black bear moved his body in front of this soldier.

"Little trash, listen well. Today your grandfather I will give you your last chance. If you are willing to point out that your superior Liu Zongyuan is dealing with the demon race, and admit that Ye Qingyu is also implicated within this secret, then I can release you right now. Good alcohol, good meat, beauties, wealth, everything can be gained. But if you continue to be stubborn, then look at the trash next to you. Your consequences will be over ten times as great!"

The silhouette of the conspiracy was slowly drawn out by the words of these Seven Star sect disciples.

The Ye Qingyu who was outside the door, already largely understood the vague story.

So it was like so.

So it was like so.

So the plot of these people, was like this.

"Hehe.....haha.....hahaha!" The young soldier Sang Fusheng seemed as if he had heard the greatest joke in the world. He incredibly began

chickling: “You want to do it with you people? You bunch of trash in the gutters, you filthy dregs, to really act against Marquis Ye? You are so retarded it’s laughable.....pitiful, you don’t even know what you are doing. An ant trying to shake a big tree, hahahaahaha.....”

This laughter was like the metallic thunder of a powerful army.

A power and aura that made one’s expression change exploded out from the weak laughter of Sang Fusheng who was near his breaking point.

Within the interrogation room, everyone’s faces paled.

“Motherfucker! You want to take the hard path! Who said you could say so many useless words!” The black bear was so embarrassed that he was enraged, grinning maliciously: “Even a piece of metal, if it falls into the hands of the living Asura, Xiong Jiu, then it will spit out a piece of meat. You want to endure longer, ten as you pleased, hehe, I’ll make you experience pain that makes you beg for death. Lets just see how long you can endure!”

Before he finished.

He casually picked up a steel flower by his side, and with a flick of his wrist, it flew like lightning towards the face of the young soldier.

“Then come and try.” There was a smile of disdain on the face of the young soldier, not even blinking. “Let your grandfather I see, I really want to experience how you make metal spit out a piece of meat.”

“I’ll cripple half your face, and dig out one of your eyeballs. Let’s see if you are still as stubborn then!”

The black bear smiled maliciously, the metal implement heading straight for the face of the young soldier.

But when the metal instrument was about to lacerate skin, it suddenly stopped.。

It could not advance any further.

The ‘black bear’ was stunned, then attempted to move again.

But he still could not move in the slightest, as if his body was sealed.

He knew something was wrong his expression filled with shock.

He had no way of understanding, why his arm no longer listened to his command. Why had it suddenly hardened, why had it lost all feeling. Only until he discovered in fright, that without knowing when, a layer of faint frost had already extended around his arm.

“What is this? I....” The black bear was incomparably stunned.

The moment he lowered his head, he was terrified to discover, that it was not only his arms. Half of his body, from the neck below, had already been covered a thin layer of frost. Apart from his neck being able to move slightly, all his other parts could not even move an inch. This layer of thin frost, was like that strongest shackles in this world that completely sealed him away.

He stared in befuddlement at the other people.

On the floor, it was unknown when it had been completely covered by silver frost.

White Jade like ice was flowing all around the room without sound. The Qi Yong and the others not that far away also had a face of confusion and fright. As the white jade like frost travelled over, the frost were like poisonous snakes crawling up their legs. It grew and grew upwards from their legs, then covered the large majority of their bodies.....

# Chapter 234: Killing people like cutting grass

“What’s happening?”

“Just where has the ice came from?”

“What is happening? I can’t move....”

All the people of the sects began exclaiming in shock.

The young soldier Sang Fusheng was slightly taken aback.

The expected pain did not arrive.

His eyes were still able to see.

Sang Fusheng saw as his eyes were nearly stabbed by the steel implement. But when it was just about to reach him, it suddenly stopped. Then he could hear the gasps of shocks from those bastards. When he lowered his head, he could see a familiar layer of cold ice and frost....

Ice?

This cold qi.....just where had he seen it before?

Sang Fusheng was dumbfounded, then suddenly realised something.

His originally dim and fatigue eyes suddenly burned with a splendid radiance.

Then, in the pupils of the black bear like man in front of him, he was able to see the figure of one person.

White clothes like jade, black hair like a waterfall.

A silhouette that was extremely familiar to him.

Ye Qingyu! !

Marquis Ye!

Sang Fusheng was dumbfounded.

And nearly at the same time, Qi Yong’s howl like a pig being



slaughtered broke the silence of the interrogation room.

“Ye-Ye-Ye.....” Qi Yong looked at the white figure walking step by step into the room from the door. His handsome heroic face was enough to make countless girls lose sleep, but in their eyes, it was unquestionably the most frightening face in the whole world. He lost his composure, sharply: “You.....Ye-Ye-Ye....Ye Qingyu!”

.....

Ye Qingyu did not pay any attention to Qi Yong’s desperate howl that seemed as if he was being castrated.

He flicked his fingers.

Four ice crystals shot out, cutting apart the steel shackles binding the soldier Sang Fusheng.

“How is it, are you still able to withstand it?”

By the time he had finished speaking, his figure had already travelled beside the young military officer like a bolt of lightning.

Sang Fusheng knew that Ye Qingyu was speaking to him.

The young soldier opened his mouth, and laughed in a stoic manner: “It’s not a problem.”

His arms and legs exerted strength slightly. Breaking open his wounds again, and causing blood to splatter everywhere, he had already left the broken shackles holding him, jumping down from the rack. With a slight stumble, he nearly fell. Holding on to the interrogation rack for support, and spitting out a mouthful of blood, the corner of his lips curled slightly: “Motherfucker, I was nearly killed by these crowd of scum.....

Nearby.

Ye Qingyu’s palm was already placed on the head of the young military officer.

The young military officer was in a semi conscious state, his body fiercely struggling. He was completely unaware of what was going on in the outside world.

“I’ve already come for a period of time, and had always been observing behind the door.” Ye Qingyu’s head did not turn back, slowly inserting his inner yuan into the body of the officer. Then he said lightly: “His situation was somewhat undesirable. By the time I arrived, I already noticed that his life force was scattered.....therefore, I could only wait, and allow them to torture him, activating the last of his energy and inciting the last of his life force. Only then could I save him and bet on this chance to make him live!”

Saying this, Ye Qingyu’s hand flipped out.

A robe was taken from his robe interdimensional pouch and thrown over to Sang Fusheng.

Sang Fusheng received the long robe, covering his body that were completely filled with wounds. He took a deep breath in.

Hearing these words, he was slightly taken aback, then he realised Marquis Ye was explaining himself to him. He could not help but feel slightly apprehensive, rushing to say: “There naturally has to be reasons behind Marquis Ye’s actions. My superior have long said to me, that you do not need to explain any of your actions to me. Even if you did not act today, I would not complain in the slightest.”

Under the influence of Liu Zongyuan, he long had utter respect for Ye Qingyu.

Especially when he had heard Ye Qingyu spread the word around a couple of days ago that he would oppose the sects, and after he had killed the Five Poison Gongzi and the others with the force of thunder. It caused those righteous soldiers in the YOuyan army to feel incomparably excited. Sang Fusheng had already become a true follower and believer of Ye Qingyu.

After a short moment.

“Phew.....” The young military officer finally opened his eyes.

He let out a long breath of murky air. His quivering body, finally stopped shivering.

Ye Qingyu let out a sigh of relief.

He was not a doctor, and only knew some rough methods to save people.

When he had first taken a look at the young officer hanging on the rack, he knew then that his injuries were far too severe and it would be difficult to save him. Therefore he could only use some unconventional methods. When the officer was being tortured he had not acted, and waited until he could no longer endure the huge pain and his body burned with the very last drops of his life force. Only at that very moment had he acted with his vast qi, using the most commonly seen method of a martial artist, to extend his life.

The young officer gradually opened his eyes.

The moment he looked at Ye Qingyu, he was taken aback.

His gaze was somewhat confused, somewhat conflicted.

“You are.....Ye .....Marquis Ye, you.....” He had once seen a picture of Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly: “Don’t speak, first rest.” A surge of cold qi spat out from his palm, instantly turning the steel shackles of the rack into ice scraps. Cold silver frost enveloped the wounds of the officer, staunching the blood. Then he lightly carried him to a stone bed nearby, using a long robe to cover his bloody body.

The injuries of the officer was very serious, and he needed systematic treatment.

Only when he finished everything, did Ye Qingyu look towards the young soldier Sang Fusheng.

The strength of Sang Fusheng was countless times stronger than the minor officer. The blood surging in his veins was like a massive bear, and as a result of this, his condition was many times better than the officer. After a slight rest, he could already move as he pleased. The robe on his body were already completely seeped with blood, but he acted as if he did not even notice and was in high spirits.

“Superior, what should we next?”

His body was upright and straight like a spear.

Even when he was heavily injured, he still maintained the posture of a true posture. his figure was drawn straight like a tightly arched bow.

This was the true style of a soldier of the Youyan army.

Ye Qingyu looked at Qi Yong and the others who were frozen where they stood, and was completely terrified. Saying calmly, “What are we going to do? Of course it’s the thing you want to do the most.....you can just leave one or two alive.”

Sang Fusheng was stunned.

Then he instantly began to grin happily.

“Thank you Marquis.”“

He paid his respects.

Then he turned around, heading towards Qi Yong and the others.

“Look at everyone of you, your smile is so hard to look at. Come, come, come, be a little happier.....” Sang Fusheng pointed, blood dripping from the tip of his finger. There was the sound of bones cracking as he moved his shoulder, and slowly walked over. With a smile, “Did you not have fun just now? Now it’s my turn, come; I’ll play with you!”

.....

Heavens!

How was this possible!

When the frost like water had completely covered the interrogation room and locked everyone in place, everyone including the guards at the passageway as well as the experts of the seven stars sect could feel the temperature of the cave dropping below zero. They witnessed with their own eyes, that white clothed figure appearing with knowing when at the entrance of the cave. His entire body emitted a seeping cold that invaded their very bones, like a death god from hell that walked step by step

inside.

“Ye.....Ye Qingyu!”

Qi Yong, the leader of the Violet Seven Stars sect, swallowed a fearful mouthful of saliva.

He could not believe in his own eyes. How was it that this legendary ice death god would appear here.

When when Ye Qingyu was treating the young military officer, there was no one who dared to speak.

An indescribable terror had completely drown everyone.

In this period of time, there was absolutely no one who had not heard of Ye Qingyu's name before. The blood and bones of hundreds of Jianghu people had caused Ye Qingyu's killing fame to spread. Right now, the Leaf of Youyan was one of his titles. Not only in Youyan pass, but even in the entire Jianghu and Empire, his name already had enough respect attached to it.

Qi Yong and the others knew very well that not one of them was the opponent of Ye Qingyu.

They were only responsible for interrogation here.

The true top level experts had some matters to attend to and had left today.

There completely was no one here who could even block half a move of Ye Qingyu.

The moment Ye Qingyu appeared and used his ice cold power to seal the entire room, no news and alert could be passed on.

Their group of people was like a herd of sheep waiting to be slaughtered.

When they heard Ye Qingyu say that he could do the thing he most wanted doing, Qi Yong and the others felt the sickle of the reaper pressed against their necks. The sharpness and coldness of the blade was enough to make them despair.

When these icy words were spoken like the verdict of the reaper, every word was filled with endless suppressed rage. Qi Yong and the others could only feel that even the blood in their body was so shaken it could not flow anymore, a unsuppressable fear causing every one of them to quiver.

Sang Fusheng first came to before the bear shaped man.

This burly and muscular man that was filled with a malicious aura and completely covered with black hair, currently has an expression that was worse than crying. He opened his mouth, but could not even managed to say anything.....

“Look, Karma came really quickly.”

Sang Fusheng smiled, grabbing another steel implement from the rack and struck out.

Blood went flying everywhere.

The head of the black bear like man was chopped apart like a watermelon.

The young soldier did not even show the slightest hint of mercy.

There were several disciples that lost their composure and began screaming, begging in tears for mercy. They had experienced killings of the Jianghu before, and had seen blood and death. But the large majority of the time, they were on the other side of this scene, forcing such a fate onto other people. For example, when they had tortured Sang Fusheng and the military officer, this bloody and cruel scene was even more shocking than the steel implement hacking the head apart. But they gazed at the torture like watching a performance, everyone of them applauding and screaming for more.

But when such a fate descended upon themselves, the terror was enough to completely envelop them.

“Hey, how could you guys be like this. Everyone of you call yourself hard men of the Jianghu, can you not be afraid of the slightest thing.” Sang Fusheng reprimanded with furrowed eyebrows, then seriously thought it

over. “I’ve been splattered with blood, En,.....it seems like it’s not good to be too violent.”

Then his gaze casted all around his surroundings, grabbing a rusty executioner’s blade in his hand.

Xiu!

The blade glimmered.

A head of a nearby Jianghu person flew through the air.

“It seems like it’s slightly easier with a blade.....” Sang Fusheng nodded his head in satisfaction, then his wrist moved against and the blade flashed. Another head of a Jianghu person flew through the air, blood spurting out like a geyser.◦

Killing people like cutting grass.

This was a true soldier that had been born from experiencing battles between the demon race; there was no mercy at all in his actions.

## Chapter 235: I am called Ye Congyun

“No, no, no .....wait a moment, listen to what I have to say.....Officer Sang, mercy, I’ll say anything, I’m willing to do anything.....” The Qi Yong who had previously put up a fearsome display, was right now pitiful to watch. His face was covered with snot and tears, his features contorted. He did his utmost to beg for his life, and if not for the fact that his body was sealed with frost, he would long have knelt and bowed.

“Look, just how laughable this situation is. In these past couple of days, you’ve tried to make me confess through all sorts of methods, wanting to loosen my mouth. The end result is that you are rushing to say anything.....” Sang Fusheng smiled a little: “Do you think you are pitiful or not? For trash like you, what’s the point of living longer?”

“I.....” Qi Yong opened his mouth, wanting to say something.

Xiu!

The flash of the blade was like lightning.

His head, directly flew through the air.

“It’s a pity, I don’t want to hear your answer.” Sang Fusheng shook his head, a disgusted expression appearing on his face.

After consecutively striking out, it made him slightly tired. He originally was not in too great a condition through how much body had gone through already. Letting out a long sigh, he rubbed away the bloodstains on the blade, frowning as he said: “The sword is too rusty, when I cut someone I can hear the sounds of the bones cracking.....” He smiled as he looked at the others: “Therefore I’m very sorry. If when I chop you up, and I don’t manage to kill you in one strike, then please wait patiently, I’ll quickly follow up with the second strike....”

The long robe was originally dyed with the blood from his own body. His body that had undergone torture was like a malicious ghoul who had crawled out from hell. Every step he took, he would leave bloody red footprints on the white frost. And the white teeth that he showed through



his calm smile, contained a killing intent that caused one to shiver in fear.

As these words were said from his mouth, there were abruptly some people who crumbled.

All sorts of howls and pleadings for mercy sounded out from different parts of the interrogation room.

Sang Fusheng did not pay attention to this at all.

He continued to use the blade, chopping out strike after strike.

The edge of the sword was really very rusty plus he had expended too much of his strength. Therefore when he struck out with the first strike, there really was no way he could cleanly chop someone's head off. He was like hacking at a tree, hammering at it again and again, until finally the head of that person was torn from his neck forcefully.

This scene was far too bloody.

Pang!PangPang! !

There was strange sound that rumbled throughout, like a hammer striking on the hides of animals.

Approximately fifteen minutes later.

The rusty blade on Sang Fusheng's hands had finally managed to hack off seven heads.

The two that were remained were already completely crazy.

Sang Fusheng smiled, throwing away the blade in his hand.

He turned back, paying his respects to Ye Qingyu: "Marquis, I've already done the things you've asked me to. The two that is left over are already scared out of their wits. Right now, whatever you ask them, they will honestly answer....." As he spoke to here, he supplemented this with another sentence. "I have carefully observed them in these two days. These two fellows should be the two that knows the most about the inner workings and their bravery is also small compared to the rest of their group. They are people who should have relatively higher status in this

group, you should be able to obtain some valuable information.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. "It's been hard on you."

"This is all something I should do." Sang Fusheng had an ashamed look on his face. "This time I've really lost the face of Officer Liu. To think I would be captured by people like them....."

Ye Qingyu patted him on the shoulder.

This Sang Fusheng really was an incredible character.

One could discern, he was not a person who liked killing. He originally could take care of those Jianghu people quick and painlessly, but instead he used a method that seemed unspeakably cruel to kill them one after another. This was not him trying to take revenge for what they had done to him, but it was to break the minds of the last two people he must leave alive. He was really making an example for the two to see, and used the most primitive and brutal way to crush the wills of the last two survivors.

Even when he was experiencing the most cruel tortures in these past two days, he was concentrating on analyzing the personality, identity and status of these people. He was figuring out who was the strongest, which of these people would be valuable and who could be used.....

This really was only a miracle that a true heroic elite soldier could do.

No wonder he was one of the trusted soldiers of Liu Zongyuan, who had always carefully nourished him. If Sang Fusheng survive that long, and receive normal promotion through the ranks, then within ten years, he would become another new star within the Youyan army..

After such a performance, Ye Qingyu could not help but revise his opinion of him.

"First, let's save him."

Ye Qingyu did not rush to interrogate the two.

After stabilising the injuries of the young military officer, he carefully thought it over and realised the situation was even worse than he had imagined.

The people held in the large and small individual prisons outside were all in poor condition. Even when the prisons were unlocked, they could not rush far. To want to save this crowd of people out instantly, was not something Ye Qingyu could do alone. Furthermore, even if they could escape, what he would do with them after was also an issue.

“We need help....I’ll go notify Superior Liu!”

Sang Fusheng volunteered.

Ye Qingyu heard this and thought it over. He finally nodded his head in agreement: “Okay, get brother Zongyuan and Mad Tiger Wen to bring people here. From today onwards, the Vanguard will assume control of this new recruit training camp. Everything here will become evidence. I think that some people will very quickly become unsettled.”

Ye Qingyu then looked at the Little Nine laying on his shoulder after finishing saying these words: “Little Nine, you go and bring officer Sang out. Don’t disturb the people outside, do you understand?”

“Woof, woof woof!” Little Nine knew it was not the time to make jokes right now, so he accepted very quickly.

“This is.....” Sang Fusheng stared at Little Nine in puzzlement.

“You will know of his use in a moment.” Ye Qingyu smiled.

Man and dog quickly departed.

Ye Qingyu once again observed the injuries of the young officer. After confirming he was fine, he began carefully inspecting the entire interrogation room.

There were all sorts of tools and implements in the room and seemingly to be new and freshly created. However all of them were covered with blood. On the side there were some beds and covers, and seemed to be the temporary resting place of the people of the sects. There were tens of jars of alcohol next to these covers, and meat hanging on the walls. And on the corner there were some leftover food and rubbish, which evidently had not been cleared out....

And in the back, on a large table, there were some scrolls and tables placed on top of it.

Ye Qingyu's eyes brightened, and went over to the table, inspecting the documents piece by piece.

Very quickly his eyebrows rose completely his two sword like eyebrows like comets.

After roughly half an hour, he managed to completely finish reading all the scrolls.

“So these matters had something to do with the military supply department.....”

Ye Qingyu let out a sigh.

It was a pity that these scrolls did not reveal a great deal of information. The real items that would prove to be of decisive use must be held by the important figures of both parties. Those that were left here was because they were not important.

Ye Qingyu stood up, coming to the two disciples that were about to faint from fright.

“Speak. Why have you captured so many common citizens, and which sects are involved in this matter? Who is commanding you from behind the scenes?” Ye Qingyu looked at the two, his tone of voice calm and his space was expressionless. But even an idiot could sense the fury and killing intent that was like a volcano that could erupt at any moment.

How could it be possible that these two people dare conceal anything?

As the two fought over speaking first, they completely recounted everything they knew, uncovering every secret they had.

Ye Qingyu remembered all their words one by one.

“Marquis, everything we said is true. We can swear to the heaven.....”

“That's right, we can stand up as witnesses to these words.”

The two nearly knelt on the floor.

“Stand as witnesses?” Ye Qingyu gave these to a glance, then shook his head. “I only need to know of these matters. What do I need you two to stand as witnesses for? Could it that I am going to reason over this with them?”

The two were dumbfounded.

Ye Qingyu approximated the time. Sang Fusheng and the silly dog Little Nine should already have left.

“Thank you for your honesty. Right now you can take a rest.” Ye Qingyu turned around, assisting the young officer who had already awakened to head outside the interrogation room. He did not pay attention to the two disciples who were nearly driven mad by fear.

Only until Ye Qingyu’s figure disappeared from the doorway did the two let out a breath of air.

“What should we do?”

“This is bad....if the sects knew we exposed their secrets, we are dead for sure.”

The two discusses their next steps with their hearts beating furiously. Suddenly a gust of cold wind blew over, blowing away the frost and mist in the air. The instant the wind touched the two, the two of them were turned into ice sculptures that were frozen in place. Their frightened voices were still echoing throughout the room.....

Take a rest.

An eternal rest.

From the beginning, Ye Qingyu did not plan to spare a single person in here.

They should die for the souls that have been tainted.

.....

.....

After passing by the other prisons, Ye Qingyu did not release the

imprisoned citizens from the other prisons.

He could only release them after Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan brought a large group of people here. If he really unlocked the prisons, then it would instantly become a scene of chaos. Those who has been imprisoned within for so long and wanted to live, would definitely rush out like mad beasts chaotically. This would only cause them to lose their lives. Only when the army of the Vanguard came could the situation be stabilised and settle these people properly.

Ye Qingyu supported the young office through the passageway, heading towards the outside.

After passing the hidden array, Ye Qingyu acted, forcefully destroying it.

At this time, he no longer cared about alerting other people.。

Ye Qingyu activated the warning array, to notify those behind the scenes. He wanted to rustle the grass and startle the snake, causing those poisonous snake behind this to jump out of their own volition. He wanted to wait at the new recruit training camp, for those people to come into his net.

“It’s not our first time seeing each other. I still don’t know what you are called.”

After going through the passageway and standing at the entrance of the cave, the camp was still in complete chaos. Those Jianghu people disguised as soldiers were still madly drinking, cheering and laughing. Ye Qingyu looked towards the young office by his side.

On that day in the aid giving effort, Ye Qingyu at that time already admired the young officer very much.

Although his strength was average, there was a rare patience and stability about him.

This kind of composure would not break even when mountains crumble was something that even many martial experts struggled to do.

In this prison, the young officer had suffered all sorts of torture and

nearly lost his life. Even so, he was not willing to cooperate with Qi Yong and the others, exhibiting his stubborn and powerful will. This was not in way less than that of the young soldier Sang Fusheng, causing Ye Qingyu to admire him even more.

If there really was a chance, he must aid this young officer in the future in the Vanguard.

Therefore Ye Qingyu asked for his name.

“Reporting to the Marquis, this subordinate is called Ye Congyun.” The young officer replied.

Ye Qingyu’s heart quivered, his eyes going wide. Asking in an incredulous tone: “You are Ye Congyun? You are Ye Congyun?”

# Chapter 236: Ice sculpture

Ye Qingyu had not even imagined in his dreams that this scholarly little officer was the little brother Ye Congyun of the armoured sentry that he had been painstakingly search for. Ever since arriving in Youyan Pass, Ye Qingyu had relied on many people to search for Ye Congyun. After becoming familiar with Liu Zongyuan, he had also asked this military warfare officer to look out for him. Previously there were some rough news, but because of the demon race invading Youyan Pass, they had not met each other.....

Who would have guessed while he went everywhere in search for him, he was just in front of him.

Did this mean that he had already seen the person he was searching for, and even brushed shoulder with him?"

"Superior.....you've heard of my name before." Seeing Ye Qingyu's reaction, the little officer Ye Congyun was somewhat startled.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, not knowing what to say.

Guilt was brimming within his hearts.

In that snowstorm night on the Hundred Broken Mountain, those sentries had protected him with their lives. One after another, they had died horribly under the cruel methods of Liu Yuancheng and Chen Moyun. Before the armoured sentry had died, he had asked for Ye Qingyu to take care of his brother Ye Congyun.....at the last moments of his life, he had trusted the person he loved the most in the entire world to Ye Qingyu, but.....

Looking at the injuries on Ye Congyun's body, he could not help but feel guilty.

He had failed the duty the armoured sentry left him.

Thankfully that day he had told the silly dog Little Nine to investigate these matters in the Common Liquor house, and he had rushed here at the most crucial moment. If he was slightly later, than it was most likely



that Ye Congyun as well as Qi Yong would have been tortured to their deaths. At that time, he could not even make any reparations.

“Right now what position are you within the Vanguard?” Ye Qingyu changed the subject, asking lightly.

“I am a minor captain, under the command of general Pei Wei.” Although Ye Congyun did not know why Ye Qingyu asked this question, but he still replied really seriously.

“Do you want to continue staying in the Vanguard, or come to my White Horse tower?” Ye Qingyu came to the entrance of the cave, staring down at the chaotic scene of the camp.

There was a trace of shock flashing by Ye Congyun’s face. For the him that was always calm and stable, this already was a very exaggerated expression.

This young officer looked at the hero of the Youyan army and thought about this proposal seriously. “To server under Marquis Ye, is the honour of countless soldiers in the Vanguard. But.....Superior Pei Wei has treated me well, I.....

Ye Qingyu smiled, saying: “Fine, it’s a fine choice even if you stay in the Vanguard.”

As he spoke to him, Ye Qingyu changed the topic yet again. “I see that your potential is decent. However your blood qi is weak, you should have some sort of injury within your body, otherwise your strength should be slightly higher than it is right now. What happened?”

“When I was small, I was heavily wounded once and it affected my foundation. Although I managed to survive, the doctors diagnosed me with a condition saying I will have weaknesses in my blood.” Ye Congyun calmly replied: “I don’t have enough blood qi naturally, so my cultivation will always remain within the ordinary martial level, and I have no way to sense yuan qi.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

So it was like this..

It seems like Ye Congyun had really suffered something severe when he was small and escaped the clutches of death.

No wonder the armoured sentry would still be concerned about his little brother even at the moment of his death.

“You rest here for a while. I’ll clean up the surrounding trash.” Ye Qingyu assisted the young officer to a flat boulder at the entrance of the cave, then slowly headed toward the camp down below.“

Boom!

The hidden warning array at the entrance of the cave was instantly activated.

A strong energy fluctuation spread everywhere.

The earth shuddered, shattered rock roaring and breaking apart.ο

Ye Qingyu’s footsteps did not stop, his left palm grabbing lightly through air. Six snow dragon mirages roared out from his yuan qi, coiling and swirling within the air, roaring with a dragon’s might. It met with the energy of the hidden array and the air suddenly froze. The originally frightening power of the array was frozen solid in the air, along with shattered rocks and grass....

This was a strange scene.

Everything that was moving within the air, was abruptly frozen.

Ye Qingyu walked amongst the frozen and scattered objects in the air, like a white clothed saint striding amidst a chaotic world.

The moment he walked past them, it was as if everything around him lost its momentum, falling powerlessly to the ground.

On the places where he stepped, there were silver coloured frost like footsteps that appeared and disappeared. Every silver dragon was like it was real, coiling around him. Under the shine of the silver moon in the night’s sky, he was like a dragon god walking amongst a warring world. Frost and coldness moved and emanated everywhere.

“Who is it?”

“Someone has intruded in.....”

“Quickly go find senior brother.....”

“Surround him!

“Who is it that’s looking to die, quickly halt him.”

In the chaotic and clamouring camp below, those Jianghu people donning military uniform in disarray, finally discovered Ye Qingyu’s existence. The hidden formation activated, with the powerful yuan qi fluctuations alerting them instantly. The scene was like a beehive that was struck with a stick, countless bellows came sounding out.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Countless weapons like the rain pierced through the air towards Ye Qingyu.

And the far away figures flickered. Accompanied by the movement of yuan qi, numerous figures turned into light that headed towards and surrounded Ye Qingyu.

“Return.”

Ye Qingyu’s palm lightly pushed out.

Those clustered weapon that shot through the air suddenly halted, then sharply whisted shooting back to where they had originated from with an even more terrifying force and speed. They tore through the air, causing sparks to form through the friction with the air. They were like shooting stars arcing through the air, one after another that exploded onto the oncoming crowd.

“Ahhh.....”

“No, my hand.....”

Tragic cries and screams broke out in the night.

And one after another vulture like figures that seemed as if they were hunting prey, was struck abruptly. Snowflakes fluttered amongst the air, and suddenly they fell to the ground like kites that had its string cut

loose.

The killing was about to begin.

The Ye Congyun resting his breath on the boulder had wide open eyes.

The words Ye Qingyu, countless soldiers with Youyan Pass, could be described as thunder to their ears. Many people knew that this young Marquis had a powerful strength and did not show the slightest of mercy when he acted. There were all sorts of rumours flying around, but after all, these were still rumours. Right now, personally seeing Ye Qingyu acting, and seeing these killing methods that were glorious to the extreme, Ye Congyun was deeply shaken.

The imagined scene of blood flying everywhere, hacked off limbs did not appear.

The silver mirages of the snow dragons tore through the air, piercing through the body of all the Jianghu people. One could then see those fellows with sinister expressions, transforming in a translucent silver statue. Under the shine of the moonlight, they let out the splendour of jade as they fell through the air. Upon landing on the ground, they were shattered into ice scraps....

Countless silver snow dragons surged out from the white clothed figure on the mountain ledge, tearing through the sky.

There was no blood, no bones.

Everything was turned into ice scraps.

Those thirty of forty experts of the Jianghu, did not even manage to last ten breaths. They all plummeted to the ground, becoming shattered ice. It was as if after the snow dragon had pierced through their body, all the blood and flesh had disappeared, and left only with ice.

There was not any blood at the scene of these killings.

A terrifying ice yuan qi.

Within the air, frost and chill spread throughout.

Even a retard, in such a crushing scene, would feel trepidation.

Those experts of the Jianghu that originally rushed furiously, stared tongue tied as they saw this killing scene that was like art. They could not muster any more courage, scrambling backwards in fear, the muscles in their legs about to cramp up.

The sounds of dragon roars pierced through the air.

The silver snow dragons danced everywhere under the heavens. Under the moonlight, it was like the work of a deity.

Everywhere the snow dragons passed, the chill showed no mercy. It constantly reaped their lives away.

Run!”

Someone let out a cry, turning and running

“I am the disciple of the Deer Cauldron sect. Who is it?” There was someone who reported their name and sect, wanting to remind Ye Qingyu that he was a disciple of a large sect and Ye Qingyu best not kill him.“

“No.....we’ve already joined the Youyan army, we’re someone belonging to the Empire. You can’t kill us....” there were some people who did not belong to famous sects, so subconsciously threw out the banner of the Youyan army.“

“As a human, why would you killed your own comrades?” There were even people who tried to take the moral high ground shooting out.“

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu’s expression, did not change at all.

His yuan qi was activated to the extreme. Thirty yuan qi silver dragons constantly formed everywhere around him. This was the might of a martial expert, the completely suppression of a martial cultivation realm. The experts of the Jianghu in front of him were at the most at the twenty Spirit springs level. In the eyes of normal people, they were almighty experts, but to the Ye Qingyu today, they held no difference from toddlers.

Even if there were fifty or sixty people in front of him.

The large difference in realm caused all numbers to be pointless.

The killing did not stop in the least.

There was once the sinister laugh of these people sounding out within the streets of Youyan Pass. Seeing the tragic scenes of the persons, and witnessing the experience of Sang Fusheng and Ye Congyun, seeing the ugliness of Qi Yong and the others, Ye Qingyu's impression of the Jianghu people were already the worst it could ever be. Even if there were good people within the sects, everyone that appeared tonight in the camp here would die.

He killed the people of the Xuan sect, he killed the Painting Fan and Golden Jade, he killing the Five Poison Gongzi.....

After killing so many trash and clowns, the awaited peace still had not descended to Youyan Pass. There were still people who refused to act honestly.

Ye Qingyu felt it must be that he had not still beaten fear and pain into them yet.

Since it was like so, then let's go again.

Humans would after all fear death.

The madder the ambition and the more tempting the desire, in front of the threat of death, everyone would become logical.ο

Since they were not willing to take a step back, then what awaited them was the judgement of death.

This was Ye Qingyu's principle.

At this time, he would absolutely not stop.

The roars of dragons sounded.

The ground was filled with the scraps of ice.

There were one after another figures of people running madly or begging for mercy. The snow dragon illusions still pierced their bodies. Then they transformed into ice statues with expression of terror and desperations, maintaining their fleeing stances, like statues of perfect art. At this time, they seemed like pitiful, sorrowful and hateful clowns all at

the same time.....

One....

Two....

In the chaotic camp, there were countless ice statues.

It was as if an extreme cold had arrived.

Ye Qingyu walked past this chaotic and shattered camp.

Coming to the entrance of the large camp, he finally halted.

There were still some people who had escaped.

This was for the best. If he had killed everyone, who would be left to be to tell the people who were planning and plotting in the background?

Ye Qingyu stood where he was with a smile.

He was still waiting.

Waiting until those true experts holding real power would appear.

# Chapter 237: White browed Yu

The moonlight was reflected on the white clothes like water.

Ye Qingyu returned to the entrance of the caves.

There were several hundred people of the sects, that had already transformed into ice sculptures. They were either fracture or otherwise completely intact. It added a few extra points of otherworldly and bizarre beauty to this chaotic new recruit training camp. The holy moonlight shined on every ice sculpture, causing it to be translucent like jade, the lines smooth to the extreme. Every one of their expression, was realistic and lively, as if it was a perfect piece of art.

No one would ever imagine, that these ice sculptures were constructed from flesh and blood.

Ye Qingyu once again inspected Ye Congyun wounds.

The situation was not positive.

Although Ye Qingyu had used his inner yuan to extend his life, but the body of the young officer originally belong to those with weak blood. He originally had a weak foundation and after experiencing this cruel torture, his original condition got even worse. Ye Qingyu had used the secret technique of martial artists to buy a lease to his life, but it would not last long. Although Ye Congyun's complexion seems much better, and his face seemed less pale, but in reality the life force within his body was like a candle in the wind. It could snap at any moment in time.

This was not the way to go if this continued.

Ye Qingyu thought it over then took out a [Mysterious Heaven pellet] saying, "Your injuries are not light. Ingest this medicine, it can boost your life force. When this matter is settled, I will go find the military doctor to help you take care of your body."

"You don't need to worry about me Marquis." Ye Congyun rushed to refuse. "Subordinate I already feel much better. After resting for a while in the camp, I will be fine after several days."



Although he did not know the background of that jade like Longan pill in Marquis Ye's hand was, but in this world, once it had some relationship to the world 'pill', then it must be something extremely valuable. Ye Qingyu was able to sense the care of the new nobility within Youyan Pass, Marquis Ye. Apart from feeling excited, he was also somewhat conflicted. As the saying goes, he could not accept reward without doing anything, so Ye Congyun did not want to easily accept the favour of Ye Qingyu.

"There are still some problems in your body. First take the medicine. we'll speak of other matters later." Ye Qingyu gave off a smile, saying: "Your brother is my friend, so I should take care of you. As for your weak constitution, I will help you solve it later."

"Brother?" Ye Congyun was taken aback, his expression somewhat confused. "My brother, half a year ago, he already.....could it be?"

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, not concealing anything. "Your brother died to save me. I sent many people to search for you in Youyan Pass, but I could not find you at all until now. If not for the fact that I coincidentally encountered your name today, I don't know just how long I would have been searching for."

Ye Congyun lowered his head. A tear drop, flashed by in his eyes.

He very quickly lifted his head. His expression returning to normal, returning as calm as he ever was.

"I have already learned of my brother death in the notice of the army. So he died protecting Marquis you. My brother has always been honoured to serve within the Youyan army. After being allocated as a sentry in the watchpost, he had no way of continuing to slaughter the demons so he had always been unhappy. He once said to me that he entered in the army not for power or glory but to protect the borders and protect his race. Even if in the end he gives up his life on the battlefield, he will die with no regrets. I believe that by dying to protect you, he will have died with no regrets at all. If he is able to know what you have done today in Youyan pass right now, he will definitely feel pride and excitement."

There was a faint smile appearing on the face of the young officer.

He lifted his head to look at the blue green moonlight sky. In the clustered stars, it was as if he could see his brothers strict but kind smile.

“Ingest the medicine. I’ll guard you.” Ye Qingyu handed over the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet]. “If you’re brother is aware in the heavens, he will also hope that you will live on. If you are able to inherit his wishes and soar to the skies within Youyan pass, he will definitely be even more happy. But first of all, you must take care of your own body.””

Ye Congyun thought for a bit, but did not see any reason to refuse so he took the pill.

The [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] dissolved instantly in the mouth, and a cold feeling spread throughout his body. Then it became painful, like a steel needle running through his muscles. Ye Congyun let out a low grunt, beads of sweat appearing on his forehead. But the pain once again incited his body, making his life energy explode yet again. The pain very quickly disappeared, turning into pure inner yuan that travelled throughout his body, repairing his injured body and restoring his vitality.

Ye Qingyu stood guard by one side. One of his palm was pressed against Ye Congyun’s shoulder, so he could clearly sense everything that happened.

The effects of the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] was even better than what he had imagined.

No wonder yuan qi was the purest energy in this world. Under the restorative properties of the yuan qi in the pill, the injuries of the young officer recovered rapidly.

A [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] was equal to half a year’s cultivation of a thirty to forty spirit springs expert. The medicinal properties was powerful but absolutely not dominating. Even if used on Ye Congyun who had not even entered into the Spirit spring stage, he was still able to withstand it.

But pills to increase yuan qi was after all not entirely suitable for

treating illnesses.

To want to continue bolstering Ye Congyun's lifeforce, and to want to solve the problem of his weak blood constitution, there was still a need for an alternative method.

As Ye Qingyu was thinking of just what he could do to solve Ye Congyun's problem, there were strong energy fluctuations coming from the outside. The air was parted as numerous figures tore through the skies like shooting stars, arriving in the chaotic camp.

"There are true experts arriving!"

Ye Congyu awakened from his state of recovery. Seeing this scene, he was stunned.

Ye Qingyu was like as if he had long predicted this scene. There was a smile of disdain on his lips, but within the smile, there was another chill that made the Ye Congyun by his side feel as if a sharp blade was pressing against his heart. This feeling was just like when Ye Qingyu had acted to slaughter all the Jianghu people in the camps.

Boom!

The instant numerous experts landed, a powerful yuan qi fluctuation swept the entire new recruit training camp.

These were the true experts of the sects.

The instant this aura appeared, it made even Ye Qingyu feel suffocation.

There were four people in total who had appeared. Two were young, one was wearing a uniform armour and was somewhat handsome. His body was tall and slender and was namely the distribution officer of the military supply department, Zhao Ruyun. The other had white eyebrows and a hook nosed, tall and slim. He had an authoritative aura around his body, like a peerless long sword. And the middle men next to these two wore loose clothes of the sects. They had a natural authority on their faces, evidently characters who had held high statuses and positions for a length period of time. Their aura was not normal at all.

The instant the four appeared, they instantly went near the centre of the new recruit training camp.

The scene in front of them caused the colour of their faces to change abruptly.

“What has happened? Everyone....has died! This is the Empire’s camp, just who would dare to appear to kill people? Who did it, scam out right now.....” Zhao Ruyun was the first person to burst out, and let out a scream. Evidently he was extremely shocked and furious.

The other three noticed at the first instant Ye Qingyu and Ye Congyun’s existence.

Between experts, one could sense the opponent even without using eyes but through aura alone.

And they were able to recognise Ye Qingyu the first moment they laid their eyes on him.

[The Leaf of Youyan] already had a significant fame in killing people within the Jianghu. Especially amidst the Jianghu people in Youyan Pass. After experiencing the events of these past days, Ye Qingyu was a character they were extremely wary off. There were long portraits of Ye Qingyu circulated between the large sects. Even if they did not see Ye Qingyu before personally, after seeing the portrait, they would know just how the new Marquis with such a killing intent looked like.

These three had gazed at the portrait before, so they instantly recognised Ye Qingyu.

The fourth to react, was Zhao Ruyun

The him with bolstering aura, when he saw Ye Qingyu, both his knees weakened. He nearly bowed to the ground with a bang. At that moment, Zhao Ruyun really wished he could turn back and leave. He hoped with all his heart that he had not appeared here today. It was a pity that everything was already too late.....

“Ma-Mar.....Marquis Ye, what are you doing there?”

The attitude of Zhao Ruyun greatly changed.

Even today, he could still recall the scene of him assisting Zhang San returning to the great hall of the Military supply department. The cold spot of blood that Zhang San spat out, was enough to freeze the bravery of Zhao Ruyun. Ever since then, this incomparably arrogant distribution officer, became like a different person. The majority of the time he was somewhat distracted.

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, not saying anything.

He really did not want to waste his time on such a character.

His gaze fell on the three people beside Zhao Ruyun, carefully evaluating.

Opposite.

“You are Ye Qingyu?” the white eyebrowed hook nosed young man finally opened his mouth. His tone held an unconcealed arrogance. “You are not as great as the rumour suggest.....what, was it you who killed all the people here?”

““White browed Yu ? Ye Qingyu frowned. “The Setting Sun and Great River sect?”

The white browed young man was slightly taken aback, then began proudly smiling. “You’ve heard of my name? Haha.....today within the camp, there are three disciples of the Setting Sun and Great River sect. It seems like Marquis Ye did not let them go. The title of butcher is indeed quite fitting for you. I wonder what the reason that you have killed tonight is.....”

“I did not imagine that the Setting Sun and Great River sect would fall to such depths. Good, very well.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head, not waiting for him to finish his sentence before breaking him off. “Since you have arrived here today, then don’t leave.”

As he spoke to her, his gaze moved to the authoritative middle aged men next to him. Coldly sneering, “Tell me what are your identities so that the great prison of the Vanguard can prepare manacles and shackles

for you.”

“Ridiculous.” The middle aged man with a long beard on the left said, shaking his head. “If a young man has some abilities, it is understandable if he is a little arrogant. But you, you think you are far too important. You really think that just by relying on the tiny little position of a Marquis, you can do as you wish? If other people respect you, you are a Marquis. If they don’t respect you, you are only a arrogant and loud mouthed junior. Don’t pretend to be self important in front of me, you are by far not enough.”

“You really have too many useless words.” Ye Qingyu coldly laughed. “Old thing, state your name.”

# Chapter 238: Break apart the legend

“You.....arrogance!” The other white faced beardless middle aged man coldly sneered. “In Jianghu, everyone says that Ye Qingyu is a killing demon without emotions. I originally did not believe this, at least the military department had given you the titled of a heroic and loyal Marquis. I thought that you had to have something special. But from the situation right now, it seems like I was wrong. No respect for your elders, arrogant and wild, slaughtering your own race, treacherous.....that person is you, Ye Qingyu!”

The white face middle aged man was evidently the higher up of a sect, with a distinctive and special aura. When he was young, he must be a handsome man. When his anger was invoked, there was a pressuring aura that was given off.

Ye Qingyu pressed his lips together in disdain.

Who did not know how to accuse someone.

If accusing someone was able to solve problems, then what was the point of the Patrolling sword envoy?

Therefore tonight, Ye Qingyu did not even think about reasoning with this bunch of people.

As long as you think a little, you would be able to realise that the people who arrived the quickest after the hidden array was destroyed, must be the people who had some sort of relationship with the army camp. They were definitely not good people. And yet they were still using the same methods of threat and intimidation here; these Jianghu people, did they think that such methods worked everywhere?

“It’s fine if you don’t state your name. After all, none of you is innocent. When I’ve captured you and interrogated you, I’ll find out then.”

Ye Qingyu was too lazy to argue with these people.

“Hahaha, you are really crazy. Today I will stand here. Ye Qingyu, if you have the ability, then capture me.”

White browed Yu could not help but chuckle out loud. Even if Ye Qingyu was the Marquis, he was not afraid. This Ye Qingyu really was overestimating himself if he wanted to use his position as Marquis to suppress the people of the Jianghu.

The other two men also laughed.

The martial cultivation of the sects, was much more detailed and intricate than the experts who had originated from the army. It was not something the experts of the armies were able to withstand. An example of the difference between these groups was their observation skills. There two middle aged men were the elders of the top three schools and top sects, and had been famous for many years. They were able to discern with one glance, that the Ye Qingyu described as legendary by other people, were only at the thirty Spirit springs stage. He was only a slightly strong junior, just what great turmoil could he cause....

The White browed Yu was one of the rising stars of the younger generation in the Setting Sun and Great River sect. Many years ago, he had already stepped into the realm of the Fifty Spirit strings. And in these years, his martial cultivation had improved even more. His battle record was extremely fearsome in the Jianghu, and it was hard to find someone that was able to fight against him at the same age. There was a difference when compared to the young leaders of the six top sects, but facing an arrogant person only at the thirty Spirit springs stage, how could Ye Qingyu not easily fall into his hands?

The Ye Qingyu just how had he became so famous.

But he really was far too arrogance.

Fine, then today he would decisively destroy this person that was known as the little legend of the Youyan army. He would make the entire military know, what was the true power of the sects in case they thought that because this tiny little officer was able to defeat the Xuan sect, the Five Poison Gongzi; this represented they could step all over the top six sects.

Opposite.



“People really won’t cry until they see the coffin.”

Ye Qingyu shook his head, slowly moving his body.

Thirty snow dragon illusions, like flowing light, shot out roaring from within his body. In the wilds all around him, there was suddenly a chill in the air with dragon roars. There was an indistinct quiver in the air, that gradually became clearer and clearer. Ye Qingyu’s aura was like the surging tide, becoming even more and more violent, like the forming of an avalanche. Slowly and slowly, force built up, becoming a power that nothing could stand in his way!

White browed Yu coldly sneered.

“Your strength is definitely powerful amongst those of the thirty spirit springs. But compared to me, the difference is far too great.” He said sneeringly: “Ice attribute yuan qi is far too commonly seen. And what is even more of a pity is that....” Saying that, he slowly and grandly flicked his finger, and an orange flame suddenly came from the tip of his finger. With mockery, “What is even more of a pity, is that your ice inner yuan is coincidentally completely suppressed by the power of my fire!”

A surge of hot air followed along with the appearance of the orange flame that began originating from White browed Yu.

Next to him, there was also a slight smile of mockery on the faces of the middle aged men of the sects.

Opposite.

There was also an expression of mockery on Ye Qingyu’s face.

“Does flames really always suppress ice?” His lips split apart, his white teeth like the glimmer of blades under the glow of the moonlight. “What kind of retard told you that? That’s right, you must feel that thirty Spirit springs of cultivation is not enough. Then right now....”

As he said these words.

Ye Qingyu activated the [First limit] of the [Limitless divine way].

Boom!

Light winds erupted.

Ye Qingyu's yuan qi power instantly doubled.

“Aoooooooooooo.....”

The roar of dragons was like a bell sounding out in the skies, spreading everywhere in the wilds, causing one ear drums to shudder.

His aura, in that instant, madly and mercilessly grew.

If Ye Qingyu's previous aura was like the roaring tides of the sea, then at this moment, it had already turned into a surging tsunami. A chill in the air spread rapidly throughout the surroundings as if it was light. Everywhere it passed, everything was frozen. The floating scraps of grass and dust in the air were also instantly frozen, as if even space itself had froze.

Boom!

A powerful gust, advanced towards White browed Yu and the others.

“How can this be.....” The pupils of White browed Yu constricted.

The expressions of the two middle aged man behind him, also suddenly transformed.

His strength suddenly doubled?

This....was it a joke?

The foundations of the top sects were vast and deep. They had all sorts of miraculous techniques, but they have never heard of such a terrifying technique that could instantly double someone's strength.....Could it be a evil technique that burned the foundation of the user's own life.....this Ye Qingyu, was he mad?

And when their hearts were greatly shaken, Ye Qingyu acted.

His figurer flashed. IN but several steps, he were already before White Browed Yu.

His palm struck out; his aura like thunder.

White browed Yu let out a scream, the power of his flames exploding.

His entire person was surrounded by a barrier of orange flames, like a deity that were born in fire. Both his knees slightly bent, his arms raising. His left half drew a half arc towards the right, his right arm drew another arc towards the left that looked to be an extremely practiced movement. It seemed slow, but in reality was utterly fast. Palm after palm formed, layers after layers, like the thousand hand buddha. In an instant, everywhere around the air were palms of fire.

“The Thousand Palms of Flames!”

“His first move is his famous technique!”

The hearts of the two middle aged men were also taken back.

The Setting Sun and Great River sect definitely had its profoundess. This [Thousand Palms of Flames] was in reality an extremely intricate martial art. In an instant, countless palms strikes could be formed. With the increase in the number of palms, the power would also increase. Although it could not instantly cause a direct multiplication in its effects, it could cause one’s battle strength to multiply instantly. This technique was extremely profound.

White Browed Yu was known as the [Flame Master]. he obtained his titled through the [Thousand Palms of the Flames] using this to defeat an unknown number of opponents whose cultivation exceeded him.

The moment this move was exhibited, the hearts of the two middle aged men finally settled down.

But—

The next moment.

Ye Qingyu’s palm, like mad thunder, firmly struck at the centre of the myriad of flame palms.

This was the location of the real palm of White browed Yu.

Ye Qingyu had really found it.

The cold qi advanced.

The orange flame that spread throughout, flickered, then disappeared.

What also disappeared was the scorching heat of that flame.

What was replaced was an endless cold.

Silver dragons constricted around Ye Qingyu's body. Shard of ice danced around him like butterflies, and there was a layer of silver frost at his palm. The moment his palm struck White Browed Yu's palm, this layer of frost was like an unstoppable maggot that burrowed into White Browed Yu's arm, and grew and extended. Accompanied by White Browed Yu's shocked expression, it had already instantly dug deep within his body....

White browed Yu reacted instinctively to save his own life, retreating and wanting to extend the distance.

But it was like their palms were stuck together. He had no way of escaping from Ye Qingy's palms.

He wanted to open his mouth and loudly scream, but the silver frost had already sealed away his mouth and nose. No sounds could be emitted.

The flames in his body were madly activated. Under the silver frost, there was flicker after flicker of flame that was like fire under the ground that was about to erupt. But ultimately, it was completely sealed away by that layer of ice.....

In the blink of an eye, White Browed Yu had turned and transformed into an ice sculpture.。

Ye Qingyu lifted his palm away.

"White browed.....haha, just how disgusting were your white brows. Look, I've helped you turn your entire body white, you can just change your name to White White Yu now. " Ye Qingyu smiled slightly. The result of this palm,made him exceedingly satisfied."

With the activation of the [First limit] of the [Limitless divine way] his battle strength had instantly doubled. He had defeated White Browed Yu in one strike, this was his normal strength.

But the state of the [First Limit] could only be maintained for the length of time of a quarter stick of incense.

He must finish the battle quickly.

Ye Qingyu's gaze once again fell on the figures of the two middle aged men.

His palm grabbed something in the air, and the Little Shang sword that was as bright as autumn waters was summoned from the waters of his Spirit Spring. With a flicker, it landed at the centre of his palm.

Soul Stealing Heaven Strike!

Ye Qingyu used one of the four moves of the [Unmatched Warrior]. The strange light of the Little Shang sword glowed, and like a ghost, he instantly arrived before the middle aged man with the long beard.

This person was immediately terrified, his sword also unsheathed, wanting to strike back....

But Ye Qingyu would not give him a chance.

Ding!

The instant the swords met, an invisible sealing power struck the body of the middle aged man.

All the inner yuan in his body was forced into a state of inactivity. This brief moment where he could not use his inner yuan was already fatal.

[Storm of Swords].

The instant cold qi exploded, the Little Shang sword had already turned into sword shadows everywhere in the skies that enveloped the middle aged man.

By the time his inner yuan could fluctuate normally, he had already been hit twenty times by the swords. Although he had powerful yuan qi protecting his body, and these swords were not enough to directly cut him into pieces, but there were faint traces of the sword scars left on his body. This was already enough. The terrifying cold qi and the even more terrifying power of the [Supreme Ice Flame] began invading into his body.

If Ye Qingyu's yuan qi today was enough to completely freeze and erase the middle aged man, then the [Supreme Ice Flame] was even more of a

power he could not oppose no matter what. Like steel needles, it traveled throughout his meridians, causing his energy to have no way to activate through his channels.

The middle aged man was not any different from a person at the peak of the ordinary martial level at this current state.

Ye Qingyu lifted his leg, striking his chest. Like hitting a broken wooden doll, he was sent flying.

And at this time, the attack of the other aged man arrived, but it was already too late to save his comrade.

“I’ll kill you.....” The white face man without a beard was enraged; a killing intent flickering madly in his eyes.

# Chapter 239: Tremors

The white face middle aged man, as one of the elders with real power in the Dragon Tiger sect, was once a famous genius of the martial path in Jianghu fifty or sixty years ago. Although he was shocked, he still reacted. Before Ye Qingyu had completely retreated, he attacked.

[Roar of Tigers in the Mountain].

A very crude name, but this was one of the [Twelves Great Techniques of the Dragon Tiger sect].

During several hundreds years in Heaven Wasteland domain, those experts who died under this move, [The roar of tigers in the mountain] must just be under ten thousand.

And this sort of killing technique, when performed in the hands of an elder of the Dragon tiger sect, was even more frightening than usual. A tiger's roar shook the heaven, and the figure of the middle aged man blurred, as if he was transforming into a giant saber toothed tiger. A ferocious aura shot to the heavens and this surge of ancient atmosphere completely filled the surroundings, causing one's soul to quake with fear.

The fierce tiger was like the reaper, both his claws held against the back of Ye Qingyu.

"Die!"

The middle aged man roared, yuan qi exploding.

Since matters had progressed to such a state, there was no longer any way they could resolve it peacefully.

He could be said to have made his resolution to slaughter Ye Qingyu.

Even thought this would anger the Empire, but top level sects had its own resolve and power. Furthermore, this time it was not only the people of the sects who were acting against Ye Qingyu. Even if they were captured right now, they would definitely be able to escape from their crimes in the future and they would definitely be compensated in the future.

Therefore he decided to kill.

And he had acted just when Ye Qingyu was finishing off the other middle aged man.

When the power of the tigers' roars contacted Ye Qingyu's back, there was a sinister smile appearing on his face.

The potential of [The Leaf of Youyan] was really unlimited, but it ended here.

To kill a genius, was really something that made someone feel both excited and regret.

“Haha, old bastard, wait for your turn.” Ye Qingyu let out a bellow of rage, the white horse armour appearing.

As one of the important heirlooms of the White Horse tower, the White Horse battle armour that was at the spirit weapon class, was normally nourishing within the Spirit springs in Ye Qingyu's dantian. At this time, it was already connected to Ye Qingyu's will and heart. He only needed to will it to instantly summon it, and this white coloured armour instantly protected his entire body

At the same time—

““Protection of Heaven and Earth ! ”

In this clear shout, a golden coloured light barrier began exploding from around Ye Qingyu's body that advanced towards all direction. And nearly at the same time, the surrounding air currents solidified. Within Ye Qingyu's body, a powerful tremor exploded, and this yellow coloured light was like a barrier that protected Ye Qingyu from within.

This was the only defensive technique from the four moves of the Golden armoured king.

Boom!

The power of the roar of tigers in the mountain, finally descended on Ye Qingyu's body.

But the face of the white faced middle aged man, did not have the



slightest hint of triumph. Instead, he had a shocked expression, the explosive powers of both the tiger's claw seemed to have struck cotton floss, giving him a feeling that power had been transferred nowhere. What followed after was a rebounding force that made both his wrists snap.....

This absolutely was not a normal reaction.

On Ye Qingyu's back, a white coloured Pegasus wings unfolded. The glimmering white was so bright one could not stare at it directly.

When the wings unfolded, his figure was like flowing light that ejected the force of the roar of tigers. There was a trace of blood at the corner of this lips, and also a claw shaped indent on the back of the armoured and fracture, but the power of the roar of tigers had been largely eliminated. His internal organs were only slightly shaken, and could not be counted as a serious injury.

The [Protection of Heaven and Earth], the White Horse battle armour plus eliminating the force through the movement of his body, ultimately had withstood this killing technique.

Everything was within Ye Qingyu's calculation.

To want to capture these three high class Spirit spring experts, even if his strength had doubled, he also needed to pay a little price.

After all, in terms of true cultivation, Ye Qingyu could not be compared to any of the three.

"How is this possible?" The white face middle aged man had his eyes widened. There had never been anyone who had used such a bizarre method to withstand his [Roar of the tigers in the mountain]. This type of battle method was different from suicide, was this Ye Qingyu a lunatic?

At this time, the Little Shang sword in Ye Qingyu's hand was already embedded in the ground near his feet.

White coloured armour, black coloured long hair.

Autumn water like long sword, his face like jade, sword like eyebrows

and star like eyes!

At this instant, Ye Qingyu had a type of glimmering beauty, like an immortal under the moonlight.

The middle aged man was taken aback , looking at the long sword in Ye Qingyu's hand. He was about to say something, when the colour of his face changed.

He suddenly lifted his head.

in the skies, under the silver moon.

The grey clouds was broken apart, and a sword rapidly descended.

This humongous silver coloured sword was like the punishment of the god of the silver moon. It broke through the layers of clouds in the skies, descending from above the Ninth Heaven. The instant this comet like sword appeared, it had already descended and landed on the top of the middle aged man's head, not allowing anyone to react. It transformed into a giant sword tens of metres long, and its strike was like the rumble of thunder.

The middle aged man, once again tried to perform a dragon tiger battle technique in his panic.

But the huge claws of the tiger had just formed, when the silver coloured sword exploded.

Boom!

The earth quivered.

An invisible turbulence surged everywhere, causing every ice sculpture in the camp to turn into dust.

"This.....this.....this is.....what is this technique....." The middle aged man's body was covered in scarlet red, his skin breaking apart in a flash. The flesh on both his arms was in a pulp. He stared in disbelief at Ye Qingyu, with both fear and shock. he could not dare to believe, that there would be this sort of divine technique contained within the martial path of the military.

But before he could finish his words, silver colour frost emanated from within his wounds, freezing his entire person.

This sword not only broke apart his defense, it also caused the power of the cold qi to enter into his body.

Under such a heavy injury, he could not manage to erase any of this cold qi.

He was instantly turned into a frozen wounded person.

Ye Qingyu laughed.

He flicked his hand, and the Little Shang sword disappeared into the night with a flicker of light. He had placed it back into the Spirit springs in his dantian to nourish. Rubbing away the trace of blood at the corner of his lips, Ye Qingyu was exceedingly satisfied in his heart.

The experts of the sects ,was only just so.

White browed Yu possessed great fame in Jianghu. He was many times greater when compared to people like the Five poison Gongzi, but was still defeated by him. The two middle aged man, should be famous experts in the Jianghu, but was still frozen by him.

The intimidation that would result from this battle, was definitely greater than when he had killed the Five poison Gongzi.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu knew that this was only the beginning.

His fingertips lightly touched the indent and fracture in the White Horse battle armour, causing his heart to feel pain. Thankfully the White Horse battle armour could be counted as a Spirit tool, and the formations on it had not been broken. As long as he continued to nourish it within the Spirit springs, then it could recover to become just like new.

After experiencing such a battle, the time that had passed were only tens of breaths but it had already nearly completely expended all the inner yuan in Ye Qingyu's body.

The battle techniques from the ancient bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart] had terrifying power, but the amount of yuan qi it expended, was

also exceedingly terrifying.

Ye Qingyu recovered his breath for a few moment, stabilising his inner yuan, then returned to the entrance to the cave.

He did not even give a glance to the Zhao Ruyun that was like a frozen corpse.

He had already lost all of his courage, not even daring to breath in case it drew Ye Qingyu's notice. This Zhao Ruyun who had interacted with Ye Qingyu at a very early stage, knew very clearly just what was Ye Qingyu's personality like compared to the other three. He was absolutely willing to do anything.

At the entrance to the cave.

Under the moonlight.

Ye Congyun stared in worship at Ye Qingyu, like a mortal gazing at an immortal.

This was the first time the young officer had seen a battle at such a level.

In the battle just now, although Ye Qingyu had ordered him to retreat from the centre, but the force emitting from the clash of four experts, still shocked him to the core.

This sort of shock was even greater than the battle between Lu Zhaoge, Song Xiaojun and Yan Buhui.

After all, the battle between these three powers, every move was like the Way. They had the power to turn the ordinary to the extraordinary, and their control of yuan power was near perfect. There would not be any waste of energy that leaked out, so a normal person would not even sense the intricacies within. But right now the battle between Ye Qingyu and the three, explosive powers of different attributes had clashed. The destructive power of fire and ice, was exhibited fully.

In the eyes of the young officer, this was not a power that should belong to humans.

He had never imagined, that there would be someone who could emit such a great degree of strength.

Especially Ye Qingyu's ice yuan qi that seemed invincible. At the centre of this ice qi, Ye Qingyu seemed as if he was a deity that ruled this piece of land. He completely crushed the three experts of the sects, and that final scene of the sword that descended from the heavens like the punishment of the gods, was still firmly reverberating within Ye Congyun's heart.

In that instant, the invincible power of Ye Qingyu, was already firmly engraved into the heart of the young officer, deeply etched within his soul.

He had been heavily injured when he was young, causing him to have a weak blood constitution. It was hard for him to have any achievements when practising martial arts. Ye Congyun had experienced all sorts of hardships, and gradually his heart to train in the martial path had whittled away. It had trained his heart, causing him to have a patience and determination that could not be imagined by normal people. On the surface, he did not seem to have any ambitions towards the martial path, but after this scene, his inner heart, once again fiercely beaten.

In that instant, an unprecedented desire towards power and the martial path, acutely multiplied within his heart.

Although his powerful control and composure suppressed this desire, but Ye Qingyu was able to notice the glimmer deep within his eyes.

Ye Qingyu nodded his heart thoughtfully.

And at the same time, there were glimmers of strange lights that appeared that constantly neared. What followed after was the beating of the military drums. Under the moonlight, there was formation airship after formation airship that broke apart the clouds, like huge beast swimming in the arc of heavens and rapidly nearly. At a glance, there were tens of airships.....

And on the ground far off, there was the rumble of thunder and the movement of dust.

A battle banner fluttered in the night's air, like a black steel dripping with blood, filled with a metallic feel.

This was the cavalry of the military.

There were finally people arriving.

Seeing such an aura and atmosphere, Ye Qingyu was able to discern that this was the true Youyan army.

But it seemed like, that it was not the reinforcement Sang Fusheng had called for. No matter whether it was the formation airships in the sky or the cavalry on the ground, the banner that were exposed did not belong to the Vanguard.

Could it also be, that there were other people involved in this matter within the Youyan army?

Ye Qingyu's eyes narrowed.

# Chapter 240: Airship

“It’s people from the Right camp.” Ye Congyun said in a small voice.

Although his martial cultivation was average, but he was well aware of the structure of the entire Youyan army. Seeing the black banners fluttering in the night wind, he instantly recognised the identity of the people coming from the sky and the night. They were namely one of the four main battle camps of the Youyan army, the Right camp.

People from the Right camp?

Why was it that the people from the Vanguard had not yet arrived, but the people from the Right camp had?

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback.

“This is the area that the Right camp is in charge of. They should have sensed the turmoil at this location, and therefore arrived so quickly.” Ye Congyun quickly thought of an explanation. “If it is one of the main battle camps of the Youyan army, it is normal for them to have such a quick reaction.”

That’s right, so the Right camp was responsible for this area.

Ye Qingyu suddenly understood.

In terms of understanding the structure of the Youyan army, his knowledge was far beneath Ye Congyun.

After coming for such a long period of time in Youyan Pass, Ye Qingyu had very little interaction with the other main battle camps in the Youyan army. He had only had contact with the Vanguard when he undertook the mission to infiltrate deep within the Explosive snow glacier. He possessed very little information regarding which camps were responsible for which areas.

The private power of the Patrolling sword envoy was especially high, so traditionally they were not friendly to any of the leaders of the camps to prevent them from participating in the politics of the camp. This would prevent them from favouring anyone and would allow them to remain

independent, and avoid being accused of being unfair. Historically, the previous patrolling sword envoys had always been aware of this point, but Ye Qingyu could not care in the least. But he really was far too busy; apart from training he was fighting, so his understanding of the camps was really basic.

His original plan, was that after he entered into the Vanguard, he would follow beside Liu Zongyuan and Wen Wan so he would quickly get familiarised with everything. Who would have thought that ever since Yan Buhui had attacked Youyan Pass, the situation would greatly change, turning chaotic. The Commander of the Vanguard Liu Siufeng was entangled in many affairs, and Ye Qingyu was also the same where he was involved in all sorts of matters.

Therefore the issue of him entering the Vanguard, was temporarily placed in a halt.

After hearing Ye Congyun saying this, Ye Qingyu nodded his head. In his heart, he was thinking he really should understand the Youyan army a little better.

As they spoke, the tens of airships already arrived in the airspace above the training camp.

On the ground, several hundred of cavalry gradually neared, their spears forming a forest. The dragon horse mounts they were riding on were completely covered with armour, their nostrils snorting out white mist. They were like a wall of black steel that gradually advanced towards the outside of the recruit training camp. A smell of steel and blood, crushingly moved forward like a mountain, giving off a feeling that even the air around had solidified.

This was the aura that true soldiers should have.

Even if they were silent and still outside the training camp, but the sensation they gave off, was that as long as an order was given, they would instantly turn into a black steel torrent that would crush all enemies in their path without mercy. The aura that they gave off was enough to make one suffocate. Even Ye Qingyu a martial expert, when



facing this black cavalry battalion, felt a tremor in his heart.

“Who is in front? Reveal your seal!”

A cold shout emitted from the cavalry, the sound reverberating.

As these words were said, there were three metallic clangs of spears striking the breastplate of their armour. The long spears in the hands of the cavalry glimmered with a cold light, piercing towards the air three times, then with a swish, the spears pointed in front of them. They were like a sawtooth long blade that was hundreds of metre long releasing a sound that demonstrated their desire to battle, an incomparably ferocious aura shooting to the heavens.

In the sky.

There were clear energy fluctuation emitting from the tens of airship. One could see the formation energy activating in the night's sky, and the energy cannons on the airship emitting a blinding light, as if they were tiny little suns. This was the sign that they were about to fire.

The entire Right camp was as if it was facing a great enemy.

Ye Qingyu flicked his palm, the seal for his Marquis position appearing in his hands. After inserting a slight yuan qi, a projection shot out from this official seal, towards the night sky. This namely was the emblem for a titled nobility within Snow Empire, and also the banner for the Youyan army, as well as the words: ‘Fourth class heroic Marquis Ye Qingyu’. The aura it emitted was vast and deep, as if it was the work of a deity.

This was how the authority and identity was demonstrated within the Empire.

The official seal of a noble Marquis, was the creation of the formation metal masters of the Empire. Other people had no way of replicating it at all.

Once the seal was shown, the air all around was brightened. There was a vast and noble aura, that emitted anywhere.

“So it was Marquis Ye.” On the formation airships, a clear chuckle

sounded out.

Afterwards, there was a military order transmitted through the beat of the drums, and one could see the energy disperse from the huge cannons on the formation airships. The cavalry on the ground, also lifted their spears to point at the skies instead, their killing intent retreating and the tense atmosphere gradually relaxing.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

Figures flickered.

There were several people that appeared four or five metres away from Ye Qingyu.

The person in the lead, wore a black steel armour inlaid with golden lines. He was tall, and should be the person with the highest military power here. He looked to be around thirty years of age, in his prime. He gave a military salute to Ye Qingyu, then said with a smile: "I am the four star military warfare officer Gao Yun. Because there were some disturbances, so we quickly rushed here. We did not know that it was Marquis Ye here on business, so please forgive us if we have interrupted any of your plans."

Four star military warfare officer?

This was a military officer with true power.

In the four major camps of the YOuyan army, there were several thousand military warfare officers. Everyone of them had the power to command troops, but the statuses of the military warfare officers were also classified in ranks. Like Gao Yun, he only needed one more star to reach the highest rank, five star military warfare officer. This can be counted as someone of the true strength faction. According to Ye Qingyu's knowledge, only Liu Zongyuan was of the five star rank in the vanguard. With mad tiger Wen's time of service, he was only three stars.

"Officer Gao you are too polite. This originally was the area the Right camp is in charge of, I should have notified you before doing anything." Ye Qingyu smiled.

“It is you Marquis that is far too polite. As the patrolling sword envoy, you have the power to first kill than report. You are supposed to have unrestricted access everywhere in Youyan Pass, the Right Camp does not have the power to interfere with you.....” The attitude of Gao Yun was extremely respectful. “Could I enquire to the reason why you have come to the abandoned new recruit training camp?”

“So this place has been abandoned already?” Ye Qingyu enquired thoughtfully.

“That’s right. This camp was constructed three years ago, but because of some reasons, it was already abandoned a year ago. Because it had nothing to do with confidential military affairs, it had not been sealed off. There are several old veterans that are placed here to keep guard.” As Gao Yun spoke, he suddenly thought of something. “Oh, thats right, I’ve heard that some days ago, there were people from teh Military supply department that came and said that they were going to take over control of the camp. Because it was in the area the Righth camp was responsible for, so they had to report it. But it’s not any important matter, after all it is only an abandoned recruit training camp.....”

So it really was the military supply department.

Ye Qingyu grinned: “As to what happened, I think that after Officer Gao sees this, he will know.

Saying this, Ye Qingyu handed in the scrolls and documents discovered in the prison deep within the mountain to Gao Yun.

Gao Yun hesitated for a bit, then received it and began closely inspecting it. After finishing the first document, the colour of his face greatly changed, then lifted his head to look at Ye Qingyu. Seeing his serious expression that did not seem like he was joking, he read another three documents, his expression turning incomparably serious. He did not dare to read on, handing back the scrolls: “Marquis, these documents is not something I can understand.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything, stowing away the documents.

There was a brief struggle on the face of Gao Yun, then he suddenly

lifted his head: "I am already familiar with the matters here tonight. If you need someone to testify in the future, then I am willing to listen to your orders."

This made Ye Qingyu somewhat surprised.

Just how far reaching the impact of the documents had, it was impossible for Gao Yun to not understand

He seriously evaluated Gao Yun. This sturdy military officer had the serious and hard aura long practised in every soldier in the Youyan army, his posture as straight as a spear. This was the aura and spine that Lu Zhaoge had painstakingly instilled in every soldier in the YOuyan army.

Ye Qingyu patted Gao Yun on the shoulder: "There are many heroes in the Youyan army, hot blood is burning in the chest of everyone. Thank you, Officer Gao."

"These days, Marquis has done many things that us soldiers wished to do but don't dare. I and many of my comrades, hopes that Marquis can completely sweep the dark side of Youyan Pass away, returning the sunlight to the YOuyan army." Gao Yun stared in admiration at Ye Qingyu.

Behind him, the other officers of the Right camp also had respect on their faces.

In these days, most parties criticised Ye Qingyu's actions. But the large majority of the Youyan army, realised the reason as to why Ye Qingyu did this, and what sort of price he had to pay for it.

In this previous period of time, there were many people that had some sort of negative emotions towards the young officer who had not even arrived in Youyan Pass for a year, but yet was already ascending to the heavens step by step and did not fully recognise him. But after this recent period of time, Ye Qingyu had already won the large majority of the hearts of the Youyan soldiers.

Following after , Gao Yun did not bring anyone inside the camp or prisons to inspect.

He retreated to outside of the training camp, ordering the airships and cavalry to stand guard.

Because as time went on, there began to be all sorts of characters that rushed here. There were people from the army, there were people from the sects. They had sensed the battle fluctuations between Ye Qingyu and White browed Yu and the others so had hastened here to check things out. Ever since the battle where Yan Buhui had ambushed Youyan Pass, the turbulence in the city had never stopped. But ever since that incident, there had never been such strong fluctuations of energy emitting from a battle, and there has never been experts of such a level acting.....

Very many people faintly realised, that trouble was arising.

Gao Yun carried out the military orders without mercy. Apart from Ye Qingyu's explicit instructions, no one could set foot within the new recruit training camp. This was the area under the Right Camp's jurisdiction, so naturally his words were the law. In less than fifteen minutes, there were already several hundred people spectating.....

There were some people that came purely to see what was going on.

There were some people that were in such a panic they were like ants on a hot wok.

At this time, there were more airships that broke through the skies towards them. The banner they flew was namely the banner of the Vanguard. The scarlet red banner was like a flame burning within the air. The leading formation airship was several hundred metres long, twenty or som metres wide, and was completely scarlet, emitting a red light. It was as if it was an ancient vast primordial beast covered in blood, that broke through space to come. From far away, it gave off an huge pressure.

"It's the banner of the Vanguard!"

"It the main battleship of the butcher of Youyan, Liu Siufeng!"

Everyone let out cries of shock.

There was even a trace of surprise on Ye Qingyu's face.

# Chapter 241: You are not a good soldier

On the bow of the leading flagship, a fatty with a round figure stood at the forefront. He wore a scarlet red long robe, a blood red cape and his right palm was slightly raised. The two steel balls in his hands were rotating. Even from far away, it was as if one could hear the movement of these steel balls.

[The Butcher of Youyan], Liu Siufeng.

For him to come personally?

Ye Qingyu was greatly surprised.

He had told Sang Fusheng to go back and hoped that he would be able to bring back Liu Zongyuan or perhaps Wen Wan along with ten or so soldiers to record everything that had happened here and release the imprisoned people. They would record the evidence down until the opportune moment had come for these evidence to be revealed. He had not expected that Liu Siufeng, this huge figure in the army, would come personally by himself.

The airships broke apart the sky without a sound.

It was like warriors descending from the heavens.

A ray of dawn that came from the boundaries of the skies, passing through thousands of mountains and rivers.

The high up flagship and the scattered clouds were illuminated by this ray of dawn, dyeing everything a scarlet red. It caused there to be an atmosphere of hard to conceal killing intent being formed.

Ye Qingyu suddenly smiled.

For he was able to see that Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan were on the left and right of Liu Siufeng.

And Sang Fusheng who had changed into new battle armour stood behind them.

The appearance of these figures made Ye Qingyu more relaxed.

Especially since a huge figure like Liu Siufeng had appeared. It made Ye Qingyu, suddenly feel that fighting alone finally had reaped its rewards. There was finally a significant comrade appearing next to him, that could stand shoulder to shoulder, and help support him against the raging hidden torrents.

In the situation where Lu Zhaoge's condition was sealed off from the external world and his conditions unknown, there were naturally some people who abandoned themselves. If there were a person among the commanders of the four great camps that could reverse the tides, and was truly worthy of trust, then Ye Qingyu firmly believed that person must be Liu Siufeng.

Right now, he had finally appeared.

He was on the flagship like a primordial beast, breaking apart space as he arrived.

The formation airships of the Right camp formed a passageway, allowing the scarlet flagship to arrive.

Liu Siufeng possessed great respect within the army, not just constrained within the Vanguard. If in the hearts of the soldiers of Youyan, Lu Zhaoge was a high and almighty deity, than Liu Siufeng was the sharpest spear in the hands of the war god. There was nothing he could not destroy, he carried the desire for victory and glory of countless soldiers.

The flagship slowly descended.

Finally, the scarlet red ship, like an ancient beast, halted hundreds of metres above the training camp.

The glimmer of light from formations flickered. A silver light shone down from the flagship, illuminating the ground below.

Fifty armoured soldiers disappeared and reappeared in the light; the formation array transporting them to the ground.

The leading soldier was namely Sang Fusheng.

Although he had been tortured in the interrogation room for several days and had sustained significant injuries, he still seemed to be in his prime when he once again donned his armour. In large strides he came over to Ye Qingyu, paying his respects and saying respectfully: “Marquis, the Commander has come personally. Because this is the district of the Right Camp, there were some hidden resistance, so we were delayed for a little bit and only arrived now.....”

Ye Qingyu smiled: “It doesn’t matter, it’s good that you have come. You are responsible for the matters that follow.”

“Rest assured Marquis.” Sang Fusheng gave a military salute, then the soldiers under his command began their business.

Sang Fusheng had followed beside Liu Zongyuan for numerous years, and had a wealth of experience. Firstly he took over the control of the new recruit training camp from the hands of Gao Yun in the Right camp. Then he directed people to begin searching and collecting from difference places of the training camp. He ordered another group to enter the mountain passageway, to release those innocent imprisoned commoners. Lastly, he himself brought several trusted subordinates to the interrogation room, wanting to collect every piece of evidence there personally.

Ye Qingyu assisted Ye Congyun up, his figure flashing through the air, directly heading upwards towards the flagship.

The young officer could only feel a tightness on his shoulder and a blur across his vision. When everything had stabilised, he was already at the forefront of the flagship.

The dawn wind fluttered, and the shine of the morning sun was like blood.

The steel armoured soldiers stood as straight as spear, every one of them like deities of killing, their blood red cloaks fluttering in the wind. These were elite and loyal soldiers of the Vanguard, everyone of them carrying an aura of blood and blades, causing Ye Congyun’s heart to palpitate for a moment. There was a feeling of being emotionally moved;



this was truly the military environment he desired.

At this time, Ye Congyun felt that he had truly become one of these people.

But his damnable weak constitution...

Under the dawn sun.

“Ye Qingyu pays his respect to the Commander!”

Ye Qingyu clasped his hand in greeting.

“Haha, Marquis Ye, your bravery is really not little in the slightest.....” Liu Siufeng chuckled loudly, a smile appearing on his chubby face and his eyes crinkling. He had the atmosphere of being extremely amiable: “It seems like this time, you have hit a giant hornet’s nest.”

“Therefore I need to thank you Commander for giving me support by coming here.” Ye Qingyu replied smilingly.

“I didn’t come here to give you support, I only came here casually to have a look.” The steel balls in Liu Siufeng hands creaked and squeaked as he grinned, looking at the ground. “When you’ve had a shit, you should wipe your own shit. Don’t look towards me, I don’t want to get stinky.”

The tone of Liu Siufeng’s voice was exceedingly casual, as if he was discussing this matter with equal friends.

Ye Qingyu had a minute smile, not saying anything.

He knew, that although this was what Liu Siufeng said, but for him to come today was already a type of support for himself. As long as the flagship of the commander of the Vanguard stopped here for a brief period, then anyone who wanted to make trouble would have to evaluate their own power as well.

Furthermore, Sang Fusheng as one of the futures stars of the Vanguard, had already brought his subordinates to take control of the interrogation room. He had already announced to the world, that the Vanguard was officially interfering in this battle.

“You little brat.....” Wen Wan came over to give Ye Qingyu a punch.

“Why are you at the heart of every matter? You really can cause trouble.”

Ye Qingyu rolled his eyes at him “You have the nerve to say such words. I’ve done so many things for Youyan Pass but you, a military warfare officer, holding the duty entrusted by the Empire, had gone to who knows where these days. This bunch of ridiculous Jianghu people had caused complete chaos in Youyan Pass, but I don’t even see you doing anything.”

Wen Wan opened his mouth but did not say anything.

His expression was conflicted, because even if Ye Qingyu accused him, he had nothing to refute this with. In these past days, because of military orders, he was training soldiers far away, and he really had not done anything to stop this.

Seeing that mad tiger Wen had been taken down a peg or two, Ye Qingyu chuckled.

“Haha, Marquis really is on the warpath. You’ve not only slapped Old Wen’s face, you’ve also slapped the Commander and my face.” Liu Zongyuan chuckled, hinting at something “But we also have no choice. It is natural for a soldier to listen to orders. Without the order from the Pass Lord’s Residence, we cannot act as we please. Even the commander himself, cannot go against orders. The Vanguard is responsible for external battles, and as for the maintenance of order within Youyan Pass, the internal security is responsible for that. Perhaps you’ve also heard about it, but the head of internal security is the Zhang San of the supply department.”

Liu Siufeng stood by one side holding the steel balls with a smile, saying: “That’s right, people of the Jianghu can act according to their desires, but soldiers cannot. Everything has to be done according to military command and everyone is assigned a particular responsibility. Even though I also do not wish to see such matters, but this issue is not within the remit of my command so I cannot interfere. Otherwise, if everyone acts as they pleases the situation in the Pass will become even more chaotic.”

Marquis Ye’s face reddened a little.

Just now he had reprimanded Wen Wan, but in reality, he had also hiddenly chided Liu Siufeng and the others. However, right now, the words that Liu Zongyuan and Liu Siufeng said did make sense. A soldier had a special position; if they just did things according to their likes and dislikes and disregarded military orders, there would be no difference between the military and the people of the Jianghu.

Liu Siufeng gave him a glance, and said teasingly: “How about it, do you feel that your actions in these days are a little rash?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, then shook his head. “It really is somewhat rash, but if I don’t do anything I won’t feel right. I don’t know what War God Lu is waiting for, but my vision is in the short term. If I feel angry, then I will release my anger I cannot endure for such a long period of time.....” As he spoke to here, Ye Qingyu looked towards Liu Siufeng with a shred of hesitation, then asked: “Is it that in some times, for the greater good, that we have to sacrifice the lives of those so called little people?”

Liu Siufeng was taken aback.

This butcher whose fame resounded throughout the entire Youyan Pass, whose name alone was enough to cause countless demons to quiver in terror, had a strange light flash across his hands. At this moment, when he smiled, he was no longer like a wealthy chubby businessman. The line on his face suddenly became grave and sharp, and a strange pressure began emitting from him, causing Ye Qingyu to suffocate. It was as if an invisible gigantic hand was pressing against his throat.

But Ye Qingyu did not take a step back.

It seemed to have lasted a long time, yet also lasted but a brief moment.. The lines on Liu Siufeng’s face once again became gentle, and he let out a chuckle: “Do you know such words were once also said by a person in front of me.....”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

But he could already largely guess, just who had said such words.

“You are not a good soldier. Or perhaps, you are not suitable to be a

soldier.” Liu Siufeng stared down at the vast ground below, looking down as more and more people gathered at the new recruit training camp below. “Your martial path is not the martial path of the military. Your martial heart is not suitable for the military. Perhaps even you have not discovered yourself, but the way you do things is even more Jianghu then the Jianghu people.”

Ye Qingyu fell silent.

Perhaps.

But he did not feel there was anything wrong with that.

“The military way, uses soldiers like mud. When one should sacrifice, one should sacrifice. Without sacrifice, nothing can be gained; those who command soldiers must be emotionless.....The things you have done these days, although it has disrupted the plans of the military, do you know why everyone has allowed you to continue doing so?” Liu Siufeng smiled. The everyone in his words was obviously referring to the true higher-ups of the military. “Because some people feel that what you did was correct. There are also some people who feel that with your interference, the matter will become even more interesting....”

# Chapter 242: Tearing apart space

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

After doing many so things with no reaction from the Pass Lord's Residence, even an idiot would know this was because there was the agreement of someone from behind the scenes.

Otherwise, Ye Qingyu would have already been held responsible for his actions.

As Liu Siufeng spoke, he seemed to remember something.

He gave another meaningful glance at Ye Qingyu but ultimately did not say anything even though he looked like he had something to say.

Ye Qingyu was able to notice that flash of hesitation from Liu Siufeng and could not help but be curious. Could there be something that even Liu Siufeng was wary about?

Ye Qingyu was about to say something, when the sound of footsteps sounded behind him.

It was Sang Fusheng bringing two armoured soldiers back. He presented the things he had discovered.

Liu Siufeng gave these a glance, his complexion changing slightly. "Restrict the camp. No one is allowed to enter. Everything obtained from the camp is to be restricted. Without my order, no one is allowed to interact with it."

"Yes." Sang Fusheng loudly accepted his order.

Ye Qingyu thought it over, then brought over the scrolls and documents he had discovered. "There are also these."

Liu Siufeng nodded his head, indicating for Liu Zongyuan to take them away.

"There are three experts of the sects that I have been sealed away, alive. There is also the Zhao Ruyun of the military supply department...." Ye Qingyu explained.

“Take them all away to the prison of the Vanguard.” Liu Siufeng said blandly.

Everyone here could sense the chilliness in his calm voice.

Some people were about to be unlucky.

Liu Zongyuan said silently in his heart.

After following the commander for so many years, he knew the temperament and disposition of the commander well. Everytime the commander’s face had such calmness on it, it signified the extremeness his anger had reached. Just how terrifying was the [Butcher of Youyan] once he was enraged? One could know this just by asking the hundred of thousands of demons dead in the Explosive Glacier by his hands.

The dawn wind blew.

Every bit of evidence was collected.

Ye Qingyu trusted Liu Siufeng extremely much and was about to say something.

Suddenly, there was an abrupt change --

Lines of light distorted in the sky.

Three rays of light, like thunder breaking apart the air, instantly neared.

Their auras were vast and powerful.

Their strong energy fluctuations were like the roar of the rivers and the surge of the seas– it surrounded everywhere, as if it was about to envelope the entire sky. They were utterly frightening.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu felt the inner yuan in his body being incited by these three rays of energy. It was as if a gigantic dragon was enraged, instantly compressing, exploding out. There was no way to control it; his yuan qi roared out like the thunder of the heavens from within his body.

This was the most instinctive reaction of a yuan qi martial artist.

Not only Ye Qingyu, but other people also had yuan qi light break out from around their bodies, the energy within their bodies exploding out

uncontrollably.

The expressions of Wen Wan and Liu Zongyuan also abruptly changed, strong yuan qi fluctuations exploding out from the bodies of the two. Deep like the abyss, it was extremely powerful, but very quickly they used their powerful will and technique to suppress their powers back within their body.

Nearly at the same time, Ye Qingyu also suppressed the exploding yuan qi in his body back inside.

He even placed a hand, on Ye Congyun's body, to help the young military officer withstand such a terrifying pressure.

On the flagship, there was only one figure that stood like the unfathomable ravine, not moving at all, his yuan qi as stable as Mt Tai.

Liu Siufeng.

The three rays of light broke through the sky. The strength of their powers was unimaginable, nearing instantly. It was as if the entire heavens were collapsing, and their target was namely the new recruit training camp.

If the three rays of light struck the ground there, then even the mountain behind the training camp would turn into rubble.

"Impudence!" The complexion of Liu Siufeng changed, a expression of anger appearing on his face. His voice was like the gong of a bronze bell, resounding throughout the world, his roar like thunder. "Ignorant little people, to be so impudent. Who gave you the guts, for you to do as you please. Could it be that you want your sects to be annihilated?"

Before he had finished.

Liu Zongyuan lifted his hand.

The blood red cape from behind him rose, surging and expanding, transforming in a scarlet blood red cloud that covered half the sky. Fluctuating with light, it headed towards the three rays of light, enveloping it and trapping it inside. The explosive energies constantly

surged and struggled within it, and the blood red cloud boiled for a few seconds, then instantly settled down.

“Return.”

Liu Siufeng beckoned.

The blood red cloud instantly shrunk, transforming into the size of a clock that once again floated back into the hands of Liu Siufeng.

The Liu Siufeng at this moment, still possessed a slightly chubby figure, still wasn't that tall, still held the steel balls in his hand. But under the golden glimmer of the sunlight, the shadow of his figure suddenly became vast and unfathomable. He stood alone as if he was a protective deity of his world, light shining from his eyes.

He held the cloak, touching it.

Three faintly golden arrows, appeared in his hands.

“[Piercing Cloud Arrows]?”

Liu Siufeng coldly snorted. Looking towards the three golden arrows, the killing intent in his eyes exploded, as if thunder and lightning was flickering madly.

Ye Qingyu saw everything clearly from the side.

So the terrifying pressure that broke through the skies, was emitted from the golden arrows that were not even the length of a palm. Right now, when they were gripped in Liu Siufeng's palm, it still emitted a faint pressure, and was still quivering, as if it wanted to struggle to break through, but the power in Liu Siufeng's palm suppressed it, making it have no way of breaking free.

[Piercing Cloud Arrows]?

It seemed to be one of the treasured tools of some sort of sect. The power of it must not be common.

“This time they're really willing to pay an expensive price, for them to even bring out the [Piercing Cloud Arrows].”



The complexion of Liu Siufeng gradually settled down.

A smile very quickly appeared on his chubby face.

As his yuan power was activated, there was suddenly a faint golden light flickering from Liu Siufeng's palm. the three arrows were burning within, and the golden arrows struggling madly. The noise of the vibrating metal could be heard that thundered in one's hears, as if a gigantic battering ram was striking against another battering ram. Endlessly, such sounds resounded from Liu Siufeng's palm.

Approximately ten breaths later.

Pang!Pang!Pang!

There were three low and deep noises emitting from within the three golden arrows.

One could see three jade green lights, being ejected from within the golden arrows that let out a sharp and piercing howl, wanting to escape. It was blocked by a sweep of Liu Siufeng's palm, instantly crushing it as it dissipated in the air.

The golden arrows constantly struggled, then finally settled down.

The Liu Siufeng at this moment, showed a domineering power.

Ye Qingyu guessed, that it should be Liu Siufeng who used his almighty yuan power to erase the will of the owners of the arrows from the arrow itself. He had taken off the mark from the arrows, and right now they had become objects without owners.

Liu Siufeng looked towards Ye Qingyu, thinking it over. Then with a casual flick, he tossed the three arrows towards Ye Qingyu.

“Commander, this.....” Ye Qingyu was greatly surprised.

Liu Siufeng chuckled, and said teasingly: “Did marquis just not resent us for the fact that we have not given you any support whatever and let you bitterly struggle alone? These three [Piercing Cloud Arrows] have an extraordinary history; it is rumoured that when Heaven Wasteland domain was first born, to fight against the chaos Fiendgods, the citizens

of this land used their own bones to create these arrows. They are indestructible, and could be counted as a Dao tool. With normal experts controlling it, it is the same as a special sharp blade, able to use it to hurt others. It has the power to kill opponents of a higher realm. By giving you this, this can be counted as making some reparations.”

Haha, there was a such a great thing?

Ye Qingyu's mouth split open in a grin.

The destructive power of the [Piercing Cloud Arrows] was clearly witnessed by everyone just now, it really was a precious treasure.

Who would have thought that Liu Siufeng would be so generous.

Since the [Piercing Cloud Arrows] were already objects with no master, Ye Qingyu inserted his will into it, and used the Supreme Ice Flame to slowly refine it, making it become his. There was a sensation of intimacy that was born, as if it was family; one could even feel the familiarity the three golden arrows had with him, as if they possessed intelligence.....

The profoundness of Dao tools was definitely higher than Spirit weapons or Sprit tools.

Ye Qingyu slightly inserted his yuan qi into it to activate it.

A radiance that was dazzling to the eyes, instantly erupted from the three golden arrows. A invincible sharp will spread every, emitted an ancient aura that let out shudders of pressure.

“Powerful!”

Ye Qingyu's heart could not help but be shaken.

The strength of these [Piercing Cloud Arrows] was even more sharp and powerful than what he had imagined previously. Just by controlling it slightly, he knew that with his own strength, if he shot these three [Piercing Cloud Arrows] when he was within the [First Limit] of the [Limitless Divine Way], he was able to threaten the lives of experts at the Bitter Sea Stage.。

These were true killing weapons.

It absolutely could be cards up his sleeve that could turn the tide around.

“Thank you commander!”

Ye Qingyu seriously bowed down in gratitude.

After sensing the might of the [Piercing Cloud Arrows], Ye Qingyu instantly realised many things.

Liu Siufeng had given him three golden arrows. This was not only to reward him. Most likely its true meaning was to increase his own strength and ability to protect himself. After all, in these days, he had offended many sects, which included the tops six sects. If the top level experts of the sects were really enraged and decided to attack him, his situation was exceedingly dangerous.

The careful considerations of Liu Siufeng, made Ye Qingyu moved in his heart.

“No need to thank me, this is what you should receive.” Liu Siufeng, seeing that Ye Qingyu understood his meaning, nodded his head. “The people of the sects, are becoming more and more reckless. You have to be careful, in case those people are pushed into a corner.....Having not been beaten for so many years, it seems like those people have really forgotten the pain of their scars. It seems like it’s time to remind them.”

As he finished saying this, the aura of the [Butcher of Youyan] changed.

Looking at the direction where the [Piercing Cloud Arrows] had shot from, his gaze instantly became cold and sharp.

He lifted his hand and lightly grabbed through the air.

An incredible matter happened.

One could see several hundred metres away from the flagship, in the air covered with dawn sunlight, a crack was suddenly torn in space. They could faintly see a scene through this crack like the interior of a place, like seeing flowers through a mist, everything seemed unreal. But one could still faintly discern several figures within the crevice. As the severe

snort finished, before they could do anything, an invisible energy began tearing at the crevice, that turned into bloody rain everywhere, limbs flying.....

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

This.....

Heavens.

Tearing apart space.

This was the legendary technique that could tear apart space.

The power of Liu Siufeng, was so strong that it had reached such a stage?

This was divine upon divine.

It really made it hard for someone to believe what he had done.

Just who was it that Liu Siufeng had acted against?

# Chapter 243: Come and do battle

Originally when Yan Buhui had ambushed Youyan Pass, the two commanders Liu Xiufeng and Peng Yizhen were both present. But they could not interfere at all and were blown away by the strong pressure Yan Buhui gave off, unable to receive a single blow before spitting out blood and retreating. This made Ye Qingyu subconsciously feel that the strengths of these two were just average.....

But right now, the ability that Liu Siufeng exhibited was tearing apart space with just a casual grab. From an unknown distance away, he grabbed the figures within the palace like interior from within the crevice of space and killed them.....

Such divine ability made Ye Qingyu stunned and tongue-tied, utterly shocked.

This already was not a normal technique.

After connecting this with the image of Li Siufeng receiving the three [Piercing Cloud Arrows], Ye Qingyu could not but help but admit this time, he had really underestimated the commander of the Vanguard. That day, Liu Siufeng could not interfere in the battle between Yan Buhui and Lu Zhaoze not because Liu Siufeng was weak, but because the two were far too strong.

And the Liu Siufeng right now had finally exhibited his power and charisma. This was the true strength of the [Butcher of Youyan].

Ye Qingyu realised that the moment Liu Siufeng acted, the soldiers on the flagship including Liu Zongyuan and Ye Congyun, had heavy admiration madly burning in their eyes. It was as they were the most fanatic worshippers looking at a spiritual leader.

In the air, the crevice disappeared.

“Butcher Liu.....You’ve gone too far!”

A enraged bellow, sounded out from within the crack. Qi exploded madly, and a violent killing intent emanated everywhere.

“Too much?” Liu Siufeng laughed loudly. “Haha, it seems like you old bastards have really gone senile. Three days without a beating, and the child will scale the roof to rip the tiles. It seems that in these years, your bones have gotten itchy again. To dare use the [Piercing Cloud Arrows] to attack our camps within Youyan Pass. This is unforgivable. This time I have only just reprimanded you lightly and killed several of your disciples. The next time, I think that there will no longer be a need for your sect to exist.”

“You.....”

A violent and explosive rumble of rage sounded.

A power that was endlessly bloody and ferocious, surged out from the crack of the air– like a flood that was about to break and destroy everything in its path.

“Hahaha, old bastard, if you really can’t bear it, then come and do battle.”

Liu Siufeng’s long cloak fluttered, laughing loudly; his aura shooting to the heavens.

As he said these words.

The explosive power in the dark crevice seemed to be completely enraged, boiling instantly. It caused the crack in space to become more and more clear, as if the entire sky was about to collapse. Pitch black-like ink mist began seeping out from the crack, as if it wanted to dye the entire sky black.....

But this power ultimately did not truly take the leap and travel through the crack in space.

“Liu Siufeng, this matter does not end here.”

The previous violent voice rumbled again, filled with fury and hatred.

Then that black explosive power instantly disappeared, as well as the crack in the sky. The interior of the palace in the crack also gradually disappeared.

Even at his angriest moment, that brutal person had to endure his rage.

Liu Siufeng let out a faint smile.

“A bunch of sheep in wolf’s clothing.....hmph.” He snorted in extreme disdain, then barked several military orders.

Wen Wan ultimately remained behind, protecting the new recruit training camp.

Liu Zongyuan and Liu Siufeng left.

As the commander of the Vanguard, using the phrase “Having ten thousand matters to handle in a single day” to describe him was not much. Especially during this period of time, Liu Siufeng was especially busy, so naturally he could not always remain here. For the flagship to appear here once, and for the domineering method of Liu Siufeng to be exhibited, was significant enough. The information contained within this act was enough for many people to carefully reconsider with fear.

When the blood-red flagship broke past the dawn’s sun to leave, the surroundings was absolutely silent.

The originally noisy and raucous people outside the new recruit training camp obediently shut their mouths.

The young military officer Sang Fusheng was taken to the camp to rest from his injuries. Ye Qingu made him leave his detailed address behind, so he could be more easily contacted in the future.

“You caused trouble, but you need me to wipe your arse. Peh, I’m really misfortunate.” Wen Wan grumbled in discontent. Liu Siufeng had left him behind to look after the new recruit training camp, and this was a boring task. All the valuable evidences in the camp had been brought away, and his mission was only to look after the citizens in the prison.

Ye Qingyu completely ignored the grumbles of this fellow. He suddenly remembered, “Oh, that’s right, what about those night pearls that I gave you at White Deer Academy? Had the results of the examination been obtained yet? Just what kind of objects are they? Why was there no news about them? Could you have taken them for yourself?”

“I, peh.” Wen Wan was enraged. “Do I look like that kind of person?”

“Yes.” Ye Qingyu seriously nodded his head.

Wen Wan: “.....”

“Those pearls are somewhat strange. They’re not held by me at the moment, if you have the need, I’ll go get it for you later. At that time, you should know what they are.” Wen Wan mumbled, claiming that the pearls were not currently held by him.

Hearing these words, Ye Qingyu did not ask any further.

After working for the entire night and undergoing several battles, Ye Qingyu was somewhat tired. Bidding Wen Wan farewell, he left the new recruit training camp.

On the way back, Ye Qingyu faintly felt that there was someone following him. But no matter how he sense, he could not discern anything distinct.

He did not directly return to the White Horse tower, but instead went to the Hundred Herb Hall.

Of course, he did not come to acquire ingredients to create the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet]. Before the [Mysterious Heaven Pellet] was successfully sold, Ye Qingyu was completely destitute. He did not have the financial power to purchase anything. He came to the Hundred Herb Hall for two matters.

Hundred Herb Hall

Ye Qingyu saw Shopkeeper Sui as well as the female herbal master Huang Zhen.

“Weak blood constitution?” Shopkeeper Sui looked at Ye Qingyu, frowning. “Is there someone close to the Marquis that has such a condition?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Do you know how to cure such a condition?”

“The weak blood constitution is caused by being naturally deficient, or



perhaps being injured at their foundation when they were young. Another way to put this is that their blood qi is not enough or not complete. This is not a terminal illness, but if you want to cure such a condition, the most direct method is [Restore Blood]. But normal restoring blood methods will not prove to be effective, using herbs cannot work. Unless there are Spirit pills used for restoring blood, he cannot be healed.” Shopkeeper Sui was deeply versed in terms of knowledge of herbs and illness, explaining in detail.

“I need pills of the Spirit class to cure such an condition?” Ye Qingyu was surprised.

This really was not a small price to pay.

The rareness of Spirit Pills was evident; even the famous [Azure Phoenix Pill King] Chen Monyun was not able to refine Spirit level pills. According to what Ye Qingyu knew, in the entire Youyan Pass, there were many Pill masters working for the military. There was not a lack of talents or prodigies, but no one could say with absolute confidence they were able to refine Spirit pills.

Furthermore, the ingredients used to create Spirit Pills would definitely be incomparably precious.

As Shopkeeper Sui said these words, Ye Qingyu realised that this method would not work.

It was not that Ye Qingyu was not willing to pay the price. With the debt of the armoured sentries, as long as he was able to do it, Ye Qingyu was willing to pay anything, no matter how great the price to cure Ye Congyun. But the rarity and preciousness of the Spirit Pill, was already at a stage where money made no difference. No matter how great the price you were willing to pay, you could not fulfill your wishes.

“Are there any other methods?” Ye Qingyu queried.

“This.....The weak blood constitution is when the very foundation of your life is injured. To want to restore it, one originally needs to go against the nature of the heavens. Normal herbs cannot achieve this miraculous results.” Shopkeeper Sui frowned and thought for a while,

then shook his head. “Forgive me, I cannot think of any other method. But the weak blood constitution is not life threatening, if one practice martial arts and strengthens their body, their longevity can also be increased.....”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

He of course knew this.

But for the perspective of Ye Congyun, he did not have any meaning in his life if he was not cured.

Shopkeeper Sui closed his mouth without saying anything.

The female herbal master, Huang Zhen, seemed to thought of something. Carefully, she spoke out: “In truth.....there is another method that can cure the weak blood constitution.....

“Hm?” Ye Qingyu’s eyes brightened, “What method?”

Huang Zhen gave a glance to Shopkeeper Sui and stared at Ye Qingyu in surprise. She did not dare tarry and ordered her thoughts. “I once read an ancient lost text that had many methods used to cure various conditions and illness. Within, there was a method that was mentioned to cure the weak blood constitution. If a top level expert is willing to give a drop of blood containing their yuan power and spirit inside into the body of the patient, then this could restore the injuries done to the foundation of their life force....”

The female herbal master carefully explained the theory and practical aspect of this treatment.

Of course, all this came from the ancient text.

“I’ve only seen it in book and have never tried it out before.....” Huang Zhen finished what she said, staring in trepidation at the two.

Shopkeeper Sui patiently listened to this; his brows knitting together tightly. “This....perhaps it’s a method that can really work. For those top level experts at the pinnacle, a drop of their blood has vast amounts of yuan qi in it. Their blood qi is extremely strong, so powerful it is hard to imagine. This blood perhaps could restore the lack in the foundation of

the patient. In theory, this is workable. But the problem is the blood of pinnacle top level experts is not much more common than Spirit Pills.”

Ye Qingyu carefully considered Huang Zhen’s method. If it was workable in theory, then it was worth a try.

For other people, perhaps blood from a pinnacle top level expert was something that was incomparably hard to obtain. But for Ye Qingyu, this was not anything difficult.

Because in his hands, he namely had a droplet of Lu Zhaoge’s blood.

Lu Zhaoge had guarded, with his power, the borders for many year. He was like the sun or sky, with unfathomable strength. He was definitely a pinnacle top level expert. If the method outline by Huang Zhen was really effective, then his drop of blood was definitely usable.

Of course, the requirement was that Ye Qingyu had to hurry and erase the strange power of the flames of darkness from the blood.

“Thank you two for your assistance. If you have the spare time, I would greatly appreciate you to see if there are any other methods to cure the weak blood constitution. You will have my deepest appreciation.” Ye Qingyu already knew what he would do in his heart.

“We don’t dare. Aiding the Marquis is our glory.” Shopkeeper Sui quickly paid his respects.

Huang Zhen also rushed to do the same.

Ye Qingyu took a scroll that he handed to Huang Zhen from his interdimensional pouch,. “This is the talent examination of your son in the martial path, for your inspection. Shadow talent is rarely seen. I have a cultivation technique that is suitable for him. But it is not a traditional systematic cultivation technique so I cannot decide easily. You are Ling’er mother, so you should make the decision.

Huang Zhen received the scroll with surprise excitement. Giving it a read, she said: “In this matter, I am willing to entirely listen to Marquis.”

Ye Qingyu waved his hand, smiling. “This matter is very important. It

concerns the future martial path of Ling'er. We need to properly consider it and not rush to make a decision. You discuss it well with Ling'er and tell me the result of the discussion.”

Huang Zhen expressed her thanks once again.

Ye Qingyu faintly smiled. Not saying anything more, he bid his farewell.

Shopkeeper Sui saw Ye Qingyu off at the door.

Departing from the Hundred Herb Hall, Ye Qingyu did not have any other matters to take care off. He headed in the direction of the White Horse Tower.

The batter last night with White browed Yu and the others had made him gain many valuable insights. He needed to return and train, carefully pondering over what he had gained in that battle.

Turning the corner of the street.。

Ye Qingyu was thinking in his heart, when he suddenly sensed something. Lifting his head, he saw a figure that was blocking his way. The young girl wore a golden patterned mask, a tight fitting dark red dress. Her eyes were as clear as snow as she stood there silently.

Song Xiaojun.

# Credits

Translator: [Aran Translations](#)

Epub: [Shyboy](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)